

# Against the Gods

(逆天邪神)

Volume 02

Blue Wind  
Conspiracy

Mars Gravity  
(火星引力)

Story Description:

A boy is being chased by  
various people because he  
alone holds some kind of

treasure. He jumps off a cliff to not let any of them have it and wakes up in the body of a boy with the same name in another world. Fortunately, he has kept the treasure he ran off with.

Original Story can be found here:

[Link](#)

# Chapter 101:

## Remnants of the Phoenix (1)

Lan Xueruo thoroughly inspected Yun Che's injuries; the results she'd discovered let her breathe out a long sigh of relief, but at the same time, she experienced a great shock. It was because Yun Che's injuries were much better than what she had imagined. His shoulder suffered such a severe wound, yet it had already stopped bleeding and showed no signs of it worsening. Instead, it was mending together with an extremely shocking speed that was visually discernible with the naked eye. There were countless

other wounds on his body but they were all light injuries. His body was in a state of weakness, but it was also only weakness; there were no injuries to the essentials and the internal injuries were also very insignificant.

Even though he fell from such a high place, he still pushed her in the other direction with all his strength, which caused him to plummet even faster. To sustain injuries to such an extent was something completely unfathomable.

As she lifted Yun Che up from the ground, she carried him to a nearby soft grass turf and laid him down. This was the first time she had held a man's body; she held him very

carefully, accompanied by uncontrollably disordered heartbeats. Then, she quietly guarded beside him, and waited for him to wake up once more.

This was a mountainous region; innumerable hills that weren't too tall, spread throughout the entire field of vision. Even though the area was gushing with greenery, it emitted a kind of extremely desolate air.

From far away, drawn-out roars of profound beasts could be frequently heard. This also caused Lan Xueruo to stand guard by Yun Che's side and not dare to be even half a step away from him to prevent any profound beasts from approaching and harming Yun Che. After more

than one hour had passed, the corner of her brow suddenly flickered as she looked toward her right. In her vision, five people were currently walking here; three adults, and two children.

These three men appeared to be around thirty or forty years old and they appeared to be fiendish looking. They wore the same kind of light armor, the exposed muscles were dark and coarse; clearly they were people that frequently operated outside. The one who appeared to be the oldest had a large tall frame with a ferocious looking face while a huge broadaxe rested on his shoulders. In contrast, the youngest looking one had a skinny frame; his facial features resembled that of a monkey with a

sharp angled mouth and he dragged a giant iron club that was over a meter long. The last one had a face resembling a horse and also carried a giant iron club. In terms of their profound cultivation, the highest was already at the Nascent Profound Realm's eighth level while the lowest was also already at the sixth level of Nascent Profound Realm.

However, the two children appeared to only be seven or eight years of age. One boy and one girl, who were dressed in rough cloth. What was eye catching, was a very shallow red mark present on their foreheads; its shape, was like a cluster of burning flames. Each of their arms were separately dragged by one person, who walked them forward step by

step. Tear stains that hadn't dried up yet could clearly be seen on their faces.

As soon as Lan Xueruo saw them, they also saw Lan Xueruo. Almost unanimously, the three men stopped their feet at the same time; their eyes tightly locked onto Lan Xueruo and glinted like that of ferocious wolves.

“Quick... Look quick! That girl over there.... There was actually such a good looking girl! Ssss.. I've never seen a women this beautiful in my entire life.” The horse-faced man spoke while his drool uncontrollably flowed down in a continuous stream.

The sharp-mouthed man was even



more so unabashed; both of his legs tightly clamped up together as his entire body trembled: “She’s virtually a hundred times prettier than the goddesses in this daddy’s dreams, my legs are even about to give in. If we capture her to be our captain’s bride, the captain would definitely go crazy with happiness and may even grant us a vice-captain position....”

“Are you fucking stupid!” The broadaxe man smacked the sharp-mouthed man on the neck. He then heavily licked the corner of his own mouth as his eyes revealed an obscene glint: “If we brought this girl back, Captain would definitely engage in activity every night. What would there be left for us? Tsk tsk, to meet such a beautiful girl in this

place, that's simply a reward sent to us by the heavens."

The sharp-mouthed man's eyes suddenly shone and his two legs shivered even more intensely. He continuously nodded nonstop: "Right! Right! Big Bro is right! Then what are we waiting for!"

"However, while this beautiful girl only looks to be eighteen or nineteen, she actually has the cultivation of the Nascent Profound Realm rank eight." The broadaxe man frowned a little.

"What? Nascent Profound Realm rank eight?" Both the sharp-mouthed man and horse-faced man were immensely shocked. "To have such a strong cultivation at such a

young age, she might actually be some great family's disciple, or may even be on the level of a genius. If we act, and the family behind her back by chance finds out....”

“Tsk! Look at how unpromising you are.” The broadaxe man glanced at him disdainfully. He then licked his lips, and laughed obscenely: “When have we, the Black Demon Mercenary Group ever not lived a day on the blade's edge, and who have we ever been scared of? Don't even mention that she might be a disciple from some big family; since she has met us, even if she's the current emperor's daughter, hehehehe, we'll still engage without reserve! Tut tut, to be able to enjoy such an otherworldly beautiful woman that can't even be imagined

in one's dreams, it's worth it even if we die right after!"

The sharp-mouthed man and horse-faced man were both nodding like a chick pecking rice, and were excited to the extent that they almost forgot how to walk properly

Even though their voices were low, it was enough to be heard clearly by the two children they dragged along in their hands. Terrified and worried expressions revealed on their faces. The small boy held his breath, then suddenly loudly shouted out: "Big sister, quickly run! They're bad people, they want to harm you... Ah!!"

Sent onto the ground with a kick from the horse-faced man the small

boy let out a painful scream. The little girl hurriedly ran over to help him up and then started to cry whilst hugging him.

The little boy's voice and the scene that came after was completely seen and heard by Lan Xueruo. She slightly frowned and stood up from the ground. But now the broadaxe man and sharp-mouthed man had already approached and stood in front of her with faces that brimmed with indecent smiles. The sharp-mouthed man's eyes revealed an obscene light that couldn't be anymore obvious; rubbing of both his hand's fingers together, it was clear that he could not wait much longer. If not out of fear of the opponent's profound cultivation that was at the eighth level of

Nascent Profound Realm, he would have already swan-dived over:

“Little sister, why are you here by yourself? Are you lost? Want this big brother to take you away from here?”

Lan Xueruo had faced similar gazes and demeanors many times before. However, this was the first time someone had been so blatant about it; without making an effort to conceal it in the slightest. The reason was very obvious; it was because this was the wilderness. In addition, she was alone by herself. Deep disgust exhibited from between her eyebrows as she answered in an indifferent tone: “Release those two children, then scram!”

Even if the young boy had not screamed earlier, she still could tell with a glance, that those two children were forcefully kidnapped by them.

“Yoh!” The broadaxe man laughed, “Not only is this girl beautiful, she’s pretty gutsy too! Us brothers here, can properly refresh ourselves this time, hehehehe....”

“Big Sister! Quickly, run! They’re bad people, really strong bad people.... Run! Ah~~~”

The little boy shouted at Lan Xueruo once more, but was again slapped onto the ground by the horse-faced man who viciously spoke: “Damn little brat, behave yourself. If it weren’t for the fact

that you still have a little bit of value, this daddy would've ripped you into pieces long ago. If you dare to shout again, you better believe that this daddy will rip your mouth off first."

The boy and girl tightly hugged each other. Fear could be seen in their eyes as their entire body trembled from head to toe.

Rage surfaced on Lan Xueruo's face; just because of the fact that young boy had shouted and warned her without caring for the consequence, she was already unable to continue to just sit and watch them be taken away by these three wicked people. However, Yun Che was lying right beside her and if she fought with them, there was the possibility of



getting him involved. She clenched her hands and furiously spoke: 'I'll say it again, release those two children, then quickly scram!'

"Hehehehe!" Facing Lan Xueruo's reprimand, not only did the trio not falter in the slightest, they instead started to laugh out loud. The broadaxe man lewdly answered: "Does the beauty want us to scram? Of course we wish for that... But I don't know if beauty want us to scram with us here? Or scram with us on the grass, or maybe scram with us on the bed?"

The sharp-mouthed man and horse-faced man simultaneously laughed out loud. Lan Xueruo's brow sunk as her expression became covered in frosty austerity. She spoke in a

low voice: "You're courting death!"

As her voice faded, she stroked her left hand with her right. A longsword that was as pale as white jade was suddenly grasped in her hand. Instantly, the broadaxe man trio's eyes instantly flared up: "Spatial ring! It's actually a spatial ring! This time we've really hit the jackpot. From its appearance, this sword shouldn't be a common weapon either."

Even the lowest grade of spatial rings had an expensive price tag; it definitely wasn't something an ordinary person could afford. Thick greed had now started to form within the trio's obscene gazes

At this time, Lan Xueruo took a step

forward to thrust her sword toward the broadaxe man. The broadaxe man had a strength at the eighth level of Nascent Profound Realm, and was the biggest threat.

“Hahahaha! Let’s see how we, the three brothers, properly discipline this little beauty!” Within the sound of arrogant laughter, the broadaxe man lifted his gigantic broadaxe and horizontally swept toward Lan Xueruo’s jade sword. The sharp-mouthed man left to him also laughed obscenely as he simultaneously grabbed the iron club with both hands and fiercely swung outwards.

The axe and club collided with Lan Xueruo’s jade sword one after another, breaking Lan Xueruo’s

sword posture and caused her wrist to feel a dull pain. She quickly retreated a step backwards. With a low shout, the long sword drew a slanted arc which simultaneously blocked the two's advancement.

“Seven Star Arranging Moon!”

After a thrust of her sword, a few dozen others unceasingly followed. The sword's form was ceaseless; in the midst of her dance-like movements, the jade white longsword shed waves and waves of brilliant white shadows. Her current profound strength was at the eighth level of the Nascent Profound Realm, which matched the broadaxe man. But when all's said and done, she was still quite young; it was impossible for her to match

up to the broadaxe man in terms of battle experience and the thickness of profound energy was even more incomparable. Not even mentioning the additional seventh ranker of the Nascent Profound Realm, even when she only faced the broadaxe man alone, she would be on the struggling side... And not far away, there was still the horse-faced man at the sixth level of Nascent Profound Realm, who still lurked there as he restrained the two children.

After a dozen or so rounds, all of Lan Xueruo's attacks were knocked back, and the sword had almost left her hands a few times. The broadaxe man laughed and suddenly leaped high into the air as the gigantic axe cleaved downwards

with a frightening power:

“Thousand Jun Destruction!”

Dong!!

Lan Xueruo’s sword posture had almost been blown apart in an instant. Her entire body quivered as she consecutively retreated five steps back. Her right arm faintly trembled as the longsword almost slipped out of her hand once more.

“Hehehehe, Big bro is awesome.”

The sharp-mouthed man boot-lickingly flattered and then smiled obscenely: “Little beauty, you should just obediently embrace us. If we keep on fighting and accidentally damage your beautiful body, tut tut, that would simply be a

waste.”

Lan Xueruo’s chest heaved up and down yet her expression was completely undisturbed. She extended her hand to grasp the gemstone beaded necklace she had always wore, and lightly pulled it off.

The moment the gemstone beaded necklace left her snow white nape, the aura of her profound energy instantly surged. Unexpectedly, her charming eyes gradually revealed a saintly golden color. As she slowly lifted the jade sword in her hands... A distinct layer of golden light enveloped the snow white body of the sword.

# Chapter 102:

## Remnants of the Phoenix (2)

In an instant, Lan Xueruo's composure underwent an enormous change. The smiles on the faces of the broadaxe man and the sharp-mouthed man vanished instantaneously when they suddenly felt a suffocating pressure from the unrivaled beauty in front of them.

"Boss, what... what's going on?" The sharp-mouthed man felt something wrong about the atmosphere. The words had barely left his lips when a blade of white-gold light flashed



from the side of his eye. Lan Xueruo's sword lifted up once more and thrust straight for his chest.

A strike without any fanciful movements, yet its aura was clearly stronger than the previous one by several folds! The sharp-mouthed man was paralyzed momentarily due to the stifling strength of her aura but after that, he swung his iron club and hurriedly parried her attack. With a resounding clash, the sharp-mouthed man's iron club was sent flying as the jade sword that was encased in golden light ruthlessly stabbed into his body. Due to the intense power of her strike, the white jade longsword bent for a split second to then immediately straighten once more. Subsequently, an explosion erupted;

its monstrous power had caused the sharp-mouthed man to fly into the air and roll a few dozen meters away.... Had she used the sword's edge instead of the sword's body, the sharp-mouthed man would have undoubtedly been sliced through his middle.

This scene caused the complexions on the broadaxe man and the horse-faced man to suddenly change color. Before they could utter a single sound, Lan Xueruo's beautiful silhouette was already rushing towards the broadaxe man; her sword slanted to thrust straight towards his shoulder.

The powerful blade's approach instantly paled the broadaxe man's complexion. With nowhere to

escape to, he mustered all of his body's profound energy at once. As he tightly clutched the broad axe with both hands, he gave out a low roar and clashed against Lan Xueruo's longsword with a smash.

Bang!!!

Carrying an ear-piercing sound of colliding metal, the broad axe met the jade sword and caused the broadaxe man to sink to the ground. Under the suppression of such an enormous pressure, both his feet immediately sank into the mire beneath. Lan Xueruo's sword momentarily paused but afterwards, her sword exploded once more to then ruthlessly swept onto the broadaxe man's chest.

With a crash, the broadaxe man's body rolled a few dozen meters away like a rolling gourd, and the axe in his hand had also been flung away. After spinning many rounds in the air, it came to land at the feet of the horse-faced man, causing him to tremble in fright as he backed away in panic.

The broadaxe man who had been tossed a few dozens of meters away stood up again in a very awkward manner. His chest was in unbearable pain and he vaguely figured that a few of his bones were broken. Yet he knew that if the lady had not been merciful and “chopped” instead of “swept”, both he and the sharp-mouthed man would have already been split in two. This also brought about the

realization that the young lady was extremely soft-hearted and would definitely not be willing to kill anyone.

An idea flashed through his mind. Promptly, he decided to kneel on the floor and loudly begged for forgiveness: “Miss, please spare our lives! The three of us had looked without seeing, we... We merely thought that you bore semblance to a goddess who had descended to earth, s-so we had intended to approach and admire you. We definitely did not have any other intentions, so please overlook this and let us go.”

Lan Xueruo withdrew her jade sword with a face full of disgust. Unwilling to look at them any

longer, she shouted angrily: “Leave at once! The farther you go, the better.”

“Yes, of course, we’ll leave immediately, right away.” The broadaxe man scrambled to his feet and glared at the two others who were still stupefied. The two followed his lead and also prepared to leave immediately.

“Release the children!” She abruptly knitted her brow and shouted when the horse-faced guy was just about to drag the two children away.

At that, the horse-faced man’s complexion suddenly fluctuated, but upon remembering that she had reduced the sharp-mouthed man and the broadaxe man to such sorry

states within three moves, he had no choice but to grit his teeth and release the two children before slinking away afterwards.

Had Yun Che still been awake, he definitely would have told Lan Xueruo to kill all three of them. Deep within him, he knew that mercy did not often earn gratitude from the other party. Rather, it would only bring endless amount of unforeseen troubles. The trio had almost violated her previously, and were obviously tainted with a large amount of sin. To kill them was also helping the heavens mete out justice.

But in the end, Lan Xueruo was not Yun Che. She was innately kind and soft; had never killed anyone in her

entire life and never had any thoughts of killing either. She didn't even harbor any thoughts of crippling their limbs as punishment either.

In one breath, the three ran quite a distance. The horse-faced man grinded his teeth: "What horrible luck! The beauty was unsampled and we even had to release those two brats."

"Nevermind that, we should already be thanking the heavens that we still escaped with our lives intact. That woman's profound strength was at the True Profound Realm!" As he wiped the cold sweat from his forehead, the broadaxe man shuddered from the lingering fear. He just couldn't understand it.



Initially, he had obviously felt that the opponent was only in the eighth level of the Nascent Profound Realm, but the moment he had attacked, he suddenly felt an exponential increase in her profound strength. That level of profound strength, definitely did not pale in comparison to the True Profound Realm the three vice-captains had attained.

“Whaa? True... True Profound Realm?” Both the horse-faced man and the sharp-mouthed man simultaneously stupefied: “A little beauty of only a dozen or more years, how could she possibly have stepped into the True Profound Realm! Our captain is nearing fifty this year, and is only at the third level of the True Profound Realm!”

“Need you ask! That woman must have been a genius disciple of some super family! Those large families all have innumerable resources and sect profound skills; those below twenty that have been able to break into the True Profound Realm are too numerous to be counted! That was far too dangerous, we’re lucky the woman we’d met was mild-tempered. Had she been a bit feistier, the three of us would have been finished right here!”

“Captain should be returning today. We originally wanted to take credit for kidnapping two hostages, but who would’ve thought we’d almost lose our lives today. It looks like we can only let Captain personally take charge, let’s return quickly!”

.....

After chasing the three vile people away, Lan Xueruo heaved a small sigh of relief and reclasped the necklace around her neck. The profound energy that was released from our body immediately weakened. After two breaths, it had weakened back to the eighth level of the Nascent Profound Realm. In front of her, the two children who had just regained their freedom stared at her with wide eyes; their eyes glistened with unshed tears.

Lan Xueruo walked over and bent down: “Little boy, little girl, don’t be afraid, it’s alright now. Are you two from the mountains? Why were you captured by those three men?”

She had barely finished asking when the boy suddenly knelt before her and mournfully cried in his immature voice: "Big sister, I beg of you... Won't you save my family? Those bad people have always been harming us. Big sister, you're so powerful so you should definitely be able to send those bad people off with a beating."

Seeing the little boy kneel, the little girl also followed suit and knelt down. Holding the boy's arm, she added in a teary voice: "Big sister, please save us.... Uuu Uuu, please save us...."

Lan Xueruo was slightly shocked still for a moment before parting her hands to hold each of theirs with the intention of pulling them

up from the ground: “Stand up, quickly...”

Even though he was only a little boy of seven to eight years, he possessed a stubbornness that belied his age. He stared tearfully at Lan Xueruo as he refused to stand: “Big sister, I beg you, please, you must save us. If you don’t save us, our entire clan will definitely be killed by those bad people. Only you can save us. In future... in future, we will definitely repay your favor.”

This little boy had previously shouted out to her twice in spite of the danger which proved that he had a kind soul. Now, he was kneeling in front of her with misty eyes filled with plea and slivers of hope... As if he had finally grabbed

at the stalk of life-saving rice straw in the midst of his drowning.

Her heart immediately softened. Seeing that Yun Che was still lying quietly behind, she slightly hesitated before lightly smiling: “Little boy, little girl. Stand first, then take me to meet your clan, alright?”

The little boy’s eyes flashed with pleasant surprise. After wiping tears away from his face, he nodded vigorously.

Lan Xueruo carefully picked up Yun Che and followed the two children towards the direction of their home. On the way, she found out that the little boy was named Feng Zu’er and the little girl was Feng Xian’er;

they were twins of different genders. The surname “Feng” surprised Lan Xueruo some, as she knew it was the surname of the Divine Phoenix Empire’s imperial family. But the two children told her that their entire clan’s surname was “Feng” and that they’d been living in this mountain of wilderness since they were born, without ever leaving or ever interacting with outsiders. There were many violent profound beasts in the area, but for some reason, these profound beasts never approached the place where they resided. However, because of those concentrated number of scary profound beasts, they had never been able to leave. That was also the same reason why outsiders had never entered.

That held true only until a few days ago when the Black Demon Mercenary Group had found where they lived after barging in through some unknown method. The group had also realized that theirs was actually a very small clan of guardians and thus, forced them to hand over their treasures they guarded. This was the reason why Feng Zu'er and Feng Xian'er were captured; in order for them to demand those treasures as ransom within a day or risk having the children killed.

As they turned around a short hill, a small village appeared before their eyes. A few middle-aged adults dressed in rough clothing stood in the front of the village, wearing expressions of frustration and



helplessness. A weeping married woman stood between them as she covered up her face.... and atop all their foreheads, was a flame-shaped imprint.

“Father.... Mother!”

In the midst of their cries, Feng Zu'er and Feng Xian'er threw themselves in the direction of the weeping woman. The woman suddenly lifted her head when she heard the voices of her children; she almost believed that she was dreaming as she stared in a daze and watched her children dash over. It was only until they had landed in her bosom, that she tightly embraced them while bawling in happy surprise.

“Zu’er, Xian’er, how did you....” The middle-aged man on the side was visibly shocked and then was at a loss of what to say in his delight.

“It’s that pretty big sister who fought off those bad people and saved us.” Feng Zu’er turned back and pointed at Lan Xueruo, “Not only is big sister pretty, she’s also really strong. She only needed a short while to fight off all three of the bad people.”

“Mn. Mn.” Feng Xian’er nodded in agreement with a face full of adoration: “Also, big sister promised us that she’ll help us fight off those bad people.”

All eyes turned to Lan Xueruo. The middle-aged man took a step

forward, bowed deeply towards Lan Xueruo, and sincerely stated: “Miss, thank you for saving my two children. I truly do not know how I ought to repay you... My name is Feng Baichuan and I am the current clan head. This is my wife Feng Caiyun.”

“It’s no problem at all. I just happened to pass by and it required little effort.” Lan Xueruo said politely. The man in front of her was thirty four years old; his appearance and the clothes he wore were humble and the space between his brows revealed a faint touch of elegance and calm. The flame imprint upon his forehead appeared to be especially clear.

But as the head of the clan, his

profound strength was only at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm. With respect to his age, this degree of profound strength was indeed too low. However, Lan Xueruo immediately noticed that everyone in front of her was at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm as well; it was incomparably uniform in this aspect.

“Thank you, truly, we are too grateful.” Feng Caiyun bowed gracefully towards Lan Xueruo, too thankful for words.

“It is simply too wonderful that Zu’er and Xian’er managed to come back safely. However, those vicious thieves.... Sigh.” The bearded old man to the side heaved a sigh of

relief to then take a lengthy sigh.

“Big sister is very strong, she can definitely drive all the vicious thieves away.” Feng Zu’er, who had personally seen Lan Xueruo’s “invincible prowess”, clenched his fist and spoke with complete confidence.

However, their worry could not be abated by his words alone. While they believed that her profound strength was truly amazing to have saved the two children from those three vicious thieves, she seemed like a young lady of just seventeen to eighteen years. Even if her profound strength was high, how high could it possibly be? The opponent was a notorious mercenary group that numbered

around a hundred. Its captain and its three vice-captains were all in the True Profound Realm; it was hardly something that a young lady was capable of resisting.

# Chapter 103:

## Remnants of the Phoenix (3)

Feng Baichuan's gaze switched Lan Xueruo's rear and said: "This little brother, your complexion looks to be quite terrible and you're even being carried by this young lady. You must have received heavy injuries right? I, myself have learned a bit of medicine, perhaps I may be of help somehow."

"My name is Yun Che, I thank Clan Leader Feng for your good will."

Yun Che politely replied from Lan Xueruo's back. His voice caused Lan Xueruo's beautiful eyes to widen:

“You’re.... you’re awake?”

“Yes, I woke up when senior sister put me on your back.” Yun Che said with a happy smile. Even if his complexion looked terrible, his voice was finally no longer that weak. During his freefall, he used the Sky Poison Pearl and rapidly fused the Skyroot Grass, Flower Nectar, Mountain River Plant along with thirty different types of medicinal material to swiftly concoct a Heaven Returning Pill. Afterwards, he swallowed it. The amount and quality of the required medicinal material to refine this Heaven Returning Pill was exceedingly harsh. Moreover, the refining environment, the furnace, and the refining method were all strict to the extreme. Even if it was



a high level pill refining master, the success rate of the refining wouldn't exceed thirty percent. But with Xiao Sect Branch Sect's enormous treasury and the Sky Poison Pearl, all of this was not an issue.

"Then why.... then why didn't you say anything, and made me carry you this far." Lan Xueruo flushed in anger.

"Because this is the first time in my life that I've been carried on a girl's back. Not only was it very comfortable, the scent of Senior Sister's body is very fragrant." As he spoke to here, he originally wanted to lightly sniff the fragrance of Lan Xueruo's body more, but his expression suddenly became

sluggish as he blankly stared in place....

Was it really.... his first time being carried by a girl?

In this life, it was indeed...

But, during his life in the Azure Cloud Continent... That girl... Every time he returned to her by using the last bit of his strength and knocked on the bamboo door, he fainted in front of that bamboo door. When he awakened, he was lying on top of a soft and warm bed... Although he had been unconscious, it seemed as if he was able to clearly feel her use her own delicate body to shoulder his bloodied body. Each of step she took was difficult and accompanying each step were

specks of teardrops...

Time and time again; maybe even tens of times, or perhaps even hundreds of times. The number of times were simply uncountable and he also didn't bother to count it...

The only thing he could remember was that even if he lived through two lives in two worlds, it was still impossible for it to make up for what he had owed her. Because heaven, no longer gave him that chance.

Suddenly, the Lan Xuero he was tightly hugging slowly turned into the figure that only appeared in his dreams...

“You! If it weren't for the fact that you're injured, I would've tossed

you aside!” Lan Xuero said with a bit of indignance. Previously, when she had been carrying Yun Che, she was calm because she thought that Yun Che was unconscious. Now that he had awoken, that feeling of his body pressing against hers, and the indistinct male scent caused her ears to flush red as her heart pulsed even more erratically.

“Clan Leader Feng, can you help me find a place to settle down my friend?” Lan Xuero asked Feng Baichuan while facing him.

“Of course, please follow me.”

This small village was indeed a small village; there were a total of a dozen or so simple and crude houses. From Feng Baichuan, they

learned that the whole clan was not more than two hundred people. In regards to the newly arrived Lan Xuero and Yun Che, the two outsiders, the people here were vigilant at first but afterwards, they revealed a good nature. Very quickly, Lan Xuero and Yun Che both realised a strange fact; every person they had met were all at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm. Other than the children who have not yet started to cultivate profound energy, all of them were like this, without a single exception. It seemed as if the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm was their limit. But, after the Nascent Profound Realm, every time one stepped into another level, it was accompanied by a bottleneck that increasingly

becomes difficult to breakthrough. But from the Elementary Profound Realm to the Nascent Profound Realm, there was basically no bottleneck to speak of; so long as enough profound energy was accumulated, one would naturally step into the Nascent Profound Realm.

But the people here all stopped at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm; this truly puzzled Yun Che and Lan Xueruo.

“How could this place have the Phoenix’s essence?”

Jasmine’s sudden voice surprised Yun Che: “Phoenix? The prehistoric divine beast, the phoenix of legends?”

“Correct!” Jasmine’s voice slightly revealed a sense of exhaustion; she previously transferred a part of her own profound energy to Yun Che. Although it was a very brief couple of seconds, it still caused a certain amount of damage to her soul and Yun Che’s body: “Even though it’s very faint, it is definitely without a doubt, the Phoenix’s essence. How strange... Could it be that the phoenix had actually descended to this inferior plane before?”

This lowly plane... these words made Yun Che’s heart stir, he suddenly made a terrifying guess as to Jasmine’s identity.

“And the flame imprint on their foreheads, is also the mark that the phoenix bloodline bears! But this

mark's color and the color that this princess knows, are completely different. Additionally, the mark of the phoenix bloodline is normally hidden; only when using the phoenix's power of fire would the mark forcibly appear, but the people here all bear the mark of the phoenix and it's as if they can't hide it. In short, this is too weird!"

Feng Baichuan brought Lan Xuero and Yun Che to a clean hut: "You two, please rest easy here. We are just a small clan hidden. Everything we have cannot compare with the outside world, so we can only inconvenience you."

Lan Xuero carefully put Yun Che on top of the bed. Secretly letting out a sigh of relief in her heart, she



turned around to say: “Clan Leader Feng is too courteous. We are already extremely grateful to have a place like this.”

“Are you guys Pheonix Ruins’ guardian clan?”

Yun Che suddenly asked at this time.

Feng Baichuan, who was calm and dignified up until now, froze; his pupils distinctly contracted slightly. His expression rapidly fluctuated as he thought about how he could deny or avoid the question. But after a few breaths of time, his expression calmed down and a seemingly self-deprecating laugh arose: “The guardian clan? We aren’t worthy of that title. We are

simply keeping away from the world while carrying this sin and curse. We are just a humble clan who have to atone for their sins, generation after generation.

Although I don't know where you learned that we have a relationship with the Phoenix, but it looks like... You came here in order to obtain the so-called 'treasure' that we're guarding, right?"

"Phoenix? The divine beast that the Divine Phoenix Empire worships?" As the flabbergasted Lan Xuero looked at Yun Che and Feng Baichuan, her brain momentarily stopped working.

"No, you misunderstood." Yun Che took a breath. He wanted to sit up but his entire body was so weak

that even the slightest of movements would cause a stabbing pain. He could only give up, and lay there as he answered: “The reason I was able to find out that you are possibly the clan that guards the phoenix’s remains, is because of the mark on your foreheads. I came into contact with a lot of rumors regarding the phoenix bloodline; aside from the color being slightly different, the shape of the mark on your foreheads and the shape of the mark that I know of, is exactly the same. My senior sister and I coming here, is due to an unintentional fall from a high altitude. I even sustained heavy injuries from my fall, so there is absolutely no other intention.”

The injuries on Yun Che’s body

wholeheartedly convinced Feng Baichuan. After all, no one would be crazy enough to come after their ‘treasure’ with such heavy injuries. Yun Che’s words baffled him for a while, and then he once more mockingly laughed at himself: “The Phoenix imprint... Different color... Yes, different color. The originally respected imprint that symbolized its power and bloodline has turned into a cursed mark of sorrow; our ancestors made a horrible mistake, but what kind of sin have we, the younger generation commit!?”

Feng Baichuan’s words revealed a strong sense of sorrow; it seems as if Yun Che’s words thoroughly stabbed at his heart’s sore spot.

A cursed mark? Yun Che’s heart

pounded. The blood mark, how could it turn into a cursed mark? Wait wait, maybe the reason their profound cultivation was limited to the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm, was because of this “cursed mark” Feng Baichuan spoke of?

“I believe that you are not bad people because I can’t sense any maliciousness from your body and you have also saved my two children. However I should repay you, is something I ought to do. Only...” Feng Baichuan took a lengthy sigh: “Our clan is currently facing a disaster; if you are to continue to stay here, the disaster could involve you so you should recuperate here. It would be best if you could finish healing and leave

before those treacherous people come back here again. Because the next time those villains come, perhaps... It'll be the disaster of disasters."

When he was being carried on the road here, he learned what had happened previously from Lan Xueruo and two children's conversation. Puzzled, he asked: "Clan Leader Feng, I have one thing that I don't understand. Your clan ought to have been here for many years right? So many years have peacefully passed by, but why has a mercenary group suddenly fixed their attention on you?."

Feng Baichuan looked out the window and calmly answered: "What you had just said is correct.

Our clan has already existed for many many years and was even prosperous for a period of time. But after incurring heaven's wrath, we rapidly declined and had no choice but to live in isolation in order to survive. At present, because of this lowly appearance, we aren't even comparable to a small broken down village. However, we were left undisturbed these past years because this area is known as the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range. Every type of profound beast is rampant; the least violent are Nascent Profound Beasts, and the scariest are the Earth Profound Beasts. And it is even rumored that there are three terrifying Sky Profound Beasts dwelling within this mountain range. This is the profound beasts' paradise. They

reject humans who step foot into this place; they would group together to attack if humans entered the area. At the same time, the deeper you go, the higher the level of profound beasts get.”

“As for this place, it is the entire Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range’s center. A few humans may operate around this Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range’s border in order to obtain profound beast cores but aside from those who are exceptionally strong, there was essentially none with the courage and capability to arrive in this region. That and the exceptionally strong who had such an ability would not come to such a trivial place.”



“But it seems as if there are no profound beasts that live near here?” Yun Che frowned, immediately after he finished speaking when he suddenly realized: “Could it possibly be because... of the Phoenix’s essence?”

“Right.” Feng Baichuan nodded: “To tell you the truth, the Phoenix Ruins we have been guarding for generations is behind this area and contains the remaining essence of the phoenix that it left behind. Although the essence is weak, it has never scattered. In this world, which profound beast could possibly withstand the prestigious pressure of a Prehistoric Divine Beast? Who would dare approach?”

“So it was like this.”

Yun Che slowly nodded and the expression on his face slightly fluctuated. This place actually had a Phoenix Ruin. Not only that, the essence of the Phoenix had never dispersed. The best explanation was that this was the place where the Phoenix Ruin resided, and it was something the Phoenix had left behind!

Something that a Prehistoric Divine Beast left behind!

The blood in Yun Che's entire body started to boil as he only thought about this... One could imagine how large of a sensation would occur if word of a Phoenix Ruin being here were to spread.

“Since this is the case, then how did those vicious people who wished to seize the thing you’re guarding enter?” Questioned Yun Che. It was absolutely impossible for a normal mercenary group to have the strength to face spirit profound beasts; and even more so earth realm profound beasts. Forget about a hundred people, even if the scale was ten times larger, encountering an earth realm profound beast would definite result in a complete wipe-out.

Considering this Thousand Beast Mountain Range’s density of beasts walking on a road without encountering any spirit profound beasts or earth realm profound beasts was even more impossible.

“I don’t know.” Feng Baichuan shook his head: “I want to know more than anyone else how they managed to enter this area. Perhaps, this is the fate we deserve.”

Could it be that they were borrowing the power of profound beasts that could fly extremely high? Yun Che muttered to himself, but he immediately rejected this conjecture. This Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range had an innumerable amount of profound beasts. It was inevitable that there include a large number of flying profound beasts amongst them so even if they used normal flying profound beasts, it was still impossible to enter. This could only be done by profound beasts at the level of the Fierce Storm Hawk and

the Giant Snow Eagle, who were able to fly thousands or even ten thousands of meters high. But due to the horrifying difficulty in controlling them, the amount of people who had the ability to handle them were simply too few. Even Xiao Sect's Outer Sect, New Moon City's strongest sect, only had one, so how could this ordinary mercenary group possess any.

# Chapter 104: The Impending Crisis

“Let me take a look at your injuries, I should be able to deal with them as long as they’re not too strange.” While sighing, Feng Baichuan walked to the front of the bed.

However, Yun Che shook his head: “No need, I have my own ways of dealing with these minor injuries. There’s no need for you to worry. You’re currently facing a great catastrophe, so there must be a lot of things for you to do as clan leader. You don’t have to mind us.”

Feng Baichuan nodded and did not insist: “Okay then, you guys stay

here and have a good rest. If you need anything, just give me a call... I hope those vicious men would come a bit later.”

Feng Baichuan opened the door and walked out with a worried expression. Yun Che placed his hand on his chin and fell into deep thought.

“Are your injuries really okay? You did fall from such a great height previously, after all.” Lan Xueruo asked worriedly.

Yun Che shook his head gently and smiled: “ I remembered telling Senior Sister that I’m a genius doctor. To a genius doctor, these kind of small injuries are nothing.”

To others, the injuries on his body would definitely be considered heavy but in his eyes, it could only be counted as light injuries.

“Genius doctor? Even if you are a genius doctor, does it mean you can just throw your life away like this!” Lan Xueruo’s eyes reddened as she thought about how Yun Che had saved her with his life, two consecutive times: “Had you really died, I would never be at peace for the rest of my life.”

“Haha,” Yun Che laughed: “Yuanba was right, Senior Sister is really too kind. I was the one who had been a burden to Senior Sister in the first place so I should be the one to blame myself, but now Senior Sister is blaming herself instead.”



Lan Xueruo's gaze wavered. Biting her lower lip, she said softly: "Junior Brother Yun, in future, please do not do what you did just now again, okay? Actually, there are many protective devices on my body so I won't be hurt that easily. If something similar were to happen again, you cannot protect me without regard for your own life. It is enough if you just protect yourself."

"I can't do it." Yun Che shook his head obstinately.

"Why can't you do that? Do you not treasure your life?" Lan Xueruo's heart skipped a beat.

"No! I do treasure my life a lot. No matter the situation, I would still

not allow myself to die. It's just that... Just that..." Not letting Lan Xueruo see the sorrow deep within his gaze, Yun Che closed his eyes: "I once let down a girl who had treated me best... In the end, because of me, she died in my embrace... Perhaps I won't be able to forget that pain even after ten lifetimes. From that day on, I swore to never let any girl that treated me well to suffer any harm... Never!"

"...That girl, she shouldn't be be your current wife, right?" Lan Xueruo look at Yun Che, her gaze revealed a complexity that even she did not understand herself.

"Of course not. But the way she treats me is still considered to be nice, so how I treated her should

also be considered nice.” Thinking of Xia Qingyue, Yun Che smiled gently. Even though the few days they had shared the same bed were short, the memories were still wonderful. However, they would probably never meet again in future, yet the identity as his “wife” was firmly imprinted deep within his heart because she was the first wife in two lifetimes; despite them only being husband and wife in name.

“Junior Brother Yun, you are only sixteen years old! Not only are you married at such a young age, you also have a maiden who sacrificed her life for you... perhaps there are still other maidens who have been harmed by you. I have seen many men who are fickle in love and

passionate, but it is still my first time seeing a man who is as young as you.” Lan Xueruo said while laughing. With regards to the identity of Yun Che’s “wife”, she was well aware. That was because she had sent someone to New Moon City to investigate Yun Che’s entire background. The fact of his wife Xia Qingyue being a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard, was well known by everyone in Floating Cloud City. This also let the Xia Family she was a part of, to indistinctively become a giant figure in Floating Cloud City that no one dared to provoke. After all, within the four major sects, Frozen Cloud Asgard had the least disciples but they were well known to protect their own.”

Yun Che smiled, but declined to comment as he asked in reply: “Then does Senior Sister have someone she likes?”

“Me? Of course not. As if Senior Sister is like you, womanizing everywhere at such a young age.” Lan Xueruo pursed her lips and laughed.

“Phew, how lucky that you don’t have one, else I would have died from sadness.” Yun Che heaved a small sigh of relief, and even his expression loosened up quite a bit.

“... You little brat! I didn’t wrong you when I said you were fickle about love.” Lan Xueruo stuck up her nose to give a face of rebuke. After that, she raised her attractive

face as her expression wore a slightly wishful longing: "The one I, your Senior Sister wants to marry in the future will certainly be the unrivaled hero that is able to conquer the world. A fickle-minded brat like you is not my cup of tea at all. Besides, you're already married."

Yun Che: "...."

"Have a good rest. Little Snow is too tired from the previous flight. It has exhausted all its strength and may have to go into slumber for quite some time. We can leave as soon as it awakens. As for the people here, I have already promised the two little fellows that I will help them within the limits of my power."

After speaking with Yun Che for

awhile, she could clearly feel that he was straining himself and thus, she didn't continue to disturb him. After walking out, she gently closed the door.

“Interested in the thing they’re guarding?” Jasmine suddenly asked once Lan Xueruo had left.

“Of course!” Yun Che replied with his eyes closed: “Since the essence of the phoenix is here, there’s a great possibility that it is something that the phoenix had left behind! The Phoenix, a prehistoric divine beast! Even if it’s a feather, it will also be of the divine profound grade! Now that outsiders have found out about this place, even if they don’t obtain what they’re protecting, there is still a high

possibility that they would spread news about this place. When that time comes, who knows whose hands it would land into.”

“Hmph! How can a mere mortal dabble in something that belongs to a prehistoric divine beast.” Jasmine coldly snorted in disdain and then spoke no longer, as if she was giving a kind warning to Yun Che.

In the midst of silence, Yun Che checked the injuries on his body before immersing his consciousness into the Sky Poison Pearl to find a dozen or more herbs. After fusing them for awhile, he obtained a lump of pitch-black gelatinous substance. He evenly rubbed it on top of his left shoulder before closing his eyes and falling fast



asleep.

When Yun Che woke up again, it was already the afternoon of the second day. He was woken by the chaotic noises that came from outside.

“... If you’re smart, then quickly undo the seal at the back mountain! You are the guardian family here, you would surely have a way to undo it! Don’t make us force you to do it!” Came a boorish and violent voice which carried an extremely vicious and threatening menace.

“That seal has always been there and we honestly have no idea what it is! Much less the way to undo it! We are but a small clan that lives here in seclusion. If we did indeed

have some sort of treasure, why would our clan be reduced to such a pitiful state.” That was Feng Baichuan’s voice.

“HAHAHAHA! Do you think we’re three year olds? Who would believe your lies! Today, our captain and vice-captain have both came personally. If you continue to play dumb, see if we’ll wipe out your entire clan!”

.....

These voices... Could they be...

Yun Che instantly sat up from his bed. Although his left shoulder was still hurting and not as flexible when he moved it, it was much better compared to yesterday. Most

of the small injuries on his body were almost half-healed and his body was no longer as weak as it was yesterday; at least he had no problem walking normally now. Just as he wanted to get down the bed, the room's door was pushed open and Lan Xueruo hurriedly rushed in. Seeing that Yun Che was already awake, she anxiously said: "Not good, Junior Brother Yun, the Black Demon Mercenaries Group actually came today. They've brought more than one hundred men and completely barricaded the village entrance."

"Why are they so fast?" Yun Che frowned.

"Clan Leader Feng and the rest were also caught unprepared, but

now the entire clan is taking precaution.” Lan Xueruo’s expression was filled with anxiety.

At that moment, another wave of loud roar came from outside; “Is the little beauty from yesterday here! No treasure? That’s fine too! Just hand out that little beauty first! Let us uncles enjoy ourselves first, and perhaps we’ll even forget about the treasure, hahahaha.”

A wave of laughter was heard from a distance. Yun Che’s eyebrows locked in a frown... He suddenly understood why this “Black Demon” mercenary group had come over to attack so quickly... It was obvious that they too, were uncertain if this place had any so-called treasure here. From the

profound strength of the people here, anyone with who was sane would deduce that even if there was any sort of treasure, it wouldn't be that good anyway. But yesterday Lan Xueruo had fought three people from this mercenary group and Lan Xueruo's beauty was so great that it shocked them into thinking that she was a celestial being. The reason why they rushed here was not for some kind of treasure but rather Lan Xueruo! They were afraid that she would've left if they had come a bit later.

"This group of wicked people!" Lan Xueruo nibbled her lips as her face flushed with anger: "Junior Brother Yun, you're still injured so you should stay here and rest. Do not go out no matter what. I'll go teach

them a lesson.”

If Lan Xueruo had immediately killed those three people yesterday, it wouldn't have resulted in such a impatient attack. But Yun Che was unable to blame Lan Xueruo; after all, she was still a girl and her heart was originally soft. He pulled Lan Xueruo back and asked with concentrated eyebrows: “What are the cultivation levels of the people in this mercenary group?”

“There appears to be a requirement to enter; every one of them are all above the Elementary Profound Realm! The one with the lowest profound strength is at the first level of the Nascent Profound Realm. There are more than eighty between the first and fifth level, and

more than thirty of them are above the fifth level of Nascent Profound Realm. Also, four more... who should be their captain and vice-captain, should have reached the True Profound Realm.” Lan Xueruo replied as she creased her eyebrows. With such a line-up, it was basically impossible for Feng Baichuan and the others who were only at the tenth level of Elementary Profound to hold them back.

“True Profound Realm...” Yun Che sucked in a slight breath as the hand that held onto Lan Xueruo tightened: “No! You cannot go! You heard what they had yelled earlier; the motive for their visit is most likely for you. Let’s not talk about over a hundred people of the Nascent Profound Realm, just those

True Profound Realm captains alone, are not people we could handle.”

“They have already barricaded the village’s exit so we won’t be able to escape even if we wanted to.

Furthermore... perhaps I can still deal with them with enough effort.”

As Lan Xueruo said that, she stretched out her hands and removed the pearl necklace on her neck. Soon after, her profound energy quickly rose under Yun Che’s surprised gaze: “The pearls on this necklace are known as the ‘Profound Locking Pearl’. When worn, it is able to suppress the wearer’s profound strength by five ranks. My true profound strength cultivation is at the third level of True Profound Realm. They won’t



be able to hurt me that easily.”

The change in Lan Xueruo’s profound energy astonished Yun Che. Eighteen years old, at the third level of True Profound Realm... This was a completely different and astonishing realm from Xiao Luocheng who had been the number one genius of New Moon City! He asked in amazement: “Senior Sister, why did you...”

“I chose to do it because I didn’t want to attract too much attention. Anyways, you stay here and I’ll think of an idea to bring you out of here.”

Even though Lan Xueruo had finished and was about to leave, she was pulled back again by Yun Che:

“Even if Senior Sister has the strength of the True Profound Realm, the opponent has four people in the True Profound Realm! While I cannot say it for sure, their average level could also be higher than yours... If there isn't a way to get out of this, I will go out with you.”

# Chapter 105: Black Demon

The narrow valley path sandwiched between the walls of two mountains became the only gateway to this little village that was aloof from worldly affairs; yet at this moment, this one and only gateway was firmly obstructed by a group of people emanating a wild wolf-like aura. Each and every one of them sent a fierce and bantering look at the crowd that was overwhelmed with fear in front of them.

“I have already said many times, we are nothing but a normal little village. There is no so-called treasure, much less the person you

are looking for.” Feng Baichuan clenched his fist tightly as he tried to not let his anger erupt. Any single wicked person in front of them would be superior to anyone from their tribe; this was a group of villains that was simply impossible for them to oppose.

“A normal little village? Hahahaha, would a normal little village be located in the heart of this Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range? Would it be guarding such a strange seal? In my eyes, you guys are clearly a wilting guardian family!”

Following a wave of crazed laughter, a fierce-looking middle-aged man wearing a black cap walked out from the Black Demon Mercenary Group. The three men

following behind him all had malicious smiles on their faces and gave out a profound aura strong strong enough to make Feng Baichuan pale. He looked askance at Feng Baichuan and sneered: “This daddy is the head here, Captain Black Demon of the Black Demon Mercenary Group. We don’t have the slightest interest in massacring the rubbish, so I shall give you one last chance. All you need to do is hand over the treasure and the beauty, and I will swear on my title as Captain that we will leave without touching a single person here. However, if you still fail to appreciate my kindness,” Black Demon swung the Wolf Fanged Mace in his hand and laughed maliciously: “We don’t mind killing another hundred more

people.”

Low cries of dismay resounded. Everyone who was behind Feng Baichuan had faces full of anger and fear; some small children cowered in their mothers’ embrace while trembling and cried out loud out of fear. Some of the elderlies were trembling out of anger as they continuously raged: “You villainous thieves... will definitely receive retribution.”

Feng Baichuan answered through firmly clenched teeth: “When I say there’s nothing, there really is nothing! Even we, don’t even know what that seal is! Even if you killed us all, it would still be impossible for us to know.”

“Oh ho! You’re pretty tight lipped. It seems that you won’t be honest without some bloodshed. No problem, we have plenty of time to slowly play around with you.” Black Demon laughed maliciously and then gave a glance to a middle-aged man who carried an axe behind him: “Blacky, go and educate them for me! Kill or cripple them as you please.”

“Roger! Captain!” The one called “Blacky” carried a big chopper and walked out, swung his big blade around to show off, and licked the corner of his lips while giving off a contemptuous look, as if looking at a bunch of ants: “Those that don’t know any better, let grandfather here come and educate you.”

After finished speaking, his blade came swinging straight for Feng Baichuan.

“Don’t think that you can hurt our Clan Leader!!”

The three elders behind Feng Baichuan rushed out at the same time and faced Blacky. The three elders were all at the tenth level of Elementary Profound Realm, so even if Feng Baichuan was included, there was no way they were a match for Blacky who was in the sixth level of the Nascent Profound Realm. Blacky’s first strike directly cut open the first elder’s profound energy defence with its overbearing blade aura, leaving a long bloody gash on his left chest.



“Mountain Splitting Blade!”

Blacky gave a cold laugh and then the power of his blade became more and more vicious. He was not born in a sect; thus he naturally did not have any profound arts.

However, even though his profound skills were of the lowest grade, given the level of his superior profound strength, even if he didn't use profound skills, he would still be able to easily crush Feng Baichuan and others. The activation of his profound skill was like the autumn gale that cleanly swept away fallen leaves. Wherever his blade landed, a wound was left on every one of the elders. He followed with a sudden kick that landed heavily on Feng Baichuan's lower abdomen, sending him thirty feet

away while a large amount of fresh blood spurted from his mouth.

“Clan Leader!!”

“Father!”

While crying, Feng Zu'er and Feng Xian'er rushed out from Feng Caiyun's embrace, threw themselves beside Feng Baichuan, and pulled at his body. The three elders all fell to the ground. Blood flowed from their wounds as their faces filled with despair.

“Hehe, these two brats must be your son and daughter?” Blacky dragged his blade and walked step by step towards Feng Baichuan to then sinisterly say: “Let me see if you'll still be so tight-lipped after I carve

your daughter's eyes out!"

In the midst of Feng Baichuan's shrunken pupils, he suddenly stretched out and grabbed at a terrorized Feng Xian'er.

"Stop!!"

An angry and delicate shout came from the side, and at the same time, a snow-white glow came flying like a meteor. Blacky's reaction was fast as well; he retracted his hand and panickedly retreated as a jade-like snow-white longsword accurately stabbed at the position he was standing earlier. Cold sweat erupted from his entire body. Following the exchange, a snow-white figure landed and pulled out the jade sword from the ground to point it at

Blacky along with a cold gaze filled with fury.

The sound of gasping and gulping was immediately heard from the Black Demon Mercenary Group the instant Lan Xueruo appeared. They all stared at Lan Xueruo as if in a daze as every one of their eyes bulged straight out; their expression became sluggish, and a large amount of saliva unconsciously flowed out.

“Ca... Captain! That’s her! That’s her!” The broadaxe man from yesterday excited exclaimed to Black Demon: “I didn’t lie to you right? Isn’t she like a fairy!”

Black Demon’s pair of eyes were already wide open from staring, and

even both of his hands started trembling. He resolutely swallowed a mouth of saliva and hissed:

“Beautiful! Truly beautiful! Damn, there actually exists such a beautiful woman in this world! The women this daddy had played with before are simply unsightly, compared to her!”

“We must get this woman! If I could sleep with this kind of woman for a night, my life would be complete.”

“Hehe, since she has already come out, isn’t she already yours.” The broadaxe man flattered: “However, even though she might look young, her profound strength has indeed reached the True Profound Realm. If Group Leader wants to take her, some effort should be needed to do

so.”

“This daddy and Black Tiger, Black Devil, Black Wolf, who are all in the True Profound Realm, in addition to a hundred more brothers still can’t deal with a little beauty?

Hahahaha.” Black Demon rubbed his hands and laughed without inhibitions. In those passionate eyes, it was as if Lan Xueruo was already one of his belongings.

“Blacky, fall back. I’ll personally deal with this lil’ beauty myself.”

Blacky obediently fell back. The people of the Black Demon Mercenary Group were all leering at Lan Xueruo, but they could only swallow their own saliva. They could only fantasize, because only

Black Demon would get to enjoy such a woman.

“Hey pretty, what’s your name? How old are you this year?” Black Demon lecherously asked while carrying his Wolf Fanged Mace and revealing a mouth of disgusting huge yellow teeth.

The profound strength aura emitted from Black Demon’s body made Lan Xueruo tighten her eyebrows... Third level of the True Profound Realm, he was on the same level as her. She took a silent breath; her expression remained indifferent as she coldly shouted: “You guys are a mercenary group. You merely do jobs after taking commissions from people, you are not a bandit group! The more you commit injustices,

the more likely you are bound to suffer from the wrath of Heaven! This is not a place that you should occupy. Leave immediately!”

Her celestial aura and grandeur faintly assaulted Black Demon’s senses, and caused his bones to become limp when seeing her at a close distance. He once again firmly swallowed his drool and laughed lewdly: “Leave here? With pleasure, with pleasure. Since little beauty has opened her mouth, this matter can be easily settled. If little beauty agrees to follow me back and be my lady, I, Black Demon, will promise to leave immediately and never to come back to this place in my lifetime. Little beauty, what do you say?”



“Such insolence!” Lan Xueruo angrily roared, then immediately realized that those two words were not fitting. With additional anger on top of rage, she knew that it would be useless to say anything to these group of villains, and directly stabbed at Black Demon... The only thing she could think of that could resolve the current crisis was to defeat this Black Demon, seize him, and then coerce the Black Demon Mercenary Group into retreating.

Black Demon did not expect Lan Xueruo to suddenly attack and panickedly raised his Wolf Fanged Mace to block, and was momentarily flustered by a few of Lan Xueruo’s consecutive sword strikes.

A gold glint enveloped Lan Xueruo's sword. The reflection of the sword was gorgeous and swift as it dazzled Black Demon. Only two \*rip rip\* sounds could be heard when the light armor on his body immediately split in two, and even his protective profound energy was cut open as a chunk of flesh suddenly flew out.

The mercenaries of the Black Demon Mercenary Group were all stumped. This girl that looked only seventeen to eighteen, actually injured their Group Leader Black Demon the instant she attacked... Black Demon was someone with the profound strength at the third level of the True Profound Realm!

Black Demon's anger also erupted

when receiving the sword strike that was neither heavy nor light. He let out a loud roar and swung his Wolf Fanged Mace; Three lines of snake-shaped electric sparks appeared strangely on the mace, and a feeling of dangerous power was released with a “Bzzzzzt” sound.

Electric attribute profound skill? Lan Xueruo was faintly alarmed in her heart. A group leader of a normal mercenary group, actually had an electric attribute profound skill.

“Mad Snake Thunder Dance!”

The huge lightning-covered Wolf Fanged Mace drew a gigantic circular arc around Lan Xueruo.

Unable to avoid the strike, Lan Xueruo's sword magnificently glowed with a golden light and actually faced the attack head-on with the sword's body.

Ding!!

Sparks went flying in all directions; Lan Xueruo's jade sword instantly warped by a huge margin, and impact of the humongous power caused Lan Xueruo to flip backwards. However, the moment her feet touched the ground, she again bursted forward towards Black Demon. A golden light flashed across her beautiful eyes as she muttered a soft chant that only she herself could hear...

“Mon... arch... Sword...”

Since subduing Black Demon was the only hope to resolve the crisis, Lan Xueruo no longer had any reason to hold back. She thrust straight at Black Demon with her strongest profound skill.

The instant the sword thrust, Yun Che's gaze suddenly went into turmoil... Because the sword style that Lan Xueruo was currently using was a kind of sword style he had never seen before. It was clearly just an ordinary sword thrust, yet the sword's approach was not only violent and overbearing, but also carried a sense of unconcealed pride; as if it was an arrogant monarch who looked down on the world, unrivaled and unstoppable in its path.

Since “Mad Snake Thunder Dance” had a huge and formidable power, Black Demon never expected that Lan Xueruo would actually be able to block his “Mad Snake Thunder Dance” and counterattack so fast. He raised his Wolf Fanged Mace and blocked his front, but the moment the sword tip touched the Wolf Fanged Mace, Black Demon’s expression suddenly changed greatly; because from the club’s body, there came an astonishing strength that he could not defend against. Accompanying a “ding” sound, his body was fiercely blown backwards, and the Wolf Fanged Mace in his hands was also unexpectedly blown out of his grip as it flew far far away. Yet, the momentum of Lan Xueruo’s sword did not weaken in the slightest; the

sword's tip thrust straight toward Black Demon's left shoulder, broke through his protective profound energy as if cutting tofu, and exited from the backside of his shoulder... Directly piercing a clear hole through his shoulder.

# Chapter 106:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (1)

Black Demon howled painfully as a big cloud of bloody mist erupted from his shoulder. He incited the ferocity in his nature and with a big bellow of rage, unexpectedly grabbed the blade of Lan Xueruo's jade sword and swung out ferociously... Since Lan Xueruo's "Monarch Sword" had just exhausted its power and Black Demon's strength was astonishingly great, the sword had actually been forcibly taken away



forcibly by Black Demon and caught her off guard.

Crap! Seeing how Lan Xueruo had injured Black Demon with a thrust, Yun Che's heart immediately thumped. If she had kept on sparring with him, they could've stalled for a little while longer; but stabbing him through the shoulder would undoubtedly rouse his ferocious nature. One could imagine the following consequences.

Black Demon grabbed Lan Xueruo's sword and fell back panickedly. His face had already turned malevolent, and a wild roar came from his mouth: "GO AND... CATCH THAT BITCH FOR ME! As for the rest, KILL THEM ALL!!"

As Yun Che expected, the furious Black Demon had commanded his men to directly attack.

Momentarily, the Black Demon Mercenary Group that had been waiting for quite a while grabbed their weapons and rushed up while roaring. The three vice-captains started attacking Lan Xueruo as well.

If they were to rush up here, who knows how many here would be killed or injured. Yun Che did not dare to hesitate; he walked quickly to Lan Xueruo's side while grabbing onto a Sky Tremor Bomb, and threw it with all his strength.

BOOM!!!!

As the Sky Tremor Bomb landed, it

released a huge boom, as if thunder had descended to earth. The explosion blasted away the dozen or more Black Demon mercenaries who had rushed at the front-most lines, and they laid on the floor whilst wimping in pain. Six of them had both of their legs blown away; three of them had the flesh of their entire body turned into paste; while the rest suffered from different degrees of damage.

The Black Demon Mercenary Group that had just begun to rush in, paused momentarily. All of their expressions became lifeless as they stared at the big hole that had been blasted open. Even Black Demon, who was applying medicine on his wound, had his eyes wide open. The three vice-captains also retreated a

step back with faces filled with horror.

“What... what was that... What just happened?”

Yun Che stood in front of Lan Xueruo with the second Sky Tremor Bomb in his right and a Poison Fire Rod in his left . His gaze swept coldly over the Black Demon mercenaries who were rooted by fear before coldly laughing:

“Whoever wants to die, come take a step forward and try!”

Lan Xueruo took a look at the item on Yun Che's and cried out silently: “Sky Tremor Bomb? How do you have the Xiao Sect's Sky Tremor Bomb?”

“I took them from the treasury of the branch sect.” Yun Che replied softly while holding onto Lan Xueruo. They fell back step-by-step until they reached Feng Baichuan’s side.

The Sky Tremor Bomb just now had brought about a huge deterrence, causing these Black Demon mercenaries to momentarily not dare to push forward.

“Clan Leader Feng, do you know of any places where we can temporarily hide in?” Yun Che raised the hand that held the Sky Tremor Bomb while staring fiercely at the Black Demon Mercenary Group in front as he lowered his voice to ask Feng Baichuan. He had a total of six Sky Tremor Bombs:

three had been used when dealing with Xiao Zaichi, one had just been used, and currently, only two were left on his body. The most he could do was cause a temporary deterrence.

Yun Che's words caused Feng Baichuan's expression to turn rigid for a moment, but he remained silent.

Yun Che lowered his voice and asked: "These people said you guys have a seal in the back mountain, is it true? You guys surely have a way to open the seal, and allow your clansmen to retreat inside before reactivating the seal again. At the very least, it will temporarily keep everyone safe."

“Out of the question!” What surprised Yun Che was that Feng Baichuan did not deny it, but instead rejected: “That place is the sacred ground the phoenix left behind, and also where the divine spirit of the phoenix lies. If every clansman were to go there, we would offend the divine spirit of the phoenix, and the sins that our clan committed will never be forgiven.”

Yun Che gritted his teeth and said: “These people all carry an extremely heavy scent of bloodlust and killing intent. This means that they have killed quite a number of people. I reckon that claiming to be a mercenary group is just a cover and they are actually a bandit group who kill people for their property. If they were really determined to kill

us, they would not have a shred of mercy when killing your clansmen! Your clansmen are almost all dead, why do you still care about offending or not offending!!”

Yun Che’s words caused Feng Baichuan’s expression to violently fluctuate. After taking a glance at Feng Zu’er and Feng Xian’er who were huddled tightly around his body, he gritted his teeth and quietly instructed the elders by his side: “Inform every one of our clansmen to retreat to the rear mountains!”

“Clan Leader, could it be that you’re...”

“Go quickly! Protecting our lives is more important, do not worry about



anything else for now!” Feng Baichuan sternly commanded with firm determination.

The people who had received the command started to retreat in the direction of the rear mountain. Yun Che and Lan Xueruo continued to stand there, holding up the Sky Tremor Bomb, which was like a reaper’s death scythe, and deterred the Black Demon Mercenary Group from taking a step forward.

“What exactly is that?” Black Demon pressed down on his shoulder while asking with his face twitching.

“I have heard that Xiao Sect’s artifact department had created a formidable artifact. All you have to

do is throw it and it will result in a terrifying energy blast. It seems he just threw that kind of item!”

“What? Xiao Sect? Did you say Xiao Sect?” Black Demon’s body suddenly shivered and he nearly fell on his bottom in alarm. He suddenly recalled that this beauty in front of him appeared to be only seventeen to eighteen years old, yet had the strength of the third level of the True Profound Realm. Aside from the four major sects, who else could groom such a monster?

The more he thought about it, the more he realized its possibility. All of a sudden, Black Demon started to sweat profusely. Had he known that they belonged to the Xiao Sect, he would not have dared to provoke

them even if he had the courage of ten thousand. However, he had already provoked them...

Black Demon gritted his teeth... In that case, everyone besides the woman must be killed! If anyone escaped... To the Xiao Sect, eradicating his little mercenary group would be as simple as crushing a small ant.

“They’re trying to escape!”

Vice-Captain Black Wolf reported. Taking advantage of the time when they were afraid to move forward, Feng Baichuan brought his clansmen and retreated hurriedly, rushing straight for the rear mountains.

“Fuck them, they want to run? The rear mountains are surrounded by cliffs! Even if they were to grow wings, they can forget about flying away! After them!” Black Demon commanded.

“But... but...” Black Wolf took a look at the Sky Tremor Bomb in Yun Che’s hand and did not dare to make the slightest of movements.

“An item with that sort of frightening power must be extremely precious! They shouldn’t have too many on them, maybe the one he’s holding is the last one! Split into two groups and go right away!”

The Black Demon Mercenary Group immediately dispersed; splitting

into two groups from the left and right, they roared as they chased toward the direction of the rear mountains. Yun Che's expression turned solemn. He then swung his arm and threw the Sky Tremor Bomb to the right before quickly taking out the last Sky Tremor Bomb and throwing it to the left with all his strength.

BOOM!!

BOOM!!

The two loud explosions blasted the people from the Black Demon Mercenary Group into a complete mess. Blood-curdling screeches sounded again and again as the explosions filled the entire valley entrance up with sand clouds. The

Black Demon Mercenary Group stopped their pursuit once again; some even fell on their bottom trying to fall back and did not dare to move forward anymore.

Treasuring one's life is human instinct, and in the face of such a life-threatening menace, most of the Black Demon Mercenary Group were unwilling dash forward at the risk of their life.

“Senior Sister, we must hurry!!”  
After using the last Sky Tremor Bomb, Yun Che took advantage of the sand cloud to veil their movement. Yun Che pulled Lan Xueruo's hand and quickly ran in the direction Feng Baichuan went towards.

There was no trace of Yun Che and

the others once the sand cloud subsided. The destroyed village had no signs of life, and only some of the scattered people that were running in the direction of the rear mountain could be seen far away. Black Demon cursed before bellowing: "What are you guys standing there for! Go and chase them down! Except for the woman, kill all without exception!!"

Yun Che's injuries had not fully healed and his body was rather weak. However, with Lan Xueruo's assistance, they were able to quickly catch up to Feng Baichuan. A total of two hundred and twelve clansmen all followed closely behind him; not a single clansman was left behind, be it the elderlies or the children.

Murderous shouts came from behind and seemed to get closer and closer, with the possibility of catching up anytime.

After stepping into the rear mountain region, they were faced with cliffs so tall their summits could not be seen. A huge sigil measuring several meters was embedded in the mountain wall in front of them. A beautiful red color emerged from the entire sigil, glowing bright and dark at times, as a pattern of numerous scarlet flames that fiercely burned, lay at the center of the sigil.

“Is this the seal the Black Demon Mercenary Group mentioned earlier?” Yun Che raised his head as he curiously looked at the strange



red sigil.

“That’s right. This is a sigil which seals the ruins the phoenix left behind. Only those with the bloodline of the phoenix can open it using fresh blood.” Feng Baichuan replied.

“Clan Leader, are we really going in? Our ancestors said before that only one person could enter at a time. If so many people were to enter together, we might offend the divine spirit of the phoenix.” A elder asked with a solemn face.

“There’s no other choice.” Feng Baichuan quickly went in front of the sigil, bit his finger, and dripped his blood on the sigil.

Immediately, the faintly-glowing sigil suddenly glowed bright red before vanishing on the spot to reveal a mysterious entrance.

“Quick! Go in quickly!” Feng Baichuan, who had lifted the sigil, ordered hurriedly.

The clansmen of the phoenix clan swarmed in like fish. This sacred ground that they had not dared to rashly step in before, had become their only life-saving escape route. Among them, many would have chosen death than do something that would offend the divine spirit of the phoenix. However, they could not ignore their family and children.

The Black Demon Mercenary Group

caught up right when everyone entered the cave.. Feng Baichuan ran into the cave quickly, and with a simple hand gesture the red sigil reappeared to completely cover up the cave's entrance.

“Fuck! They really did know how to lift this seal!” Black Demon clenched his fist and growled fiercely: “Since they kept denying previously, this means that some treasure really is hidden behind this seal!”

“Captain, what do we do now?”

“What do we do? We’re obviously going to wait here!” Black Demon laughed coldly: “They think we won’t be able to capture them once they escape inside? Heh, there’s

definitely no food inside the cave,  
much less water. I don't believe  
they would choose to die from  
starvation and dehydration than to  
come out. I'd like to see how many  
days they'll last!"

# Chapter 107:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (2)

Yun Che was shocked to find that the interior was actually a flat stone chamber after going through the seal formation. The stone chamber was unnaturally spacious and measured at least a hundred meters long and wide. Not to mention just two hundred people, it could easily fit even ten times of that. Both sides of the stone chamber had very long stone stairs and it seemed as if there was another floor above. There was a long walkway to the

front of the stone chamber which was approximately a few dozen meters in length. At the end of the hall, there was a gently rotating red-colored seal formation that was identical to the seal outside.

The seal entrance could cut off sight, but it wasn't soundproof. The howls of the Black Demon Mercenaries outside continuously floated in.

“Blow up this formation!” This was Black Demon's voice.

Following which, a series of light crashing sounds were carried in from outside, and a sound like the squealing of a dying pig suddenly rang out. “AH! FIRE! My hand's on fire. AHHHHHH~::~”

“Get back! All of you, get back! Damn it! With such a strange seal formation, some sort of heavenly treasure must be hidden within! All of you, take shifts and keep watch here! I refuse to believe that they won’t ever come out!”

Even though they had reached a safe sanctuary, the shadow of fear still loomed upon everyone in the Phoenix clan and chatter that came from outside threw them into even greater despair. Yun Che furrowed his eyebrows, and said to Lan Xueruo after a long while of contemplating, “Senior Sister, how much longer until your Giant Snow Eagle awakens.”

Lan Xueruo shook her head, worrying: “I have no idea either.

What Little Snow has exhausted this time is not merely strength, but also its vitality. She might need a long while before she will wake; maybe a week, maybe a month... or perhaps even longer.”

“If it wakes up, how many people can it carry in one go?”

“Ten people should not be a problem.” Lan Xueruo spoke.

“Ten people....” Looking at the crowd of over two hundred people in the stone chamber, his eyebrows furrowed closer and closer together. Were the Giant Snow Eagle to awaken, he could easily escape with Lan Xueruo without any problems. But he believed, with Lan Xueruo’s temperament and disposition, she



would definitely not leave these people to fend for themselves... Even though she was not responsible in the slightest, for their survival.

“In the end, we had hide out here. Hopefully, we won’t offend the phoenix’s divine spirit.” Feng Baichuan stood at the entrance of the hole with face filled with gloom and frustration, as well as grief and helplessness.

“At least your lives are temporarily saved. The phoenixes are divine spirits, they can’t possibly fault you for something like this.” Yun Che said as he walked to Feng Baichuan’s side.

“I hope this is so.” Feng Baichuan

heaved another sigh, “For all these years, our clan had always known our place and kept to ourselves. With all caution, we’ve never dared to do anything that might anger the phoenix’s spirit, as we’ve been simply too afraid to. Who would’ve thought that we’d still end up doing so today.... And even so, this can only be our temporary haven; you’ve heard the voices of those villains as well. They are obviously going to keep constant watch at the entrance of the cave. There is neither food nor a water source here; we won’t be able to keep at this for long. This is especially true for the children and the elderly.... Sigh.”

“If it’s food and water, I actually have some here. For two hundred

people, if used sparingly, it should be able to sustain you for two weeks or so.” Yun Che said.

“You?” Feng Baichuan looked towards Yun Che, an expression of disbelief on his face. Yun Che clearly appeared neat and tidy and had nothing on him, how could he possibly have enough food and water to sustain two hundred people for more than ten days?

Yun Che didn’t bother to waste time explaining; with a touch of his left hand, he placed six cyan-colored spatial rings into Feng Baichuan’s hands. These spatial rings were also taken from Xiao Sect’s treasury as well. They were filled with water and all sorts of food. Evidently, the treasury had not

only been regarded by the Xiao Branch Sect as a storage area for valuable items, but also as a shelter in case of emergencies. The security measures in front of the treasury were immensely difficult to breach. Therefore, if an accident were to occur, they could escape to the treasury as the food and water specially stored there would be enough to last them for a while, enough to tide them over the disaster.

After inspecting the spatial rings for a while, his face revealed an expression of happiness and surprise. At this time, Yun Che's voice came from beside him, "Clan leader Feng, there are some issues I don't quite understand. Your clan is one of the Phoenix's bloodline, and

the Phoenix is a primordial divine beast. Those of the phoenix's bloodline are far more noble and powerful than those of mortal blood, but why have you been unable to break through even the Elementary Profound Realm? I remember you mentioning a 'curse' once, could it be that this is related to that curse?"

Feng Baichuan was shocked, and didn't speak for a long while.

"I have been too presumptuous. This should be your clan's secret, I shouldn't probe too far." Yun Che said immediately upon seeing Feng Baichuan fall into silence.

"No!" Feng Baichuan shook his head, and laughed self-

deprecatingly, “What sort of clan secret does this count as? It is only the punishment and retribution we have to suffer.”

“Punishment? Retribution?” Yun Che was surprised.

Feng Baichuan closed his eyes lightly, and spoke as his expression turned somber, “The phoenix is a primordial divine beast. It had descended upon the Profound Sky Continent long ago before in order to leave its fire in the Profound Sky Continent, and has hence left many trial grounds. Those who went through the trial could inherit its bloodline, and this bloodline was something that could be inherited by their future generations. Hence, the clan of the Phoenix was born.

According to the recounting of our ancestors, the phoenix had left two trial grounds in the Profound Sky Continent. One of them was at the far away Divine Phoenix Empire, and the other was right here. The only difference was that the one in the Divine Phoenix Empire was known by all, and has formed the incomparably powerful ‘Divine Phoenix Sect’, whereas this ground in the Blue Wind Empire had gone unnoticed by all and was unintentionally discovered by our ancestors. No one would have thought that this desolate and dangerous Ten Thousand Beast Mountain, actually had a ruin left by a primordial divine beast of the primordial era.”

“So what you’re saying is that this is

only one of those trial grounds, and isn't any sort of treasure, contrary to the beliefs of those villainous thieves outside?" Yun Che tapped his chin.

"That's right." Feng Baichuan nodded: "Our ancestors had passed the trial here back then. At that time, the 'Divine Phoenix Sect' in the Divine Phoenix Empire had already become Divine Phoenix Empire's protector sect, and their influence reached the heavens. Even the empire's name was changed to 'Divine Phoenix'. The trial ground there had also become the Divine Phoenix Sect's restricted area of the highest level, where only the disciples of the highest grade were granted entry. Even more so, their phoenix bloodline has become



their greatest pride and honor. If they were to catch wind of the fact that the phoenix bloodline had appeared in another place, what we'd be courting might be ruin and destruction instead of brotherly bonding."

Yun Che secretly nodded, concurring with him. The Divine Phoenix Empire had originally been named the Grand Asura Kingdom. However, after the Divine Phoenix Sect rose to power and provided support for the new imperial family, even the name of the empire had been changed to Divine Phoenix Empire. Therefore, the phoenix bloodline had become the sole symbolism of the Divine Phoenix Empire's glory. If they had really found out about the existence of

another phoenix bloodline, they would definitely take any measures necessary to get rid of it.

“After passing the trial, our ancestors began to pass on the phoenix bloodline, generation after generation. By the time it had reached the twelfth generation, they had already flourished into a Sect of great prowess, but had never openly titled themselves as a clan of the Phoenix and they had continually hidden the mark of the Phoenix on their foreheads in front of others. However, in that generation, one of the ancestors fought with someone using the power of the phoenix and monstrous flames accidentally spread to a small town, scorching all thirty two thousand innocent lives within.

Yun Che: “....

“A monstrous crime of this extent incited the fury of the phoenix’s spirit at the trial ground, and a cruel punishment has befallen us.

Everyone in the clan of that generation were marked with the curse’s seal in their phoenix bloodline, which suppressed the profound energy of everyone within the clan to the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm, never to make any progress in their lifetime. Furthermore, the phoenix’s mark turned a dark red and could no longer be concealed. It was as if this seal was a symbol to constantly remind the clansmen of the grievous crime they had committed.”

“Our ancestors had many powerful enemies. Having had their strength suppressed to such an insignificant state, they had no choice but to recede into seclusion... To their horror, they discovered afterwards that the curse was actually forcefully passed down through generations. Their children all had the Phoenix’s dark red marks on their foreheads once they were born. Similarly, throughout their entire life, their profound strength could never break through the Elementary Realm. The ancestors thought of countless of ways to resolve the curse, but it was after all, something that the Divine Phoenix Spirit had left; how could it be something that man could interfere with? To date, a thousand years have passed, but the curse

still remains in our bloodline and has not gone away yet. Our clan could only hide away within Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range and watch out for our own, praying daily to atone for our ancestors and beseech forgiveness from the Divine Phoenix Spirit.”

“Until today, our clan has deteriorated to how we are currently; even a small group of mercenaries can corner us to such a point of despair, heh.....” Feng Baichuan let out a bitter, dismayed laugh. Within his solemn tone, there tinged too much unwillingness and helpless frustration.

This was originally a clan secret that could not be revealed to

outsiders, but being forced to such a miserable state today, the so-called bloodlines and the so-called clan secrets had already become a complete joke. Perhaps what these clansmen longed for most was to not have been born with the phoenix bloodline, but instead be born an ordinary person. He also suddenly understood why Feng Baichuan had not immediately brought the clan to this ruin left by the Phoenix even in the face of such enormous danger. Indeed, they were afraid. Their clan had spent a thousand years and a few dozen generations to make amends, wishing so much for forgiveness from the Phoenix's spirit that they did so even when dreaming; how would they dare to do anything that might even be the least bit

disrespectful to the Divine Phoenix Spirit?

He turned around, stared at the red seal matrix on the pathway, and said: "Clan leader Feng, by any chance, are the trial grounds left by the Phoenix behind that seal formation?"

"That's right." Feng Baichuan nodded, "These two seals are what our ancestors have left us. Only those with the Phoenix bloodline are able to unseal it, as its purpose is to prevent outsiders from entering."

In that split second, Yun Che made his decision, saying: "Then, could you open this seal for me?"

“Are you thinking of....?” Feng Baichuan glanced to his side.

“That’s right!” Yun Che nodded: “I’d like to see what sort of trial could have been left behind by a primordial divine beast like the Phoenix. Since I have a chance now, I’d naturally wish to try it.”

Feng Baichuan did not turn him down immediately, but asked instead, “Little brother, what is your level of current Profound strength?”

“First level of the Nascent Profound Realm.” Yun Che replied honestly.

“Definitely not!!” Disappointment slipped into Feng Baichuan’s expression and he adamantly refused: “It’s not that I’m unwilling



to let you in. It's just that.... back then, when the ancestors were going through the training of the Phoenix, their profound strength had already been at the Spirit Profound Realm, and they also possessed fire attribute profound skills. Even so, they had only managed to obtain the Phoenix's blood and Divine Phoenix Pellet after enduring the extremely harsh trial. There were also some ancestors who had gone through training and obtained the Divine Phoenix Pellet later, but none of these ancestors had a profound cultivation lower than the Spirit Profound Realm.”

“After the bloodline's curse fell upon us, nobody had ever passed the trial again. Nobody could even

pass through the first stage of the trial. After all, with only the strength of the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm, how could we withstand the trial of the Phoenix's flames? And all these years, some clansmen who wanted to forcefully pass the trial have even died inside, never to come back again. With your strength at the first level of the Nascent Profound Realm, there's absolutely no chance whatsoever of making it through the training, and your life might even be in danger."

# Chapter 108:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (3)

“No, allow me to attempt it.”

Yun Che didn't cower when faced against Feng Baichuan's words. He spoke with a serious tone: “I know very well of my own strength. But I indeed, do have the qualifications to attempt this trial.”

Yun Che lifted his palm and spread his fingers apart. The profound energy flowed, and a huge ball of orange colored flames suddenly

flared from his entire palm. This ball of flame greatly shocked Feng Baichuan, and he asked in astonishment: "You actually possess fire attribute profound arts?"

"That's right. Moreover, it is a very high ranked fire attribute profound art." Yun Che nodded. However, his greatest trump card for challenging the Phoenix's trial, was his overpowered constitution that was invulnerable to any sort of fire. Naturally, it was impossible for him to say such a thing; even if he said so, Feng Baichuan definitely would not have believed him anyway: "Since it's the Phoenix's trial, then it must be mainly a trail of fire. I possess thorough knowledge of fire attributed profound arts, and have a

certain extent of resistance toward fire profound energies. Perhaps, it is even possible for me to easily pass the trial.”

Feng Baichuan still shook his head, and said: “The Phoenix trial is indeed mainly based on the energy of fire, but you are underestimating it too much. How could an ordinary person’s fire energy rival that of the divine phoenix beast’s holy flames. Ten years ago, I had also attempted the Phoenix trial before. However, just by taking a few steps in the trial grounds at the start of the trial, the agony from the lava’s heat was already enough to make me wish that I was dead. I chose to give up after just a few breaths of time. Even if you have fire attribute profound arts and possess

knowledge, control, and resistance of the fire profound energy to a certain extent, phoenix flames are still far more terrifying than what you can imagine. The first ancestor who passed the Phoenix trial also possessed fire attribute profound arts, and had barely passed it with a cultivation of the Spirit Profound Realm. As for the ancestors who passed after, it was because they already possessed the phoenix bloodline in their body and had very strong resistance in it; furthermore, none had strength below the Spirit Profound Realm. With your current profound strength, it is fundamentally impossible.”

Yun Che calmly spoke: “Since Clan Leader Feng had also attempted the Phoenix trial before, then you

clearly understand that if one feel he cannot endure in the trial's process, one could choose to forfeit. Then, unless it is meaningless persistence, there are absolutely no dangers to one's life if one chooses to back out when unable to endure. All of those clansmen who died within the trial, probably wanted to forcefully pass through and hence, stayed in there forever. But I won't do the same; I cherish my own life very much, and will immediately forfeit once I feel that it's impossible. Like this, there aren't any dangers to be considered. Since there are no dangers, no matter success or failure, there shouldn't be any harm in attempting, yes?"

Yun Che glanced at the outside and continued: "If by any chance I

succeed, I can at least somewhat increase my profound strength and bring a little more hope in dealing with the villainous thieves outside.”

Feng Baichuan knitted his brows, and lowly sighed: “You are a youngster after all, it is impossible to not be curious after hearing about the trial that a divine phoenix beast had left. When you spoke with me earlier, you had at least glanced three times over at that seal formation. Since you really want to attempt that trial this much... Then so be it, I’ll open the trial’s gate for you. But before that, it would be best for you to treat your injuries first. Also, during the trial, you absolutely have to forfeit right away the moment you feel that it’s too unbearable... Otherwise, even



though the illusory realm is illusory, the flames are truly the phoenix's flames; you will really die if you try to forcefully endure it."

"Okay!" Yun Che joyfully nodded.

With Yun Che's medical skills and the entire treasury's medicinal materials together, the injuries on his body were simply not a problem. The next day, the wound on his shoulder already had fully mended and there was no pain when making large movements either; only an bowl-sized scar was left. If he wished for it, this scar could also completely disappear within half a month.

A day had passed and the Black Demon Mercenary Group's

members who as expected, kept guard outside continuously clamored about. The emotions of the phoenix clansmen had finally calmed down; however, it could only be temporary. While holding onto the food and water Feng Baichuan distributed to them, they didn't dare to think about tomorrow in the midst of their worrying.

And now, Feng Baichuan had already brought Yun Che and Lan Xuero before the trial ground's seal formation as they stood there.

“Junior Brother Yun, you really wish to attempt it no matter what? Even though it's a trial, great danger could still be hidden inside. You only have a strength of the Nascent Profound Realm's first rank, if...

if..." Lan Xueruo pulled Yun Che's arm and kept on persuading him.

"Relax, Senior Sister also knows that I have fire attribute profound arts, I won't easily be troubled inside a trial of fire." Yun Che said while comforted.

"But..." Lan Xueruo wanted to say more, but seeing Yun Che's gaze which was as tranquil as water, she knew that no matter how much she persuaded, he still wouldn't change his mind. She could only faintly sigh: "Then you'll have to be careful no matter what."

"Are you ready?" Feng Baichuan questioned as he stood in front of the seal formation.

“I’ll have to bother Clan Leader Feng to open the seal for me.” Yun Che nodded.

Feng Baichuan slowly nodded, and reminded again: “If you feel that you can no longer endure, you must come out right away. Please do not try to be brave.”

As he finished speaking, he bit open his finger, and dripped a drop of blood onto the seal formation. Instantaneously, a red light flashed through the seal formation, then vanished while spinning quickly. In front of them, a dark red colored bizarre entrance appeared. As if it was a terrifying bottomless abyss, it was pitch black inside the entrance and no signs of existence could be seen.

“Since the ancestor discovered this trial ground, no one other than clansmen had ever entered before; you are seriously the first one. This trial ground can only be opened once a month, and no matter success or failure, one cannot enter for a second time in their entire life. Think about whether you want to enter or not again.”

Yun Che nodded, threw Lan Xueruo a comforting look, and then stepped into the trial ground's entrance without hesitation.

The moment he stepped inside the entrance, the scene before him suddenly distorted. Right after, he felt the sky and ground spin, as if his body was sent flying by a storm. He unconsciously closed his eyes.

Only after a long time, did that weightless feeling finally disappear slowly. When he opened his eyes, he only saw a pitch black darkness.

Where... is this?

Why is there only darkness? There's nothing here at all... The phoenix's test, weren't seas of fire or lava supposed to appear?

Right as questions emerged inside his mind, two lines of narrow golden light suddenly appeared in the pitch black darkness before him. Immediately after, the two narrow lines of golden luminance slowly opened like a pair of slightly narrowed eyes... No! That exactly was a pair of eyes! A pair of incomparably gigantic golden eyes

that was embedded inside the pitch black space.

The eyes of the Phoenix!!

“Greetings, human. Welcome to the trial grounds. You are the first challenger without the phoenix bloodline in these past thousand years.”

A dignified voice resounded within his mind; from the timbre of the voice, it was clearly a female voice. Yun Che looked at this pair of golden eyes, and probed: “You are... the spirit of the phoenix?”

“That is correct. I am an immortal soul left here by the phoenix, yet I am also an existence independent of the phoenix. I preserve this trial

ground and receive all challengers. Spirit of the Phoenix, is the most fitting title for me.”

“Why would the phoenix leave a trial ground here?” Yun Che offhandedly spoke out the question inside his heart.

Yun Che had asked offhandedly, and never expected the Spirit of the Phoenix to answer him. What was out of his expectations, was that the Spirit of the Phoenix actually very generously, answered him: “Long ago, the three major fire attribute divine beasts: the Phoenix, Golden Crow, Scarlet Peacock fought for the Flame Progenitor position in the Divine Realm. The fierce battle lasted thirty-six days, and ended in the defeat and injury of all three.



The Phoenix fell down to this Sky Profound Continent after being gravely wounded, and completely recovered after thirteen years in the Sky Profound Continent. In these thirteen years, the phoenix deeply felt that even though the Sky Profound Continent's humans were weak in strength, their hearts and nature were pure; thus it left two trial grounds in order to leave some opportunities for the humans of this continent.”

“So that's how it was.”

“However, the phoenix had left this message: If the humans of the Profound Sky Continent uses this Phoenix power to harm the world, all of their strength will be taken away and their bloodline would be

given punishment! What was very unfortunate, was that a person of one of the bloodlines committed a grave sin while using the phoenix's power; the power of the phoenix had been permanently stripped and their bloodline was cursed. After that, no one else had passed this trial. As the first person without the phoenix bloodline in these thousand years, I hope that you can break this thousand years of silence... Then, are you ready?"

"Yes, I can start anytime." Yun Che took in a long breath, his entire face held a calm expression. In terms of his profound strength only, entering this kind of trial could be considered as presumptuous. However, he obtained a body that was immune to any kind of fire

after swallowing the Fire Seed of the Evil God. Relying on this kind of heaven opposing cheat, it wasn't as if he didn't have any confidence at all faced against this fire divine beast's trial.

“Very good, the trial has three levels in total, respectively: First level: Purgatory Flame Demon; second level: Arrows of the Phoenix; third level: Corruption of the Heart's Flame. If you wish to forfeit during the trial, you may shout out at anytime and I'll immediately let you leave the trial grounds. You may die if you forcibly endure the trial.... I wish you success.”

Just as the Spirit of the Phoenix's voice faded, the pair of golden eyes slowly disappeared inside the world

of pitch black darkness.

Yet the world before Yun Che's eyes spun once again. Moments later, the darkness entirely disappeared, and the world around him impressively transformed into a field of deep red.

The scene before his eyes stunned him for a long time.

The ground under his feet appeared to be a deep red color; as if it was paved by terrifying red-hot steel. The ground was uneven; disorderly boulders were scattered around and mountains of varying heights were layered one after another. Even the mountain's surface was crimson, as if it could spew out flames which could reach the heavens at any

time. Looking upwards, the sky was also a field of deep red.

Stalks of ember were distributed across every direction on the fire-red colored ground. Some of the embers were only a few inches tall, while some had even shot up for over ten meters in height. On both sides, pools after pools of red-colored lava bubbled like boiling water... Drawing out an incomparably terrifying scene of a lava purgatory.

Unquestionably, the wind here was scorching hot as the air's temperature reached a terrifying height. It was no wonder that Feng Baichuan declared forfeit after only enduring for several breaths of time. Just with the temperature

here alone, let alone an profound practitioner of the Elementary Profound Realm, even if a profound practitioner of the True Profound Realm exhausted all his strength, he would only be able to barely endure.

But the temperature here to Yun Che could only be described with one word:

Comfortable!

Comfortable to the extent that it was the same as leisurely soaking inside warm water.

# Chapter 109:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (4)

Yun Che felt like he had stepped into the purgatory. Unbeknownst to him, the sounds of churning magma next to him were actually the ferocious growls of the Purgatory Demon.

Purgatory Demon?

The Phoenix's spirit had mentioned previously that the first stage was the Purgatory Flame Demon, yet only volcanoes and magma existed

and there wasn't even the slightest hint of life within his line of sight.

Yun Che trudged slowly ahead. Only within the flames of hell could Yun Che truly understand exactly how amazing his ability to withstand fire was. Others could barely hold out in this environment with their profound strength, but he simply didn't feel any sort of discomfort. Unaffected by the high temperature or the flames, it wouldn't be unfair in the slightest to say that this was a power which could rebel against the heavens.

It was at his tenth step when he suddenly stopped in his tracks and looked left towards a deep pool of lava. The red lava emanated a shockingly high temperature. The



lava churned violently, rose higher and higher, and grew fiercer by the moment.... Suddenly, the pool overflowed and a large chunk of lava savagely broke loose with a deafening sound. A gigantic body covered in flames rose high from the lava and landed in front of Yun Che with an ear-shattering boom.

This was a flame giant whose entire body was on fire. It was a whole thirty-three meters tall, had a body that was burning entirely in red-hot flames, and had two ferocious eyes on either side of its head. Atop its head, there were also two horns of fire that were ten metres long and a golden mark that seemed to shine from the middle of these horns.

Yun Che quickly stepped back and

looked up at the unreasonably tall flame giant.... Was this the Purgatory Flame Demon that the Phoenix spoke of?

“Jasmine? What level is this big fellow?” Yun Che asked quickly.

“It’s a high-level True Profound fire beast. In this sort of blazing environment, not only can it replenish its vitality and profound strength swiftly, the fire power it unleashes is also comparable to that of the Spirit Profound Realm!” Jasmine’s voice carried a tone of warning.

Originally, as a low ranker in the Nascent Profound Realm, Yun Che could not contend against a True Profound Realm that had strength

comparable to the Spirit Profound Realm. However, if it was purely a fire beast, then this might not necessarily be the case!

The Purgatory Flame Demon gave a loud roar as its eyes locked onto Yun Che. Beneath its eyes was a gigantic mouth which hurled out a dozen super-sized fireballs as it screeched and flew towards him.

Yun Che stood where he was; unmoving, allowing the fireballs to land on him.

Poof, poof, poof, poof...

The fireballs exploded successively as they came into contact with Yun Che's body. The flames' force was violently released, but after it

touched Yun Che's body, they became like stones that sank to the bottom of the sea, and burned out without a sound without causing the slightest bit of harm to Yun Che. Within the explosive flashes of fire, Yun Che rushed towards the Purgatory Flame Demon, and appeared in front of it within a split second.... However, facing the Purgatory Flame Demon which was around a hundred feet, his body seemed far too miniscule and he could barely be considered to have reached the bottom of its foot. With a low growl, he activated "Evil Soul" and ruthlessly smashed condensed profound energy above its calf.

BAM!!

This heavy strike was similar to

hitting a heavy ancient bronze bell, and the recoil caused great pain to the bones of Yun Che's hands. However, the calf that had just been struck by the Purgatory Flame Demon was barely affected and only the flame there was snuffed out momentarily to then reignite a moment later.

What a tough body... Yun Che secretly gasped. After all, this Purgatory Flame Demon was a high-level True Profound Beast. Even with Evil Soul activated, his strongest all-out attack was fundamentally unable cause it much harm. If this was to continue, even if the Purgatory Flame Demon's attacks might have no effect on him, his attacks wouldn't cause it any harm either.

Since the palm couldn't injure it, then...

Yun Che stroked his left hand and took out Xiao Sect Branch Sect's most precious treasure, the unrivalled Earth Profound Artifact, the Tiger Soul Sword.

Concentrating his profound energy, he stabbed ruthlessly at the Purgatory Flame Demon.

While he did not truly comprehend the concept of an Earth Profound Artifact, he knew that the level above an Earth Profound Artifact was a Sky Profound Artifact and throughout Blue Wind Empire, the number of Sky Profound Artifacts totalled to no more than ten. One could only imagine how precious and rare an Earth Profound Artifact,

which was only one tier lower than a Sky Profound Artifact, must be. With this Earth Profound Artifact in hand, even if one didn't apply any profound energy, even if the person wielding it was only a normal person, it could directly split open the defense of a Spirit Profound Realm practitioner.

Riiip~~~

In the split second the Tiger Soul Sword slashed onto the body of the Purgatory Flame Demon, Yun Che heard a tiger's vague growl. A vast area of flames where the Purgatory Flame Demon had been struck were instantaneously extinguished for a moment to reveal its pitch black body. A large chunk of flesh had also been directly chopped by the

Tiger Soul Sword; mixed with the flames, it flew far into the distance.

“ROAARRRRR!!!”

The pain that the Purgatory Flame Demon had eaten violently enraged its temper and it took a step towards Yun Che. Meanwhile, a sky full of flames rained densely with a wave of its claws, blanketing the area within a hundred-foot radius. Originally, a True Profound Beast shouldn't have the capability of such a large area-of-effect fire attack, but the Purgatory Flame Demon's firepower had been multiplied many times due to the fiery environment.

To Yun Che, this rain of fire was of no consequence. But the heavy step



that the Purgatory Flame Demon took was something Yun Che could not easily endure. As a result, he was sent flying and landed a hundred feet away. However, the Purgatory Flame Demon's lack of agility was fully displayed to Yun Che. Without waiting for his body to stabilize, he rushed back towards the rain of fire and meteorites. He increased his speed to the maximum, continually left afterimages with Star God's Broken Shadow. Real and false shadows interlaced, causing confusion at the Purgatory Flame Demon's feet as Yun Che landed hit after hit on its calf.

The Purgatory Flame Demon became increasingly violent after being injured again and again. It

released its flames in a frenzy and the persistent force of the flames turned the surrounding area into an ocean of fire. Every step Yun Che took into a meter tall blaze was as if he was treading on level ground without the slightest trace of injury. The Purgatory Flame Demon had a large bulky frame so it moved slowly and every time it attacked with its limbs, Yun Che dodged with ease. Every time he turned illusory, he would slash at the Purgatory Flame Demon's calf to carve off a large chunk of flesh.

RIIIIIIP!!

With another ruthless blow, the sword pierced deep into the sole of the Purgatory Flame Demon's foot. The Purgatory Flame Demon let out

an enraged, ear-splitting roar as the flames above its right fist suddenly surged before smashing at the ground.

A dangerous atmosphere came from above and Yun Che looked upwards. Immediately after, he backed away ten places with Star God's Broken Shadow without any further thought.

BOOM!!

The Purgatory Flame Demon's blazing descended and triggered a series of gigantic explosions. The noise was not inferior to the explosion of the Sky Tremor Bombs. Although Yun Che evaded it, he was still hit by the impact of the aftermath. The suffocating pressure

made him take several steps backwards, and he stepped into the pool of lava behind him.

The edge of the pool of lava was very shallow and barely reached Yun Che's calves. He did not rush up again, but held the Tiger Soul Sword and stood in the lava as he knitted his brow; he suddenly realized that despite slashing more than thirty wounds on the Purgatory Flame Demon's body with his sword, they had completely vanished.

"This princess had already told you that it possessed extremely powerful recuperative abilities in this blazing environment. Not only are its flames unquenchable, even its normal injuries will heal within

a short period of time. At most, it needs five to six breaths' time to recover from the injuries you've caused. Even if you continue to proceed in this way for a hundred years, it is still fundamentally impossible to cause it any substantial harm."

Jasmine spoke coldly, but after she finished speaking, she paused for quite a while and then suddenly shouted: "I've got it! Attack the gold mark on its head. That's the location of its weak point."

"Gold mark?" Yun Che lifted his head and saw the blinding golden dot between the middle of its horns.

"Its profound aura is the weakest at that area so that should be its weak

point. Try attacking it there.”

Yun Che tilted his head, but still stood in place for a long time without doing anything. It was because this Purgatory Flame Demon was thirty-three meters tall. With his current profound strength, even under the effect of Evil Soul, the highest he could leap was only twenty to twenty five meters; he was definitely unable to touch its forehead.

“It seems that I have no other choice but to take a chance and give it a try!”

Yun Che clenched his teeth, and walked to the Purgatory Flame Demon’s front with slow steps. After contending with it for a long

time, another sense of danger came from above his head. The Purgatory Flame Demon had already raised its right fist, and fiercely smashed toward Yun Che's position.

This was the moment that Yun Che had been waiting for. With one Star God's Broken Shadow, he moved to a distance of approximately ten paces back in an instant, and dodged the center of the Purgatory Flame Demon's blazing fist assault. Immediately after, he took a deep breath just a moment before the fist landed and jumped with all his might, directly reaching a height of more than twenty meters.

BOOM!!

There was a loud crash below. Even

in midair, he could still feel the shocking wave of energy from beneath his feet. As the Purgatory Flame Demon smashed its fist onto the ground, its body bent down and its forehead dropped to a height of around eighteen meters high... Which was diagonally beneath Yun Che.

While in mid-air, unless one had reached the Sky Profound Realm and could use their profound energy to become airborne, it was impossible to find leverage for one's self in mid-air.. Let alone move in mid-air, even the direction one would fall was difficult to control. However, this was not the case for Yun Che. His body swayed, and activated the Star God's Broken Shadow to suddenly shift around



seven meters sideways in midair; precisely moving directly above the Purgatory Flame Demon's head. His body fell straight down as he also tightly clutched the Tiger Soul Sword in his hands.....

“Falling... Moon.... Sinking.... Star... HAAH!!”

The Tiger Soul Sword suddenly released an intense light as an incomparably loud and clear tiger's growl resounded throughout this purgatory. Amidst the tiger's roar and Yun Che's battle cry, the Tiger Soul Sword pointed precisely at the spot of light on the Purgatory Flame Demon's forehead while carrying the power of Falling Moon Sinking Star and pierced in as if slicing tofu.... The meter long sword's body

completely plunged in and even the hilt followed in right after under the extremely berserking power of the strike.

Yun Che fell onto the ground and quickly shut his Evil Soul Profound Gate as he gasped for breath. Yet the Purgatory Flame Demon's body was already frozen in place. A moment later, it suddenly let out an incomparably anguished roar of despair. Its gigantic frame slowly fell forward and crashed onto the floor with an explosively loud sound.

The flames on its body extinguished quickly, until all that was left were a few small embers that revealed its large black body. Soon after, even its body began to disintegrate and

everything dissipated as if made of vapor. On the red floor, only the Tiger Soul Sword that had killed it in one strike was left.

“Suc.... Success!” Yun Che picked up the Tiger Soul Sword and heaved a long sigh.

And at this time, the scenery before him suddenly distorted. In the midst of the distortion, it spun in a blur, and when everything had finally stabilized, the red land, volcanoes and pools of lava.... All of it disappeared. What replaced it was an expanse of nothingness, a wilderness so flat that there wasn't any uneven land to be seen.

“Second stage of the trial: Arrows of the Phoenix.”

# Chapter 110:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (5)

The trials of the phoenix were indeed frightful. This first trial, had Yun Che not been invulnerable to fire, would have caused him to die to the Purgatory Flame Demon's flames who knows how many times. For this second trial, one could tell without thinking that it would undoubtedly be much more terrifying than the first.

The boundless, barren plain without a single blade of grass,

along with the scorching wind, brought with them a desolation and loneliness that made people sullen. At this time, a sudden extremely loud and clear cry of a phoenix came from the sky. Following this, the originally dark sky abruptly became a blazing red, as if it was burned red from heavenly fire.

Yun Che looked up, and was surprised to see the scarlet-colored sky covered with innumerable amounts of red dots. Following this, the phoenix cry resounded again and the smear of red dots aimed at his location and suddenly started to swiftly fall like meteors. In front of his eyes, these dots drew increasingly closer and became increasingly larger. Finally, the silhouette of a phoenix clearly

appeared within Yun Che's line of sight.

It was a body covered in scarlet fire, a small-sized phoenix about six-foot long. The speed of its descent was extremely fast, as if it was a swift and sharp arrow in flight.

Poof!!

The blazing phoenix violently crashed into Yun Che's body. It instantly exploded, creating a huge fireball and covered the sky with a rain of fire. If it had been someone else, they would have already failed the second trial, because these terrifying phoenix flames would have been enough to immediately scorch a person of the Spirit Profound Realm to a gravely injured

state. These flames didn't hold any destructive force against Yun Che; however, that powerful impact force and explosive force directly smashed Yun Che onto the ground causing the blood in his entire body to churn.

Screee~~~

The phoenix cry resounded again and another phoenix silhouette bolted down like a flaming arrow. This time, Yun Che did not dare to forcefully receive it and quickly dodged. The phoenix shadow pounded into the earth and the flames exploded, causing the ground to crack into a long rift. Yun Che had not yet regained his balance when a phoenix cry yet again, resounded from above. But

this time there were consecutive phoenix cries. Three consecutive phoenix silhouettes swiftly plunged from three different directions, aiming straight for Yun Che.

Yun Che's body flipped, dodging the first phoenix shadow, then used all his power to jump back and dodged the second.

“Star God's Broken Shadow!”

Suspended in midair, Yun Che tilted his body in a flash and also narrowly avoided the third phoenix shadow.

Boom, boom, boom!!

Three phoenix silhouettes exploded in succession, whirling up flames that were ten meters high. However,



even clearer phoenix cries followed. Yun Che lifted his head and saw that this time, there were actually seven phoenix silhouettes falling towards him at the same time.

Dammit! This is not how it's supposed to be played! Yun Che's brow twisted as he secretly cursed in his heart.

.....

After Yun Che entered the entrance of the trials, the originally seal formation reappeared once more but Lan Xueruo had not left yet and instead stood in place. She had heard from Feng Baichuan about the frightful trials. According to Feng Baichuan, with Yun Che's power, even with a fire attribute

profound art it would still be impossible to stay inside for more than ten breaths of time.

But ten breaths passed, twenty breaths passed, thirty breaths passed... half an hour passed... Yun Che still had not come out.

It was impossible for Lan Xueruo stay calm. The expression on her face became more and more anxious. After waiting for a quarter of an hour, she could no longer remain calm. Towards Feng Baichuan, she pressingly asked: "Feng clan leader, why has he not come out yet? Didn't you say it would be at most ten breaths before he came out?"

Feng Baichuan's heart had long

since become uneasy. Listening to Lan Xueruo, he could only comfort her: “Perhaps the trials are varied for each person, so its difficult to say the exact amount of time it will take..... Rest assured, little brother Yun Che is not the kind of person who does not know his limits. If it reaches the point where he cannot endure any longer, he will immediately come out.”

Lan Xueruo did not reply. She suppressed the anxious feelings within her heart and continued to wait.

.....

Scree~~

Scree~~

Scree~~

Scree~~~~~

Numerous phoenix cries chaotically overlapped; the sharp cries seemed almost like they would tear the sky open. From the initial cry, to a group of three, to a group of seven, to a group of fifteen..... At the moment, the entire sky was filled with phoenix cries and phoenix silhouettes, just like a meteor shower that was horrifying beyond compare.

Yun Che used the Star God's Broken Shadow to swiftly move through the meteor shower, and maneuvered about. His Star God's Broken Shadow was currently only at the first stage but even though

the Profound Movement Skill that came from Jasmine was at the lowest level, it still contained an extremely shocking power and allowed him move around like an illusion among the phoenix arrow formation while leaving behind countless afterimages that didn't even have enough time to dissipate.

However, these phoenix silhouettes eventually became far too concentrated; it was impossible for him to avoid every single one of them. After a dozen or so waves, he had already been hit seven or eight times. The power of the phoenix silhouette impact was simply incomparable to the flames it carried. However, to Yun Che, who was only at the Nascent Profound Realm, it was a major threat. Every

time he was hit by a phoenix silhouette, his protective profound aura would weaken slightly. Coupled with the frequent usage of Star God's Broken Shadow, the consumption of his energy was immense.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!  
Boom.....

Wave after wave of phoenix shadows exploded next to him. The originally flat ground had become riddled with holes and pits. It was impossible to find a single area still intact within sight.

Once again, if he was not invulnerable to fire, he would have long ago, died several hundreds of times already.

The Fire Seed of the Evil God was undoubtedly a huge cheat for him within this phoenix trial.

Boom!!!

In the last wave, several hundreds of phoenix silhouettes descended from the sky. Their bodies emitted the radiance of blazing fire, illuminating the sky in red. The instant they fell, the vast earth erupted with fire, and the churning ground was burned into pitch-black charred earth. At the same moment, Yun Che was struck with seven phoenix silhouettes. His entire body's protective profound aura completely shattered in an instant. Fortunately, the impact ended there. Besides a wave of pain in his chest, he did not receive many

injuries.

“Phew..... Did it finally end?”

Standing amongst the flames that still burned, Yun Che raised his head and looked towards the sky as he let out a long sigh of relief. The phoenix cries had completely stopped, and there were finally no signs of the phoenix silhouettes in the sky above. At this moment, he started to admire the ancestor Feng Baichuan had mentioned. With the body of a common human and the cultivation of the Spirit Profound Realm, he was actually able to pass that incomparably terrifying phoenix formation he had just experienced earlier; he was definitely a shockingly talented super-genius.



The flames nearby gradually burned out and the second trial had also finally ended. Rather than say that Yun Che passed, it would be better to say that he used his special physique to forcefully endure through it. At this moment, the scene in front of his eyes started to distort to become more and more obscure. Yun Che was just about to start observing the scenery of the third trial when he realized that everything in front of his eyes had already become pitch-black.

Following this, a pair of golden eyes opened within the pitch-black world. The phoenix spirit's voice resounded within his mind.

“That surprised me; you actually possess a special physique that is

unafraid of flames. If I am not mistaken, the primordial Evil God's aura resides inside your body."

"That is correct." Yun Che nodded. In regards to the phoenix spirit being able to discern the Evil God's aura, within the depths of his heart, he was not surprised. After all, the phoenix and the Evil God were both part of the primordial god race.

"The Evil God does not align with any of the elements, for he is actually the nemesis of all the elements. But no one can compare to the Evil God in terms of familiarity and capability in wielding the elements. If you somehow manage to completely inherit the Evil God's powers, then not only fire, even water, wind,

thunder, earth, domain, dimension, spirit... would all be subdued by you, and would never be able to bring you harm.”

Yun Che: “.....”

“You passed the previous two stages not because you had sufficient strength, but because of your special physique. Although this is cheating, passing is passing; I have no right to deny that. However, this third trial: Corruption of the Heart’s Flame, is a trial of the heart that’s unrelated to flames. The advantages of your body are thus nullified, and this third trial is also the hardest trial to pass. In these countless years, the amount of challengers who have passed the first two trials amount to three

hundred twenty-nine. But the ones who passed the third trial.. only amount to seven people.”

“Seven?” Yun Che was immediately stunned.

Although he passed the first two trials quite easily with his cheating condition, he had clearly witnessed the frightfulness of the two trials at the same time. Those who were able to pass the two trials while being in the Spirit Profound Realm were undoubtedly all unmatched geniuses. As for those in the True Profound Realm, there wasn't even the possibility of passing.

And it was precisely within these extraordinary geniuses, that only two out of a hundred of them were

capable of passing the third trial!?

This third trial, how frightful could it be?

“However, you don’t need to be too nervous. The third trial is a trial of the heart. It does not involve fighting, but instead involves the choices within your heart. If you are firm enough towards the pursuit for power, then even if you possess weak profound power, there is a chance you can easily pass. On the other hand, if you do not possess enough determination, then passing your life in the mundane world can also be an option. After all, power is not everything in life.”

“You, are you prepared?”

## Trial of the heart?

As a man of two lives, after experiencing the boundary of life and death so many times, what he should be least afraid of was a test for the heart, right?

“Trial of the heart”; these few words caused Yun Che’s heart to become tranquil. Even when facing the extremely low passing rate the phoenix spirit had mentioned, he was not as nervous as when he was facing the first and second trials. Without any hesitation, Yun Che immediately nodded: “Let’s start.”

“As you wish... I wish you success.”

The phoenix spirit’s eyes disappeared and the pitch-black

world started to distort once more. Yun Che felt as if his body had been swept up by a storm and started to float within the distorting space. He closed his eyes and muttered in his heart: "Let me see what this trial of the heart exactly is. The only thing that could truly break my mental state.... Should not exist anymore.

Within the darkness, he could feel his consciousness start to gradually blur. This caused him to suddenly open his eyes alertly, but the heaviness in his mind was irresistible. His vision and awareness became more and more blurred until his mind stilled completely.

When he regained consciousness, slight pains transmitted from

various parts of his body. His body was also extremely weak, as if recovering from severe injuries. The tip of his nose overflowed with a faint smell of blood... That was the scent of his own blood.

What is going on? Why is my body so weak? It's like I just received serious wounds... Also, this feeling, this scent... Why does it seem so familiar?

He opened his eyes slowly. Within his gradually clearing sight, he realized where he was. It was a very simple bamboo cabin that contained a few simple tables. One small table was also made of bamboo and its surface was covered with all kinds of medicine bottles and gauzes. Another conjoined



table was stocked with all kinds of healing instruments, as well as piles of white cloth stained with fresh blood.

A strong scent of medicine and blood permeated throughout the entire room. Only the thin blanket covering his body gave off a light and warm fragrance. Looking through the simple bamboo window, he saw a string on which a row of men's clothes hung... These clothes were covered with layers of patches. Although they had gone through meticulous cleaning, due to the heavy blood stains, they still retained a faint trace of blood after they dried.

The moment his consciousness cleared completely, as if struck by

lightning, Yun Che abruptly sat up on the bed. His gaze blankly stared at the scene in front of him. His heart was like a small boat in the midst of a storm; wildly swaying....

This place is..... This place is.....

# Chapter 111:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (6)

Creak....

The cabin's bamboo door was pushed open cautiously, and a lady of fragile stature walked in carrying a bamboo pot of washed laundry. She looked to be around twenty-three to twenty-four, yet she had the delicate and charming air of a fifteen or sixteen year old teenage girl. She was as quiet and charming as a hibiscus under the glowing moon. She was garbed in rough

grey garments, but they were unable to tamp down her star-like and eye-catching beautiful disposition; it was as if they were rain on a mountain side. Her eyes were especially so. They were clearer than the purest of crystals, beautiful enough to make the rest of the world lose their color in comparison.

Clearly seeing where he was, Yun Che had already anticipated her appearance. However, in the split second that she'd opened the door and entered, his heart began to violently beat. Both his eyes and expression were transfixed and he could only blankly stare. It was as if the entire world had been drained of all its color in that one moment, and only her figure remained. All

his emotions, all his thoughts, all his beliefs, they all began to completely and violently surge ... That year, she had passed away in his embrace. After crying his eyes out, he believed he'd never shed another tear in his entire lifetime. But at this moment, he felt uncontrollable tears rushing down unauthorized below the orbit of his eyes...

His heart throbbed as if the emotions that no longer belonged to him intertwined in chaos. He forgot where he was; forgot that he was still within the trial. At this point, all his emotions came together and transformed into a tearful cry that came straight from his soul...

“Ling’er... Ling’er!!”

Bang!

The bamboo basket in the girl’s hands fell to the ground. Seeing the Yun Che that was sitting up on the bed, her beautiful eyes revealed heartfelt happiness and surprise. Rushing to the front of his bed, her expression was frantic, yet she forced her voice to become so soft and gentle: “Big Brother Yun Che, you’re awake... Does your body still hurt? Are you uncomfortable anywhere?”

With the girl’s face mere inches from his, the girlish air that belonged solely to her heavy impacted Yun Che’s soul. Her eyes were brimmed happiness, worry,

anxiety, a deeply hidden sorrow and longing... It was the same as from his memories, as well as the countless times she'd appeared in his dreams. Only, he never dared to think that it was possible for him to one day, look into this beautiful pair of eyes again.

He gradually grew dazed from staring. His lip wouldn't stop trembling, yet he couldn't utter a single word. At this moment, all of his thoughts had completely disintegrated. The only thing that remained was this figure before his eyes who was imprinted so deep into his soul, that not even death was able to make him forget.

Without caring for anything else, he threw open his still bandaged arms and, with a surprised "Ah!" from

Ling'er, embraced her tightly; so tightly that it was as if he was afraid she'd leave him if he relaxed even a little bit.

“Big Brother Yun Che...” Ling'er's body froze for quite a while before she hugged him back, leaned her entire body into his chest and whispered softly.

“Ling'er... Ling'er... Ling'er...”

Yun Che knew how unseemly he was at the moment. His heart was in a complete state of chaos. Over his own cries, he could clearly hear the sound of weeping and feel the tears that could not stop sliding down his face.

After that painful loss back then,



this was a situation that could only appear in his dreams. The warmth in his heart was almost enough to make it stop beating; it made him feel like even if he were to die right now, he would still be completely content. If possible, he wanted to embrace her forever and never let go ever again; no matter how enormous of a price he had to pay for it.

All those years, he had gotten accustomed to her presence, used to treating her as his own safe harbor. Every time he was bloodied and dying, he would desperately climb to the front of this small house that she had built with her own two hands... Every time he needed warmth, he wouldn't be able to help but to come here... Every time he

frenzied and went mad, he would also always come here to find peace. And, she would always heal the wounds on his body and soul, time and time again. She would go to the creek to catch fish for him, pat his back as if to coax a baby to sleep... He was too vigilant and would wake up every half a quarter of an hour each and every time he slept. Only with her here, would he finally be able to sleep until noontime of the second day.

She was his only source of warmth then.

However, his eyes had been blinded by hatred. He had placed revenge as the only objective in his life and it had become a habit... Only until the day he had lost her, did he truly

understand that this girl had long become more important than his life; than his revenge.

Time and time again, she would ask of him not to seek revenge any longer with tears in her eyes. It was her only request in the midst of all her selfless sacrificing and giving, but he had never listened... Even until the last moments of her life, she still asked him not to avenge his master nor her... It wasn't because the ones who killed her were her own family, but because she wished so much for him to stop living a life of endless revenge and hatred.

No matter how much pain he suffered or how much he regretted, what had been lost would never

return again. If he could, he was willing to give everything he had in exchange; even if it were his own life and soul.

“Ling’er... Ling’er... Ling’er...”

He held Ling’er tight in his embrace. Again and again, with every cry, he wished he would never have to wake from this dream. The blessed feeling of regaining what he had once lost was so warm that it was unable to be described with any spoken words.

“Big Brother Yun Che...” Ling’er’s whisper came from beside his ear, with a light and haziness that seemed almost like a dream, “Don’t think about revenge anymore, okay? Your master’s soul in heaven also

definitely wouldn't wish to see you like this... No matter what it is, I can promise you that as long as you promise you won't pursue revenge any longer... The two of us can stay in this bamboo forest. You'll accompany me, and I, you, forever... A lifetime... I'll be your most gentle wife... and never leave you... okay?"

Her fragrance, her voice and her words; they were all so familiar. These were exact the smell and voice that belonged to her. And even more so, these were the words she'd said to him many times before... In the past, whenever she said these words, he would feel the inside of his heart palpitate, but right after it would be quashed dead under his hatred...

After losing her, he had dreamt many times. If he could turn back time, if the heavens could give him another chance, he never would have rejected it again; absolutely would not.

Without any hesitation, he nodded his head in extreme vigor; nodded five or six times in a row and insisted in a hoarse voice: “Yes! Yes! Ling’er, I’ll listen to you. I promise you, I’ll no longer seek revenge anymore. In the future, you’ll be my life; your life, will be my life.

Wherever you are, I’ll be there by your side forever, watching over you and we’ll never part through life and death!!”

Every sentence, every word, and every slightest bit of emotion came

from the depths of his soul. How he'd yearned to shout these words at her all those years ago.

Ling'er cried in happiness, her jade-white hands tightly hugged him, "Big Brother Yun Che, do you mean it? Is what you're saying for real?"

"I'm serious. Every word I said was real. If anything I've said was false, may I be destroyed by the heavens." Yun Che said every word with determination.

After saying these words, he closed his eyes; his expression was so peaceful and content. He felt a sharp cold object pierced deeply into his back. Blood frantically spurted out as his consciousness quickly dispersed amidst the

heaviness...

The scene before his eyes distorted and disappeared as the world once again returned to darkness. Yun Che opened his eyes. To the front of his view, there were those two giant, golden eyes.

“I’ve failed.” Yun Che laughed self-deprecatingly, but steadily.

“Originally, I’d thought that, with my state of mind, I’d be able to pass through the third stage easily. But I had thought too highly of myself. Heh heh, I must have disappointed you. My pursuit of strength isn’t that resolute after all.”

The phoenix spirit’s voice floated over, “Your soul’s response tells me that you already knew it was only



an illusion from the very start, and that you had obviously seen the dagger beside the bed. You also clearly knew that if you were to hold up this dagger and stab the girl, you'd be able to escape the illusion and easily pass this test. Why would you rather stay in the illusion and even tricked yourself into believing that it was real? Unless, within your heart, the great strength that you can immediately obtain can't even compare to that temporary illusion?"

"I could not do it." Yun Che shook his head slowly, "This illusion came from the most precious memories in my soul. Even though it was merely an illusion, it's deeply imprinted in my soul as what true happiness is. You won't be able to

understand how dear that girl is to me, nor will you understand how much I owe her. Even if that was only a dream, even if I have to lose my greatest strength as the price, I would never be willing to harm her.”

“Even if that is so, why did you not dodge, or even push her away when you obviously sensed her pick up the dagger to stab at you?” The phoenix’s spirit asked in a puzzled tone of voice.

Yun Che laughed; but it was a laugh of sadness, “I knew that it was an illusion you’d forcefully created based on my memories... My Ling’er, even if she had to die herself, she wouldn’t be willing to cause me any harm. However, I’m

willing to die by her hands because what is a life compared to what I owe her? To be able to die in her hands, even though it was merely an illusion, it has allowed the guilt in my heart to ease just a little.”

The phoenix’s spirit was silent for a long time.

“I thirst for power, but in this world, there are many things that are much more important to me than strength. Me needing strength was also because I need to protect the things that are important to me. It seems I am neither fated, nor qualified to obtain the power of the phoenix... However, even though I have failed the trial, I’m already satisfied. Because this training has allowed me to see and hold her

again. It has even allowed me to voice the promise that I've wanted to make to her even in my dreams..."

Yun Che laughed; he laughed very warmly, without any trace of unwillingness or regret.

"It seems that the girl whom you call Ling'er must have really been very important to you. And also because of her, your inner self holds heavy regret. However, you don't have to suppress this regret in the depths of your soul. You have passed through the reincarnation cycle due to the Profound Heaven Treasure and it has tampered with this world's causality. Under the butterfly effect, time, dimension, and planes will also change as well.

Your regret and debt, you may have not yet lost your chance to make up for them.”

“You have passed through the reincarnation cycle due to the Heavenly Profound Treasure.” This sentence caused Yun Che’s heart to immensely lurch. He stared directly at the golden eye in front of him and was unable to say anything for a long time.

Heavenly Profound Treasure...Pass through reincarnations... Could it be, it had actually seen through that he had lived through two lives? And the reason why he had lived for two lives... Was due to the Heavenly Profound Treasure’s ability to pass through the reincarnation cycle?

Heavenly Profound Treasure...

Jasmine had mentioned that the Sky Poison Pearl within his body had been one of these Heavenly Profound Treasures. But the abilities of the Sky Poison Pearl was centered around poison, medicine, purification and space. Above this discovery, where would the ability to pass through reincarnation come from?

As for the latter half of the words spoken after that sentence, he was completely unable to comprehend them. He probingly asked: “What do you mean by these words you’ve said?”

“Heh heh...” The phoenix’s spirit laughed mysteriously, “It’s fine for you to only understand half of it,

but not the rest are heavenly secrets that aren't to be disclosed. As you progress and as your strength continues to rise in this world, you will one day understand all of it."

Yun Che fell into deep thought and then nodded his head, "Spirit of the Phoenix, although you have tampered with the illusions of my memories and made Ling'er stab me to death, which was rather unpleasant, I still have to thank you. But since I couldn't pass through this stage of the training in the end, I should leave now."

"No, it is not time for you to leave yet. Because you, have already successfully passed the third stage of the trial."

“Congratulations, human who bears the Evil God’s strength. Within these countless years, you are the eighth practitioner who has chosen to give up your strength rather than hurt the illusion of your loved one. You have earned the right to inherit the Phoenix’s gift.”



## Chapter 112:

# 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (7)

Feng Baichuan once said that, whether one failed or succeeded, they could only enter the Phoenix trials once in their entire lifetime. Even though this was so, he still chose to give up the third stage of the trial because he didn't want to hurt the figure that he treasured most.

However, this was only what he thought.

The phoenix spirit's words made Yun Che widen his eyes and become momentarily stunned.

“What I had said before about how only those with an appropriate amount of ambition towards achieving strength can pass the third stage of the trial, was a deliberate hint in the wrong direction. The phoenix is a righteous creature and the trials it had left behind is a gift to the Sky Profound Continent. But the phoenix is never willing to have his strength to be inherited by those who are evil and heartless. The third trial is constructed through the practitioner's most pleasant memories from in the depths of their soul. Prior to the trial, I would give a hint that only through a

strong desire for power would one pass the trial.”

“Right, those illusions originated from your own memory, and were not replicated from other sources. It is exactly the same as the real person, item or event and they’ll have to face it as if everything was real. If they hurt the person who they loved the most just to achieve strength, even if that is a sort of dedication, and even if it doesn’t mean that they’re evil, they will still be missing the most important requirement of a soul: affection. If such a person were to receive great strength, it would only be for their own self-growth, and not to protect others. This would go against the Phoenix’s original intention in leaving behind this trial ground.”

“Of the seven people who had previously passed the third test, some of them faced their own wives, some faced their masters, their benefactors, parents and even their kids. They were like you; they were clear that it was an illusion, but were still unable to do the deed. However, when they were attacked, they would resist even if they didn’t attack back. As for you, you willingly allowed her to stab you to death just so you could have a few more moments to embrace her... In all these years, you are the only one who had perfectly passed the third stage.”

This sudden change undoubtedly pleased Yun Che beyond his expectations. It couldn’t be said that he passed by luck, for he

would've definitely made this choice no matter what the consequences were; because even if he had to betray the whole world, he would never allow himself to betray that girl.

“Then, can I obtain the power of the Phoenix now?” Yun Che asked expectantly.

“Of course. You will be granted three gifts from the Phoenix: Phoenix blood, Divine Phoenix Pills and you will have the chance to study the [World Ode of the Phoenix: Fragment].”

“Right now, I shall bestow upon you the Phoenix's Veins.”

The phoenix spirit's golden eyes

flashed, and caused the dark world to turn golden for an instant.

Abruptly, a spot of golden light came from the illusionary space. It shot precisely in between Yun Che's eyebrows to then sink in afterwards.

“The previously challengers only received a single drop of the Phoenix blood after they passed but you house a Heavenly Profound Treasure, hold the Evil God's strength, and have perfectly passed the third trial. I have to make an exception and grant you three drops of the Phoenix's blood. You are already equipped with the Divine Seed of the Evil God, and will not be harmed by any sort of fire.

Therefore, the Phoenix's ability to withstand fire will be of no use to you. But after it has fused into your

veins, it will allow you to master fire attribute profound arts and yield twice the results in half the time. The fire attribute profound skills that you could employ would be more powerful than ever! Especially the Phoenix Fire Skill, which will allow you to wield power that's three times stronger than what a normal person's veins can.

“There is also another reason; a drop of the Phoenix's blood is the most a normal person's veins can handle. But as you're equipped with the Divine Seed of the Evil God, even accommodating three drops of blood is an easy feat. You'll also be free of pain and danger through this process. Now close your eyes and let these three drops of the Phoenix's blood seep into your

veins. Amongst the previous seven challengers, the shortest time a person took for the entire process was three days: but I believe it would not take more than half a quarter of an hour in your case.”

The voice of the phoenix spirit reverberated within his heart, but Yun Che was already too busy to reply.

Three small drops of blood might not seem like anything compared to the large veins in a human’s body, but these were drops of blood that belonged to the phoenix after all!

After the the three drops of the Phoenix’s blood entered his veins, it was as if there were three clusters of frantically burning flames.. and



these three clusters of flames seemed to spread through all of his veins in a split second while violently stirring up all the blood in his body.

Were he a mere mortal, just this burning pain that boiled his veins would have been enough to make him wish he was dead than endure such torture. Perhaps, under immense pressure and resistance, a drop might be able to successfully fuse into his veins, but three drops... As the Phoenix had said, this completely exceeded what a human was capable of enduring. Not only would it be impossible to fuse, they would even be engulfed by the Phoenix blood.

But to Yun Che, the feeling that this

sort of burn brought him only felt like three warm currents that sprung from his body. Only to a mere mortal's vein would this Phoenix blood be excessively formidable and noble; it would be like burying three precious stones within normal dirt. Yun Che calmly closed his eyes and suppressed the explosive behavior of the three drops of Phoenix blood with his profound energy. While letting the blood go in all directions, he allowed it to fuse into his bloodstream bit by bit.

His bloodstream gradually grew warmer as the three drops of Phoenix blood began to shrink in size. After a dozen or so times circulating through his body, the three drops of Phoenix blood finally

disappeared into Yun Che's veins.

Yun Che opened his eyes and a fire-red flame mark flashed between his brows. The size and shape of the mark was the same as that of the Phoenix clan outside, but its color was much more vivid.

“Good, it seems you’ve successfully fused with the three drops of Phoenix blood, I’ve already sensed the change within your veins. With these three drops of Phoenix blood, your lifespan will also increase by at least three hundred years. Now, I’ll give this Divine Phoenix Pill and the fragment of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] to you.”

The golden eyes flashed again and two spots of light descended from

the skies. What fell in front of Yun Che.. was a white colored jade bottle and a broken piece of white jade.

“Inside the white colored jade bottle is precisely the Divine Phoenix Pill. It can increase your control of fire energy by a substantial amount. However, because you possess the Divine Seed of the Evil God; its main ability isn’t of much use to you. But at the same time, it can also greatly increase your profound strength. With regards to your current profound strength, it can let your profound strength advance by at least five ranks!”

“Meanwhile, the fragment of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] is inscribed on this jade stone.

Together, the [World Ode of the Phoenix], the [Vermillion Bird's Consoling Spirit Song], and the [Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World] were known as the Three Great World Scorching Heavenly Books. Each possessed tremendous power capable of burning the heavens. That year, the Phoenix left behind the first six stages of the [World Ode of the Phoenix]. Only..."

At this point, the Phoenix's spirit quieted, as if waiting for Yun Che to check for himself.

Yun Che picked up the Divine Phoenix Pill and the broken piece of jade. After pressing a hand against the jade, information quickly transmitted into his brain with a

touch of his profound energy. His heart also began to become incomparably excited in turmoil.... After all, these were flame techniques that came from the Phoenix! It was known as one of the World Scorching Heavenly Books that was left behind by a divine beast!

.....

[World Ode of the Phoenix] Fifth Stage...

[World Ode of the Phoenix] Sixth Stage...

.....

“How come only the fifth and sixth stages are here? What about the first four?” Yun Che raised his head

and asked with a face full of astonishment. He reviewed all the messages from the jade stone a few times, but could only find records of the fifth and sixth stages... There was absolutely nothing about the first four stages.

Without the first four stages, how was he to train in the fifth and sixth stages?

“This is indeed a great pity, but there’s nothing I can do about it either.” The phoenix spirit’s voice held a deep sigh: “Originally, this [World Ode of the Phoenix] had recorded everything from the first to the sixth stage, but before the first challenger arrived, an unexpected accident happened.”

“That year, the Phoenix left two trial grounds in this continent. One was here and the other was at the enormous Divine Phoenix Empire a long distance away. The trial ground at the Divine Phoenix Empire was quickly discovered and the Divine Phoenix Sect was created. That trial ground also became a restricted area that belonged solely to the Divine Phoenix Sect. Afterwards, the Divine Phoenix Sect became the number one sect of that empire. The empire was renamed as the Divine Phoenix Empire and even the empire’s capital was established near the Divine Phoenix Sect. Thus, the area where the trial ground was located became the empire’s most prosperous region. Humanity’s avarice, deceit, barbarous acts, and



war... Constantly existed and tainted the aura within that region. It thereby infected the Phoenix's spirit in that trial ground and gave it a consciousness it should not have had... Which led it to betray the will of the Phoenix.”

Yun Che: “...!”

“As a part of the Phoenix spirit with a different body, I knew of its existence then; and similarly, it knew of mine. After it had developed the consciousness it shouldn't have, it actually had the idea of destroying me and this trial ground, wanting to have the entire continent to itself. Thus, it transferred its energy to an common firebird and came here. It fiercely battled against me and

completely destroyed my copy of the jade that recorded the [World Ode of the Phoenix].

“During the intense fight, I destroyed a portion of its copy of the [World Ode of the Phoenix], leaving it with only the first four stages. Afterwards, I was no match for it and had no other option but to create a false illusion of dissipating into flames. Only until then did it leave... But it didn’t know that I had removed the fifth and sixth stages of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] instead of destroying them, which is the piece that you are holding right now. After that, I completely severed my soul connection to it. It never felt my existence again and has always believed that I had died but I have

continued to carry out the will of the phoenix. While guarding this trial ground, I have welcomed and monitored all the challengers.”

Yun Che’s mouth fell open slightly, as if he had just heard an inconceivable story.

# Chapter 113:

## 《World Ode of the Phoenix - Fragments》 (8)

“So you’re saying, the first four stages of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] are located at the Divine Phoenix Empire’s trial grounds, and only the fifth and sixth stages are located here?”

Yun Che had simply wanted to acquire power through this trial from the Phoenix and never thought he would chance upon this sort of confidential information. With a might that shook the entire

Profound Sky Continent, it was well-known to everyone in this world, that the reason for the Divine Phoenix Sect's domination and power was their possession of Phoenix blood and had the power of the Phoenix within their body. However, no one knew that there was actually such a secret behind them.

“No! The first four stages of [World Ode of the Phoenix] are not located at the Divine Phoenix Empire's trial grounds; they are actually in the hands of the Divine Phoenix Sect. The [World Ode of the Phoenix] became the Divine Phoenix Sect's treasure after that rebellious Spirit of the Phoenix gave it to them, and assisted their domination of the Profound Sky Continent. The Divine

Phoenix Empire's trial grounds are preserved and used to grant pure Phoenix blood and Divine Phoenix pellet to the Divine Phoenix Sect's disciples that have passed the trial, because passing the trials is the only way to receive the Phoenix blood and Divine Phoenix pill. The Phoenix set this rule originally, and even us Spirits of the Phoenix cannot change it. This rule also applies to the [World Ode of the Phoenix]."

"Then why was the Divine Phoenix Empire's Spirit of the Phoenix capable of handing over the [World Ode of the Phoenix] to the Divine Phoenix Sect? Also, with only the fifth and sixth stages here, it is impossible to cultivate the [World Ode of the Phoenix] without the

first four stages. You are the Phoenix's spirit, so you should know the power inscriptions for the first four stages, right?" Yun Che asked.

"No, I do not know. Even though we are Spirits of the Phoenix, we do not possess the authority to read the [World Ode of the Phoenix] and more so, cannot give it away to others. The only authority we have, is to grant it to humans who who have passed the trial, and allow them to study the [World Ode of the Phoenix] for one month.

However, in our vicious battle, my jade stone that recorded the [World Ode of the Phoenix] was destroyed and his was also fractured, which rendered the imprinted rules the Phoenix had previously set useless.

Thus, he gained that chunk of broken jade stone, which was also the complete authority over the first four stages. The bottom half landed in my hands and I could also freely administer it. However, I will never go against the will of the Phoenix. As for the first four stages, I don't have the slightest knowledge of them. So your wish to obtain the first four stages from here, is completely impossible."

"So that's how it is." Yun Che's heart was crestfallen. The inscriptions of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] had fractured, but at any rate, with the first four stages [World Ode of the Phoenix] in the hands of the Divine Phoenix Sect, even if one started training from the first stage without the slightest



delay, one would eventually be stuck at the fourth stage. The fifth and sixth stages of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] that he currently possessed were two stages more powerful than that of the Divine Phoenix Sect. But at the moment, it was just as useful as not having it at all... Without knowledge of the first four stages, how would one even begin learning the fifth and sixth stages?

If a building didn't have the first four stories, how could it have the fifth and sixth stories? Even if the building was suspended in the air, there would still be some support structure supporting the building.

“You can consume this Divine Phoenix Pill immediately, and with

your current profound strength, you should need three days worth of time to completely refine the pill. As for the [World Ode of the Phoenix], even though we only have a fragment, you can still try to comprehend it through the rules and regulations the Phoenix had left behind in the next month. Of course, if you feel like this a waste of time, you can leave right after refining the pill. But even though you cannot cultivate with this fragment of the [World Ode of the Phoenix], it is still one of the World Scorching Heavenly Books from the world-shaking Prehistoric Era. In this one month, you may read it and perhaps learn something from it. Everything is up to you.”

“Lastly, I’ll leave you with a

warning. Once you leave, you can not bring up a single word of these trials to anyone. If you go to the Divine Phoenix Empire in the future, unless you have enough power, you must cover up any signs of your Phoenix Veins and mark. If any of the Phoenix bloodline discover the Phoenix blood in your body, you are bound to encounter a great calamity since you are not a disciple of the Divine Phoenix Sect... Remember this!"

The voice reverberated in Yun Che's mind and the huge pair of golden pupils slowly faded away.

Holding onto the jade which contained the fragments of the [World Ode of the Phoenix], it was impossible for Yun Che to not be

confused and hesitant. What kind of existence was the Divine Phoenix Sect? Just a casual branch sect had the power to match the Blue Wind Empire's Four Major Sects, so their Main Sect's strength was simply unimaginable to ordinary citizens. They were so formidable because of Phoenix blood, as well as the [World Ode of the Phoenix] that they had acquired from the Spirit of the Phoenix.

And the portion of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] in his hands exceeded that of the Divine Phoenix Sect's by two stages. What kind of frightening concept was this?

But these were only fragments, and it was impossible to train without the foundation of the first four

levels! To have such a treasure but not be able to utilize it, one could only imagine how frustrating this would be. Yun Che wished the Spirit of the Phoenix hadn't revealed the existence of the fragments at all; then he would be content and not in this current state of hesitation.

Yun Che sat on the floor and took the Divine Phoenix Pill out of the jade bottle. The Divine Phoenix Pill's entire color was as red as blood and scorching hot. One could clearly feel the immense power contained within the pill. Yun Che adjusted his breathing, placed the pill at the entrance of his mouth, and swallowed it in one gulp.

Whoosh!!

Suddenly, crimson flames rose out of Yun Che's body, and shot up to a height no less than three meters as it wrapped around his entire body. At the same time, all the pores in his body expanded by a substantial amount; blood frantically rushed around his body at three times the usual speed, and the profound energy in his veins violently swept across his body like stormy water.

The process of refining the pill should have been very difficult and painful, but due to the cheat in his body, Yun Che actually felt an indescribably comfortable sensation. He merely used not even twenty breaths of time to restore the balance between his blood, meridians, and profound veins. All the while, his expression was

completely calm as he enjoyed the minute changes in his body and the slowly thickening profound energy.

The flames surrounding his entire body did not subside at all as it continued to calmly burn throughout the process. The purpose of the flames was to physically remold the body of the pill taker, increasing their fire resistance, and their affinity with the fire element. But in Yun Che's case, the fire was unnecessary.

The Phoenix spirit had said that not only would the Divine Phoenix Pill improve one's control over fire, it would also greatly enhance one's profound power. The Phoenix spirit definitely spoke the truth, as Yun Che could clearly feel an increase in

his profound strength... This kind of growth was very slow, and was completely unlike the Evil God's Fire Seed violent expansion. Rather, the promotion was especially solidly stable.

An hour later, Yun Che opened his eyes. Over one percent of the Divine Phoenix Pill had been refined in his body. His profound strength had originally been situated at the bottleneck of the Nascent Profound Realm's first level. In order to stabilize the explosive surge of profound energy from the Evil God's Fire Seed, he had been suppressing his profound power's breakthrough. However, under the effect of the Divine Phoenix Pill, in only an hour, he had completely broken through the



bottleneck now, and safely entered the second level of the Nascent Profound Realm.

While still seated, Yun Che picked up the jade with the [World Ode of the Phoenix] inscribed on it. He placed his palm on the top of the jade as feelings of worry and regret filled his heart. Right as he was about to take his hand off the jade and focus on refining the Divine Phoenix Pill, the silhouette of a person suddenly flashed in his mind, and he thought back to the time when that person gently said those words to him...

“Master, the arts of healing that you taught me, are they all from this [Heavenly Medicine Manual]?”

“Heh heh, that’s right. This is a particularly odd book. Once, I was gathering medicinal materials and got lost while deep in the mountains. I fell off a small cliff after being chased by a wild beast, and found this [Heavenly Medicine Manual] on a withered skeleton. Only, I discovered upon finding this book that the [Heavenly Medicine Manual] had a total of three sections, and I had only found the third section. I also discovered that this [Heavenly Medicine Manual] was not a just a common medical book; its medical knowledge was suppose to be one of a whole, and it was fundamentally impossible to comprehend the third section without the first two sections.”

“Later, Master found the first two

sections, right?”

“No! Even though I spent a considerable amount of time searching, I did not find the previous sections. But Master was not content leaving it at that, so I stopped searching and tried to decipher the third section of [Heavenly Medicine Manual] by force. Combined with my entire lifetime’s worth of reading, knowledge, and experience, I pieced it together bit by bit, and in ten years’ time, I wrote out the two sections myself... However, the two sections that Master wrote are definitely not the same as the original sections, but through my own comprehension and writing, compared to simply reading another’s book, perhaps what I had

gained was much greater.”

“Wow! Master, you really are too powerful.”

“Hahahaha, Master is just stubborn and never admits defeat. If others could comprehend it, why wouldn’t I be able to comprehend it... Not to mention that I also had the third section as a reference. Che’er, in terms of perception, you surpass me completely. As long as you have Master’s ideas and determination, you will definitely be able to accomplish it as well, perhaps even better than Master.”

.....

As if encouraged to study by the morning bell and evening drums,

Yun Che's eyes suddenly widened as his heart heavily quaked.

Every stage of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] was exactly a step by step progression and all arts of the world were like this without exception. Without a complete understanding of the first stage, it was impossible to grasp the second stage, and without a complete understanding of the second stage it would be impossible to grasp the third stage... This was common sense that everyone knew!

But, was it really completely impossible?

Master could. Through his own understanding of the arts of healing, his talent, and the third

section of [Heavenly Medicine Manual], he thoroughly understood the entire [Heavenly Medicine Manual]. I have the Evil God's Fire Seed and an unparalleled affinity to fire, so there is no absolutely no reason why I shouldn't be able to comprehend the the fifth and sixth stages of the [World Ode of the Phoenix], break through the basic context of the first four stages, and then forcefully cultivate the fifth stage?!

Thinking to here, Yun Che closed his eyes and suddenly emptied his heart. The only thing his mind focused on was the mental imprint that came from the jade....

And began from the fifth stage of the [World Ode of the Phoenix]....

The fifth stage... Other than raising Phoenix fire power, it also contained a Phoenix Fire Technique : Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing.

# Chapter 114: At Wit's End

“What are you trying to do?”

All of a sudden, Jasmine felt the profound energy in Yun Che's body begin to abnormally circulate, and immediately became alert. She asked him solemnly: “Are you trying to forcefully comprehend the fifth and sixth stages of this [World Ode of the Phoenix]? Have you gone mad!”

“A chance of a lifetime has been placed right in front of me. If I don't attempt it, I will regret it forever!” Yun Che replied with his eyes closed. His consciousness was



completely submerged into the soul imprint inside the jade rock. This [World Ode of the Phoenix] was recorded using a soul imprint, so one must use soul power to read it. If one managed to successfully comprehend it, it would then be genuinely recorded within one's own soul. And if one was unable to comprehend it, after leaving the trial ground, the words, images, and methods to circulate profound energy that were recorded on the jade stone would be completely erased from his memory. Therefore, for Yun Che, who only had a month to comprehend the remaining portion of this fragment, it was fundamentally impossible for him to commit the fifth and sixth stages to memory as a temporary solution and then find the first four stages to

comprehend in the future.

“Without the first four stages, how are you going to comprehend the fifth and sixth stages? Are you trying to go straight for the fruit when you don’t even have the roots? If you try to force yourself to go on the opposite path, the most likely outcome will be the distortion of your profound veins, messing up your channels, and even the profound entrances that you had fully opened would close one after another.”

“Since I don’t have the foundation of the first to fourth stages, I’ll build my own foundation!” Yun Che answered serenely.

“Build your own foundation? Do

you know how many tens of thousands of years the Primordial Phoenix Clan spent to finally obtain this [World Ode of the Phoenix]? And do you realize how many revisions, changes and evolutions it underwent after it was first created? You only have a month's time at most, and yet you still want to build your own foundation to comprehend the fifth and sixth stages?" Jasmine shook her head, "Even if you really are some peerless genius, it will still be impossible to do so!"

"At least let me attempt it!" Yun Che willfully replied in a low voice. Then, he cut off all other parts of his consciousness, and submerged himself fully within the soul imprint of the [World Ode of the

Phoenix]...

However at this moment, neither Yun Che nor Jasmine noticed that under his outer clothing, an eccentric glow suddenly radiated from the pendant he had worn since birth.... Which died down in a flash.

-----

Outside the seal formation, Lan Xueruo waited anxiously. One hour passed... Two hours passed... Twelve hours passed... An entire day and night passed... Her expression had long since darkened. The insides of Feng Baichuan's heart went completely silent as well.

“Do people really die in this training?” Looking at Feng Baichuan who had walked over there again, Lan Xueruo turned to the side and asked with lifeless eyes. She had already asked this same question over a dozen times.

Feng Baichuan sighed deeply in his heart and could only try his best to console her: “Some of the clansmen have indeed died in this trial. But... we shouldn’t be this pessimistic; it cannot be said for sure but perhaps Little Brother Yun passed the training. Our ancestors who passed this trial, had stayed inside for more than a dozen days before coming out. So... let’s wait a bit longer. Maybe he’ll coming out any moment now.”

While saying this, Feng Baichuan, who had experienced the Phoenix trial first-hand, clearly understood that it was impossible to pass the trials with only a power of the first level of the Nascent Profound Realm. Since Yun Che had not come out yet, the only possible outcome was that he had already died in the trial grounds. However, at this moment, he could only use these words to comfort Lan Xueruo, and let her hold onto the traces of hope.

“Clan Leader Feng, do you have any way of letting me in?”

Feng Baichuan shook his head:  
“Only one person can enter the trial ground every month, I don’t have any ways to let you in.”

Lan Xueruo bit her lip and did not say another word as she silently stood in front of the trial entrance, blankly staring ahead; her heart frantically longed for the appearance of that figure... She did not know what was going on with her, to actually be secretly anxious and worried to this extent. Whenever she thought about the possibility of him dying in the trial grounds, her heart would experience a tearing pain.

Barricaded outside by the Black Demon Mercenary Group, the Thousand Meter Sound Transmission Talisman consumed, the Giant Snow Eagle still in slumber... None of these problems caused her to be at a loss. However, when Yun Che had not come out

for an entire day, she mind was in a frenzy, and was unable to calm down at all.

Two days passed... Three days passed... Ten days passed... Fifteen days passed...

Yun Che still had not appeared.

So Lan Xueruo was unable to hold on to any more delusions, and had no choice but to painfully accept the fact that Yun Che had already died in the trial ground and would never come out.

She had been living in darkness these past few days, and the stabbing pain in her heart would not stop, day or night. Originally, she believed the reason for her pain



was the loss of a “hope” she had finally found, but she was unable to suppress this kind of pain no matter what, and her heart tightened up whenever she recalled Yun Che’s face. She gradually became perplexed, because she could feel that this kind of suffering had long since exceeded the category of feeling sorry. But she had no idea which part had exceeded, because this kind of feeling was very elusive, and extremely unfamiliar.

“Damn it. Half a month has already passed and they still haven’t come out! Food was clearly prepared inside this cave!”

“What are you worried about! No matter how much food and water

they have, there will be a time when their resources run out. Hmph, let's see how much longer they can hold out."

The Black Demon Mercenary Group still had not left, because at this point, they were certain that there must be a great treasure hidden inside. They stationed two squads of people to keep watch in turns everyday, and never left the cave unguarded for even a moment.

Under Feng Baichuan's frugal distribution, only a third of the rations and water that Yun Che had originally left remained after half a month. He knitted his brow every day as he strenuously thought of ways to escape. However, in the face of the absolute pressuring

power from outside, he was at his wit's end and even if he were to think until his brain shut down, all they could do was painfully hold on.

Twenty days passed... Twenty five days passed...

A month passed.

Under the protection of the seal formation, the bereaved Phoenix clan had finally reached the end of the line after holding out with difficulty for an entire month.

The spatial ring that Yun Che passed onto Feng Baichuan had been completely emptied two days prior, and not a single grain of food or droplet of water was left. An adult had a low level of profound

energy, which allowed them to last a bit longer, whereas the elderly and children collapsed one after another from the horror of their unyielding hunger. Once they lost consciousness, it was impossible to wake them up anymore.

Feng Baichuan's eyes were deeply sunken and he sat in a cold corner of the cave as he choked in the deep abyss of powerlessness and despair. At this point, he already had no idea what he should do next... If they were to continue to remain here, their entire clan would starve to death; whereas if they left, the vicious and cruel bandits would kill them all... Perhaps they might even ravage and torture them in every way possible because they did not hand over the so-called treasure,

which would be an even more miserable death.

“All of you inside, listen carefully. You only need to come out obediently, then hand over the treasure and that woman, and we can assure you that we would not touch any one of you. Furthermore, we won’t ever enter this area a second time.”

“They truly are a bunch of stupid fellows. What do you hope to achieve by hiding like this? Even if you don’t care about your life, do you not care about the lives of your family and children? You will die sooner or later staying inside. Come out and surrender obediently, and, after you satisfy our conditions, we promise that not a single one of you

will die. We'll even let you all have a good meal first!"

At the brink of despair, the Black Demon Mercenaries' shouts became harder and harder to resist in everyone's ears. At this moment, an elderly man tottered up and said: "Clan Leader, what they say is also true; sooner or later we will all starve to death in here. At this point, there simply is no meaning in hiding any longer. We'd better go out and surrender; perhaps they will do as they say and would not harm us.

"Out of the question!" Feng Baichuan actually shook his head and dimly replied: "You should have felt it previously as well,- all of them carried varying degrees of

hostility towards us on their bodies. This is a gang of vicious and cruel bandits that have no regard for human lives. If we go out, we will only die more miserably and even suffer from humiliation. Let's hold on for a while more... Miss Xueruo said her contracted spirit beast is about to wake up; when that time comes, we will have some hope of being saved. Even if we all end up dying... I would rather starve to death than get humiliated to death!"

"Zu'er~~ Xian'er!!!"

Just as Feng Baichuan finished speaking, Feng Caiyun's heart-wrenching cry sounded out. Feng Baichuan suddenly stood up and leapt to the front of his wife, Feng

Caiyun... Feng Zu'er and Feng Xian'er had lost consciousness in Feng Caiyun's bosom. Their faces were pale with a tinge of yellow, and no matter how Feng Caiyun shouted, they gave no response whatsoever.

"Zu'er, Xian'er..." Blood oozed out from Feng Baichuan's fingertips, and his eyes filled with tears. He then raised his hand to forcefully slapped his head and nearly fainted from despair.

Lan Xueruo, who had been curled up in the corner the entire time, slowly stood up. Perhaps it was way too exhausted, for the Giant Snow Eagle had still not awoken after a month had passed. At this moment, she knew that if they couldn't come



up with any other plan, they wouldn't be able to hold out for even a day longer.

“Clan Leader Feng, can I trouble you to temporarily open the seal formation outside? I will go out and snatch some food to bring back in.”

Listening to Lan Xueruo's words, Feng Baichuan became stunned before quickly shaking his head: “No! It's too dangerous; with so many people outside, how are you going to snatch the food from right under their noses?”

Lan Xueruo replied with a determined gaze: “After all, I do have the profound strength of the True Profound Realm. As long as the few True Profound Realm

leaders of theirs are not present, it is unlikely to be dangerous for me. Right now, all these children are already unable to hold out. If I still don't go and obtain some food, they might..."

Feng Baichuan's lips trembled. Looking at Feng Zu'er and Feng Xian'er who had lost consciousness, he finally nodded his head and said bitterly: "Miss Lan, then you must be careful... All of us big men here are helpless, yet we can only trouble a girl like you to risk your life for us. It really is..."

"No need to put it that way, Clan Leader Feng. I believe that if Clan Leader Feng had enough power, you would definitely be the first one to go out... Immediately deactivate the

seal formation, then immediately activate it again after I've exited. Once I get the food, I will signal you through voice to deactivate the seal formation again."

Even though her plan was accompanied by extremely high risk, it seemed to be the only plausible temporary solution to relieve them of their current crisis. Feng Baichuan stood at the cave entrance, bit open his mouth, dripped his blood on the seal and said with concern: "You must be careful!"

Within Feng Baichuan's voice, the scarlet colored seal formation flashed before slowly vanishing. With her longsword in hand, Lan Xuero's body suddenly shot flying

toward the outside as she left  
behind a flash of white phantom.

# Chapter 115: Sorry, I'm Late

“This is really unbelievable, you were actually able to forcefully comprehend the Phoenix Flame Techniques from the fifth and sixth stages of the [World Ode of the Phoenix] by utilizing your profound strength’s extremely strong affinity to fire, even under the situation where the concept of the phoenix’s flames’ power was severely lacking! Human, you astonish me.”

“The core power of these two great realms lies in raising the power of the phoenix flame by a wide margin, yet all I did was merely comprehend the two great flame

techniques; it really wasn't anything impressive." Yun Che said calmly.

"No! The flame techniques of the two huge realms, 'Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing' and the 'Burning Star Devil Lotus', are closely related to the concepts of the flame's energy and are together as one. To thoroughly understand these two great flame techniques under these circumstances, I believe that even if the Phoenix was here in the mortal world, he would certainly be immensely astonished as well. Admittedly, this is related to the fact that you possess the Fire Seed of the Evil God and have an extremely strong affinity to fire; however, even if the Evil God was here instead, it would basically be impossible for him to do this in the

short span of one month. Your astonishing comprehensive ability is sufficient to be crowned as the best in the present world.”

This is the evaluation that the Phoenix Spirit had towards Yun Che. Being the spirit of a divine beast superior to the mortal world, it had never expected that it would give such an evaluation to a human one day.

The jade that recorded the [World Ode of the Phoenix] slowly vanished in Yun Che’s hand, and the Phoenix Spirit’s voice sounded again: “Your time in this trial ground is reaching its end, and it’s time for me to send you out. However, before I do so, I should perhaps give you a special present.”

Inside the pitch-black world, a golden light suddenly came flying and touched Yun Che on his forehead. Instantly, the scarlet phoenix imprint on his forehead appeared.. but the color had turned into a pure golden color from the previous scarlet color! Just like a cluster of burning, golden-colored flames.

“This is...” Feeling the phoenix’s imprint of his forehead change color, Yun Che subconsciously touched his forehead and asked puzzledly.

“This is a special power that I can only use once in my lifetime, but I never thought the day where I used it would actually come. However, as the one who carries the power of



the Evil God, your future is destined to be extraordinary, and bestowing this power upon you is more than suitable. As to what kind of power this is, when the time of you using it comes, you will naturally know.”

“Now then, let me send you out. Your friend, and that one Phoenix Clan that had been cursed by me are currently facing a great crisis, and only you can save them now... Now go.”

As the Phoenix Spirit’s voice faded, the pair of huge golden eyes disappeared within the darkness, and the space in front of Yun Che’s eyes immediately distorted...

---

When the seal formation had been temporarily opened, Lan Xueruo rushed out with her fastest speed, and understood the situation outside clearly with one glance. With her jade sword out, she rushed directly at the frontmost Black Demon mercenary. The seal behind her also quickly reactivated immediately after she exited the cave.

Captain Black Demon was not around, and the three others with the power of the True Profound Realm: Black Tiger, Black Devil, and Black Wolf: didn't seem to be around either; this was undoubtedly the best situation for Lan Xueruo. With her profound strength of the third rank of the True Profound Realm, it was fundamentally

impossible for these Nascent  
Profound Realm villains to stop her.

“That chick came out... Quick!  
Quickly go inform the Captain!”

Seeing Lan Xueruo suddenly rush  
out, the closest squad was also  
caught unprepared. Before they  
even had the chance to act and stop  
her, all of the weapons in their  
hands were flicked away by Lan  
Xueruo... With Lan Xueruo's  
strength, she could have easily  
killed the few of them with one  
strike of her sword. However, in her  
heart, there had never been the  
thought of killing people.

The tent that stored the food was  
directly in front of her, and Lan  
Xueruo located it instantly with a

single glance. Brandishing her jade sword, her graceful body swiftly drove forward like a butterfly fluttering through the flowers and broke through the barricade of a dozen and more people. She reached the tent in less than a few breaths of time before quickly removing the spatial ring that was on her left hand.

However, at this moment, two blasts of dangerous gales suddenly came from both sides. Vice Captain Black Tiger and Black Wolf simultaneously jumped out from the back of the tent while laughing sinisterly; two Wolf Fanged Maces swung toward Lan Xueruo from both sides, and forced her to rapidly retreat. Behind her, Vice Captain Black Devil also hopped out from

who knows where. The three of them readied their Wolf Fanged Maces, encircled Lan Xueruo, and laughed with incomparable obscenity.

“I knew you would do something like this. Tsk tsk, we’ve indeed waited a long time for you.” Black Wolf licked the corner of his lip and looked at Lan Xueruo with a gaze filled with obscenity.

“This woman is actually beautiful to such an extent that she’s actually worth dying for.” Seeing Lan Xueruo up close for the first time, Black Tiger’s saliva had already started to uncontrollably flowed out.

“What are you spouting rubbish for! Let’s capture her first. This beauty

may indeed be young, but her profound strength is no weaker than the Captain's; you should more or less be a little careful!"

Amidst a low shout, three Wolf Fanged Maces swung towards Lan Xueruo from three different angles. Lan Xueruo revealed a bitter smile; it had already been four days since she had drank anything. Even though her profound strength appeared to be unaffected, in actuality, under the long period of hunger, anxiousness and sorrow, her body had become utterly weak and unstable. Because of this, she could barely bring out half of her profound strength; even to the point of being unable to detect where these three had been hiding.

Under normal circumstances, she would be still able to handle these three first rankers of True Profound Realm by herself, but in her current condition, it was almost impossible for her to escape, much less defeat them.

Waving her jade sword and releasing her profound energy, she blew back the attacks from all three with a single strike of the sword. However, in doing so, she nearly lost her balance from the recoil. Biting her jade teeth, the golden glow in her eyes slight wavered as she consolidated all of her profound energy. She didn't try to continue the fight but instead suddenly lept up before somersaulting in the air, with the intention of escaping their encirclement. However, the three of

them seemed to have expected her actions long ago. Black Devil coldly laughed: “Want to run? Hehe, since you have come out, don’t think that you can just go back in... Heaven Rumbling Strike!”

Black Devil jumped right after and ruthlessly swung his mace toward the airborne Lan Xueruo. Lan Xueruo used her sword to block the attack, only to stumble as she landed. At this moment, a wild and loud laughter came from behind her back: “Hahahaha! Excellent! How excellent! I have indeed not waited in vain for this past month; the beauty has delivered herself to the doorstep, Hahahaha!”

This voice gave Lan Xueruo’s heart a sudden chill, because this was



clearly Black Demon's voice.

As the voice just faded, another blast of violent wind suddenly came from her rear. Lan Xueruo had no place to dodge, there wasn't even enough time to swing her sword; she could only forcefully intercept it with a backhand swing.

Poof!!

Completely exhausted of profound energy, while also under the condition of being sneak-attacked, how could the current Lan Xueruo possibly withstand a blow from Black Demon from her rear. Her delicate and frail body was directly blown away, and a trace of blood slowly flowed down the corner of her mouth.

Contrary to expectations, Black Demon was actually stunned. He had exchanged blows with Lan Xueruo previously and was even injured by her stab; in his heart, he was still more or less fearful of her, which was why he had chosen such a despicable sneak attack. However, he did not expect that this blow would actually result in such an impressive outcome. While looking at Lan Xueruo who was slowly wiping off the blood at the corner of her mouth, Black Demon drew closer step-by-step, and laughed while grinning hideously: “Hehe, little beauty, you can’t escape this time anymore. Obediently follow me back and be my wife; I promise that you will be able to live and eat well. When that time comes, wouldn’t releasing everyone inside

just be a matter of a word for you.”

Lan Xueruo stood up from the ground, her beautiful eyes were cold as ice, yet her heart was instead overwhelmed with grief: Never would I have thought that my noble body, would actually be forced into an almost despairing state by bunch of substandard villains. She did not say a word; after placing her jade sword in front of her body, she prepared for the final life-and-death struggle.

“Tsk, what a tough nut to crack.” Black Demon squeezed his chin with his fingers, smiling more and more dangerously as he moved closer and closer to Lan Xueruo: “It seems that you won’t be obediente unless I knock you out. When the

time comes, and you wake up to find yourself stripped naked, let's see if you can still act so tough.

All of the the surrounding Black Demon Mercenaries let out a wave of obscene laughter. Black Demon also took a big step forward, and horizontally swung the Wolf's Fanged Club towards Lan Xueruo.

Clang!

Clang!

CLANG!!

Lan Xueruo gritted her jade teeth and blocked Black Demon's attacks with all her strength. The first block, she retreated a big step back; and for the second block, her right arm felt a wave of numbness, nearly

causing her to fall down; as for the third block, she was directly thrown onto the ground, and the jade sword in her hand was also blown far, far away.

“Hehehehe,” Black Demon threw the Wolf Fanged Mace behind him and rubbed his hands together as he walked towards the fallen Lan Xueruo. In the midst of his lewd laughter, he grabbed at her with one hand.

Scree~~~~~

It was at this moment that a loud, ear-piercing phoenix cry suddenly resounded near their ears, and made their ears ring for a moment. Black Demon’s entire body also completely froze, and stopped his

movement. Before he was even able to react, he saw a huge flaming figure suddenly breaking through the seal of the cave; it rushed directly at them while carrying a scorching heatwave.

That flaming figure.. was like a miniature phoenix spreading its wings and dancing in the breeze!

Wait a minute... Phoe... Phoenix?

Everyone's eyes instantly stared wide open with mouths agape. Whereas this "Phoenix", after breaking through the seal formation, came flying down toward Lan Xueruo's position like a comet falling at extreme speed.

BOOM!!!!

The phoenix crashed into the ground, triggering a blazing explosion that measured over fifty meters in diameter.

Black Demon, Black Tiger, Black Devil, Black Wolf and all the Black Demon Mercenaries nearby were all blown away by the waves of flame, and nearly lost consciousness before frantically rolling on the floor screaming as they tried to extinguish the flames burning on their body.

Black Demon had been blown several tens of meters back. He stood up with difficulty before using all his might to slap away the flames on his body, and wildly howled: “WHO! WHO IS IT!!”

Just as he shouted, his eyes suddenly opened wide... because as the red glow of the flames slowly faded, he discovered countless corpses laid before his eyes. Within the radius of the blazing explosion just now, everyone under the fifth level of Nascent Profound Realm had died on the spot. Some bodies had been blown into bits, dying without their body parts intact, while some bodies were still burning ferociously, and slowly became charred corpses that were too gruesome to behold.

As the red glow from the flames slowly faded, at the core of the explosion, Yun Che was hugging Lan Xuero's waist and embraced her weak body with the gentlest of movements. His body was also



covered in a layer of a faint red blaze, yet it did not cause even the slightest of burns to Lan Xueruo's body or clothes. As he looked at her deathly-white face and the trace of blood at the corner of her mouth, he keenly sensed the deep feeling of weakness come from her body, Yun Che's heart throbbed with pain as he gently said: "Senior Sister, sorry, I'm late..."

# Chapter 116: Instant Kill

When she saw Yun Che, who had suddenly appeared before her eyes, Lan Xueruo's eyes became hazy. She stared blankly at Yun Che for quite a while before finally believing that all of this was not an illusion and she was not dreaming. The corners of her lips raised in a warm curve, her gaze trembled with astonishment, happiness, comfort... and traces of tender sentiments that even she did not perceive....

“Junior Brother Yun, you are still alive... very good...” She gently smiled. Even though this was her first time getting tightly embraced

by a man, there was not even a trace of rejection in her heart. Instead, her mental state which had been stretched taut had completely relaxed. Knowing that Yun Che was still alive, all of the anxiety, fear, and pain on her body was entirely replaced by happiness. Being embraced by Yun Che like this, she felt a kind of contentment and ease that she had never felt before.

“I did tell Senior Sister before that I’m a person who treasures my life the most, so how could I die so easily... Come, swallow this down.” Yun Che took out a Heaven Returning Pill and gently placed it into Lan Xueruo’s mouth. Lan Xueruo swallowed without hesitation and revealed a look of deep astonishment, because the

moment the pellet entered her mouth, she felt a warm current flowing through her entire body. All of her injuries stopped hurting and began to heal at an extremely fast speed.

“Heaven Returning Pill?”

A medicine that was able to quickly heal in a short period of time, used the most valuable ingredients, required extremely precise refinement techniques, and at the same time required a very long refining process. When the pill entered her mouth, Lan Xueruo realized with astonishment that it was the healing panacea, the Heaven Returning Pill; furthermore, it was a medium-grade Heaven Returning Pill which was only

inferior to the high-grade Heaven Returning Pill. Even if such a Heaven Returning Pill was possessed by one of those top-notch sects, it would still be considered an extremely precious first-rate medicinal pellet.

Yun Che gave a slight smile and softly spoke as he helped Lan Xueruo up: "Senior Sister, rest well for a while. Leave these villains to me."

On the other side, Black Demon was scared witless after the previous explosion instantly killed thirteen Black Demon Mercenaries. Beside him, Black Wolf said: "Captain, don't panic! That must be the same unusual weapon that was used a month ago! Moreover, there

should only be one such weapon left, otherwise he wouldn't wait till now to use it!"

As he heard Black Wolf's words, the fear in Black Demon's heart vanished without a trace; this was undoubtedly the most logical explanation. Even if he were to be beaten to death, he would not believe that a profound practitioner at the Nascent Profound Realm could release that kind of attack. He took a big step forward, and pointed at Yun Che as he howled furiously: "You little bastard, you actually dare to kill over a dozen of my brothers! I'll skin you alive! Go, take both of them down for me! Both the man and the woman must be alive!"

The surrounding Black Demon

Mercenaries roared and swung their weapons as they simultaneously attacked together. Lan Xueruo's heart, which had just calmed down, once again tensed up as she spoke with urgency: "Quickly leave, Junior Brother Yun! You have such a strong profound movement skill so you should definitely be able to escape. After you escape, I will have a way to immediately escape and meet up with you!"

Yun Che smiled as he shook his head: "If Senior Sister really has a way, you wouldn't have been nearly caught a moment ago. I will not and do not need to escape... Wherever I am, I'd never let Senior Sister suffer a single injury!"

As his voice faded, the Tiger Soul

Sword in Yun Che's hand suddenly swung forward. While it traveled in the air, the meter-long sword blade suddenly spewed out a three-foot long tongue of flame. As the tongue of flame left the sword, it swept horizontally into the Black Demon Mercenaries that were rushing head-on.

“AHHH!!”

The fluttering flame was like a raging fire dragon as it roared and smashed onto the bodies of the Black Demon Mercenaries. Along with the blood-curdling screams that were mixed in, five of the Black Demon Mercenaries were blown away; each suffered a fifteen centimeter wound on their body that vigorously spewed out fresh



blood and the clothes and skin close to the wounds were all scorched... As for the frontmost mercenary, the area around his wound had already been burned black.

The five rolled on the floor while they screamed in pain. Their screams sounded like the wailing of ghosts and the howling of wolves.

Lan Xueruo stared with her beautiful eyes wide open. After staring blankly for a while, she exclaimed in shock and delight: “Junior Brother Yun, your profound strength... Has actually reached... the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm!?”

She could feel Yun Che’s current

profound strength, yet her voice carried a deep disbelief.

Only a month had passed! He had actually jumped from the first level of the Nascent Profound Realm to reach his current level at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm! And nearly crossed over an entire huge realm in the span of a month! Not only that, the flame attack which he had just displayed was incomparably stronger than the fire profound art that he had previously shown.

“Correct! Because, I successfully passed that phoenix trial! I received a mystical Divine Phoenix Pill, which allowed my profound strength to immediately reach the peak of the Nascent Profound

Realm.” Yun Che said with a smile as he covered Lan Xueruo with half of his body. He had initially thought the Divine Phoenix Pill would raise his profound strength by five to six levels, but he didn’t expect it would actually help him break through nine levels in succession. This phenomenon seemed to be related to the Fire Seed of the Evil God in his body that allowed him to absorb a hundred percent of the Divine Phoenix Pill’s power.

Black Demon and the rest were all shocked after seeing Yun Che blow back five Black Demon Mercenaries who had an average profound strength of the fifth level of the Nascent Profound Realm with one move. Seeing the Tiger Soul Sword that blazed with flames, Black Wolf

shouted loudly: “So it turns out that you are not a member of Xiao Sect, you’re a member of the Burning Heaven Clan!!”

With Yun Che’s previous attack, they had also grasped the level of Yun Che’s profound strength — Tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm! And being able to release such an astonishing flame profound energy at the Nascent Profound Realm, other than the disciples of the Burning Heaven Clan, they could not think of any other sects that were able to do that!

“Burning Heaven Clan... no matter if it’s Xiao Sect or Burning Heaven Clan, he must die! If not, we will all be doomed!” Black Demon said with a solemn face. However, he did not

have a trace of fear on his face. After all, even though he was a minor problem, he was only at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm; he was simply not a threat. Even without him, any one of the three Vice Captains were capable of defeating him.

“This brat, to have an arrogant face... I’ll go cripple him!”

Black Wolf gave a low growl and covered his entire body with profound energy. He took a step and burst forward in Yun Che’s direction, swinging the spike-covered Wolf Fanged Mace towards Yun Che’s face... Obviously, Yun Che’s young and visually attractive little white face caused him to subconsciously become jealous.

After knitting his brow and wrapping his arms around Lan Xueruo's waist, Yun Che's figure faintly swayed.

Swinging the Wolf Fanged Mace furiously, he easily hit Yun Che in the face... However, before Black Wolf could reveal his smile, his face suddenly changed, because the Wolf Fanged Mace did not stop. Instead, it directly passed through Yun Che's "body", and went through his entire body before the illusion vanished on the spot.

Meanwhile, Yun Che's real body, which was hugging Lan Xueruo, appeared beside Black Wolf. Without turning back or glancing sideways, his left hand suddenly struck behind him, and smashed

mercilessly into Black Wolf's waist before withdrawing instantly. His entire movement was as fluid as moving clouds and flowing water.

Along with the increase in profound strength, the broken shadow speed and distance of Star God's Broken Shadow had increased by a wide margin. As for the instantaneous movement he had just displayed, forget about Black Wolf, not even Black Demon and Lan Xueruo could see what had happened clearly... Furthermore, he had accomplished this instant movement while still embracing Lan Xueruo.

Black Wolf collapsed onto the floor after receiving the blow from Yun Che as all four of his limbs spasmed.

Black Tiger and Black Devil were astounded. Black Tiger took a deep breath and said: “Hmph, as expected of someone from the Four Major Sects, this profound movement skill is indeed remarkable.”

“Tch! So what of it.” Black Devil disdainfully twitched his mouth: “He is in but the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm. Black Wolf might have suffered a small loss, but if he actually wanted to take him down, it would only take three or four moves... Hey, Black Wolf, what are you still lying there for, showing off your butt? Aren’t you going to get up and fuck this brat up... Black Wolf? Black Wolf!?”

Black Devil continuously yelled a



few times, yet Black Wolf did not respond and motionlessly laid there.

“There’s no need to shout,” The corner of Yun Che’s mouth curled up and laughed deeply: “He will never reply to you again in this lifetime.”

“What!?” Black Tiger and Black Devil’s expressions sunk and rushed over at the same time, turning Black Wolf over with a kick. Immediately, both of their expressions greatly changed; Black Wolf’s entire face had already turned ashen, his corner of his mouth foamed with blood mixed with froth, and his eyes opened extremely wide. Both his eyeballs substantially bulged out, yet they

had long lost their focus and spirit, leaving behind only a field of deathly gray.

Dead!!

He actually... died!

“Impossible! Impossible! How could he die just like that; all he took was a single strike from this brat! This is impossible!” Looking at Black Wolf’s condition, Black Devil turned pale from fright, completely unable to believe his own eyes. A profound practitioner of the first level of True Profound Realm who took a single blow from a profound practitioner of the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm, how could he have just died like this? The difference between them was

not just one level, but also the divide of an entire realm!

Even Lan Xuero opened her beautiful eyes wide and became baffled. However, thinking back to the time when he had crippled Xiao Luocheng who was at the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm while he was only at the first level of Nascent Profound Realm, she immediately felt much more natural.

A blow from a tenth ranker of the Nascent Profound Realm would naturally be impossible to directly kill a True Profound Realm practitioner just like that. However, even though Yun Che's profound strength rank was at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm,

under the effect of “Evil Soul”, the power of his profound strength was far greater than this. In addition to the fact that he had killed a countless number of people, he was extremely familiar with the structure of the human body and thoroughly understood where all the major vital spots of the human body were located; he could kill with one hit, without the slightest margin for error!

“You... you actually killed our third brother! I will dismember your corpse into a thousand pieces!!”

Black Devil and Black Tiger went into a violent rage at the same time, emitting anger and murderous intent from their body. Both of them rushed towards Yun Che at

the same time; the two Wolf Fanged Maces stirred up an astonishing profound energy storm and violently smashed toward Yun Che

Yun Che gently pushed Lan Xueruo back. He didn't dodge this time. Instead, he took in a light breath and shouted deeply. With Evil Soul in his body and the Tiger Soul in hand, the sword blade started to burn with flames. He clearly intended to forcefully take the combined attack of the two True Profound Realm profound practitioners head-on.

“Be careful, Junior Brother Yun!” Lan Xueruo immediately cried out in alarm. How could a Nascent Profound Realm practitioner, directly defend against an attack

from two True Profound Realm practitioners.

CLANG!!

The Tiger Soul Sword clashed together firmly with the two Wolf Fanged Maces, and the ear-piercing sound of metal clashing rang out ceaselessly for a long time. In that split second, the corners of Black Devil and Black Tiger's mouth revealed a sneer; if their opponent had used that mysterious profound movement skill just now, they might've had a bit of a headache. However, since the opponent recklessly tried to intercept their attack head on, they were confident that the only outcome would be the immediate injuring, or even crushing, of both his arms from the

shock. However, their sneer only lasted a moment before becoming completely frozen. This was because what had traveled up from their arms, was actually an unbelievably strong recoil, which momentarily caused their arms great pain and ruptured the skin between their thumb and index finger.

Both of Yun Che's arms also sunk for a moment. But right after, the phoenix imprint on his forehead shone faintly as he let out a deep shout. The Tiger Soul Sword, which paused for a moment from being suppressed by the two Wolf Fanged Maces, suddenly released an ear-shattering tiger roar. It swept through the two Wolf Fanged Maces while carrying scorching-hot

flames towards Black Devil and Black Tiger pupils dilated to the extreme.

Sssssss!!!!

The two Wolf Fanged Maces were cleanly cut apart; Yun Che's Star God's Broken Shadow was also activated in that instant. Carrying a stroke of blazing light, he pierced through both of their bodies like a bolt of lightning, and appeared five steps behind them.

Black Tiger and Black Devil's expressions froze as their pupils widened. Under the death-like silence, their heads neatly dropped off from their neck and tumbled onto the dry ground.



# Chapter 117:

## Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing

“Old Devil! Old Tiger!!”

Seeing both Black Devil And Black Tiger get beheaded instantaneously, all of Black Demon’s courage dissipated, and he nearly vomited blood on the spot. All of the Black Demon Mercenaries were even more rooted in place, and did not dare to believe that the three powerful Vice Captains with the power of the True Profound Realm would actually die instantly at the hands of a sixteen year old youngster.

“Heh heh, there’s no need to be so sorrowful, you will all meet again shortly.” Yun Che leaned his body to the side and smiled coldly towards Black Demon. He suddenly raised the Tiger Soul Sword and a meter-long tongue of flame swept towards Black Demon from far away.

“YOU BASTARD! I WANT YOU TO PAY WITH YOUR BLOOD, I’M GOING TO DISMEMBER YOU INTO A THOUSAND PIECES!” Black Demon’s anger skyrocketed. With a swing of his Wolf Fanged Mace, he dispersed Yun Che’s tongue of flame before jumping high into the air to smash towards Yun Che with a jump attack. Yun Che also jumped; both his hands tightly gripped the Tiger Soul

Sword, and clashed with Black Demon in midair.

CLANG!!

Sparks flew in all directions. Both their bodies quivered violently at the same time before getting blown backwards. When Yun Che landed, his body only slightly swayed but he stood firm right after; when Black Demon landed, he retreated five or six steps in succession before he was able to stabilize his stance. A finger deep hole impressively appeared on the iron Wolf Fanged Mace in his hand.

After meeting Yun Che face-to-face and exchanging blows, Black Demon finally understood why Black Devil, Black Tiger, and Black

Wolf had been easily executed by Yun Che one after another. It was because even he, was at disadvantageous position from this clash of pure profound energy!!

Black Demon's eyeballs went into a violent turmoil, his face was full of disbelief... Impossible! Definitely impossible! He clearly only has the profound strength of the Nascent Profound Realm's tenth level, whereas I, am in the third level of the True Profound Realm! How could the intensity of his profound energy be stronger than mine! This is impossible, absolutely impossible!

However, even if he was unwilling to believe it, the truth was right in front of his eyes. The opponent's

level of profound strength was clearly inferior to him, yet the intensity of his profound energy was nevertheless, far superior than his. In addition, the opponent's weapon held a big advantage as well. After all, his Wolf Fanged Mace was a True Profound artifact and was also instilled with his profound energy during battle. For his opponent to actually create such a huge hole with only one strike, it was extremely likely that the mace would be split in half if it were to withstand a few more blows.

“It seems you are also no more than this.” Yun Che said sarcastically as he raised his hand to stroke the back of the Tiger Soul Sword.

“Brat, don't be too cocky this quick,

this daddy merely went easy on you just now! You are a trash Nascent Profound Realm practitioner, how can you be the opponent of me, Black Demon, HAAAH! STORM STRIKE!”

Black Demon had mingled in the outside world for several decades, but because he didn't belong to any sect, Black Demon naturally could not learn any high-grade profound skills. However, he had learned quite a few of those low-grade profound skills which one could buy anywhere. He closed in on Yun Che and suddenly spun rapidly, stirring up a formidable profound energy storm while swinging his Wolf Fanged Mace

CLANG CLANG CLANG CLANG!!

Yun Che fell back slightly and quickly used the Tiger Soul Sword to block off all of Black Demon's attacks. Everytime the Tiger Soul Sword clashed with the Wolf Fanged Mace, it generated a crisp clanging sound and filled the sky with sparks. After over thirty successive blows, Yun Che flew backwards, and fell back over a dozen steps. Black Demon's attacks also stopped at this moment, and he roared madly while pointing at Yun Che: "WHAT ARE YOU GUYS STANDING THERE FOR! GO AND KILL HIM FOR ME! WHOEVER KILLS HIM WILL BE THE VICE CAPTAIN!!"

The Black Demon Mercenaries were still in a state of stupor after the deaths of all three Vice

Captains and could not completely react. But hearing Black Demon's loud roar at this moment, was as if they were awakening from a dream. They suddenly rushed out and besieged Yun Che from all sides.

“Senior Sister, protect yourself carefully!”

Yun Che did not dare to be careless in the face of the seventy to eighty Nascent Profound Realm Black Demon Mercenaries' siege. Under such circumstances, he could no longer take care of Lan Xueruo. However, with Lan Xueruo's ability, she could still face enemies of the Nascent Profound Realm, even with her weak body, for a short while without any risk.



“Die!!”

Over a dozen Black Demon Mercenaries closed in with a simple formation and leaped towards Yun Che at the same time. Yun Che did not avoid it, but revealed a cold smile from the corner of his mouth. While he receive their attacks with one sweep, a gigantic tongue of flame came fluttering out, causing the Tiger Soul Sword to seemingly grow over two meters long.

Puff puff puff puff puff.....

As the tongue of flame hit the first person, the impact broke his neck before continuing to sweep towards the second, third, and fourth without any decrease in power... When facing so many enemies, it

was considered a taboo to attack everyone unless one had an absolutely overwhelming power, because the power of the attack would substantially scatter. One should instead focus their power in one direction to lessen the pressure on oneself.

However, what Yun Che chose to do was sweep horizontally with his fire profound energy! In the face of all these Nascent Profound enemies, his profound strength was not considered overwhelming, but his weapon was a Earth Profound Artifact that could easily cut through the profound energy defense of the Nascent Profound Realm! The flames that he released were the flames of the Phoenix, which was under the control of the

power of the Evil God! In addition to the absolute pressure of his profound art and weapon, his superior profound strength allowed his horizontal sweep to become a genuine horizontal sweep that was not forced at all.

Seven or eight of the group of over a dozen people that were sieging him were directly swept away with one such strike from Yun Che. A sound of wind closed in from behind and a heavy broadaxe came swinging toward his neck. Without even turning around, he formed a fist with his left hand and smashed at the wind.

BANG!!

The Black Demon Mercenary that

had tried to sneak attack Yun Che had his chest bones suddenly split into pieces, and he vomited blood as he flew far away.

“DIE!!”

Towards these Black Demon Mercenaries, Yun Che had no trace of pity or mercy. With a jump, he avoided the attacks from three Black Demon Mercenaries and stomped at the Black Demon Mercenary to his rear, opening a bloody hole in his chest. Borrowing the recoil power, his body dashed out from a far distance, sweeping three people into the tongue of flame high up in the sky. When he landed, another three were sent flying with one attack.

More and more Black Demon Mercenaries started to attack from all sides, surrounding Yun Che in the crowd like a tidal wave. Yun Che remained calm and collected; using the Star God's Broken Shadow, he weaved through the crowd like a swift inside a storm. Wherever the Tiger Soul Sword landed, weapons would break and people would die in just one strike. Against the Tiger Soul Sword, the profound energy defense of these practitioners at the Nascent Profound Realm were not much different compared to a thin piece of paper.

Not long after, Yun Che's body had been splattered with huge patches of blood. However, he completely lacked perception to all of this. He

had simply killed too many people in his lifetime. To him, killing was as ordinary as harvesting wheat; it was unable to stir up the slightest of waves in his heart.

Black Demon, who was standing far away, wanted to take advantage of the moment when Yun Che was being surrounded and carry out a sneak attack to end things once and for all. But looking at his blood-soaked body and watching him cut down the waves of Black Demon Mercenaries like wheat, a deep chill began to flood in his heart... This was clearly a boy, yet he made swift and clean kills, without any trace of hesitation or reluctance.

Furthermore, his eyes and expression when killing was just too tranquil; so tranquil it didn't

even feel like he was killing people!

He, had also killed quite a number of people in his lifetime; at least eighty if not a hundred. However, he definitely would not be that calm while killing people.

He was only at the Nascent Profound Realm, yet he had such a terrifying power... Those shocking tongues of flame, that dreadful sword which bestowed death to whomever it touches... Black Demon's heart started to beat faster and faster. The thought of sneak attacking Yun Che quickly faded away and a growing fear began to breed deep inside his inner heart. His footsteps began to shrink back before he turned his body to wildly flee.

“Trying to run?” His actions were all in Yun Che’s eyes. Yun Che’s gaze darkened as he swept the Tiger Soul Sword, forcing all the Black Demon Mercenaries around him away before kicking off the ground to leap thirty meters into the sky. His body began to burn with flames as his gaze locked onto Black Demon.

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!”

The flames on Yun Che’s body ignited frantically and two wings of flame spread out on his back. His entire person shot downwards. From afar, it was like a miniature phoenix swooping down from the sky, that also carried a faint phoenix cry along with it.



Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing; the phoenix fire skill recorded in the fifth stage of the [World Ode of the Phoenix]. When mobilized, wings of flame would rise from one's back and rush at the enemy in a bold and powerful assault, to then trigger a large-scale flame explosion. Originally, in order to utilize this skill, it was necessary to have one's phoenix fire strength at the fifth stage; but its profound entrance had been broken through under Yun Che's extremely high comprehension ability and the power possessed by the Fire Seed of the Evil God. He had mixed his phoenix fire power with the evil god's fire power in order to prompt this action.

The fierce pressure and blazing

temperature from the sky caused Black Demon to subconsciously look back, but even if he had detected it earlier, it was fundamentally impossible for him to evade the powerful rushing swoop of the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing...

BOOM!!

A loud booming cry resonated throughout the horizon. On the dry ground, numerous cracks rapidly spread like spiderwebs, but they were immediately enveloped by crazily ignited flames. Within the raging flames, a black figure shot out, spraying a huge amount of fresh blood before falling to the ground like a discarded worn-out sack, and raised a cloud of dust.

Every Black Demon Mercenary froze in their tracks. With their eyes wide open, they stared in horror at the twitching black figure behind the flames. Lan Xueruo also stood there blankly; her small hand covered her mouth as her gaze clouded and filled with astonishment.

Yun Che slowly walked to the front of Black Demon. He looked at the body that was sprawled on the ground and incapable of standing, with a cold indifference. A huge amount of energy was consumed every time the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing gets unleashed, and it was the second time he had used it today; in addition to opening the Evil Soul profound gate for a long time, his body had started to

weaken severely. However, the effect of this blow was clear and easy to see; during the previous impact, he had clearly heard the shattering sound of Black Demon's backbone.

With his backbone shattered, Black Demon could be considered to be completely crippled. Even if he were to survive this injury, he would still only be able to spend the rest of his life paralyzed.

“Spare me... Spare me... I don't want to die yet...”

After sensing Yun Che's approach, Black Demon let out painful begs of forgiveness. It was human instinct to cherish one's life; not to mention a pure villain like him, who had not

enjoyed enough of his life even after half a lifetime of being free and unfettered. Yun Che bent over and coldly replied as he removed the yellow spatial ring on his hand: “There is already no value in your existence.”

As his voice faded, Yun Che split Black Demon’s neck with a palm.

With a “crack”, Black Demon’s neck directly fractured as his eyes bulged outwards; he never made another sound or breath again.

# Chapter 118: Star Scorching Demon Lotus

“Dead... Captain’s dead... Captain’s dead!”

After the three Vice Captains had perished in succession, the strongest practitioner of the Black Demon Mercenary Group, who was also their boss, had first ran out of cowardice and was then easily killed by Yun Che in the midst of his escape. Losing their backbone, the Black Demon Mercenaries were all scared witless as their hearts trembled in fear. Looking at the youngster who stood beside Black

Demon's corpse with a face that was as tranquil as water, all the fighting spirit they had possessed earlier melted into endless panic and fear.

In the short deathly silence, the flames gradually extinguished. With a cold expression, Yun Che slowly walked forward. Following his movements, the eyes of the closest Black Demon Mercenary shrank in fear; he then let out a shriek as he desperately turned around to escape. His actions also immediately woke up all of the Black Demon Mercenaries from their shock. All of them started to escape one after another in fear, and no longer cared about anything else.

“Want to run?” Their escape did not give Yun Che a sense of relief; instead, a touch of ice-cold murderous intent flashed in his eyes. He poured his profound energy below his feet as his body flew, and caught up with the group of escaping Black Demon Mercenaries in just a few breaths of time... Had these Black Demon Mercenaries scattered when running away, he wouldn't have any means to do anything. However, his successive slaying of their four captains made the hearts of these Black Demon Mercenaries give birth to an enormous fear toward him, which made all of them subconsciously escape in the opposite direction of where he was before. Moreover, that direction, was also the only exit of the rear



mountain.

Behind the group escaping for their life, Yun Che leaped high into the air, instantly moved horizontally with a Star God's Broken Shadow after reaching the highest point, and arrived directly on top of the group. Pointing his Tiger Soul Sword downwards, the sword's body ignited with blazing flames as the golden phoenix imprint in the center of his eyebrows released a blinding golden radiance.

“Star... Scorching... Demon... Lotus!!”

During his low chant, Yun Che's entire body ignited in flames, and suddenly crashed down.

BOOOOOM!!!!

Sky covering flames exploded with a bang from where Yun Che had landed; the wildly released profound energy turned into layers and layers of blazing phoenix flame and scattered outwards, instantly shrouding a radius of over sixty meters in the surrounding area, mercilessly engulfing all of the Black Demon Mercenaries within it. Looking at it from the sky, it was as if a beautiful flaming lotus had suddenly bloomed with Yun Che as its center. However, every single petal was burning with lethal phoenix flame.

Countless miserable screams of agony resounded from within the enormous fire lotus. The cries were

so miserable that it was as if they had come from the depths of hell's ninth level. But the Star Scorching Demon Lotus did not feel any pity for the screams, and continued to blossom without mercy; layers and layers of flickering flames gradually bloomed into a larger and larger scorching fire lotus.

Lan Xueruo, who was standing far away, had long become complete stunned from watching. Even though she wasn't very old, she had already seen too many experts, including some strong individuals of the high-level Earth Profound Realm, and even some Sky Profound Realm masters. However, she had never seen anyone who could release such a magnificent sight using a fire attribute profound art,

including the Burning Heaven Clan, which possessed the strongest fire-attribute profound art in Blue Wind Empire.

What was even more unbelievable, was that such a blow actually came from Yun Che... From the hands of a sixteen year old!

“Defeating a tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm at the first level of Nascent Profound Realm ...

Crossing an entire realm in a month's time... Consecutively slaying four True Profound Realm profound practitioners at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm... My feelings did not deceive me, he is definitely the one I've been searching for.” Lan Xueruo faintly muttered as she blankly

looked onwards.

The flame lotus had already blossomed to its largest size, while the sound of the miserable screams had become quieter. Through the layers of flames, Lan Xueruo could still see figures desperately rolling in the flames for their lives; she turned her head around, and her heart flooded with deep reluctance. At this moment, within the flames, she saw Yun Che walking out with heavy footsteps while dragging the Tiger Soul Sword with an exhausted demeanor. The clothes on his body were already tattered, and all of the patches of blood on his clothes had also been scorched black inside the fire lotus.

“Junior Brother Yun!” Lan Xueruo

exclaimed as she hurriedly rushed over. But she stopped her footsteps right as she neared Yun Che, and was momentarily afraid to come forward. It was because at this moment, it was impossible for her to not spawn a sense of unfamiliarity toward the current Yun Che... That sudden surge in power was actually less important; when he had slain the three Vice Captains earlier, and when he massacred these Black Demon Mercenaries, every one of his moves were fatal without the slightest hint of leniency. And with a single fire lotus, another seventy or more Black Demon Mercenaries were sent to their graves... His expression had not changed at all even when massacring over a hundred people in the blink of an eye. He was

clearly just a sixteen year old youngster, yet he actually possessed such a demon-like disposition.

“Senior Sister, I’m a bit tired... Support me for a moment.” Yun Che walked forward with weak footsteps while swaying unsteadily; his body went limp as he said that and nearly collapsed. “Star Scorching Demon Lotus” was the Phoenix flame skill contained in the sixth stage of the [World Ode of the Phoenix]. Its single target power was inferior to Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wings. Instead, it had an extremely terrifying large-scale incinerating ability. Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wings could only be used in the sky, while Star Scorching Demon Lotus could be unleashed in any condition and at

any place. But at the same time, it exhausted a huge amount of energy. His profound energy had been completely exhausted in this short span of time after unleashing two Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wings and one Star Scorching Demon Lotus while also remaining in the Evil Soul state.

Lan Xueruo promptly stepped forward to support Yun Che. She hesitated for a moment before asking: “Junior Brother Yun, have you... killed a lot of people in the past?”

Yun Che remained silent at first before slowly nodding: “I have killed before... Many, many people, far more than you can imagine.” Looking back at the gradually



shrinking fire lotus, he said: “Senior Sister, do you think I’m cruel, to kill those who were no longer trying to attack us and were merely trying to run for their lives?”

Lan Xueruo did not say anything and silently agreed.

Yun Che looked at Lan Xueruo and said: “Senior Sister, when I said your nature was too soft and kind previously, it was not a compliment to Senior Sister but a complaint... Senior Sister should sense that these villains, more or less, carry evil tendencies; all of them are murderers and the people they slaughtered should mostly be innocents they had raided and plundered. These villains ought to have died earlier, and even death

can't wipe out the crimes they have committed. Previously, they had also trapped us in the trial ground for over a month; if not for the fact that I cleared the Phoenix trial, we wouldn't have escaped this easily. In addition, they would have exterminated the entire phoenix clan. Me killing them all, is not one bit, going overboard."

Lan Xuero's lips trembled slightly as she looked at the diminishing fire lotus. She asked with a faltering voice: "Since a very young age, my master taught me to be benevolent and gentle to people, to love all living things... They indeed carried sins, but they were still living life. Just now, they even threw away their weapons, chose to escape, and thus posed no threat to us. Why...

couldn't you let them go?"

"They are a bunch of extremely evil and vicious people. If I let them go today, they might kill other people tomorrow, and it could even be many many people." Yun Che resolutely said: "Whereas if we kill them now, we can instead save many innocents. Of course, kind people and innocent people should not be killed but killing these evil ones is not a sin. Instead, you will actually be saving others! Letting them leave is the true sin!"

Lan Xueruo: "..."

"Little Brother Yun, you really did it... That's great, that's really great!!"

At this moment, Feng Baichuan still

carried the unconscious Feng Zu'er in his arms as he walked over with the phoenix clan members. Every one of them had a face full of excitement and eyes filled with warm tears. They fervently looked at Yun Che as if they were gazing at at a god.

During the time Yun Che had slain Black Demon, the cave's seal formation was opened by Feng Baichuan. What they saw next blew their minds and stirred their emotions. Among them, quite a number of elders were unable to resist muttering: "This must be the emissary that the Phoenix God sent to save us, the Phoenix God never forgot about us..."

Looking at the pale-faced Feng

Zu'er in Feng Baichuan's arms, Yun Che quickly said: "Clan Leader Feng, the villains have been completely wiped out. Quickly, bring Zu'er and the rest back home and find some clean water for consumption. However, do not let them eat food right away... Go quickly, these children are in a dangerous situation now, we can talk about the other things later."

"Okay!" Feng Baichuan nodded. With the help of the others, he took the unconscious children and hurried in the direction of the valley entrance. When passing by the place where the fire lotus was burning, they all suddenly stopped in their tracks, and stared ahead with faces full of caution.

As the fire lotus extinguished, two Black Demon Mercenaries who sat paralyzed with pale-white faces appeared in their line of sight. Most of their clothes had already been burned black; their bodies were also burned in several places, but those were essentially all minor burns. They were at the very edge of the Star Scorching Demon Lotus a while ago so they had not actually gotten hit by the fire lotus; they were just swept by the aftermath of the fire lotus. The reason why they were still sitting down in a paralyzed fashion was not because they had been heavily hurt, but because they were so frightened that their legs turned into jelly. As they watched Feng Baichuan and the others approach in their direction, they immediately stared

with wide eyes and panickedly retreated like a bird startled by the mere twang of a bow.

“To think there are still fish that escaped the net!” Yun Che revealed a face of astonishment before quickly placing the Tiger Soul Sword into Lan Xueruo’s hand and hurriedly said: “Senior Sister, I have no profound energy and can’t do anything anymore. Quickly go and kill those two men, you must not let them run away!”

Taking the Tiger Soul Sword subconsciously, Lan Xueruo subconsciously took the Tiger Soul Sword and instead, motionlessly stood there. After her eyes swiftly flickered, she shook her head and said: “I’ve never killed anyone

before, and I don't want to kill anyone. Since they were able to survive, then that is their fate. The entire group had been exterminated and they have no where else to return to. After experiencing such a horror just a moment ago, they could be considered to have received their punishment... Just let them go. The Black Demon Mercenary Group no longer exists, so it is unlikely that they would do evil again in the future."

"Out of the question!!" Yun Che firmly shook his head, "Being lenient and not eliminating the roots is always the biggest taboo when facing off against enemies! If you don't kill them, there may be grave consequences that we cannot foresee, do it quickly!"



Yun Che's words were urgent and strict, completely different from the gentle him who normally faced Lan Xueruo. Lan Xueruo's lips trembled and walked two steps forward before stopping again, unable to raise the Tiger Soul Sword no matter what. Finally she gave a silent sigh and turned towards the two Black Demon Mercenaries who were still lucky to be alive: "Leave. Don't be so treacherous in the future. If not, I won't easily let you off the next time I see you!"

Lan Xueruo's words caused the two Black Demon Mercenaries that were paralyzed on the ground to wake up from their dream as they quickly got up from the ground... However, contrary to what Lan Xueruo had thought, they did not

turn around to escape. Instead, their gaze darkened before leaping toward Feng Baichuan.

“Clan Leader Feng be careful!” Yun Che’s pupil shrank and roared loudly.

However Yun Che’s shout was too late, the Black Demon Mercenary had already rushed in front of Feng Baichuan, and caught him unprepared. With his power at sixth level of Nascent Profound Realm, how was Feng Baichuan able to resist him? In an instant, he pushed Feng Baichuan far away and seizing Feng Zu’er from his arms. He then hooked his hands around to pinch Feng Zu’er’s neck as he revealed a sinister smile: “All of you stay back, move back! Move back!

Or else... I will immediately snap his neck off!”

“Zu’er... Zu’er!” Feng Baichuan, who had been knocked away, cried out loud.

Lan Xueruo expression changed greatly as she quickly said: “You... you villian! I let you off out of goodwill yet you shamelessly behaved in such a despicable way! Release Zu’er right now!”

“Heh!” The Black Demon Mercenary laughed coldly: “Our Black Demon Mercenary Group paid a large sum to enter this Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range, how could I be willing to leave after our entire group was wiped out for a single treasure! Immediately hand

over your treasure! If not, I will strangle this brat to death! I know that this is the son of your clan leader! As a matter of fact, I want to see if your treasure is more important than this brat's life! If you do not hand it over... I don't even want to live anyway, so it would be worth it to pull one down with me and watch your painful weeping before seeing death's door, HAHAAHAHA!"

Lan Xuero tightly clenched her fists as her face paled in anger. Yun Che's calm and ice-cold voice came from her side: "Senior Sister, this is the result of your hesitation, your leniency, and your benevolence. Your benevolence released these two villains and in return, handed over Zu'er life into their hands.

Was this the result that you wanted to see?”

“I... I...”

“And even if they don’t do this, if they escape from here, what do you think they would do afterwards? They would publicly spread word that a mysterious village here is hiding a so-called ‘treasure’. When that time comes, who knows how many great powers and sects would come to search for the ‘treasure’. At that time, this phoenix clan would suffer a greater crisis by who knows how many times, and everyone here may even be massacred because of that.”

Yun Che looked at Lan Xueruo as each of his words stabbed into her

heart like needles: “I’ve killed people, killed over a few hundred villains, avenging the uncountable number of people who were harmed, and saved an even more uncountable number of people that may perhaps be harm by them in the future. You did not kill anyone, and even let two villains off kindly but because of that, over two hundred innocent people here, young and old, had to tragically die... Is this your understanding of benevolence and universal love?”

# Chapter 119:

## Burning off the Curse

“Stop! Don’t hurt him! I’ll promise you anything as long as you let Zu’er go.” Feng Zu’er’s vitality was already unbearably weak, and now, he had also landed in the demonic claws of the villain; Feng Baichuan could no longer regain his former calmness. With a paling face, he raised his hand and shouted in panic.

“Then why don’t you immediately hand over the treasure you are guarding!” Black Demon mercenary roared in an almost deranged

manner and a sinister look on his face.

“But... But we really don’t have any treasure...”

“You still dare to fool me, looks like you don’t want your son’s life anymore!” The Black Demon mercenary revealed a sinister smile, and the palm that was gripped around Feng Zu’er’s neck suddenly tightened. Even though Feng Zu’er was unconscious, his small and pale face still showed a pained expression.

“Stop!” Lan Xueruo took a step forward, pointing her sword at the Black Demon mercenary as her whole body trembled with rage, yet she simply had no method to help.



Her heart was filled with hatred and regret; if she had listened to Yun Che and executed them, the current situation would never have occurred and there more so wouldn't be any worries for the future. However, since things had already turned out this way, what use was there for regrets.

Behind her, Yun Che expressionlessly raised his hand with his palm facing that Black Demon mercenary, and indifferently spat out a word: "Explode!"

Fwooooosh!!

With a dull sound, a huge ball of blazing fire suddenly bursted out from the the Black Demon

mercenary's hindbrain and back. In just two breaths of time, the scarlet-colored flames had already burned through the vital vessels in his neck, causing his eyes to pop out and powerlessly release Feng Zu'er. His body collapsed on the ground as if it was a fallen stake as his life expired.

With Yun Che's nature, he, without a doubt, wouldn't actually let these dangerous "fish that slipped through the net" appear. These two Black Demon Mercenaries that had luckily kept their lives, were done so deliberately by Yun Che. Even though Star Scorching Demon Lotus had not harmed them, it had poured unignited profound energy into their bodies. Under the immense shock, even if they had

sensed the profound energy that was poured into their body from the outside, they definitely would not be calm enough to force this foreign profound energy out. Under the appropriate timing, Yun Che would then ignite this profound energy, and light the phoenix's flames from inside the body.

The reason as to why he left this two people alive, was to give an essential "lesson" to Lan Xueruo, and could also be considered as his good intentions and thought. It was because he didn't want to see Lan Xueruo get hurt in the future from of her own overly soft-heartedness and kindness.

Feng Baichuan stared blankly at first, then rushed forward at top

speed and held Feng Zu'er in his embrace. Seeing the current situation, the other Black Demon mercenary's expression greatly changed, and ran away frantically while letting out a shriek.

Yun Che lowered his arm and slowly squatted onto the floor from over-exhaustion. A urgent low shout came from his mouth: "Senior Sister Xueruo!"

Looking at the Black Demon mercenary who was escaping further and further, Lan Xueruo's right hand which had the Tiger Soul Sword in its grip, started to faintly tremble. Every single one of Yun Che's words stabbed her heart like needles, and the earlier scene that made her regret sullenly flashed

through her mind. She finally raised her right arm, condensed her profound energy, as the Tiger Soul Sword was shot flying at the back of the Black Demon mercenary's heart... The instant the Tiger Soul Sword escaped from her hand, she turned her head around and closed her eyes.

Psssh!

The Tiger Soul Sword mercilessly pierced into the back of the Black Demon mercenary's heart through his body, flew out from the front of his chest, and then nailed in a piece of boulder with a "clang". The Black Demon mercenary collapsed onto the ground, never to utter another breath again.

The sound of the sword's blade entering the body clearly traveled back, and caused Lan Xueruo to suddenly tremble. She shut her eyes tight and didn't dare to open them for a long time. Glancing at the corpse of the final Black Demon mercenary lying far away, Yun Che gave a silent sigh in his heart, and said softly: "This should be the first time Senior Sister Xueruo has killed a person, right? The feeling of killing someone for your first time will be very terrible, and very painful. After this, one may even have nightmares for the few following nights... All of this, I know. If Senior Sister Xueruo was only an ordinary girl, I wouldn't have let you do such a painful thing. However... even though I don't know Senior Sister's true

identity, with Senior Sister's disposition, manners, profound strength as well as that contracted profound beast that could be driven in high altitudes... Many signs are telling me that Senior Sister's background must be nothing but extraordinary. Senior Sister is either from some large sect or from a noble family of an extremely high position.

“Since you are situated at that kind of level, then it must be filled with struggles for power and position, as well as fighting and scheming. Senior Sister's overly soft-hearted and kind nature might bring harm time and time again to Senior Sister, so much so that it may be fatal. I don't want to see Senior Sister suffer this kind of harm. And so,

Senior Sister needs to at least learn how to treat friends and enemies differently. This sentence, may sound very cruel to Senior Sister, but I believe that around Senior Sister, including Senior Sister yourself, there must have been some who had suffered irreparable harm due to Senior Senior's soft-heartedness to enemies."

Yun Che's words made Lan Xueruo fall into silence. And as he finished saying the last sentence, her entire body suddenly shook before starting to tremble continuously for a long time; a painful expression had also appeared on her face.

After a long time, when she opened her eyes, Yun Che had already walked far away with the support of



two young men from the remnants of the phoenix clan. Her gaze swayed for a bit, and a faint whisper leaked out from the corners of her mouth: “Yun Che... Thank you...”

-----

The incident with the Black Demon Mercenary had slightly injured the remaining phoenix clan’s vitality. But fortunately, even though it made several people’s bodies weak for quite a while, and some even became seriously ill, no one’s life had been endangered with Yun Che around. Yun Che had passed the the Phoenix trial, acquired the phoenix imprint, eliminated this crisis of the phoenix clan’s and also displayed such mystical medical skills to heal the several tens of

clansmen who were in imminent danger. These past few days, everyone in the phoenix clan almost treated Yun Che as if he was a god and gave him the most extreme of respect and reverence.

And today, the giant snow eagle had finally awakened. It was now time for Yun Che and Xueruo to depart.

When bidding farewell to Feng Baichuan, Feng Baichuan's face was filled with reluctance. He worriedly said while looking at Yun Che: "The reason why our clan had shunned the world for a long time and hid at this place that is cut off from the rest of the world, is because even though we have the phoenix imprint, we only possess an extremely weak power. If our entire

clan did not go into hiding, this phoenix imprint, which cannot be hidden from others, would bring us countless troubles. However, we can't even handle any few Nascent Profound Realm profound practitioners, and can only let them take advantage of us. Luckily, you guys were here for this incident or else our withered clan would have already been finished. Even though this crisis is over, I am extremely afraid; since our small clan is so weak, we won't be able to prevent anything similar from happening in the future, and if an honored person like you does not appear next time... Sigh."

Yun Che instead laughed and said to Feng Baichuan: "Clan Leader Feng, aside from bidding you

farewell, there is another reason why I sought you out this time... and that is to help you remove the curse in your bloodline.”

This short sentence from Yun Che was like a clap of thunder that sounded right beside Feng Baichuan’s ears. His body trembled and the features of his entire face froze on the spot. Following that, his gaze trembled violently as he rushed to Yun Che’s front in an instant, tightly grabbed both of Yun Che’s arms with both of his hands, and asked with trembling excitement: “What did you say? What did you say... Could... could you repeat that?”

Feng Baichuan’s reaction was completely within Yun Che’s

expectations. He looked directly into Feng Baichuan's eyes, and sincerely answered: "Actually, the curse in your bloodline is very easy to remove; it can be removed just by burning it with phoenix flame. My profound energy was overly exhausted that day, so I didn't dare use my profound energy recklessly. I'm only informing you about this right now because I have just made a full recovery today."

While speaking, Yun Che suddenly raised his hand and pressed the dark red phoenix imprint on Feng Baichuan's forehead with his right hand's index finger. A small dot of phoenix flame quickly ignited on his fingertips, and then instantly rushed into Feng Baichuan's phoenix imprint.

Feng Baichuan's face revealed a trace of pain, but it had also only appeared for that instant.

Subsequently, the color of his phoenix imprint suddenly started to change; from a dark red, it gradually became more and more vivid, until it became a scarlet colour that was completely devoid of any murkiness.

Yun Che withdrew his finger, as he looked at Feng Baichuan with a slight smile. Feng Baichuan then stretched out his trembling hand to stroke the phoenix imprint on his forehead that had become hot. He was excited and so moved that he didn't know what to do. He spoke in a tearful voice: "The curse... has disappeared... It really has entirely disappeared...."

Yun Che smiled and said: “After these past few days of nursing, everyone’s body should also have more or less recovered. Let’s take this opportunity and gather everyone in one spot; I will eradicate the curse imprint on everyone from its root.”

“Okay... Okay!” Feng Baichuan nodded his head as his eyes filled with tears. As he looked at Yun Che, the gratitude in his heart was so strong that it could not be described with any language. Yun Che had wiped out the Black Demon Mercenary Group, saved the lives of his entire clan, and removed the curse in their bloodline; essentially saving hundreds of their clansmen’s future generations! He allowed their entire clan to once

again possess power and dignity!  
With the power to protect  
themselves, after the next  
generation, they would no longer  
have to sneakily hide in this  
desolate mountain range.



# Chapter 120: Heading Towards Blue Wind Imperial City

It took Yun Che an entire morning's time to completely extinguish the bloodline's curse from all the members of the phoenix clan. After bidding farewell to everyone with Lan Xueruo, they both rode the giant snow eagle and left through the sky. Every clansman from the phoenix clan came out to see them off, and looked at the skies as they flew off; they stayed for a long while, even after their silhouettes had

completely disappeared from their sight.

“Father, was big brother Yun Che really sent by the Phoenix God to save us?” Feng Zu’er asked innocently, as he reluctantly looked at the sky.

Feng Baichuan caressed his son’s head and slowly nodded: “Yes. Since the year our ancestor committed a grave mistake, after so much atonement and remorse, the Phoenix God has finally forgiven us. However, I have a wonderful feeling that one day, we will meet him again.”

“Really?” Feng Zu’er and Feng Xian’er’s eyes lit up as their faces filled with anticipation.

“Definitely.” Feng Baichuan smiled. Without the cursed bloodline, their profound strength would no longer be limited, and the phoenix imprint on their forehead could be hidden anytime as well so the next generation would no longer need to hide in these dangerous grounds deep in the mountains: “However, the next time we see him, perhaps the level in which he will be standing, will be high enough for everyone to look up to . That is why, Zu’er, Feng’er, if you really want to see him again, you must start to train diligently from now on. As of now, we don’t have the qualifications to repay his great kindness, but after you two have grown up and acquire sufficient strength, you can then walk out of here and assist him... Even if it is

the most miniscule of assistance, it will still show the gratitude of our entire clan.”

“Mn!” Feng Zu’er and Feng Xian’er vigorously nodded their heads as their young and tender faces filled with determination.

---

“If it’s from here to Blue Wind Imperial City, how long would it roughly take?”

“With Little Snow’s speed, if we fly fourteen hours a day, we would arrive in around ten days or so.”

Blue Wind Imperial City, the national capital of Blue Wind Empire. Since he had previously lived in Floating Cloud City, Yun

He had never thought he would one day step into Blue Wind Imperial City. As Blue Wind Empire's capital, the level of Blue Wind Imperial City's wealth, power, and profound strength were undoubtedly at the top of the empire. The wealthy, the influential, and the strong practitioners that could show disdain to outstanding heroes in a normal city, were essentially reduced to the middle class when it came to the national capital.

The sky slowly darkened. After the giant snow eagle flew continuously for a long time, it had finally found a town that was not considered too big, and landed.

"Hello shopkeeper, do you sell any

Ten Thousand Mile Sound  
Transmission Talismans here?” Lan  
Xueruo asked politely after walking  
into the the small town’s largest  
trading company.

“Te... Ten Thousand Mile Sound  
Transmission Talisman?” One  
sentence from Lan Xueruo was  
enough to astonish the shopkeeper.  
Even though what Lan Xueruo wore  
was quite ordinary in his eyes, it  
was hard to conceal the noble aura  
hidden in her bones. In addition  
with her extreme beauty and asking  
for “Ten Thousand Mile Sound  
Transmission Talisman” the  
moment she opened her mouth,  
this shopkeeper did not dare to  
neglect her and carefully  
responded: “Young lady, this small  
shop of ours do not even have

Thousand Mile Sound Transmission Talismans, much less one of ten thousand miles. I have never seen a Ten Thousand Mile Sound Transmission Talisman in my entire lifetime... However we do have a few hundred mile ones, do you think you can make do with those?"

"...No need, sorry to trouble you." Lan Xuero shook her head in a somewhat disappointed way. She wanted to transmit news to the imperial city but that was a place beyond the Hundred Mile Sound Transmission Talisman's range.

"Shopkeeper, are there any inns nearby?" Yun Che asked.

"Yes, yes." Shopkeeper nodded his head and pointed in the right

direction: "Walk a street up north and there will be an inn. It is also the only one in this town."

Yun Che nodded his head and said to Lan Xueruo: "Senior Sister, let us stay at the inn here for awhile, Little Snow also needs to rest."

After walking for a short while, Yun Che and Lan Xueruo found the only inn in town. The time was also getting late so the inn was also silent. After walking in, only the innkeeper alone was dozing off at the counter under the dim light, he quickly opened his eyes after hearing people walking in.

Yun Che was a step ahead of Lan Xueruo. He walked in front of the counter, crossed his arms against



his chest, and asked: "Innkeeper, can I trouble you to prepare two guest rooms for us."

The innkeeper yawned. He was about to open his mouth to answer when a purple light suddenly flashed across his eyes, making him open his eyes so wide that they were bigger than cow eyes.

Because in Yun Che's right hand that was across his chest, was an erect index finger, and between his middle finger and ring finger was a distinctly shining purple... Purple Profound Coin!!

The innkeeper's drowsiness instantly vanished without a trace as his saliva nearly flowed out. He ran this inn for half of his life, so

how could he still not understand. He immediately adopted an awkward expression and replied: "Esteemed guests, I am truly sorry, our small inn only has one guest room left."

"Only one room is left?" Yun Che turned over his head and said to Lan Xueruo: "Senior Sister, do you want us to find another inn?"

The innkeeper immediately gave a resolute face and said: "Esteemed guests, I am not trying to scare you, but we are the only inn situated in this small town. Even after leaving our small town, you cannot find a single place to stay in a circumference of two hundred miles. My place is usually full, so to have a room available today is

already considered to be your good luck. What's more, our esteemed guests are a talented man and a beautiful woman, a golden couple; you two are practically a match made in heaven. To be together in middle of the night, one can clearly see that you two are a sweet young married couple. Isn't one room just right, why must you need two rooms?"

Yun Che had a troubled face as he looked at Lan Xueruo and said: "Senior Sister, why don't we make do with one room? Other than this, there doesn't seem to be other options."

A lone man and woman... in a room? The scene that suddenly flashed by in Lan Xueruo's mind

instantly made her heart beat mysteriously accelerate, and caused her to be somewhat at a loss: “B... But...”

Before she finished speaking, the innkeeper had already exclaimed: “Alrighty! I shall now bring you to the guest room. Our inn may seem small, but I guarantee the cleanliness and coziness will leave you satisfied... Please walk this way.”

Lan Xueruo’s words was directly hindered. After biting her lips and thinking of what the innkeeper said earlier, she could only comply.

A trace of smile flashed across the depths in Yun Che’s eyes. He gently flicked a pinky finger and the

purple profound coin soundlessly landed into the hands of the innkeeper. The innkeeper immediately beamed with joy as he happily walked in front of them... His business was not bad since opening this inn, with an income up to a dozen purple profound coins a year. Yun Che's spending, was immediately an entire month's net worth of income. He had seen generous people before, but it was still the first time in his life that he saw someone this generous.

He respectfully took them to their guest room and even intentionally helped them close the door while leaving before heaving a sigh in his heart: This young lady is truly beautiful beyond words. This young man is also rich and imposing, who

knows which influential family had this couple come out of to go out on a sightseeing tour.

The guest room was not considered to be big but it was still fairly clean and elegant. The decorations inside were simple, the bed was big enough that it was no problem for two people to lie on.

Being blown by an entire day's of wind on the back of the giant snow eagle had long since made the two sleepy and tired. After Lan Xueruo walked into the room, her heart was like a deer in caught in headlights. Her expression was slightly frenetic, completely lacking her usual magnanimous and gentle attitude. Her beautiful face also slightly flushed like red clouds in the

morning, causing her to slightly lose her usual grandeur and elegance while gaining the attitude of a young lady that would make men intoxicated. Yun Che smiled and said: "Senior Sister, you must be tired. Go and rest on the bed first."

"Th... Then you..." Lan Xuero tried her best to remain calm but her heart was unable to stop its wild beating... He can't be thinking of... thinking of...

"Of course I'll be sleeping on the floor. As a man, how I can let Senior Sister sleep on the floor." Yun Che kindly smiled with a completely harmless face. After he finished saying that, he then walked to the corner opposite of the bed, sat down on the cold floor, laid against

the wall, and said: "Senior Sister can sleep at ease, I will stay here and protect Senior Sister."

The disorder and restlessness in Lan Xueruo's heart vanished. What replaced it were waves of warm current that circulated in her heart. The smile on his face was exactly the same gentle gaze he had given her after falling from high altitude, and when he laid on the ground with heavy injuries. That was the first time since seeing him, and also the first time in her entire life, that her heart throbbed with an indescribable feeling.

The floor here was not made of wood, but cold hard rock. Even if a blanket was laid on the floor, a bone chilling cold could still travel



through after a while. Lan Xueruo shook her head and said: "That won't do. The floor is so cold, how can you fall asleep. The injuries on your body have just healed... You sleep on the bed, I will sleep on the floor."

Lan Xueruo's words stumped Yun Che for a moment. He firmly shook his head: "Won't do, won't do! Absolutely out of the question! How could I, as a man, let Senior Sister sleep on the floor!"

"It's alright, I've slept on the floor before, so..."

"That's different!" Yun Che's face was still filled with determination: "This has no relation to where Senior Sister likes to sleep. This

matter involves the dignity of us men! I would rather let Senior Sister stab me to death than to let myself sleep on the bed while a woman sleeps on the floor.”

After saying these words, Yun Che muttered in his heart: Eh? Why do these words sound so familiar? Why do I keep feeling that I’ve said these words to a different girl before...

“Pffft...” Yun Che’s stubborn appearance while shouting the words “dignity of us men”, quietly hit a soft spot in Lan Xuero’s heart, and she couldn’t help it as she laughed out loud.

# Chapter 121: Blue Wind Profound Palace

The reason as to why the same moves were able to succeed with Xia Qingyue, was because Yun Che had worked for consecutive days to open her Profound Entrances that time, exhausting his stamina in the middle of the night till he was extremely feeble. After all, they were legitimately a couple in name. No matter how cruel and pure as jade Xia Qingyue was, she could not bear to have Yun Che to continue sleeping on the ground... And Yun Che was also there clamoring to rather die than to let a woman sleep

on the ground, which then resulted in him sharing the bed and pillow with Xia Qingyue... Although nothing happened at all.

However for Lan Xueruo, it was evident the same moves succeeded much easier.

After all, Lan Xueruo was older than Yun Che by two years in age, and she had always subconsciously treated Yun Che as if she were looking after a younger brother. Furthermore, with Lan Xueruo's soft and gentle character which was completely different from Xia Qingyue's coldness, how could she bear to have Yun Che, who had completely disregarded his own safety to save her multiple times, sleep on the ice-cold floor...

Thus, the logical result.

Lan Xueruo slept on the inside, Yun Che slept on the outside, and they were divided in the middle by a long blanket which had been rolled up by Lan Xueruo.

“Your body must not go past this blanket, or else... or else...” Lan Xueruo had a serious face, but her cautioning face did not make deter Yun Che feel any deterence at all. On the contrary, it was a delightful sight for him to see.

“Does Senior Sister still not believe me?” Yun Che chuckled and laid down flat. He softly mumbled to himself: “However... if Senior Sister secretly come to my side... what should I do? Should I run away, or

should I pretend to know nothing of it...”

Lan Xueruo was exasperated for a moment. Acting as if she hadn't heard him, she laid on her side, facing inwards.

The lights were extinguished, and the room became pitch-black. Within the silence, even though Lan Xueruo had her eyes closed, she could not fall asleep for a long time. Her heartbeat was speeding up uncontrollably, almost to the extent that she could almost hear the sound of her own heartbeats.

Thinking back to meeting and acquainting with Yun Che, she couldn't deny that she had always been attracted and moved by him

during this entire time. And tonight she was actually sleeping on the same bed as him... Sleeping on the same bed. She discovered that within her heart there was only unease and tension, yet not a trace of fear or rejection. This made her feel a vague sense of danger, yet she was unable to resist or clear up that feeling.

She was actually sleeping with a man on the same bed... This was what she voluntarily proposed, yet it was precisely because of that, did it make her feel how unbelievable this situation was. Because for her, this was a scene that she simply could never have imagined. She started to imagine; if it was the same scene, yet Yun Che had been replaced by someone else, would

she also do the same out of soft-heartedness and compassion...

She thought for a long time as she switched through many people. The conclusion she always arrived at was... She definitely would not!

Could it be that I'm trusting him too much... Probably. After all, he didn't even hesitate to use his own life to protect me, and he was so generous and brave; certainly, he wouldn't do anything to offend me in this situation, right...

As Lan Xueruo's thoughts were in turmoil, she heard the sound of Yun Che's even breathing from beside her ears. It appeared he had already fallen sound asleep.



Lan Xueruo's anxiety immediately died down. But inexplicably, there was also a trace of an indescribable feeling of emptiness. Her heart had almost completely calmed down and a wave of fatigue washed over her. Not long after, she was immersed in her dreams.

That night, Lan Xueruo had initially expected to experience difficulty falling asleep throughout the entire night. However, she didn't think that she would fall asleep so quickly, and even be able to sleep so peacefully. Within her dreams, she had a vague feeling of herself gradually immersing into a warm embrace. This kind of warmth made her heart become very peaceful, very calm; it made her desire to come close to it, to

embrace this feeling of warmth. Only until she firmly embraced this warmth, was she finally satisfied and sunk deeper into her dreams. She did not wake throughout the night like she did before, nor did she have any more nightmares.

The next day.

When Lan Xueruo woke up, the rays of light that met her eyes were already quite intense. When her vision went from hazy to clear, her gaze subconsciously gazed upwards, and saw Yun Che's eyes that seemed to be laughing at first glance.

“Senior Sister, morning.”

Lan Xueruo subconsciously

prepared to reply, but when she opened her lips, what actually came out was an alarmed shriek.

Her two arms were currently firmly hugging onto his upper body, and even her supple breasts were pressed up against his chest. Her long and slender left leg coiled around his waist, as her entire body was pressed up against him without any sign of gaps.

Lan Xueruo's entire being, as if electrocuted, sprung away from Yun Che's body. In a panic, she arranged her slightly disordered hair and clothes. Her heart beated like a shocked deer, and her face flushed red like the sunset.

“Senior Sister, you didn't seem to

have any sense of security when you slept. Is there something you are afraid of?" Yun Che asked while looking at her in the eyes.

"I... d... don't..." Lan Xueruo replied somewhat unprepared and flustered... She vaguely remembered that inexplicable warmth in her dreams which brought her a sense of peace; she had now also completely understood, that this kind of warm feeling had come from Yun Che. Yet, her subconscious desired for this kind of feeling, and voluntarily led her to continuously move closer and embrace him.

Yun Che had woken up a long time ago, but kept quiet and held his original position until Lan Xueruo

woke up. Lan Xueruo embracing him on her own accord didn't make him feel enticed, but instead made him feel a faint kind of pity and heartache. It was because such a sleeping position, proved that under her gentle and warm appearance, there actually hid innumerable worries and even fears; only, he didn't know what she was worried and afraid of.

Yun Che sat up, then suddenly extended his hands and held Lan Xueruo's right hand that was as tender as snow in his grasp. Sincerely, he said: "Senior Sister, even though I do not know your identity, nor know your family background, and even more so don't know what you have been through... But as I've said before; as

long as I am by Senior Sister's side, I will use all my strength to protect Senior Sister, and will never again allow Senior Sister to receive any harm."

With her hand suddenly held by a man in such a dubious way, while his tender words also traveled to her ear, the Lan Xueruo who had never gone through these experiences was suddenly struck dumb as her mind completely blanked out. Only after letting her hand be held for a long time, did she finally act as if she had just woke up from the dream world; she hurriedly pulled her hand away from his grasp and with a panicked appearance, jumped off the bed.

"You... You already have a wife..."

Leaving behind a line that even she herself didn't know where it had come from, Lan Xueruo swiftly ran off. That beautiful figure clearly contained a feeling of hastily fleeing.

After Lan Xueruo ran away, Yun Che shook his head and smiled. He then placed his hand on his chin, and spoke to himself: "It seems like I was mistaken. Her actions definitely showed that she isn't deeply in love with me, but only have a kind of favorable impression that even she herself doesn't fully understand. But why would she treat me like that earlier... To the extent of not hesitating to take the enormous risk of going to Xiao Sect's Branch Sect, to save me by herself?"

Under the atmosphere that suddenly became awkward and dubious, the two continued on their journey to the Blue Wind Empire. But when night fell, just as they were looking for an inn to stay for the second time, this inn also only had a single room left. And just like the first one, this inn also stated that they were the only inn in the surrounding hundred kilometers. If they choose to stay, then they stay. If they don't, then only the option was to sleep on the streets.

Yun Che and Lan Xueruo could only “extremely helplessly” stay in a single room once again.

And when there's already the first time, the second time would be much more natural. The two again



slept on the same bed, the middle still was divided by a rolled up blanket...

Yet on the morning of the second day, Lan Xueruo saw almost the exact same situation as the day before. The blanket was thrown to who knows where; her entire body hugged onto Yun Che like an octopus, and held on extremely firmly...

The third day, the fourth day, the fifth day...

The inns they arrived at every time, as if they had discussed with each other, no more and no less, always had exactly a single room left and absolutely no extras. Sometimes there was only a single inn, other

times there were many inns, but every single one of them only had one room left... This made Lan Xueruo have a very bizarre feeling. With the second and the third time, the fourth time and the fifth time was even more natural. And during these days, every time Lan Xueruo woke up, the view that she she saw would always be herself tightly embracing Yun Che. Even when she constantly reminded herself before she fell asleep, it was still the same when she woke up. And furthermore, she was faintly embracing him tighter and tighter with each passing day.

After experiencing these few days of sharing a bed, even last sliver of her subconscious rejection toward such a degree of physical contact

with Yun Che, quietly disappeared.

And on the sixth day when they found an inn, Yun Che directly slammed the counter with his hand, and openly said: "Innkeeper, give me one room."

Lan Xueruo only opened her lips, then lowered her head, not saying any words of rejection.

If Lan Xueruo was accompanying another man on a journey, not to mention sharing a bed, it was impossible to even let her fingers be touched by the other person. But when encountering a veteran like Yun Che with two lives of experiences and a juvenile appearance, let alone eighteen years old, even if she was twenty eight

years old, she would still fall quietly like this... Even without being aware of it herself in the slightest.

-----

Blue Wind Imperial City, or Blue Wind Empire's capital, was located in the Blue Wind Empire's central-northern regions, and was also Blue Wind Empire's biggest city; its area was more than thirty times the size of New Moon City. In the dead center of the imperial city, laid the pinnacle of authority in Blue Wind Empire — The Imperial Palace.

Forty miles straight north from the location of the Imperial Palace laid the Blue Wind Empire's greatest Profound Palace — The Blue Wind Profound Palace.

The Blue Wind Profound Palace's history spanned for thousands of years. Established by the Blue Wind Imperial Family, it was the location used by the royal family to cultivate advanced profound practitioners. Furthermore, it was the sacred location that countless Blue Wind Empire's young practitioners dreamt to seek. The Blue Wind Profound Palace's interior was divided into three levels: Outer Palace, Middle Palace, and Inner Palace. If one was able to enter the Middle Palace, and was willing to serve the Imperial Family, one would definitely be greatly valued by the Imperial Family. If one was to enter the military, the starting point would be the first rank commander of a thousand men. But for a practitioner that could enter

the Inner Palace, he would receive the Imperial Family's greatest attention, would receive extremely excellent resources in addition to the best conditions during his stay in Blue Wind Profound Palace. Any growth of theirs within the Blue Wind Profound Palace would receive the Imperial Family's utmost attention. Before leaving the Blue Wind Profound Palace, one would receive an invitation to join the imperial family from the Imperial Family's initiative. Once one joins the Imperial Family, getting an high position was only secondary; the most important part was that their entire family would be bathed in wealth and glory because of this. Even the chickens and dogs would become royalty.

As a result, to be able to enter Blue Wind Profound Palace's Inner Palace was the dream of who knows how many young profound practitioners... It could be even said to be the most extravagant of hopes.

However, Blue Wind Profound Palace was after all, Blue Wind Empire's greatest Profound Palace. Not to mention the Inner Palace, even the conditions to enter the Outer Palace which had the lowest of standards were also extremely daunting. It was enough to eliminate ninety percent of practitioners who hoped to enter the Blue Wind Profound Palace. They could only retreat for their second choice, entering the Profound Palaces established by the

Imperial Family in the smaller cities.



# Chapter 122:

## Reunion

Yun Che sighed in admiration as he stood in front of Blue Wind Profound Palace's main entrance: "It really deserves the title of Blue Wind Empire's number one profound palace! Compared to New Moon Profound Palace, it has an air that's at least ten times more dignified, and its imposing aura is on a completely different level."

After ten days of trekking, Yun Che and Lan Xueruo finally reached Blue Wind Imperial City. It was Yun Che's first time going to the capital of the place he was born in, and he experienced quite a bit of shock on

the way there. Lan Xueruo was very familiar with Blue Wind Imperial City and introduced him to the locations of many key areas. After which, she brought him to the doorstep of the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

The first thing she wanted to do was settle Yun Che down at the Blue Wind Imperial Palace.

“That’s only natural. Blue Wind Profound Palace has a thousand eight hundred years of heritage and is directly supervised and supplied for by the royal family. With rich resources and a good environment to cultivate profound energy, it even has teachers who are renowned in the empire so naturally, the Profound Palace branches can’t

even begin to compare.” Lan Xueruo said this while taking out a short-distance voice Sound Transmission Talisman she had bought on the way and placed it atop her own Sound Transmission Jade. The moment the Sound Transmission Talisman broke apart and disappeared, a small matrix appeared on her own Sound Transmitting stone.

“I’m already here, at the main entrance of the Profound Palace.” Lan Xueruo spoke into the Sound Transmission Jade. Just as her voice fell, the matrix on the Sound Transmitter Jade faded away.

Before long, a middle-aged man clad in purple who had a gentle appearance rushed out from within

the Profound Palace. Upon seeing them, he shouted from afar, "Xueruo, Yun Che!? The two of you are fine? That's wonderful!"

"Palace Chief Qin? Why are you here?"

The person in front of them was actually New Moon Profound Palace's newly appointed chief, Qin Wuyou! This was simply out of Yun Che's expectations. As New Moon Profound Palace's newly appointed Palace Chief, why would he appear here instead of staying at New Moon City? He turned to face Lan Xueruo, and asked in a startled manner, "The one you just transmitted sound to just now, was Palace Chief Qin?"

Lan Xueruo slightly smiled and nodded.

“You’re still asking why I’m here?”  
Qin Wuyou looked at them, heaved a long sigh, and answered with a face full of fear, “At first, you had disappeared for several days and to find you, Xueruo went to Xiao Sect’s Branch Sect on her own. After that, I didn’t receive any more messages so I couldn’t help but make the trip myself to the branch sect, only to find out that their entire sect was already in a state of pandemonium. After I went and had a fight with Xiao Tiannan, Xiao Zaihe returned and said that you two had dropped to the center of the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range, and not even your bones and corpses were there to be found. Sigh, I almost lost

my soul in shock. For more than a month, I've been living on tenterhooks and I could no longer continue waiting in New Moon City so I came here to search for any news of the two of you, because Xueruo did say that she would bring you here previously."

The anxiety and relief that Qin Wuyou expressed were all completely without falsehood. This caused some doubts to arise in Yun Che's heart. He definitely would not believe he would worry Qin Wuyou to such an extent, which meant that the cause for Qin Wuyou's reaction was undoubtedly Lan Xueruo. To let a Profound Palace's Palace Chief become so anxious that he would even make a trip to Blue Wind Imperial City.... The only

explanation for this would be that Qin Wuyou and Lan Xueruo were already acquainted a long time ago and only had a distant relationship on the surface.

“Palace Chief Qin, have you.... told my father?” Lan Xueruo asked very carefully.

“Sigh, how would I dare. If I were to let your.... father know I didn’t protect you well, this head of mine.... Hehe, thank goodness you’re back safely. If not, even I, would not be able to handle that.” Qin Wuyou wiped the cold sweat off his forehead.

Yun Che: “.....”

“Palace Chief Qin, you’re not

planning on returning back to New Moon Profound Palace anymore, right?" Yun Che suddenly asked coldly.

Qin Wuyou was shocked, and then nodded his head: "That's right, they've already assigned a new palace chief to New Moon Profound Palace. But how did you know of this?"

"I guessed." Yun Che laughed and said flippantly. He silently thought: Indeed, the reason why Qin Wuyou had gone to New Moon Profound Palace was for Lan Xueruo. It seems that Lan Xueruo's identity was really out of the ordinary. Now that Lan Xueruo is back in Blue Wind Imperial City, he no longer has any need to stay in New Moon Profound



Palace.

“Yun Che, where have you disappeared off to during those few days? Why were you still being chased after by the Xiao Sect even when you and Xueruo were together? How did you escape the danger after falling into the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range that even I would not dare to enter? Could it be that Xiao Zaihe had fabricated a story after he was unable to catch you?” Qin Wuyou fired off a chain of questions.

“About that, I’ll explain them to you later. Palace Chief Qin, what was the situation at Xiao Sect’s Branch Sect when you left New Moon City?” Lan Xueruo asked.

“Heh heh, that branch sect.” Qin Wuyou started laughing, “I think they’re almost done for.”

“Almost... done for?” Lan Xueruo asked in surprise.

“That’s right.” Qin Wuyou nodded and slowly answered: “I don’t know which unlucky star they encountered, but according to the news I’ve heard, they seem to have hired a quack who passed off as a genius doctor, who then completely disabled Xiao Luocheng, crippled all his meridians and destroyed all his Profound Veins. Forget about possessing profound energy, he won’t even be able to stand in this lifetime. He can only pass his life on that bed now. Not only that, I’ve also heard that the charlatan had

neatly swept the entire treasury clean before he left through some unknown means. That literally ripped away a large half of that Sect's foundation."

"Then, have they found out who that 'quack doctor' was?" Lan Xuero glanced at Yun Che as she asked in amusement.

Qin Wuyou shook his head, "No. I heard the quack doctor disguised himself, and there was simply no way to start searching."

Yun Che smirked. He knew, that even if Xiao Tiannan clearly knew that everything was done by him, he still would never say it out loud. Because if he were to let outsiders know that such a big sect like theirs

had completely played in the hands of a youth of merely sixteen and at the Nascent Profound Realm, let alone their branch sect, even their main sect would be too embarrassed to face anyone.

“But after all, that branch sect is quite large. If they clench their teeth, they should be able to tide it over with some difficulty. But what happened afterwards was even more interesting.” An expression of taking joy from others’ misery began to appear on Qin Wuyou’s face, “I heard that to save his son, Xiao Luocheng, Xiao Tiannan personally went to the Black Moon Merchant Guild to buy an Emperor Profound Dragon Core! Yes, you didn’t hear wrongly, it’s an Emperor Profound Dragon Core! But on the

second day, he barged into the Black Moon Merchant Guild again, insisting that the Emperor Profound Dragon Core was fake. This was originally a secret.... but what sort of existence is the Black Moon Merchant Guild? Would they sell things that are fake? But if it was fake, why couldn't Xiao Tiannan and Xiao Baicao tell it apart when they went to purchase the Dragon Core initially? Facing Xiao Tiannan's aggression, the Black Moon Merchant Guild's Pu He spread the word that Xiao Tiannan had bought an Emperor Profound Dragon Core from them in a fit of fury.

Yun Che's eyebrows twitched... Oi, oi! Originally, I thought that after being forced to leave New Moon

City, other than to send Xiao Tiannan and Xiao Baicao away, there was no other method to put into action previously planned uses. Who would have thought that the Black Moon Merchant Guild would actually give them a shove.... And this push was better than having myself stay in the city to spread the word. If it was as Qin Wuyou had said, then what sort of existence was the Black Moon Merchant Guild? Fair trade and authoritative! The things they sold, once it was spread, how could it be fake?

“Once this news spread out, it naturally triggered monstrous waves. On the second day, New Moon City’s guest inns were filled to capacity; the streets were filled with strong people from the Spirit

Profound Realm, Earth Profound Realm, and I even felt the presence of two scary Heavenly Profound Realm practitioners. Apparently, on the first night, the Xiao Sect was broken into a few dozen times or so. After that, the Chief Elder of the medicine branch of the Xiao sect, Xiao Wuji, personally came to ask the branch sect to hand over the Emperor Profound Dragon Core. It would be an amazing feat if they could hand it over and they would be heavily rewarded. However, if he couldn't hand it over, the branch sect would be kicked out of the Xiao sect. Xiao Tiannan refused to bend. He first claimed that it was false, then said that someone had stolen it, and basically refused to hand it over....

Yun Che coldly laughed in secret... Bullshit! Even if he wanted to hand it over, how could he hand it over? That fake Emperor Profound Dragon Core was forged from the Profound Core that he had gotten from Lan Xueruo then, and could only last four days. On the fifth day, the air of the Emperor Profound Dragon Core that had permeated into it would completely disappear, the bright red color would become a dull grey, and was not even worth spare change! Would he really bring that low grade Profound Core and tell Xiao Wuji that it was that Emperor Profound Dragon Core?

Were he to actually to do that, Xiao Wuji would definitely have him killed on the spot.



“After that, I left New Moon City and never heard about the situation afterwards. But I can confirm that the Branch Sect in New Moon City is completely done for.” Qin Wuyou finished speaking and even laughed blankly. After all, he had met Xiao Tiannan twice, and had ended up fighting the moment they met. Now that Xiao Tiannan was cornered, he would feel at least some sort of happiness.

“Oh, that’s right.” Qin Wuyou turned towards Yun Che, saying, “I’ve brought Yuanba here. Initially, I’d told him that since you were with Xueruo, there was a high chance she might bring you here. As I was preparing to leave New Moon City, he used all sorts of methods to beg me to bring him

here, saying that he'd never be at peace for life if he didn't see you, so I brought him here. You should go later... “

“Brother.... Brother-in-law!!”

Before Qin Wuyou's words had sunk in, an agitated cry came from beside him. Yun Che's gaze swept across Qin Wuyou and in a look, saw the teary-eyed Xiao Yuanba standing at the door of Blue Wind Profound Palace.

And beside Yuanba was a person he thought shouldn't have come....

Murong Ye!

Why would he be here?

“Brother-in-law!!”

Xia Yuanba gave another cry and madly ran over with large steps as his large body lunged towards Yun Che in a flash. Thick, muscular arms locked around him and he started bawling, "Brother-in-law.... So you're really fine.... This is great... Great... A month ago, I heard that you'd fallen into the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range, and I thought.... I thought..."

Xia Yuanba had the body of a giant but was now crying like a child. Yun Che felt the corners of his eyes moisten. Since a very young age, he knew that if he were to die one day, there would only be three people who would cry for him.... One was grandfather, one was little aunt, and the last was Xia Yuanba.

“Alright, stop crying, I’m fine.” Yun Che patted Xia Yuanba’s arm and soothingly said, “Also, I’ve already told you so many times to stop calling me brother-in-law.”

“Uuu... I got it, brother-in-law. I definitely won’t call you brother-in-law in the future... Uuu... it’s just too great that you’re alright, brother-in-law, or else I wouldn’t know what to do....”

Yun Che: “.....”

# Chapter 123:

## Resentment

“The relationship between you pair of manly men really makes one envious.” Lan Xuero laughed softly. She spoke of “envy” lightly, but it felt a few hundred times heavier in her heart. Although they were kin, they could only be considered distantly related, yet they still had such a close relationship. As for her, whenever she thought of her own brothers, she could only feel an internal bitter disappointment and sadness.

“Xuero, I can finally be relieved after seeing that you’re alright.” Murong Ye walked over, a look of

bland surprise and happiness on his face, "Hearing that you'd fallen into the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range a month ago, I was so scared and worried that I lost my appetite and couldn't sleep at night. I could only hate myself for being so powerless, otherwise, even if I had to risk my life, I would definitely go into the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range to save you."

"I'm grateful for brother's concern."  
Lan Xuero smiled politely.

Regarding Murong Ye's appearance here, she didn't seemed surprised at all. Every year, Blue Moon Profound Palace would accept three of the most distinguished disciples from each Profound Palace within Blue Wind Empire and Murong Ye happened to be one of those

selected from New Moon Profound Palace this year. Coincidentally, the time for him to come forth to Blue Wind Profound Palace was also this month. Presumably, Murong Ye should have arrived with Qin Wuyou.

“Xueruo, are you going to stay in Blue Wind Profound Palace in the future? If that’s so it would be great, we can be at the same place to cultivate profound energy and get along together again.” Murong Ye smiled.

Lan Xueruo didn’t nod but calmly answered, “In the future, I will indeed be staying at Blue Moon Profound Palace.” After her simple response, she didn’t pay any more attention to Murong Ye. She asked

Qin Wuyou, "Palace Chief Qin.... Oh right, I should be calling you Instructor Qin now. Yun Che has just arrived at Blue Wind Imperial City and has nowhere to go to, so I'll have to trouble you to make arrangements for him to enter Blue Wind Profound Palace."

"Hehe, this is not a problem, of course." Qin Wuyou nodded his head warmly, "What about you? Do you want to as well? Your name still hangs within the Middle Palace."

Name hanging within the Middle Palace? Murong Ye stared..... How could this be! Within the Middle Palace, even the lowest-leveled were at the third level of the True Profound Realm. At the eighth level of the Nascent Profound Realm,



there was already nobody of the same age within New Moon Profound Palace who could defeat him, but at Blue Moon Profound Palace, even in the lowest Outer Palace, he could only achieve an upper-middle rank. Lan Xueruo's profound energy was the same as his, so how could her name be in the Middle Palace?

Blue Wind Profound Palace and New Moon Profound Palace were different. A person could get into New Moon Profound Palace through personal relations, but this was absolutely not possible in Blue Wind Profound Palace! There were distinct differences between the Outer Palace, Middle Palace and Inner Palace. The only way to enter the Middle Palace from the Outer

Palace was to defeat a disciple from the Middle Palace. The only way to enter the Inner Palace from the Middle Palace was to defeat a disciple from the Inner Palace....

Other than this, there was no other path. Even if the Palace Chief were to appear and allow a disciple from the Outer Palace enter the Middle Palace due to favoritism, it was also absolutely impossible.

The only exception that could be slightly accommodated was to let a disciple who didn't quite meet all the criteria to enter the Outer Palace. However, only important figures who were at least instructor-level could have that kind of privilege, and this could only be for a maximum of three people per year.

“I will check in frequently. But I’ve left for too long and am slightly worried about my father, so I need to return first. Therefore, I’ll be leaving Junior Brother Yun to you, Instructor Qin. Junior Yun, Palace Chief Qin is now an instructor at Blue Wind Profound Palace. You should settle down within the Palace with Instructor Qin first, and after I make a trip home to settle issues there, I will come back immediately to visit you.” Lan Xueruo said as her eyes flashed with slight worry and melancholy upon mentioning “father”.

Murong Ye, who was beside her, frowned angrily... Settle Yun Che down.... Visit Yun Che.... Anyone who wasn’t a fool could hear her care and concern for Yun Che in

Lan Xueruo's simple words, yet she didn't even give half a shit about him.

"You can be at ease, I will immediately arrange for Yun Che to enter the Outer Palace and similarly, will also give him the greatest amount of care." Qin Wuyou nodded. He was the only one who clearly knew the reason for Lan Xueruo's kindness towards Yun Che..... Even though he didn't look favorably upon Yun Che, and only somewhat admired him, since it was Lan Xueruo's decision, he could only obey.

"Senior sister, are you going home alone? How about I send you back first?" Yun Che ventured. Deep down in his heart, he really wanted

to know what sort of concept Lan Xueruo's "home" was.

Lan Xueruo smiled and shook her head. Her actions were light and she didn't say anything, but her expression was soft yet resolute.

"Just relax. This is Blue Wind Imperial City, nothing will happen to me." After throwing such a line, Lan Xueruo smiled gently and turned her back towards him as she left with light footsteps.

But the instant she took a step and moved forward, a miserable emptiness, as if she had lost something of great importance from her side, suddenly surfaced in Lan Xueruo's heart... With a short sigh, she came to understand what

this feeling of emptiness was....

Because at this moment, Yun Che was no longer at her side.

Escaping together, facing hardships together, even experiencing brushes with death; it was such a long period of daily interaction that she didn't realize she had unconsciously gotten accustomed to Yun Che's existence. When in New Moon Profound Palace, Murong Ye would cling to her side every day and keep at it for a very, very long time. But what it brought her was two starkly different feelings. Murong Ye's pestering, even though she took it all in stride calmly and politely, internally, she felt annoyed and harassed. But with Yun Che by her side, what sprouted

in her heart was a deepening feeling of reliance.... and an even more dangerous feeling of attachment.

Even sleeping in the same bed as him and waking up in his embrace in the morning had silently become a sort of habit.

When returning to Blue Wind Imperial City, she anxiously wanted to return home to visit her father. But what she felt the moment she left Yun Che, the moment Yun Che was no longer at her side, was simply too uncomfortable. It was as if a part of her soul had been forcefully removed and it caused the steps she took to become very heavy.

“Senior sister!”

Yun Che’s sudden shout came from behind. It stopped her in her tracks and made her feel like she didn’t want to leave anymore.

Yun Che rushed in front of Lan Xueruo, took out two items from the Sky Poison Pearl and placed them in Lan Xueruo’s hands, “Senior sister knows of the Sky Tremor Bombs so you should also know of the Poison Fire Rod from the Xiao Sect. When I’m not by senior sister’s side, senior sister must learn to protect herself well. When you meet someone who intends to harm you who cannot be defeated, you must not be too soft-hearted and end him with this Poison Fire Rod. Also, this incense



was taken from Black Demon's spatial ring. It's a special type of Beast Repelling Incense, and the ingredients it was made from do not come from Blue Wind Empire. Black Demon probably acquired it after attacking a foreign businessman. After lighting it, it can disperse all Profound Beasts at the Sky Profound level or lower. They had also used this to enter the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range. If you have to enter any dangerous area with Profound Beasts, light this immediately."

The corner of Lan Xuero's lips curved up, hooking into a smile of incomparably moving beauty, "I'm only making a trip home, not going on a trip of life and death...." She put away the Poison Fire Rod and

the Beast Repelling Incense and then softly said, “Thank you, Junior Brother Yun.”

“Hehe.” Yun Che gave a cheap laugh, “After all, we’re people who sleep together every day, what are you still thanking me for, and to even be this polite.... AOW OW OW OW OW!”

Lan Xueruo’s face flushed so red that it spread to her snowy neck. She pinched the back of Yun Che’s hand in embarrassment and with a stomp, ran away as if she were fleeing.

It was unsure whether Yun Che’s last line was intentional or not but he didn’t suppress his voice; Qin Wuyou, Xia Yuanba and Murong Ye

all heard it clearly. It left them all shocked in unison, making them gape so widely that their jaws almost fell to the floor.

“You... What did you just say!”  
Murong Ye’s chest heaved as he suddenly rushed forward like an enraged mad dog. He clutched Yun Che’s collar with a pair of completely red eyes, and roared, “Repeat what you had just said again.”

With a \*slap\*, Yun Che slapped the Murong Ye’s hand, which was clutching his collar, glanced at him from the side, and indifferently asked, “Who the hell do you think you are? You want me to repeat what I’ve just said?”

Qin Wuyou stammered, “Yun Che, y-y-y-you..... you really.... with Xueruo..... slept together?”

In return, Yun Che stared at Qin Wuyou with an undecipherable expression, “That... Senior Sister Xueruo and I, were alone for over a month..... Mn. In addition to my good looks, her beauty, and the mutual consent of both parties, dry branches can become a raging fire.... Isn’t sleeping together very normal?”

“This this this this...” Qin Wuyou’s moustache trembled violently, as his eyes stared widely; his brain had completely stopped functioning. Thinking again to what Yun Che had just said and Lan Xueruo’s response..... She didn’t ruthlessly

cuff his ears; rather, she had run away in embarrassment after pinching him coquettishly....

Qin Wuyou suddenly had the urge to bow to Yun Che there and then.....

“Ah ah ah ah!” Xia Yuanba’s mouth gaped for a long time before finally resuming its original position, “Brother-in-law, you actually slept with Senior Sister Xueruo..... I really respect you!”

“Impossible! This is impossible! How could Xueruo possibly like you! Xueruo is as clear as ice and as pure as jade, how could it be.... How could it be....” Murong Ye’s breathing became labored and both his eyes were red. Mentally, he was

near collapse and madness.

Suddenly, his hands flashed and a thin longsword appeared clutched in his hands. He suddenly pierced towards Yun Che, "You mongrel, who tainted Xueruo, I'll kill you!!"

"Stop!" Murong Ye's actions caught Qin Wuyou and Xia Yuanba off guard. In addition to that, Murong Ye was too close to Yun Che, so other being able to give a startled cry, they were completely unable to do anything to stop his assault.

Yun Che didn't dodge, and actually stretched out his right hand slowly, reaching towards the long sword that Murong Ye was piercing at him. This action shocked Qin Wuyou and Xia Yuanba... Using his hand to catch the sword? Murong

Ye had profound energy at the eighth level of the Nascent Profound Realm after all, did Yun Che not want his hand anymore!?

Clang!!

Before Murong Ye could reveal a manic smile, the instant Yun Che's fingers made contact with Murong Ye's long sword, it was already completely nullified. He felt as if his sword had pierced into incomparably sturdy hard rock, and was incapable of moving even half an inch forward.

But what was pinching the tip of the blade, was only Yun Che's thumb and middle finger.

Murong Ye was stunned; Qin

Wuyou and Xia Yuanba were also completely dumbfounded. At this point, Qin Wuyou finally noticed Yun Che's profound energy. In a voice of thick disbelief, a cry sprang from his lips, "Nascent Profound Realm.... Tenth level!? How.... How is this possible!!"

The last time he had met Yun Che, he was only at the first level of the Nascent Profound Realm. Only a month and a half had passed since then, yet he was already at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm!

This sort of speed.... could only be described within those fantastical sort of stories.

"Whaa? What did you say? Tenth



level Nascent Profound Realm?”

Both of Xia Yuanba's circular eyes stared widely, and he thought there was something wrong with his ears.

Yun Che stretched out his right hand and clutched the sword blade with his entire palm. With a violent shake, a strong blast of profound energy ran down the blade's body and hit Murong Ye's arm, which had been tightly clutching the sword. He let go of the blade with an anguished roar. With the blade held in hand, Yun Che flung his arm and the hilt of the blade ruthlessly hit Murong Ye's face, causing him to fall to the ground and roll.

Murong Ye sprawled on the ground. The entire right half of his face was

swollen and splattered with fresh blood. Yun Che threw the sword in his hand away, and looked down while coldly saying, "Whatever happens between me and Senior Xueruo has nothing to do with you. Guard your identity as a toad who daydreams everyday well, got it?"

# Chapter 124: Inner Palace's Heavenly Profound List

“You... You!” Murong Ye clutched the completely red right half of his face as his entire body trembled. Since a very young age, he had always been raised in praise and admiration. Even in Blue Wind Profound Palace, although he was only an average disciple of the Outer Palace, his father was the city chief of New Moon City and his cousin was a member of the Inner Palace. Therefore, his position within the Outer Palace was definitely not low. Those who wanted to suck up to him were as

plentiful as there were fish in the sea.... How could he stand this sort of humiliation!

And the person who had caused him such humiliation, was actually the one who had “gotten” the Lan Xueruo that he could only dream of getting.

“You will regret this.... Before long, I’ll let you regret having been born into this world!” Murong Ye climbed up from the ground, yelled venomously, to then totter away like a defeated dog.

You can try as much as you want.... Yun Che sneered silently as he watched Murong Ye’s retreating figure.

“Yun Che, you.... You’re simply too impulsive.” Qin Wuyou walked over and berated him.

“He wanted to kill me with his sword, but I’ve only damaged his pride. It should already be kind enough.” Yun Che said calmly.

“Sigh...” Qin Wuyou’s gaze wavered and his expression became extremely complicated. He let out a long sigh, but Yun Che didn’t know if the sigh was for beating Murong Ye up or for “sleeping” with Lan Xueruo. “With his identity as the son of New Moon City’s chief, Murong Ye is usually very arrogant. Even in Blue Wind Profound Palace, he still bullies and humiliates others; he does deserve a bit of punishment. Only, he has an older

cousin here, named Murong Yi, who is the son of the Blue Wind Empire's Northern Field Marshal. Murong Ye's father becoming the city chief of New Moon City probably has something to do with this Northern Field Marshal. And if this identity isn't prominent enough, then his other identity is something even I cannot overlook... Murong Yi is currently a disciple of the Inner Palace!

"Inner... Inner Palace?" Yun Che still didn't respond in any way, but when Xia Yuanba heard the two words "Inner Palace", he was so startled, his entire body started trembling, and even his expression paled by a substantial amount.

"So what if it's the Inner Palace?"

Yun Che asked, with a face devoid of any expression.

“Hehe, it’s your first time in Blue Wind Imperial City, so it’s natural that you wouldn’t know. If you stay here for a few more days, you’ll know what a scary concept the Inner Palace is. Let me tell you a few statistics.” Qin Wuyou said warmly, “The bar set for entering the Inner Palace is extremely high. Those who can enter Blue Wind Profound Palace, even if it’s just the Outer Palace, would be highly regarded as a genius of the highest tier if they were anywhere else. Within the country, young practitioners who dream of entering the Blue Wind Profound Palace number more than ten million, but currently, there are only around

fifty thousand disciples in Blue Wind Profound Palace. Amongst these fifty thousand or so, fifty four thousand are in the Outer Palace, three thousand are in the Middle Palace, and within the Inner Palace, there only number a hundred.”

“Only a hundred people?” Yun Che revealed a small expression of shock.

“Correct. Not one of the disciples who can enter the Inner Palace isn’t a miraculous genius amongst geniuses who will one day become a sect master or an ambitious hero of some sort. They will become important figures that even the royal family has to treat with respect. The list that holds the names of the hundred who have



made it into the Inner Palace has been deemed the 'Heavenly Profound List'. Disciples are listed in terms of profound strength and only Inner Palace disciples can enter this list. Those who wish to be on this bulletin have to challenge and defeat any person on the list. If his challenge is successful, he will then be able to replace the corresponding place on the Heavenly Profound List, while the loser will be booted out of the Heavenly Profound List, and also the Inner Palace.

“Each and every disciple on the Heavenly Profound List all have an extremely golden reputation and prestige in Blue Wind Profound Palace, and even Blue Wind Imperial City. Not only is Murong

Yi on the Heavenly Profound List, his rank is not even at the very bottom. Combining his current position, the seventy third rank, and his status as the Northern Field Marshal's son, no one in Blue Wind Profound Palace dares to provoke him."

"Murong Yi's temper isn't that great, so if Murong Ye were to approach Murong Yi, Murong Yi might just take action. If that happens, no one will be able to protect you."

Although that was what Qin Wuyou had said, he knew deep in his heart that if this sort of thing were to happen, Lan Xuero would definitely step forth for him.... Because if Murong Yi were to take

action against Yun Che, it would be just like a ferocious tiger swatting a grasshopper... Even if the current Yun Che had this sort of extremely startling growth.

“Whatever, I’ve never been truly afraid of anyone.” Yun Che shrugged without a care.

“Brother-in-law, members of the Inner Palace are really super strong! Out of the people on the Heavenly Profound List, even the lowest ranked person is at the eighth level of True Profound Realm! The three most powerful are already at the Spirit Profound Realm. If Muyong Ye were to really ask for help from his older cousin who’s on that Heavenly Profound List, then.... then....” Xia Yuanba spoke

worriedly.

At least the eighth level of the True Profound Realm.... Yun Che's eyebrows suddenly furrowed. The age limit on disciples in Blue Wind Profound Palace was the same as all other Profound Palaces; it was also capped at fifteen to twenty years old. Those who were above twenty, unless they stayed to take on work within the palace, had to leave Blue Wind Profound Palace forever. If this was the case, then the hundred people on the Heavenly Profound List would naturally be either twenty years old or younger. For people of this age to reach the eighth level of True Profound Realm, whether it be in Floating Cloud City or New Moon City, it was impossible to imagine someone

like that. And those three in the Spirit Profound Realm were even more startling to an extreme degree. His grandfather Xiao Lie was around sixty, and the strongest in Floating Cloud City, but he was only in the Spirit Profound Realm!

The scope of the city also plainly represented the levels of profound strength. In Floating Cloud City, the sixteen year old Xia Qingyue who had attained the tenth level of Elementary Profound Realm was already recognized to be the greatest genius of the younger generation. In New Moon City, the number one genius of the younger generation, Xiao Luocheng was also sixteen, but had already entered the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm.

But in Blue Wind Empire's capital, those below twenty were actually in the Spirit Profound Realm.... And the eighth level of the True Profound Realm was merely the lowest bar to enter the Inner Palace of the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

“Oh right, I haven't asked you yet! Your current profound strength has actually reached the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm! It's only been half a month's time; even if you consumed an elixir, you couldn't possibly have progressed so fast! Could it be that you previously hid your profound strength with something like a Profound Restricting Pearl of some sort?” Thinking of Yun Che's large scale challenge in New Moon Profound Palace, the more he

thought about it, the greater the possibility seemed to Qin Wuyou.

Yun Che didn't answer, avoiding the question altogether, "Palace Chief Qin, what sort of process does a person have to go through if he wants to enter Blue Wind Profound Palace?"

Seeing that Yun Che didn't want to answer, Qin Wuyou didn't press on, and answered: "I no longer bear the identity of Palace Chief, just call me Instructor Qin. It is also fine to just call me by name. Blue Wind Profound Palace has strict regulations; anyone who wishes to enter has to go through assessments. But as an instructor, I have two or three chances to bring in students through personal

relations every year. I'd originally wanted to arrange for you to enter the Outer Palace straight away, but with your current profound strength, there's already no need for it."

"You came just in time; today is the last day of Blue Wind Profound Palace's yearly assessment exam for new disciples. Although registration has long since ended, slotting your name in is extremely easy. Once you get past the evaluations, you can officially enter Blue Wind Profound Palace's Outer Palace. It saves a lot of trouble compared to having me arrange for you to move in straight away. Furthermore, I believe that you are also more willing to accept this kind of method." Qin Wuyou stroked his



long beard as he said that with a light chuckle.

Xia Yuanba also nodded along, “Right, right! This entrance exam lasts for a total of ten days, and today is the best day. Brother-in-law is currently at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm, so he’ll definitely pass. Besides, brother-in-law is young, so he’ll still be awesome inside the Outer Palace.”

After saying that, Xia Yuanba suddenly fell gloomy.... His profound strength was merely at the sixth level of the Elementary Profound Realm. This sort of profound strength was considered the standard in Floating Cloud City, but in the Blue Wind Imperial City, it was absolutely nothing at all. He

had been brought into the palace by Qin Wuyou and moped about Yun Che's disappearance even during his daily cleaning of the Outer Palace's Profound Pavilion. He endured all of the surprised and contemptuous looks everyday... Indeed, everyone looked at him as if he was trash and within Blue Wind Profound Palace, his profound energy really could only be considered as trash. As to whether he could enter Blue Wind Profound Palace's Outer Palace to cultivate in the Profound... That was something he didn't even dare hope for.

“Of course there's no problem.”

Yun Che nodded without hesitation. Between passing the entrance examination and entering from the “backdoor”, he would of

course, choose the former. He took a glance at Xia Yuanba, and asked: “Instructor Qin, since you only have a few chances to practice favoritism, then, how about giving the chance you were originally planning to give me to Yuanba?”

“Ah?” Xia Yuanba’s expression became animated.

“This....” Qin Wuyou actually hesitated for a moment. It wasn’t that he was petty, but rather.... Xia Yuanba’s profound energy was really too low; even the lowest rank in the Outer Palace was far above his reach. While it was true he had relations that could bring him in, Xia Yuanba should still at least be of Nascent Profound Realm, and not too far away from the bar set for

the lowest rank. For an Elementary Profound practitioner to enter Blue Wind Profound Palace... that would simply be a joke. The instructors and the Vice Palace Chiefs would likely have violent objections as well.

Only, Xia Yuanba had a kind and pure personality; Qin Wuyou liked him a lot. Adding this to the fact that Yun Che had recommended him.....

He gritted his teeth and looked at Yun Che with a strange glint in his eye as the tone of his voice became extremely bizarre, “Yun Che brat, first answer a question of mine... Have you really, with Xuero.... Cough, cough cough, slept together?”

“Of course, is there something abnormal about this?” Yun Che asked, the picture of innocence.

Qin Wuyou’s facial features twitched, swallowed forcefully, and said, “Alright! This child, Yuanba. I also like him. After you pass the entrance exam, I’ll immediately arrange for his entrance into the Outer Palace. But I must remind both of you, Blue Wind Profound Palace has all sorts of disciples. Yuanba’s Profound energy is too weak, so he may encounter a lot of bullying and humiliation....”

“That won’t happen.” Yun Che shook his head, and smiled wanly. There were faint traces of ice within the tranquility of his voice, “I won’t allow anyone to bully Yuanba.”

“Is.... Is this for real? I can really join Blue Wind Profound Palace?” Xia Yuanba’s eyes flashed; he was overwhelmed with joy and became incoherent. To have been able to enter New Moon Profound Palace had already made him happy beyond belief, and he had just been presented the opportunity join the highest-tiered Profound Palace, which countless hopefuls wished to enter. This had always been something he didn’t even dare to dream of. He had only come to Blue Wind Imperial City this time to obtain news of Yun Che, so he definitely didn’t have any extravagant hopes of this sort. For such a gargantuan surprise to suddenly fall from the heavens like this, was truly beyond his imagination.

“Hahahaha, I would never lie to you young’uns.” Seeing Xia Yuanba’s happiness, Qin Wuyou’s mood improved as he laughed heartily. Then he reached a hand out towards Yun Che, a voice transmitter jade clutched within his hand, “Come, Yun Che brat, record my sound transmission imprint. If you need anything in the future, you can transmit sound to me whenever you wish.”

“Uh....” Yun Che rubbed at his hair awkwardly, “I still don’t have a Sound Transmission Jade.”

“Oh.” Qin Wuyou withdrew his hand, “I’ll get someone to prepare one for you in a few days. But for now, follow me to the Profound Palace’s Central Plaza. With your

current age and profound energy, passing the entrance examination should be easy. Perhaps next year, you may even have the opportunity to rush directly into the Middle Palace. By then, you should have considerable status in the Blue Wind Imperial City.



# Chapter 125: Blue Wind Emperor

Blue Wind Imperial City, heart of the Imperial Palace.

Lan Xueruo walked with hurried footsteps, passed through the heavy guard, and headed straight for the emperor's chambers. All of the imperial guards along the way saluted one after the other.

“Princess Cang Yue, you’ve returned. The emperor has been reminiscing about you these past few days.” At the doors to the emperor’s chambers, a middle-aged eunuch bowed as he welcomed her, “Do you require me to announce

your arrival?”

“No need.” Lan Xueroo shook her head and walked directly into the emperor’s chambers.

Cang Wanhe, Blue Wind Empire’s ninety-ninth generation emperor, presided over the land under the heavens, with a prestige that shook the four oceans. He would be fifty-six years old this year; when living in the imperial palace without a worry, at this age, a king should not exhibit signs of aging, but Cang Wanhe was quietly lying on a bed with a dazed expression. Even his gaze was dull and without spirit, and he looked almost like a seventy- or eighty-year-old past his prime.

“Your Majesty, Princess Cang Yue has returned!” His personal eunuch entered with light footsteps, and reported with a happy expression.

Hearing this, Cang Wanhe’s lifeless face revealed a shred of eagerness. His upper body moved, and he stood up with difficulty, “Quick, quickly let her enter.”

Right after he spoke, Lan Xueruo entered. Seeing the enthusiasm in Cang Wanhe’s clearly aged face and gaze, her heart clenched. With quick steps forward, she knelt with both knees in front of Cang Wanhe, “Royal father, your daughter has been unfilial, and has not visited you in a long time.”

“It’s good that you came back, it’s

good that you came back, ah.” Cang Wanhe cheerfully nodded. At the moment, his face didn’t have the slightest degree of a monarch’s imposing aura, and only had the love that a normal father expresses towards his beloved daughter, “Get up quickly. It has already been three months since you last returned from New Moon City; during this time We couldn’t eat or sleep well in fear that something might’ve happened to you. Haha, it is good that nothing happened.”

“This time your daughter encountered something trivial, delayed a bit, and has worried royal father.” Lan Xueruo stood up, looked at her father’s appearance, and suddenly revealed a painful look: “Royal father, your

condition.... Why does it seem more serious? With Master Gu personally attending to your illness, how could it be like this?”

“Cough cough....” Cang Wanhe wanted to speak, but went into a fit of violent coughs. He gasped a couple of breaths, and answered with a hoarse voice, “Perhaps, We really have become old. Even though this illness is serious, with Master Gu, it still won’t take Our life immediately, but We will die of anger sooner or later because of those unfilial sons... Cough cough, cough cough cough cough....”

After saying those two sentences, Cang Wanhe once again suffered from a painful fit of coughs. Lan Xuero stepped forward at once

and lightly patted his back.

At this time, the eunuch's voice came from outside the door, "Reporting to my emperor, the crown prince wishes to seek an audience."

Cang Wanhe's body stiffened, and Lan Xueruo's face also turned ugly. Subsequently, a thunderous roar came from Cang Wanhe's mouth, "Tell him to get lost! We do not wish to see him!"

"Aiyah, what has made royal father so angry. Royal father is currently sick, you must take care of your body and avoid getting angry."

Along with the echo of the lazy voice, an almost thirty year old

youthful man adorned in an attire full of gold patterns, who had both hands behind his back, walked into the room. As soon as he saw Lan Xueruo, he squinted his eyes as he laughed, "My beloved royal sister, just a moment ago I heard from the servants that you had returned, so how could I not immediately rush back. I haven't seen you for only a couple of months, but I have missed you dearly."

"You unfilial son, who allowed you enter. Get lost right now!" Cang Wanhe roared furiously while pointing a trembling finger.

"Royal father, please don't get angry. Be careful not to injure your body, your son only worries about royal father's illness, so your son

specifically came to visit. If royal father doesn't like my presence, your son will leave immediately." Prince Cang Lin said while laughing. That lazy expression wasn't afraid of the emperor's rage in the slightest, and even more had no respect or fear for consequence.

"Visit?" Cang Wanhe laughed coldly, "Coming to see whether or not We have suddenly died in bed? Let us tell you, as long as We still have a breath of life, don't even think about getting the title of emperor! And don't even hope that We will decree the transfer of the title! Get lost right now!"

"Royal father, why must you be so stubborn." Prince Cang Lin frowned, "What type of existence is



the Xiao Sect? Now that I have obtained Xiao Sect's full support, as long as I ascend the throne, the Xiao Sect will be used by me, and our Blue Wind Imperial Family would only become more prosperous with power that could shake the world....”

“Shut up.... Cough cough, cough cough cough cough....” Cang Wanhe was so angry that his entire face turned red. His chest violently heaved up and down, “The Xiao Sect has lusted after the power of the Blue Wind Imperial Family for very long, but you unfilial sons actually have the nerve to lead the wolf into the house ... even if you become the emperor, the thousand year legacy of Our Blue Wind Imperial Family, will lose everything but our name,

and we will become their puppet! We have boasted a legendary reputation of martial might, but We have actually raised such a group of unfilial sons! Get lost! Get lost immediately!”

Lan Xueruo also became extremely angry, and tightly clenched both fists. She couldn't hold back her anger any longer, and said angrily: “Didn't you hear what royal father said! Get out right now! Royal father and I do not wish to see you again!”

“Tut tut, why must you be like this.” Cang Lin shook his head slightly, then grinned while saying, “Royal father, you have already been the emperor for many years; you ought to give it up. Even if you are

unwilling, sooner or later it will fall into my hands. So what if my beloved royal brother Cang Shuo has become affiliated with the Burning Heaven Clan? In my eyes, he was never a contender... My beloved royal sister, I've heard that these two years you haven't stayed at the Blue Wind Profound Palace, but rather, you've run around outside. Could it be you are urgently looking for a spouse? I, your royal brother, have plenty of young and talented men. Do I need to request a meeting for royal sister?"

"Out!" Lan Xueruo clenched her teeth as the rage in her heart reached its boiling point.

"Hahahaha! Then your son will

leave.” Cang Lin let loose a fit of wild laughter, and casually strolled out with both hands behind his back.

“This group of unfilial sons.... unfilial sons!!” Cang Wanhe entire face was red with anger as he shook from head to toe.

“Royal father, they have already gone mad, they are not worth getting angry over. Your body is more important.” Lan Xueruo patted her father’s back whilst trying very hard to quell the rage in her heart.

After being silent for quite a while, Cang Wanhe finally seemed to calm down. He laughed bleakly and said, “Up until now, We have always

thought that We had always been raising seven tiger cubs. To think that Our seven sons... were actually a group of wolves. It is fortunate that the heavens took pity on me, and let Us have you for a daughter. It is too bad that you are a girl, otherwise, We would directly bequeath you the title of Emperor... But if We really did this, it would burden you... Cang Lin and Cang Shuo, these two unfilial sons; one is colluding with the Xiao Sect, one is colluding with the Burning Heaven Clan. Ah... no matter which one eventually succeeds, our Blue Wind Imperial Family will become their puppets... The heavens are without eyes, the heavens are without eyes, haah.”

“Royal father, you do not need to be

too worried. I will definitely use my all stop them.” Lan Xueruo bit her lips, and a faint layer of water could be seen from both eyes.

Cang Wanhe laughed while shaking his head, “These seven unfilial sons are split into two factions, and the authority of the court are also basically in their hands. With the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan hiddenly assisting them, what could you possibly do to stop them? We just hope that when that day comes, you will leave the imperial city; the farther you hide, the better. I’m afraid that these unfilial sons will use you as a pawn to gain favor... If that happens, then We will actually roll over in Our grave.”

“That won’t happen, royal father. With Master Gu here, you will definitely recover from your illness and live to be one hundred.” Lan Xueruo said while trying to resist her tears, shaking her head very hard.

“Heh heh,” Cang Wanhe laughed bleakly. He was the most clear about the condition of his own body. He had suspected the entire time, was this inexplicable illness the plot of Cang Lin, or Cang Shuo? He closed his eyes and said disappointedly, “We have been emperor for nineteen years, and only at the very end did We find out that We are actually a failure of an emperor. Other than having raised these unfilial sons, my first wish the year We ascended the throne was to

have our Blue Wind Imperial Family wash away our humiliation at the 'Blue Wind Ranking Tournament', but, during these nineteen years, all We have received, time after time, was never-ending humiliation... As the imperial family of the majestic Blue Wind Empire, we unexpectedly, never had anyone enter the top hundred. Time after time, we have become the laughingstock of the world, and was never able to raise our heads in front of those sects. What kind of sorrow is this!"

Lan Xuero's eyes flickered and Yun Che's image floated into her head. A warm feeling came from her heart, and calmed her greatly. She gently replied, "Royal father, this wish will definitely come true.



These two years, your daughter has passed through many large profound palaces, and used the Monarch Heart Secret Arts to look for that kind of a person. Your daughter's efforts were not in vain; just half a month ago, your daughter has found such a person. This person has also been brought to Blue Wind Profound Palace; your daughter will use all methods possible to make him enter the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament as the next representative of the Imperial Family... Your daughter believes that he will definitely be able to enter the top hundred, fulfilling royal father's wish and washing away the imperial family's humiliation."

"One after the next... I'm only afraid

that We can't wait until then, cough cough, cough cough cough cough..." Cang Wanhe once again burst into a fit of violent coughing; his breathing had also become more ragged.

Lan Xuero knew that with her father's current condition, he was unable to speak too much. She helped pull a quilt over her father, and said softly, "Royal father, rest well. You must take care of your body. Your daughter still has something she needs to attend to, I will come again tomorrow to visit royal father... Uncle Dong Fang, you must protect my royal father."

As soon as Lan Xuero finished speaking, an old voice came forth from the chambers, "Have no

worries Your Highness. With me here, no one will be able to touch a single hair on the emperor's head."

Lan Xuero gratefully nodded her head and left the emperor's chambers.

No one knew that this princess was also the Blue Wind Emperor's youngest daughter, and just how much pressure her frail back carried; or how many serious hesitations she buried within her heart...

---

Blue Wind Profound Palace's Central Plaza was enormous, and since today was the last day of the year they were recruiting students,

it was completely packed with a thick crowd of people. More than half of which were young profound practitioners who were being tested, the other half were Profound Palace disciples who came to watch the excitement.

Although it was already the final day of examinations, the number of young profound practitioners being tested was still very large. The entire exam was split into three hundred groups and with Qin Wuyou's interference, Yun Che was directly placed into the ninety-ninth group.

The test was split into two parts, and were respectively the Profound Strength Assessment and the Combat Strength Assessment. Even

though they sound similar, the form of examination was fundamentally different.

(TL note: All of the 'We' and 'Our' spoken by the emperor here is the 'royal we', a singular pronoun referring to himself as the emperor.)

# Chapter 126:

## Profound Strength Assessment

The one examining the group that Yun Che belonged to was an elderly man with a dignified complexion. He stood in front of the Profound Assessment Stone, swept through the crowd with a glance, and spoke with a solemn tone: “The first stage of the examination is the assessment of Profound Strength. I’ll repeat it again, the minimum threshold to enter the Palace is: Nascent Profound Realm level one at the age of fifteen, Nascent Profound Realm level three at the age of sixteen, Nascent Profound

Realm level five at the age of seventeen, and Nascent Profound Realm level six at the age of eighteen. For those who are younger than fifteen or over eighteen, as well as those whose profound strength are lower than the minimum standard, please leave out of your own free will; do not wishfully think that the Profound Assessment Stone will make any mistakes!”

Every single year, Blue Wind Profound Palace would repeat these words many times but quite a handful of people would still fail in the first round; because there were far too many young profound practitioners that were unresigned and unwilling, had a fluke mentality, didn't want to come for

nothing, or hoped that the Profound Assessment Stone would malfunction. Consequently, even though the extremely clear and strict standard was out there, more than half would still be brushed away by the first round.

But after the elderly man finished speaking, not a single person that was present had exited. He swung his hand, walked to the side of the Profound Assessment Stone and said: “Now, the first round of assessment shall start. If I call your name, come up and and press your hand onto the Profound Assessment Stone.” As he spoke, the elderly man lifted up the list of names that was in his hand, and shouted: “Number One: Han Chi!”



“It’s starting... Brother-in-law, you’re in the sixteen year old age group right now, and your current profound power is an entire seven ranks above the standard! When it’s your turn, everyone would surely be greatly shocked.” Xia Yuanba, who was following behind Yun Che, said that with excitement written all over his face. Since Qin Wuyou had settled him in the Profound Palace’s Outer Palace, the excitement inside his heart had never subsided, and he still felt that he was dreaming even now.

The one whose name that had been called was a youth that appeared to be sixteen or seventeen. He stood in front of the Profound Assessment Stone, and carefully pressed his hand onto the surface. A nervous

expression emerged on his face.

Very quickly, the Profound Assessment Stone flashed for a while, and three lines of distinct words appeared on the surface.

First line: Age, seventeen.

Second line: Profound Strength,  
Nascent Profound Realm level four.

Third line: Unqualified.

Not only could this Profound Assessment Stone measure one's Profound Strength, it could also assess the age! What made Yun Chelament emotionally, was that a seventeen year old fourth ranker of the Nascent Profound Realm would definitely be outstanding within New Moon Profound Palace's

disciples. However, at this Blue Wind Profound Palace, it couldn't even reach the lowest standard. The Imperial City was, after all, the Imperial City.

“Unqualified, step down.” The elderly man spoke with a cold and stiff expression as he looked at the Profound Assessment Stone's result.

The expression of the youth named Han Chi suddenly became panic-stricken; he made a deep bow to the elderly man, and said in an almost begging manner: “Senior, this junior is only one level under, and only millimeters of distance away from breaking through; perhaps I will break through by tomorrow. I hope Senior can accommodate slightly, and please let this junior pass. This

junior will definitely be deeply grateful, and on another day will surely....”

“No!” The elderly man ferociously swung his hand. He had seen this type of situation too many times, and there wasn’t even the slightest hint of change in his complexion: “Where do you think the Blue Wind Profound Palace is? What accommodation is there! Step down right now.”

“Senior, I’m begging you.” Han Chi was already vexed to the point of almost tearing up, and bitterly pleaded: “Senior, this junior wishes to enter the Blue Wind Profound Palace even in his dreams. Furthermore, by coming here this time, I am even carrying the

expectations of everyone in my family. I'm begging you, as long as you let me pass, I'll do anything you say."

"Without reaching the standard, even if you kneel until you die on the ground, there still won't be anyone that would accommodate you! Leave; you are only seventeen this year, and there's still one last chance next year, so grasp your last chance well. If you keep on pestering me, I'll deprive you of your last qualifying chance in entering the Blue Wind Profound Palace."

The elderly person's last sentence instantly turned Han Chi's face pale. He didn't dare to say another word, and left with a sullen look.

Something like this had already enacted with just the first examinee; all of the Palace's instructors was accustomed and didn't feel that it was odd, but quite a lot of young profound practitioners that were waiting to be examined started to sweat from their foreheads.

“Next, Liu Changqing.”

“Age sixteen, Nascent Profound Realm level two, unqualified! Next...”

“Age eighteen, Nascent Profound Realm level five, unqualified! Next...”

“Age fifteen, Nascent Profound Realm level two... Qualified! Mn, at

such a young age, very good. You've passed the first stage of the examination. Next."

On average, only one out of three or four were able to pass during the examination. The passing rate was low enough to make Yun Che click his tongue. With the first failure as an example, all of the young profound practitioners that failed the examination left with their heads drooped, and no one dared to beg. The young profound practitioners who passed were naturally overjoyed; some were so emotional that they covered their faces and started wailing.

These young profound practitioners came from various places throughout the entire nation, it was

unknown exactly how many came here with their greatest dreams, or how many came here carrying their entire family's hopes. With the identity as a Blue Moon Profound Palace disciple, they would be an extremely dazzling presence no matter where they went.

“Age seventeen, Nascent Profound Realm level nine, qualified!”

Seeing the numbers that appeared on the Profound Assessment Stone, a burst of exclamation sounded from the crowd. Lines after lines of gazes containing admiration and envy locked onto the youth who stood in front of the Profound Assessment Stone. Even the elderly man who was responsible for the examination nodded as a hint of



smile emerged on his face: “Very good, before you graduate from the palace, there’s a very high chance for you to enter the Middle Palace. Work hard.”

Hearing the two words “Middle Palace” almost all of the young profound practitioners’ faces revealed an expression of incomparable longing and yearning. If one was able to enter the Middle Palace, one would possess an extremely high position even in this Blue Wind Imperial City, let alone other places; it was something enough to bring honor to one’s family.

That young man removed his hand from the Profound Assessment Stone as a faint smile of pride and

confidence hung on his face. He pridefully looked at the young profound practitioners who had already passed the examination as well as the ones waiting to be examined, and said: "This lowly one here is Ao Yan, I'd like to receive lots of advice from everyone that'll be under the same wing from now on. However, in regards to the number one seat in this group, this lowly one is getting it for sure."

This Ao Yan's demeanor was extremely prideful. However, as a ninth ranker of the Nascent Profound Realm that was only seventeen years old, he had every right to be proud. Some discussion about him had also started below; everyone was then finally aware that this Ao Yan came from the

Enormous Desert City in the west. The family he belonged to was fully worthy of the number one title in the Enormous Desert City, and were stronger than any one of the local sects.

“Next, Yun Che,” The elderly man’s voice sounded once again.

“Brother-in-law, it’s your turn!” Hearing Yun Che’s name, Xia Yuanba immediately became excited.

Yun Che stood in front of the Profound Assessment Stone, extended out his right palm and pressed onto the Profound Assessment Stone while slightly rousing his profound energy.

The Profound Assessment Stone instantly revealed a light.

“Age sixteen, Nascent Profound Realm level ten, qualified.”

As the elderly man shouted out this result, a large burst of exclaim instantly sounded from the surroundings. Lines of gazes that contained amazement many times more intense than earlier focused onto Yun Che's body. Ao Yan's result from earlier was already enough to make everyone exclaim and envious, yet the youth that came right after, possessed a profound strength that was actually one rank higher than Ao Yan. And their difference was even more than that; his age was actually even younger than Ao Yan by one year. If

Yun Che had also reached seventeen years of age, his advantage over this Ao Yan would certainly not be just one simple level.

The expression on Ao Yan's face, who was extremely pleased with himself while standing on the side, immediately froze. His two eyes stared firmly at the Profound Assessment Stone's result, and he simply did not dare to believe his own eyes. Immediately, his face started to gradually turn hot.... Just a moment ago, he had arrogantly declared that the number one seat of this group would definitely be his; but right after, someone who was even younger than him, immediately overtook him. The words he spoke earlier, was as if he

had slapped his own face.

“Haha, to only be half a step away from the True Profound Realm at the mere age of sixteen, very good!” The elderly man slowly nodded as he revealed a heartfelt smile of approval on his face: “You are the most outstanding of all the examinees I’ve received today. If you can retain your aptitude, perhaps with only two years of time, you would be able to enter the Middle Palace. Work hard.”

Yun Che nodded, and walked into the group who passed with an extremely calm demeanor. Yet innumerable gazes still continued to follow him, and whispers continuously resounded from the surroundings.

“Who is this person? He is certainly also a son of some great family, right?”

“Do you even need to ask! People from large sects would never enter the Profound Palace, and other than those large sects, the only ones who could bring up this kind of super genius would be those great families with extremely abundant heritage and resources.... This instructor said that it is possible for him to enter the Middle Palace in just two years. That is honestly enviable to the point of wanting to die.”

“This big brother here, you are really too amazing. You are only sixteen, yet you had already almost reached the True Profound Realm!

I... I wonder what big brother's name is?"

Right after Yun Che stood in the group, the fifteen year-old youth who was the first one that passed the examination had already approached and looked at him with a face brimming with admiration. When the elderly man had shouted out Yun Che's name earlier, he did not hear it clearly.

Yun Che remembered that this fifteen year old youth was named Yun Xiaofan, who had the same surname as him, Yun. His gaze was also very pure and he looked to be very simple. He smiled and said: "My name is Yun Che. As I remember, your name is Yun Xiaofan, right?"



“Right right!” Seeing that Yun Che had actually remembered his name, Yun Xiaofan’s face was full of excitement as he spoke with a tone of pleasant surprise: “Ah? Your last name is also Yun? How coincidental!”

“It is fate.” Yun Che said while smiling, and had a very good impression toward this Yun Xiaofan.

“Hehe,” He had originally thought that someone with such a frightening result would be an arrogant and aloof person. He didn’t expect him to be so amiable. The inside of Yun Xiaofan’s heart was also very warm; his nervousness lessened quite a bit, and the reverence in his gaze had

instead increased by a little bit more: “Big brother Yun, where are you from? Since you are so incredible, you are surely the son of some extremely great family, right?”

Yun Che shook his head while smiling: “I am not some son of a great family, and is just an ordinary person. Oh right, I come from Floating Cloud City?”

“Eh, Floating Cloud City?” Yun Xiaofan froze and then thought hard for a while, to then reveal an embarrassed expression: “I am still young and have very little experience. It seems that I haven’t even heard of this city’s name before.”

“Hmph! It’s merely a small city in

the north that's not even much larger than a town. There aren't even a few who are aware of that kind of place where even birds would not poop on; and people who doesn't know of it, are more so innumerable."

A cynical voice came from their side. Ao Yan looked at Yun Che with a sidelong glance. After hearing Yun Che say that he wasn't some great family's son but an ordinary person, and even came from Blue Wind Empire's so-called smallest city, disdain immediately budded in his heart. He said while coldly snorting: "Yun Che, don't think that you are great just because your profound strength rank is higher than mine. Profound Strength does not represent combat

strength; only profound practitioners with strong profound arts and profound skills are worthy to be called true profound practitioners. But unfortunately, that is impossible for a profound practitioner like you who comes from a small place to understand. Although your profound strength is one rank higher than mine, but let alone one rank; even if it's three ranks higher, it would still be impossible for you to be my match.”

# Chapter 127: Feng Yue

Facing Ao Yan's provocation and contempt, Yun Che only indifferently glanced at him once before retracting his gaze. He had somewhat paid a little attention to him before, but now, he directly disregarded him to the extreme; let alone respond, he didn't even bother to look at him again. For someone who was as insolent, arrogant and supercilious as this, whose IQ may even a bit on the low end, the evaluation Yun Che gave was only one word: "Trash". He was unqualified to be his friend, and even more unqualified to be his

enemy. He reckoned that his decent profound strength, was also forcefully piled up using his family's resources.

Seeing that Yun Che didn't give any sort of response, Ao Yan thought that he was obviously too afraid to the point of not even daring to reply. With a sneer, he turned his head away.

"To, to go this far!" Yun Xiaofan's face was brimming with anger, and he muttered in displeasure: "He's obviously inferior than Big Brother Yun, yet actually spoke these kind of words. How awfully shameless."

"What did you say?" Even though Yun Xiaofan deliberately lowered his voice, the place where Ao Yan

stood was close enough to hear everything. His eyes squinted as his gaze filled with maliciousness: “Repeat that for me.”

“I...” Yun Xiaofan’s body unconsciously shrunk as his complexion turned slightly pale. He knew of Ao Yan’s background, and he himself had only come from an ordinary family. How could he, a youth who came here alone to chase his dream, while burdened with the hopes of his entire family, possibly dare to make enemies with someone of great influence right after entering the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

Then again, this was after all, the examination grounds of Blue Wind Profound Palace. Ao Yan also did

not dare to blatantly stir up trouble here either, so he turned his head away with a cold snort. But the sneer in his eyes proved that he had already marked this grudge in his heart.

Only then did Yun Xiaofan finally breath out a secret sigh of relief, as his expression started to become uneasy. Yun Che glanced at Yun Xiaofan's somewhat plain attire, and said: "Xiaofan, you're afraid of this Ao Yan?"

"I..." Yun Xiaofan hesitated for a second, but still nodded in the end: "I am not some scaredy cat, but, but hearing that he is the second heir in line of the influential Ao Tian Family in the western Enormous Desert City, and the fact that his



profound strength is so much more superior than mine, I probably won't be able to stay in the Blue Wind Profound Palace anymore if I were to offend him. Being able to enter the Blue Moon Profound Palace is me and my family's greatest dream. I don't want to let this kind of possibility happen."

"Be at ease." Yun Che shook his head while smiling: "The identity of a great family's heir indeed sounds quite great, but this place is the Blue Wind Profound Palace; his identity isn't worth a single cent here, and he could at most oppress you a little using his profound strength. If you don't wish to be bullied, then you need to train even harder. This Ao Yan can coincidentally become one of your

motivations for cultivating. Moreover, this Ao Yan can only bath in limelight right now; in the future he's destined to be unsuccessful. In just a few years, you ought be able to surpass him, so there's no need to be afraid of him at all."

Yun Che's words made Yun Xiaofan feel extremely satisfied in his heart. In addition to his reverence toward him, there now also existed a hint of gratitude. His expression became relaxed as he fiercely nodded: "Big Brother Yun, you are right. I won't be afraid of him... I've decided, my first goal in this Blue Wind Profound Palace is precisely to surpass this Ao Yan, hehe!"

After another long period of time,

the profound strength assessment of Yun Che's group was finally over. Within the one hundred and twenty young profound practitioners who took the examination, only twenty-nine passed in the end; it was even less than one-fourth. The young profound practitioners who had been brushed away all had very decent profound strength and talent, and came here carrying a fluke mentality. But in the end, they only could sadly leave before the overly high standards of the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

What came next, was the second stage of the examination: Combat Strength Assessment.

The elderly man glanced at the number of people who passed the

first round of examination, and spoke with an expressionless face: “It should also be clear to you that this first round of examination can’t even be considered an examination. It was merely to weed out those people who had obviously not reached the standard, yet still wanted to muddle through. The Combat Assessment of the second round, is the real examination.”

“The level of profound strength does not represent the level of combat strength. What we Blue Moon Profound Palace need, are the most outstanding of profound practitioners throughout the empire. Not only must an excellent profound practitioner possess profound strength of a high enough rank, what’s even more important is

their ability to to fully utilize their profound strength! Not only can a true genius easily prevail over an opponent of the same rank, it is also possible to challenge someone that's two ranks, or even four ranks higher! Yet for someone who only possesses profound strength but do not know how to apply it, one will only remain a piece of trash in the end, no matter how high their rank may be. This second round of examination is to test your ability in handling your profound strength. This strength, will directly display your talent of handling profound energy; and this talent, will determine how high of a height a profound practitioner can reach in the future!"

"Don't think that everything is

already well just from passing the  
Profound Strength Assessment.  
Within the twenty-nine of you, at  
most half would be able to pass this  
Combat Strength Assessment. If  
you want to stay in the Blue Moon  
Profound Palace, then display your  
profound strength to the best of  
your abilities... The second round of  
examination, starts now!”

The words of the elderly man  
dressed in black attire made most  
people present gulp down their  
saliva in secret as their expressions  
became nervous once more... After  
the first round, only twenty nine  
people were left; and the in second  
round, at least half of the twenty  
nine would also fail. This was really  
a little too cruel.

“The examination’s content is very simple. Every one of you will exchange seven blows with one of your future senior brothers. Victory or defeat does not matter in this exchange of blows, and it’s impossible for you to win anyways. What we wish to see is the extent of your ability to unleash profound strength in a real battle. I’ll be watching from the side and will also make the final decision. Those who pass, will become our Blue Moon Profound Palace’s disciple. Those who fail, will have to leave. Feng Yue, it’s your time to enter the stage.”

As the elderly man was speaking, a slightly pale faced man who appeared to be eighteen or nineteen walked out with a smile on his face.

He stopped before the elderly man, and slightly nodded at him: "Don't worry Instructor Qi, leave it to me."

The moment he appeared, the Outer Palace disciples who were spectating for fun immediately let out a burst of exclamation: "Look! This group's opponent is actually Senior Brother Feng Yue of the Middle Palace!"

"Hah? That Feng Yue of the Middle Palace? I heard that out of more than a thousand groups of examination in these few days, there weren't even ten who had a Middle Palace disciple as their opponent. This group is really unlucky. Even though this is only a combat assessment, and it's impossible to win no matter if the



opponent is a Middle Palace disciple nor a Outer Palace disciple, the pressure still ought to be far greater when encountering a Middle Palace disciple. Also, Senior Brother Feng Yue was rumored to be very heavy handed; the people in this group will surely suffer.”

The sound of discussions that came from far away made the examinees of this group tremble with fear... All of them basically knew that the contents of the second examination would be to exchange moves with one of the stronger Outer Palace disciples. But they had never imagined that the opponent they had to face against, would actually be a disciple of the Middle Palace!

Even though this Feng Yue was a

third-rate disciple in the Middle Palace, he still belonged to the Middle Palace!

“Feng Yue, nineteen years old, True Profound Realm level three. I hope to receive a lot of advice from all of you Junior brothers.” Feng Yue stood before everyone with a smile on his face. That arrogant expression and gaze looked as if an emperor was surveying his peasants.

After hearing the few words “True Profound Realm level three”, the hearts of many winced. Especially the few young profound practitioners who were younger and relatively lower in profound energy; they tightly clenched both fists and were so anxious that they perspired

profusely from their heads filled with sweat.

Yet when Ao Yan, who stood at the forefront of the line, saw that the opponent was Feng Yue, his eyes suddenly brightened by quite a lot. The corner of his mouth curled up as he silently gave Feng Yue a signal with his eyes.

“Now, let the second round of examination officially begin. Whoever I call, come up and exchange seven moves with Feng Yue.” The elderly man who had been referred to as Instructor Qi by Feng Yue, spoke: “Number one, Li Mo”

The person whose name had been called, walked out of the line and

stood before Feng Yun. Even though he tried to maintain his calm, it was still difficult to conceal the nervousness between his eyebrows. After all, to fight a Middle Palace disciple before even officially entering the Blue Wind Profound Palace was something that he wouldn't even dare to imagine.

“Senior Brother Feng Yue, I hope that you'll... be lenient.” Li Mo bowed toward Feng Yue.

“No need for superfluous nonsense, let's start already!” Feng Yun said aloofly.

Li Mo took a deep breath. His expression calmed and a longsword was already grasped in his hands. With a low shout, he suddenly

thrust out.

“Dispel the Cloud to See the Sun!”

When facing against a formidable opponent of the True Profound Realm during this Combat Strength Assessment, Li Mo didn't dare to hold back in the slightest. His first move, was already one of the strongest sword skills from his family. This sword move carried quite a remarkable power and headed directly for Feng Yue, as a continuous aura of profound energy wavered on the sword's body.

Feng Yue's movements were simple and crude. He took a step forward and swung out a fist.

Poof!!

The continuous uninterrupted of the sword was instantly broken apart as Feng Yue's fist directly struck at Li Mo's chest. Under the strong profound strength of the True Profound Realm, Li Mo flew backwards like a stringless kite and violently crashed onto the ground with a ghastly face; but his right hand.... still firmly grasped the sword.

"First move." Feng Yue extended his finger toward Li Mo as his face revealed a trace of a contemptuous sneer.

The first person's first round made everyone's hearts fiercely jump. They had originally thought that this was an exchange of pointers to test one's combat strength, and

Feng Yue ought to prioritize in defending to let the examinee display their strength to their greatest. But no one had ever thought, that this Feng Yue would actually directly counter attack in such a ruthless and heavy-handed manner!

Instructor Qi's brows also creased a little, yet not a word was said. Feng Yue directly attacking in a heavy-handed manner, was indeed a bit too much. After all, this wasn't an actual battle and he was only an assessor. The opponent's level of profound strength was far below his, so how could the young profound practitioners who had not even entered the Palace endure his counter attack? However, Instructor Qi thought again; for those who

passed the first examination, not a single one of them would be unremarkable in talent without arrogance in their hearts.

Encountering this kind of setback could extinguish their arrogant air to a certain extent, which meant that it was also something good for them. Moreover, he understood Feng Yue all too well. This kind of event was just a common occurrence; even if he were to seriously injure his opponent later on, he would still not be surprised.



# Chapter 128: Are you sure?

Li Mo's fight with Feng Yue could only be described as "pitiful beyond words".

While exchanging pointers in seven moves, Li Mo consecutively used seven types of sword techniques consecutively, then fell seven times consecutively. The sword in his hands still did not touch even the tip of Feng Yue's shirt. Feng Yue's profound energy was seven whole levels above Li Mo's, and they even had a realm's gap between them. It was as if he forgot, or rather, he didn't care that this was an assessment of strength while

crushing his opponent as he wished with his profound strength throughout the process. There was even a sliver of a smile on his face, as if he enjoyed this feeling of trampling on others without restraint.

After seven moves, Li Mo's clothes were already torn and tattered. Falling over seven times also made him suffer many injuries.

“Seven moves have passed, you can stop now.” Instructor Qi voiced, and then spoke quietly to Li Mo, “You flinch a little when you attack, but your profound energy control is still quite okay, you've passed, but barely. Tomorrow morning, you can report to the Outer Palace.”

“Ah!” Li Mo exclaimed in a low voice, as his face revealed an expression of extreme joy. In his happiness, he completely forgot about the injuries on his body. Unable to contain his joy, he bowed repeatedly to Instructor Qi, “Thank you, instructor, for allowing me to accomplish my dream. Thank you for allowing me to accomplish my dream....”

After a round of endless thanks, Li Mo left in joyous happiness with the other practitioners staring at him in envy.

“Next: Chen Lu!”

The second examinee did not get much better treatment than Li Mo. The moment he went up, his head

was smashed by Feng Yue, and within seven moves, he was left bruised and swollen.....

As the examination proceeded, the examinees at the back got increasingly nervous, because the outcome of those who went up against Feng Yue could be said to be worse with each person. Within them, there were many who had witnessed the examination a few days ago. Those teachers and disciples who were opponents never retaliated. Rather, they allowed the examinee to exhibit their profound strength as they wished.

Occasionally, they would hit back, but it would only be to shake off their opponent. But this Feng Yue was merciless with each move. Seven moves to exchange pointers;

the examinee would use seven moves, and he would retaliate seven moves without any mercy, and almost every move he used injured his opponent.

He didn't seem like he was there to help the examination, but rather to enjoy the process of bullying and oppressing others.

This sort of situation persisted until Ao Yan went up, then some sort of change occurred.

After Ao Yan went up, immediately, he displayed his profound energy substantially. In an imposing manner like the gathering of large winds and dark clouds, his first move actually forced Feng Yue back by a small step, inciting large

applause and surprised exclamations from the audience. Within seven moves, Ao Yan responded calmly; forget about getting injured, he wasn't even beaten back by Feng Yue even once.

“Oh, pretty impressive.” After seven moves were over, Feng Yue nodded smilingly, saying to the elder, “Instructor Qi, this is a rare genius. Not only does he have uncommon profound strength, even both his presentation and control of profound energy are superb. To reach such a state at this age, he can be said to be one among millions.”

“Senior brother's praise is too absurd,” Ao Yan said with a frightened expression, but his eyes

were filled with complacency.

“Indeed, he’s an uncommon talent. Ao Yan, you’ve also passed, report at the Outer Palace tomorrow.” Instructor Qi said, nodding.

Yun Che shook his forehead, giving a cold laugh silently: The exchange of looks between Ao Yan and Feng Yue really gave some food for thought.

“I thank Instructor Qi.” Ao Yan bowed composedly. When he walked down the stage and past Feng Yue’s side, he spoke quickly and extremely quietly, “Cousin, help me teach Yun Xiaofan and Yun Che a lesson, let them look as bad as possible... Tonight, the eighteen flower pavilions in the imperial city,

choose as you wish.” (TL: Flower pavilions = brothels)

Feng Yue’s eyes instantly lit up. He licked his lips slowly as a sinister smile revealed at the corner of his mouth.

“Next, Yun Xiaofan.”

“Phew, it’s finally me.” Extremely nervous, Yun Xiaofan let out a low sounding exhale.

“Be more careful. This Feng Yue isn’t anything good.” Yun Che reminded in a low voice.

“Mn, I’ll be careful.” Yun Xiaofan nodded. With a rise of profound energy, he jumped onto the tall stage in front of Feng Yue, “Senior Brother Feng Yue, please give me



your guidance.”

“Oh? Yun Xiaofan?” Seeing the youth before him whose eyes still possessed a childish innocence, the look in Feng Yue’s eyes began to grow dangerous and sardonic. He smiled blandly and said, “Looking at you, you should be only fifteen, it’s really such a pity... Show me your moves and let me see what you’re worth.”

“It’s really such a pity”; these few words from Feng Yue made Yun Xiaofan confused, but he didn’t dare to say anything else. Crossing his arms in front of his body, profound energy from his entire body surged. Atop both palms, two lumps of purple light slowly gathered and sizzled.

“Oh, you actually have lightning attribute profound arts, not bad.” Feng Yue stretched out his right hand slowly and said laughingly.

“Rolling Thunder Palm!”

Both of Yun Xiaofan’s palms clapped into one as a traditional family lightning attribute profound art combined with a lightning attribute profound skill and crashed straight for Feng Yue.

Yun Xiaofan’s profound energy was only at the second level of Nascent Profound Realm, falling short of Feng Yue by eleven whole levels. To practitioners at the same level as him, this attack was definitely uncommon, but to Feng Yue, it didn’t even pose the slightest bit of

a threat. Just before Yun Xiaofan approached Feng Yue, Feng Yue's figure suddenly shook and neared in front of Yun Xiaofan out of his own accord. With his elbow, he knocked aside Yun Xiaofan's protective profound energy and heavily knocked on his chest.... In the split second of impact, the corner of his mouth revealed a trace of evident malicious smile.

Crack!

A clear sound of breaking bone rang out beside everyone's ears. The condensed bright lightning in Yun Xiaofan's hands immediately vanished as his body flew out like a thrown sandbag. Blood spurted from his mouth in midair and he fell heavily outside the stage.

Immediately, a large commotion broke out in the surroundings, everyone was shocked by this unforeseen situation. Yun Che's expression fell solemn and he rushed hurriedly to Yun Xiaofan's side. Yun Xiaofan laid on the ground with an ashen face and lips full of fresh blood. Three of his ribs were broken on the left side of his chest and it was completely impossible for him to stand up.

The fury in Yun Che's heart came out with a "whoosh". He turned towards Feng Yue and said in a deep voice, "Feng Yue! Even though this is only an examination, you actually dealt such a heavy blow!!"

Feng Yue spread both hands and showed an innocent expression,

“How would I know that his profound energy would actually be so low? I saw that he had lightning attribute profound arts and thought that he would be quite resilient. But it turned out that.... Tsk tsk, it’s really such a disappointment.”

Ao Yan, who was on the other side, grinned and laughed coldly: Yun Xiaofan, this is the price you have to pay for speaking rudely to me..... As the one up next, is Yun Che. To actually dare steal my limelight..... I want you to never be able to dream about entering Blue Wind Profound Palace for the rest of your life.

“Feng Yue, you’ve done it too harshly!” Instructor Qi also furrowed his eyebrows and said severely.

“Indeed, your disciple did not have a good grasp of the situation.” Feng Yue said as he turned towards Instructor Qi, “However, your disciple does not regret it. Within this Profound Palace, one of the fastest methods of raising profound strength is to fight hand to hand with a strong opponent, so getting injured is a very common thing. Although I might have somewhat made a miscalculation, it is just as well that I can let them understand and integrate earlier. As compared to the injuries we Middle Palace disciples have suffered while exchange pointers, this small bit of injury doesn’t amount to much. If he can’t even withstand this small bit of pain, then he doesn’t have the right to enter our Blue Wind Profound Palace anyway.

Instructor Qi furrowed his eyebrows, but did not say anymore.

“Hehe, you actually have the nerve to say something so pompous.”

Glancing at the cold smile on Ao Yan’s face, and thinking back to the previous unusual looks exchanged between them, Yun Che was still somewhat confused. This was obviously Ao Yan’s act of petty revenge on Yun Xiaofan by using Feng Yue’s power.... but only because Yun Xiaofan had lectured him a little previously.

Since he had revenge on Yun Xiaofan, then it would certainly fall on him too.

He was about to speak when suddenly, a trembling hand fell on

his. Yun Xiaofan clenched his teeth, exerted his body to sit up, and said in a pained voice, "Brother Yun... I.... I'm fine.... The examination hasn't ended, I'm fine.... Fine....."

In his struggle, Yun Xiaofan's upper body actually managed to rigidly sit up. His internal organs were hurt and three ribs were broken. To finish this action must have taken gargantuan willpower and extreme pain. The moment his upper body sat up, Yun Che clearly saw two streams of tears flowing from his eyes.... Because he understood, in the situation he was in now, he was completely unable to continue the examination. Being unable to participate in the examination meant he was unable to enter Blue Moon Profound Palace. His dreams,



and all of his family's hopes were all ruined in that moment. How could he not shed tears in heartbreak?

“Xiaofan, this incident was not caused by you, so there is no reason for you to be stripped of your right to enter Blue Wind Profound Palace. Don't move about now, else your body would truly be damaged. By then, it would really be impossible for you to enter the Palace!” Yun Che pushed YunXiaofan back down from his upright position and placed a medium grade Heaven Returning Pill in his mouth. Then, he took a step and leapt in front of Feng Yue.

“My name is Yun Che. This time, I'll accept your 'assessment'.” Yun

Che's voice was flat. His gaze was as tranquil as water and there was not even a hint of emotion or color to be found within.

“Oh? So you are Yun Che, number one in this group's Profound Strength Assessment?” Feng Yue gave Yun Che a lookover and narrowed both eyes. In regards to the fact that he had just severely hurt Yun Xiaofan, it seemed like he completely didn't take it to heart.

“That's right.” Yun Che indifferently replied, “Before we start, I have something I want to clarify with you. You just said that in Blue Moon Profound Palace, suffering heavy injuries after an exchange of pointers is the common norm, isn't that so? Then

if I accidentally hurt you, do I have to take any responsibility?”

The moment Yun Che said these words, everyone present was stunned. Even Feng Yue, who starting laughing manically a bit after, “You.... hurt me? HAHA... HAHAHAHAH! This must be the funniest thing I’ve heard this year. Good, very good, a person who’s confident to this extent is also a rare sight. Then please, try to hurt me as much as you like. Not mentioning hurting me, even if you kill me, it would be of your own capabilities. Abso~lutely~ no one will fault you for it.... HAHAHAHA,” After saying this, even he himself, found it too hilarious and couldn’t help but mockingly laugh again.

“Then I’m relieved.” Yun Che smiled faintly, and the look in his eyes gradually sharpened.

“Then what are we waiting for? Let’s start.” Feng Yue hugged his chest with both arms and stared at Yun Che like he would at an idiot. Loftily and disdainfully, he continued, “Since you vainly wish to hurt me that much, I’ll give you a chance. I’ll stand here without moving and let you attack me with three moves. If I move or get hurt, I’ll walk upside down in future when I see you. If you can’t injure or make me move within three moves, hehe, then obediently get out of this Blue Moon Profound Palace. And before you get out, I might just give you a ‘big gift’.”

The tip of Yun Che's brow, which was originally furrowed in concentration, instantly smoothed out. He tapped the tip of his nose and said with a smile that wasn't quite a smile, "Are you sure?"

# Chapter 129: Sikong Du

Seeing that Yun Che's expression suddenly relaxed, and that it appeared to have a bit of a secret delighted feeling, Feng Yue almost laughed out loud, "Sure! Of course I'm sure. However, as for you, do you have the guts to agree to it? I've heard that your profound strength is at the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm. Tsk tsk, it's really not that bad. If a mere Nascent Profound Realm tenth ranker doesn't even dare to accept this challenge, then you should just get out obediently and not be a disgrace here."

Far away, in a simple, small pavilion, Qin Wuyou sat calmly on a stone bench, clad in purple robes while drinking tea leisurely. His attention was always on Yun Che. Even though the distance between them was large, he could still see anything and hear anything that happened to Yun Che. Hearing the excessively arrogant “Pact of Three Moves” that Feng Yue had proposed to Yun Che, Qin Wuyou’s expression suddenly changed. Standing, he said, “Sikong, go stop Yun Che immediately. Absolutely do not let him agree to Feng Yue’s words. You should be clear on what Feng Yue’s an expert in.”

“Yes, Instructor Qin.” A young boy beside Qin Wuyou who looked to be below twenty nodded and answered

before quickly walking quickly towards the direction Yun Che was in.

Yun Xiaofan's grievous injuries had attracted much attention there. Young practitioners who were waiting to be assessed were all stunned.... Yun Che's profound strength was of the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm, while Feng Yue's profound strength was of the third level of the True Profound Realm. Although it was only higher than Yun Che's by three levels, there was also the difference of an entire realm in between. But forcibly taking three hits from the other party without moving was also pushing it a bit too much. Let alone tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm, even if it



was three full out strikes from a seventh ranker at the Nascent Profound Realm, granted that it wouldn't go as far as to harm him, how could he possibly not be made to move?

And those Profound Palace disciples who had come to join the commotion revealed gleeful expressions of schadenfreude. Seeing that Yun Che was clearly about to agree, their hearts started to feel pity.

If it was another profound practitioner of the third level of the True Profound Realm, it would be true that they were fundamentally incapable of not moving after three full out hits by a tenth level in the Nascent Profound Realm. But Feng

Yue was a special case; he could most definitely do it with all the ease in the world.

Just when Yun Che was about to open his move to speak, a solemn, ear-splitting voice suddenly came from behind, "Feng Yue, I've long heard that you were sinister and contemptible, and they have not been wrong about you! To actually use such a despicable ploy to trap a disciple who is about to enter the palace, you have completely disgraced our Blue Wind Profound Palace."

These words caused Feng Yue's expression to change. He was about to burst into agitated fury until he saw the young man who walked through the crowd of people. His

expression changed again abruptly and obediently swallowed back the words he was about to say. His face was completely red, but he didn't dare to voice his anger at all.

The moment this man appeared, the surroundings fell silent for a short period of time. Thereafter, loud exclamations and discussions rang out as all of their gazes grew passionate.

“Look at his armband, that is... that is the sign of an inner palace disciple! My heavens, AN INNER PALACE DISCIPLE!” A disciple who had just passed the examination said with complete respect and yearning.

“It's the thirty ninth senior brother

on the Heavenly Profound List,  
Sikong Du! Crap, it's really him!  
These Senior brothers and sisters  
from the inner palace usually stay  
in the inner palace, and are rarely  
seen, but he actually came here."

"I've heard that Sikong Du's  
profound strength is already at the  
tenth level of True Profound Realm!  
Within a year, he'll be able to break  
into the Spirit Profound Realm. If I  
could reach his current stage by the  
time I'm thirty, I'd be laughing even  
in my dreams."

"But why would Senior Brother  
Sikong come here? And to even  
scold Feng Yue harshly, unless he's  
got some sort of animosity towards  
Feng Yue? I've never heard of it  
before. Also, even though Feng Yue

often bullies the Outer Palace disciples, he still wouldn't have the guts to piss off any Inner Palace disciples."

Out of the fifty thousand plus disciples within Blue Wind Profound Palace, only a hundred of the disciples were in the Inner Palace. It was obvious what kind of geniuses this group of hundred were. To call them unrivalled demons wouldn't be an exaggeration. And competition was the most intense within these hundred people of the Inner Palace. They have already reached the highest tier within Blue Wind Profound Palace; therefore, their ambitions and goals were now concentrated on the Heavenly Profound List. They trained as if

their lives depended upon it to raise their standing on the Heavenly Profound List. As for the Outer Palace and Middle Palace, they didn't even deign to visit them, so usually, Outer and Middle Palace disciples wouldn't even get to see disciples from the Inner Palace.

In regards to the discussion and the watchful eyes of the audience, Sikong Du was the picture of calm. It was evident that he had long ago gotten accustomed to it. At close range, he gave Yun Che a once over with a good-natured gaze, "You're called Yun Che right? Don't agree to that three move whatever pact he put forth! This Feng Yue comes from Western Great Desert's Solid Earth Villa, Solid Earth Villa family's profound art specializes in

defense! While his profound strength may only be at the third level of the True Profound Realm, if he were to put his all into defending, let alone you, even practitioners of the same level as him wouldn't be able to push him back at all in three moves! If you are to agree, it would definitely be falling into the trap he has set for you."

The moment Sikong Du said this, those around them came to a sudden realization. Then, fury blossomed in their hearts and they looked towards Feng Yue with disdain and disgust. Relying on what he was good at to make this sort of "Pact of Three Moves" with a disciple who was going through an assessment to enter the palace was

so thoroughly despicable and dark to an extreme.

Yun Che nodded and smiled gratefully to Sikong Du, saying, "So it's like that. I thank Brother Sikong for the reminder... Dare I ask, is Brother Sikong's father elder Sikong Han from New Moon Profound Palace?"

As a disciple of the Inner Palace, Sikong Du had absolutely no reason to get involved with this incident, and had even less of reason to help him, a person who hadn't even entered the Palace yet. Besides, the moment Sikong Du had appeared to him, he had been displaying goodwill and along with the surname 'Sikong', it made Yun Che think of one possibility. Because at



that time, that person had told him that his son was in Blue Wind Profound Palace.

Sikong Du was stunned for a moment, then smiled and nodded, "You're right, Sikong Han is indeed, my father. Instructor Qin said that your thoughts were extremely meticulous. Haha, he didn't praise you for nothing."

Suddenly, Yun Che completely understood everything. Sikong Du was Sikong Han's son, and if Qin Wuyou had told Sikong Du about his identity, then Sikong Du's actions would be explainable. And it was no wonder that Sikong Han had spoke of his son with such pride in his eyes back then; it was because his son was actually an

impressive Inner Palace disciple of Blue Wind Profound Palace!

Sikong Du bowed to Instructor Qi, and said: “ Instructor Qi, this Feng Yue used the opportunity of helping with the assessment to heavily injure disciples receiving the assessment. Also, he’s setting such a dangerous trap for an assessment’s disciple, it’s completely unpardonable. I believe Feng Yue has absolutely no right to continue to stay here and should be made to leave immediately and be punished severely. As for the matter of the assessment, this disciple will willingly take his place.”

“This.....” Elder Qi showed an expression of being put on the spot. If it was an inner palace disciple,

and especially a disciple within the first fifty placings on the Heavenly Profound List, even though he was an instructor in the Outer Palace, he still didn't dare to forcefully reject him. However, the reason why Instructor Qi had allowed Feng Yue to assist in the assessment was because he was one of the disciples he had oversaw proudly back when Feng Yue was still in the Outer Palace. After Feng Yue had entered the Middle Palace, he brought even more glory to him. Feng Yue was also always very respectful towards him and always secretly sent him all sorts of expensive gifts, so of course he would be very pleased and fond of this disciple.

This was also the reason why Feng Yue dared to be so unscrupulous in

front of Elder Qi.

If he were to go along with what Sikong Du had said, Feng Yue would definitely lose all his prestige. His bad reputation for harming and putting disciples taking the assessment on purpose would be solidified, it would be extremely unfavourable for the rest of his life in the Profound Palace henceforth. Immediately, Instructor Qi said firmly, "While what Feng Yue did might indeed have been slightly overboard, under this situation of exchanging pointers, it's hard for him to control his strength. Feng Yue was fighting hand to hand with Yun Xiaofan for the first time, so he wrongly estimated his opponent's profound strength, therefore it is pardonable

for him to have been too harsh while attacking. Since he had absolutely no reason to seriously hurt a disciple taking an assessment he isn't familiar with, it definitely wasn't on purpose. As for the 'Pact of Three Moves' he had proposed, it must also be agreed on by both parties willingly. Feng Yue doesn't seem to have any intention of forcing it on him. If he is confident, he can agree to it. If he feels that it's not suitable, he can also turn it down. I actually think that it's harmless.

Elder Qi's words caused Feng Yue's expression to relax immediately. He also immediately stacked up smiles on his face and said, "Instructor Qi is right. Senior brother Sikong, each of Instructor Qi's words is true.

Even if I had a lot of nerve, I still would never dare to intentionally do something that might cause harm to my prospective younger juniors. As for having harmed Yun Xiaofan, it was completely unintentional on my part. Later on, I will personally give him a Heaven Returning Pill with my own two hands as an apology. Err, if Senior brother Sikong is interested in assessing disciples' combat strength, I'll gladly concede this position. For our prospective younger juniors to see Senior brother Sikong's graceful bearing on their own would be an extremely fortuitous thing.

While Instructor Qi's words were obviously biased, his argument was very rigorous. Feng Yue's look of acknowledging his mistake also

caused Sikong Du to be unable to voice his anger. After all, even though he was an Inner Palace disciple, he still wasn't willing to offend an Outer Palace instructor.

Yet at this, he heard Yun Che say suddenly, "What instructor Qi said is right, Feng Yue's 'Pact of Three Moves' indeed needs both parties to be willing. Even though it's somewhat despicable and shameless, but since Feng Yue has proposed it, I'll definitely have to accept it. Else if I don't accept it, won't I be laughed at by many for being someone who can't confront his problems after I enter the Profound Palace?"

Once Yun Che said this, everyone was momentarily stunned.

Sikong Du's brows knitted violently, saying, "Yun Che, did you completely not hear what I'd just said to you? His clan's Profound technique is built on the foundation of defensive Profound energy, it's completely not something you can shake! If he stands there, let alone three moves, even with thirty moves, you won't be able to make him move back even half a step! Hurry up and take back what you'd just said, and not accept this sure-fail 'Pact of Three Moves'. It will not be shameful to you at all, and no one will say that you're someone who can't confront his problems either. If you really accept it, you'll be truly stupid then!"

Against Sikong Du's expectations, Yun Che instead, shook his head



and said, "Thank you, Brother Sikong, for your reminder, however, I've always had a lot of confidence in my profound strength. For this Pact of Three Moves, it is not certain that I would lose. If I win by a fluke, then Senior Brother Feng Yue will have to walk upside down in front of me in future. Just that alone is something to rejoice over."

"Wh.... Why are you so stupidly stubborn and conceited!" Sikong Du's face hardened, and his gaze towards Yun Che became one of puzzlement and disappointment, "You're completely unclear of how strong Feng Yue's profound art's defensive capabilities are. It definitely surpasses that of what you can imagine! You definitely won't have any chance of winning!"

You're only vainly thinking of winning just to see him be humiliated to relieve your hatred. Have you not thought about how, if you lose, you'll have to leave Blue Wind Profound Palace forever?"

Yun Che's stubborn conceitedness caused hints of anger to slip into Sikong Du's voice. But after his tirade, Yun Che still kept a mild smile of not caring in the least, "Brother Sikong, you just have to watch well at the sides. I've already hardened my heart into wanting to see how this Senior brother will look like walking upside down."

"You!" Sikong Du swung out his hand in frustration: "Forget it! I've already said all I've had to say, what you choose is your own business! I

hope you won't regret your decision later!"

Finishing his speech, he sulkily walked aside; however, he did not leave, and instead furrowed his eyebrows as he thought about how he should clean up the mess for Yun Che after his defeat..... He was someone who would repay favors and gratitude; Yun Che's grandfather had saved him back then, so he wouldn't just watch his benefactor's grandson be entrapped like this.

Yun Che had already stood before Feng Yue, and said while smiling indifferently: "Are you ready? I'm about to start attacking now."

"HAHAHAHAHA....." Feng Yue's

lungs had almost exploded from laughing too hard. Such a big shot like Sikong Du had specially appeared to save Yun Che from his predicament, yet he still forcefully insisted on embarrassing himself. He had met idiots before, but had never seen someone so stubbornly stupid to such an extreme.

# Chapter 130: Trying So Damned Hard to Die

“Damn! Is this Yun Che retarded?”

“What kind of figure is Sikong Du! Even he said that Feng Yue’s defense is abnormal, yet Yun Che actually still went up to seek death! Simply incomprehensible.”

“Tsk! Does he think that he’s special just by being first in the Profound Strength Assessment? It looks like he’s too used to being arrogant elsewhere; he’ll be taught a good lesson this time. There’s plenty of time for him to cry later.”

“With an IQ like this, he’s actually the first in this group’s Profound Strength assessment. The heavens are simply blind!”

Sounds of mockery flooded Yun Che’s surroundings. Right now, everyone’s impression of Yun Che could be summarized in one word:

Idiot!

Yun Che paid no attention to the voices around him and looked directly at Feng Yue’s sneering face with a indifferent gaze.

“To deal with you, do I even need any preparation?” Feng Yue faced Yun Che and contemptuously beckoned at him with his pinky, “You can attack anytime, and it’s

not a problem even if you need to prepare a little while longer.  
Hahahaha.”

“Very well.” The corner of Yun Che’s mouth slightly widened as he took a step forward. He opened “Evil Soul”, and the once peaceful profound energy in his body suddenly began to madly expand and berserk, just like an evil dragon being jerked awake. The aura surrounding his body suddenly changed as well, and the air current restlessly flowed about in chaos.

The moment this aura of profound energy was emitted, Sikong Du, Instructor Qi, and even Feng Yue’s expressions had all changed; because this aura of profound energy was so formidable that it

was definitely not something that belonged to a Nascent Profound practitioner. This was especially true for Feng Yue, as he actually felt a kind of oncoming pressure all of a sudden.

“My first move, HAAH!!”

Yun Che bellowed loudly, as his figure fiercely charged forward, leaving a long array of afterimages. His right fist, instilled with profound energy, struck directly at Feng Yue’s chest.

Even before his fist arrived, a gust of suffocating wind had already rushed towards Feng Yue. Feng Yue was slightly startled in his heart and did not dare to be careless anymore. He hastily gathered all the profound



energy in his body, and a two-meter tall, light-yellow barrier instantly formed before him. This was his clan's "Profound Earth Barrier" formed by using his family's profound art. With its degree of toughness, no profound practitioner of the same level had been able to destroy the barrier in one strike before.

Boom!!!!

Yun Che's fist fiercely smashed onto Feng Yue's Profound Earth Barrier, as the berserking profound energy violently released; the enormous sound emitted, was actually akin to the collision of two giant boulders.

A large chunk of the ground

underneath Yun Che's foot instantaneously crumbled. This enormous sound almost shocked everyone in the area dumb. Looking at Yun Che who was on the stage, they all stared wide-eyed, and were unable to recover from their shock for a long time. It was because they simply could not believe, that this was actually a strike from a profound practitioner of the Nascent Profound Realm .

The barrier in front of Feng Yue's body trembled violently and lines of quickly spreading cracks appeared one after another. In an instant, the entire barrier became covered with cracks and was almost about to completely collapse. And at this time, the strength in Yun Che's fist had also finally run out.

Yun Che slowly retracted his arm, and watched the Feng Yue who stood there without moving in the slightest, and said casually: "As expected of a profound technique specialized in defense, it is indeed a little interesting."

Looking at the Profound Earth Barrier before him that was covered with cracks, Feng Yue's complexion became extremely ugly. He was simply unable to accept and believe that his Profound Earth Barrier was be ruined to this extent by one strike from a profound practitioner of the Nascent Profound Realm. After hearing Yun Che's words, he barely forced out a laugh, and said gloomily, "It looks like I've underestimated you. However, this should roughly be your full power,

no? Heh, this is just a single layer of  
Profound Earth Barrier after all. I  
can construct three layers at the  
same time, do you believe me?

“I do!” Yun Che nodded very  
seriously, then said with a beaming  
smile: “If I said I had only used half  
of my profound strength for my  
first strike, would you believe me?”

“Half? Hahahaha!” Feng Yue  
laughed with disdain: “That’s the  
funniest thing I’ve heard all day.”

“Then you can laugh as much as  
you want.” Yun Che took a step  
back and once again aligned his  
right arm horizontally: “Prepare to  
receive my second move!”

Just as Yun Che’s voice faded, a

layer of crimson flames suddenly flared up on the exterior of his body. While the flames leapt up, the Phoenix blood within his body began to vigorously burn. The aura of Yun Che's profound energy abruptly changed, and became even more violent and fiery.

"Fire Attribute Profound Art? He actually possesses a Fire Attribute Profound Art!" Sikong Du said in a low voice, surprised.

Right at this moment, Yun Che's second move struck out violently; it was still only a plain punch without any embellishment. The instant the punch struck out, it was just like a water dragon erupting from the sea. Following the movement of his body, it struck towards Feng Yue,

carrying unrivaled violent Profound energy and crimson blood-red flames.

The pressure exerted upon Feng Yue from the power of this one strike, was more than twice as strong as the previous strike.

The expression on Feng Yue's face finally changed greatly. In this instant he realized, in shock, that Yun Che's previous claim that he had only used half his Profound strength in the first strike... was actually true!

“Triple Profound Barrier!!”

Feng Yue finally began to regret. Before he had declared the “Pact of Three Moves”, how could he have

thought that Yun Che, who was only at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm, could actually display this sort of frightful power. At this time, how could he dare to reserve even a little bit of power; with a low growl, the exterior of his entire body emitted a yellow light, and three Profound Earth Barriers consecutively appeared in front of his body in an instant...

Boom!!!

As if it was fragile glass, the first Profound Earth Barrier directly shattered into pieces and completely dissipated.

Boom!!

The second Profound Earth Barrier cracked completely. Then, it started to collapse from the crack, and dissipated in a similar fashion.

Boom!

Yun Che's right fist landed heavily on the third Profound Earth Barrier and, amidst a short pause, it also shattered. The fist which had gone through all three Profound Earth Barriers proceeded forward and directly collided onto Feng Yue's chest with a dull sound. Feng Yue's body shook a bit as his expression paled, but he still didn't move backwards.

The three Profound Earth Barriers had all been destroyed by Yun Che, but had also managed to reduce



most of his Profound energy.

“This is not..... possible!” Feng Yue forcefully swallowed the fresh blood that had surged up to his throat, the color of his face as white as paper. Even though he still hadn’t taken a step back, that one strike from Yun Che was still extremely violent after penetrating through three layers of barriers, and directly gave him an internal injury.

The surrounding people were all frozen still, especially Sikong Du and Instructor Qi, who understood Feng Yue’s strength; both had an expression of shock. To destroy three Profound Earth Barriers consecutively in one strike... Even if it was a strike with the full strength of a fifth ranker of the True

Profound realm, it would still essentially be impossible to achieve this!

“No wonder Instructor Qin valued him so much. This Yun Che actually.....” Sikong Du did not know how to describe the shock in his heart with words. He finally realized that Yun Che did not accept the “Pact of Three Moves” out of stupidity and impulsiveness, but had done so out of genuine self-confidence. However, the concern in his heart did not lessen; because, after two strikes, Feng Yue still had not taken a step back. And this strike was obviously a strike with Yun Che’s full strength. Feng Yue only needed to continue defending using Triple Profound Barrier; the chances of Yun Che defeating

him.... was very small.

“Not bad, not bad indeed.” Yun Che earnestly nodded his head. That expression of his was just like the strong praising the weak, and it almost made Feng Yue feel like throwing blood: “Then, the third move!”

Whoosh!!

The air around Yun Che moved about violently, and the fiery light around his body suddenly soared up dramatically, shrouding his entire body. The heat emitted flames, causing the surrounding area to drastically rise in temperature, and Feng Yue, who was relatively closer to Yun Che, felt a burning sensation on his face.

The expression on Sikong Du's face drastically changed again, and Feng Yue became ugly to the point that it was as if he had just eaten a pile of dead flies..... Those suddenly surging profound flames, proved that Yun Che's strike earlier..... still wasn't his limit!

“That tiny Floating Cloud City, actually produced such an abnormal brat!” Sikong Du's face was filled with shock as he looked at Yun Che: “Although he is only at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound realm, but to be able to output such immense strength, it is completely enough to directly enter the Middle Palace!”

Feng Yue's intestines had almost completely turned blue from regret.

Originally, he had prepared to help Ao Yan harm Yun Che through the “Pact of Three Moves”, but now, he had practically dug his own grave. He had actually personally said earlier: if he lost, in the future, he would walk on his hands whenever he saw Yun Che. The only reason as to why he had said something like that, was because he didn’t think about the possibility of himself losing at all... Facing Yun Che right now, whose Profound power had increased again, his heart spasmed. If he really lost, one could only imagine how enormous of an humiliation and insult that would be.

If it was only the two of them, he could’ve gone back on his promise. However, this was the Central Plaza

of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, which was completely flooded with people. The event here had long been surrounded with layer upon layer of spectators, along with Elder Qi, Sikong Du, and Qin Wuyou, who was also watching from a distance..... All were witnesses personally seeing and hearing the event! He simply had no escape route.

Going all out is the only choice! Feng Yue clenched his teeth..... Even though this profound technique would permanently reduce his profound strength by one level, it was better than enduring the great humiliation that would come otherwise!!

“The third move!!”

Yun Che slowly took a step forward. With a light stomp, the rocks under his feet instantly cracked. Yun Che's body had already soared up high; striking down from mid-air, his flame-covered right fist struck at Feng Yue's newly-constructed Triple Profound barriers with all his might.

BOOM!!!!

Under Yun Che's strike with full power, the first Profound Earth Barrier was just like thin paper, and punctured with just a poke.

Boom!!

In the short moment of half a breath, the second Profound barrier also directly shattered.

Feng Yue's complexion changed again and again. He fiercely bit the tip of his tongue and spat out a large field of bloody mist, which sprayed all over the last barrier.

This bizarre action caused Sikong Du to freeze for a moment; right after, his expression violently changed, and he muttered in his mind: Crap!! This Feng Yue, just for victory, actually didn't hesitate to use such forbidden technique of irreversible self-destruction!

“Profound Blood Barrier!!”

In the midst of Feng Yue's muffled yell, all the profound energy in Feng Yue's body began pouring unreservedly into the barrier's last layer. Instantaneously, the barrier



actually became a frightening crimson color amidst the fog of blood he had sprayed out.....

Bang!!

Yun Che's right fist landed heavily upon the last profound barrier; yet the sound emitted was actually a dull sound of impact. After, it was unable to proceed forward at all. Behind the barrier, Feng Yue's pale face began to distort into a hideous grin: "Hahahaha! Yun Che, with just a Nascent Profound Realm practitioner like you, how could it be possible to break my defenses..... This barrier of profound strength, is my most powerful Profound Blood Barrier! Even if there were ten of you, don't even bother to think about breaking it... You have

already lost, just wait till you have to forever leave Blue Wind Profound Palace. Hahahaha!”

The Profound Blood Barrier was a forbidden technique from Feng Yue’s clan. When used, it would need to consume the user’s Vital Blood and a tremendous amount of profound energy, and would permanently decrease the user’s lifespan and profound strength; it was usually used only to protect one’s own life under life-threatening circumstances. After deploying the Profound Blood Barrier, Feng Yue knew that he had already won, but had paid a huge price for it. So even though he was laughing maniacally, his heart was full of regret, resentment and unwillingness.

Yun Che's strike with all his power smashed onto this Profound Blood Barrier as his profound energy exploded out, yet it was unable to affect the Profound barrier in the slightest. He first furrowed his eyebrows, then squinted his eyes as all the profound energy in his body that seemed as if they were being swept up like a tornado, flooded into his right arm with incomparable frenzy...

"Falling... Moon... Sinking... Star!!"

Crack!

The flames on Yun Che's body vanished while the flames on his right arm instantly soared many times higher. Feng Yue's maniacal laughter stopped and he stared

wide-eyed at the crack which appeared at the point where Yun Che's right fist and the Profound Blood Barrier came into contact. A pair of pupils contracted to the size of a needle hole.

Impossible! How can this be possible! Why are cracks appearing on the Profound Blood Barrier?  
Impossible! This must be an illusion! An illusion!!

Crack!

Crack!!

CRACK!!!

Lines after lines of cracks that rapidly appeared one after another, were just like steel swords that stabbed into Feng Yue's fragile

heart. The sound of the cracks spreading was like the low crooning of a devil that made his mind teeter at the brink of collapse...

# Chapter 131:

## Murong Yi

Bang!!!

Once the cracks spread to the very edges of the barrier, the Profound Blood Barrier finally broke open, breaking into countless scattered profound energy fragments. Yun Che's Falling Moon Sinking Star was akin to a loose tiger. Advancing wildly, layers upon layers of bombardment hit on Feng Yue's chest..... There was only less than half a foot's distance between the barrier and Feng Yue's chest, yet it brought about a deafening roar.

Boom!!

A tremendous sound of rocks exploding rang next to Feng Yue's ears. Both of his ears and head were immersed in the huge roaring sound, and he felt as if a huge sledgehammer had struck his chest. A jet of blood spurted out of his mouth as his body flew backwards like an arrow... As he flew outwards, the violent power of Falling Moon Sinking Star carved a deep groove into the ground.

Feng Yue's body flew off the stage over the crowds of tightly packed onlookers, traveling almost twenty feet before smashing into the ground. After, he rolled for a while like a rolling gourd, then laid on the ground, never to make another movement. A pool of scarlet blood slowly spread under his body.

At this moment, it was as if the entire world had fallen into a frightful silence.

Yun Che slowly retracted his hand. In front of him, a ghastly deep ravine extended outwards by ten feet. A cold smile flashed on his mouth. He was a man who never treated his enemies with even a shred of mercy; if there were no outsiders here, he wouldn't have hesitated even a moment to kill Feng Yue. But this was the Blue Wind Profound Palace after all, and he was about to become a disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, so he absolutely wouldn't deal a killing blow to Feng Yue. However, at least for the next month, Feng Yue shouldn't even think about getting out of bed, much less using



profound energy. Furthermore, the forceful destruction of the Profound Blood Barrier also dealt considerable damage to his vitality and profound veins, so the aftermath would definitely not be as simple as just the decrease in one level of profound strength anymore.

Not a single sound could be heard from all of the witnesses. Seeing the half-dead Feng Yue, who had been flung several tens of feet away, and the long, deep ravine, a cold air surged out of their bodies. They all looked at Yun Che as if he was a monster!

Feng Yue's strongest ability was his defense. He had not attacked and concentrated all his profound

energy into his defense, but even under the condition of using a life-threatening forbidden technique to protect his life, Yun Che had still managed to deal a grave injury within three moves. No one doubted that, if this hadn't been one attacking and one defending and was a real fight, Feng Yue would still have been defeated by Yun Che, possibly even faster and even more miserably!

Tenth ranker at the Nascent Profound Realm completely defeating a third ranked at the True Profound Realm! And this was not just a difference of three levels, but also the divide between realms. All the spectators had originally thought this feat to be completely impossible! However, this situation

had truly happened right in front of their eyes, and overturned their previous knowledge.

Qin Wuyou, who had been residing in the pavilion, had already stood up. With profound strength at the Earth Profound Realm, and the status of the Blue Wind Profound Palace's Middle Palace instructor, he had a broad range of experience. He had a rather unmoving state of mind, yet his expression was colored red. At this moment, he had finally begun to realize why Lan Xuero had been so insistent on choosing him... The Monarch Heart Secret Arts, which could examine one's potential to an extent, was truly worthy of its name.

“Heh heh, this brat you brought

here is really incredible.”

Behind Qin Wuyou, a middle-aged man with a beard that dangled to his chest, who was clad in a green robe, slowly walked over. His appearance was similar to Qin Wuyou, but he looked to be slightly younger. He stood next to Qin Wuyou and watched Yun Che on the stage with a face filled with praise.

“He is someone Princess Cang Yue had selected.” Qin Wuyou slowly said.

“Oh?” The middle-aged man’s face showed a little shock, then he nodded slightly and went deep in thought.

Yun Che, standing on the stage, had long since become everyone's focus. Especially the new disciples who had just passed the assessment; no matter male or female, everyone's eyes filled with unparalleled fanaticism. The disciples who had been thoroughly thrashed by Feng Yue before were all filled with fanatical admiration; they all felt gratitude and a sense of being avenged. Yun Xiaofan stubbornly stood up; even though his body suffered an unbearable pain, his mouth revealed a pleasantly surprised smile as he passionately looked at Yun Che with adoration.

The shock in Sikong Du's heart lasted for a long time before he slowly suppressed it. Others may not be aware, but he clearly

understood just how powerful Feng Yue's Profound Blood Barrier was. Even a tenth level True Profound realm profound practitioner like him would not be able to break the barrier with one strike if they were not serious.

No wonder Instructor Qin valued him so much, and had personally come to watch his assessment process. Being able to exhibit such a frightful power at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound realm, it was impossible not to be in shock of this boy's talent... The worry and warnings he had given him before were completely unnecessary.

Yun Che's gaze glanced at Feng Yue's body for a moment, then swept around to finally land on Ao

Yan's body.

When Feng Yue had been blasted into the air, Ao Yan's face had become pale in a flash. At this time, when he suddenly made contact with Yun Che's cold gaze, his entire body shuddered and he unconsciously scooted two steps backwards in panic. His face was filled with fear and beads of sweat uncontrollably rolled down his forehead.

Yun Che laughed in disdain and glanced away. Turning to Instructor Qi, who had an extremely ugly expression, he called out brightly: "Instructor Qi, you've been personally witnessing this event the entire time. This "Pact of Three Moves" between me and Feng Yue, I

should be the victor, right? In accordance with our agreement before, from now on, wherever I am, Feng Yue must walk backwards. To all my friends present, please bear witness.”

Instructor Qi's expression was uncertain for a moment. He clenched his teeth, and said while bracing himself: “Yun Che! Even if you are the victor... This was only a learning experience, yet you attacked so heavy-handedly! With such a vicious heart, how are you fit to be a disciple of my Blue Wind Profound Palace!”

“Ah...” Yun Che laughed contemptuously, and said lightly: “My profound strength is only at the tenth level of the Nascent



Profound realm, and Feng Yue is at the third level of the True Profound realm. The difference between us is so great, so I have no reason not to display my full power, right? Only, how would I know that even though Feng Yue has such great profound strength, he's actually just an idiot who can't even take an attack from a Nascent Profound realm profound practitioner; can you really blame me for this? Furthermore, Feng Yue also said before, when disciples spar, getting injured is a common occurrence, and even Instructor Qi accepted that. Feng Yue seriously injured Yun Xiaofan, yet you didn't rebuke him at all. Now that I've injured Feng Yue you criticize me and even said that I'm not fit to be a disciple of Blue Wind Profound Palace. This, is a little bit of a

stretch now, isn't it?"

Instructor Qi was an instructor at Blue Wind Profound Palace after all. As a disciple of the Profound Palace, even a disciple from the Inner Palace wouldn't willingly offend an instructor; Middle Palace and Outer Palace disciples would not even consider this notion. But what kind of temper did Yun Che have?

Whoever gave him face, he would give them face. Whoever didn't give him face, even if it was God, he would definitely not give even a little face. Why wouldn't Instructor Qi think that Yun Che, a soon-to-be disciple of the Profound Palace, would bare accusations and ridicule him in front of everyone.

Furthermore, everything he had said was justified, made perfect

sense, did not leave a single droplet of information out, and forced him to a position where he could not respond. He could only stand there with a face completely colored red in embarrassment, and hold in his anger while not able to act upon it at all.

Sikong Du walked over, and said while cheerfully smiling: “Elder Qi, about this assessment, Yun Che has definitely passed, right? Yun Che was also the victor of the “Pact of Three Moves” with Feng Yue, and all the spectators present can bear witness. I believe that Instructor Qi, who is fair and just, must not have any objections. Also, Yun Che defeated disciple Feng Yue in the assessment, so, he can enter the Profound Palace, which means he

has the right to directly enter the Middle Palace. Instructor Qi must not have any objection to this, right? As for the remaining battle assessments, since Feng Yue has suffered serious injuries, this disciple can step in and complete the task; what do you think about this, Instructor Qi?”

Instructor Qi's face shivered a little. He held his breath for a while, and could only fiercely respond with a “hmpf” sound. This event had occurred at the Central Plaza, and countless spectators had witnessed the entire process personally. Even if he wanted to protect Feng Yue, it was simply impossible to punish or make things difficult for Yun Che. Otherwise, he might not remain in Blue Wind Profound Palace any

longer.

Enter the Middle Palace directly? Sounds of exclamation spread throughout the crowd. Especially those who had just entered the Profound Palace and those who had been stuck at the Outer Palace for a long time, who were disciples who could not even hope to enter the Middle Palace; their faces were filled with envy. At the Blue Wind Profound Palace, if one wanted to enter the Middle Palace, one's profound strength must at least be at the third level of the True Profound realm; Feng Yue could only be considered one of the lowest disciples in the Middle Palace. While Yun Che was only at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound realm, he had defeated

Feng Yue in front of everyone, so he was definitely qualified to directly enter the Middle Palace.

Right at this moment, a thundering howl suddenly sounded through the crowds of people:

“Out of the way! Which one’s Yun Che, get your ass out here!”

In the midst of the screams, the crowd was forcefully split. A tall and brawny, roughly twenty year old man walked out. Behind him, shockingly, walked Murong Ye. The entire right half of Murong Ye’s face was swollen; the bleeding from the wound had stopped, but the gory wound was still quite scary. Once he saw Yun Che standing on the stage, his eyes stared wide and

reached out to point at him. He screamed: "Cousin! It's him, he was the one who hit me!"

"That person's armband... he's also an Inner Palace disciple!"

"He's Murong Yi, ranked seventy-third on the Heavenly Profound List! What's happening... These Inner Palace disciples who are gone for most of the year, two of them actually appeared today!"

"I heard this Murong Yi's father is the Northern Field Marshal! Not only is his talent frightening, his influence is also monstrous... It looks like he came for Yun Che? Yun Che couldn't have offended him, right?"

“Offending an Inner Palace disciple, who is also the son of the Northern Field Marshal; he’ll have his fair share of trouble later.”

Following Murong Ye’s pointed finger, Murong Yi glanced at Yun Che for a moment, then flew onto the stage in one jump. He eyed Yun Che coldly: “So you’re Yun Che?”

“That’s right.” Once he saw Murong Ye, Yun Che understood what had happened. Qin Wuyou had just informed him about Murong Ye’s cousin Murong Yi... Indeed, after he had beaten this useless scrap of wood up, he had exhibited the behavior of trash, and ran, crying and screaming, for help from someone more powerful.



“Were you the one who hit his face?” Murong Yi pointed at Murong Ye, and asked with a dark glare.

“That’s right, I was the one who hit him.” Yun Che admitted very calmly.

“Very good.” Murong Yi nodded slowly. His eyes suddenly flashed as his body charged forward, bringing about a violent gust of turbulent air. His right hand formed a claw, and grasped at Yun Che’s throat like an eagle.

Just as Murong Yi moved, a silhouette flashed from the side. Profound energy exploded outwards, and a palm slammed against Murong Yi’s right claw.

With a “bang”, both people flew backwards. A “crack” sound resounded from the point they made contact, and the meter-tall stone stage directly split. A half-foot wide crack directly spread to the edge of the stage, splitting the stage right down the center.

A gust of profound energy spread outwards, nearly pushing Yun Che over. He was shocked in his heart: these were indeed Inner Palace disciples! Even the aftermath of their strikes contained such astonishing power.

Murong Yi landed on the edge of the stage and almost fell off. He suddenly raised his head, glared at the person who attacked him, and yelled: “Sikong Du, what do you

mean by this!!”

# Chapter 132:

## Arranged Battle!

“I’d like to ask for your intentions instead!” As he stood in front of Yun Che, Sikong Du stared at Murong Yi with a frown and spoke without yielding in the slightest:

“Murong Yi, this place is the important grounds for new disciple examinations, not a place for you to fuss about and unjustly assault others!”

“Unjustly assault others?” Murong Yi arrogantly sneered: “So what if I want to assault him?” He pointed at Murong Ye, and said furiously: “The wound on my cousin’s face, is precisely caused by this Yun Che

behind you! He injured my cousin first. Don't tell me that you want me to just let it pass? Move aside quickly, and don't stick your nose into other people's business here! Otherwise, don't blame me for turning against you!"

"Turning against me?" Sikong Du made a loud laugh: "I just happen to not be afraid of you turning against me. This business, I'm absolutely sticking my nose in! If your bones are itching to be fixed up a bit, then feel free to try and come at me!"

"You!" Murong Yi flew into a rage. He clenched both fists but forcefully suppressed himself and didn't immediately strike out. Because he knew that he wasn't a

match for Sikong Du. He was ranked seventy-third on the Heavenly Profound List, yet Sikong Du, was ranked thirty-ninth. However, he wasn't afraid at all of Sikong Du either; it was because even though Sikong Du's aptitude was extraordinary, his background was still very ordinary. Sikong Du's father was only a measly little elder of a branch profound palace in New Moon City, while his own father, was the Northern Field Marshal whose authority shook the entire Blue Wind Empire.

“Sikong Du, you and me had always been two different streams of water that didn't offend each other; this time, are you really so hell-bent on shredding all cordiality with me?”

“Whatever you, Murong Yi, wishes to do, I don’t care one bit. But as for this person behind me, his grandfather is the benefactor who saved my life. In this Blue Wind Profound Palace, no matter who it is that wants to cause him trouble, they’ll have to pass through me first!” Sikong Du said sternly.

The surroundings was immediately filled up with chatter... No wonder why Sikong Du would personally go rescue Yun Che earlier and stand so unyieldingly in front of him to protect him now. It turned out that he and Yun Che actually had this kind of history.

Just after entering the Profound Palace, he already had the backing of an Inner Palace disciple. There

wasn't any newly entered disciples who weren't envious and jealous toward Yun Che.

“Hmph, what a benefactor! Then what about my younger cousin's wound? Don't tell me that the cousin of I, Murong Yi, could be hit without holding anyone accountable?” Murong Yi said with an angry tone of voice.

“Since this is a grudge held between your younger cousin and Yun Che, then just let them settle it themselves. Since it's your cousin who got injured, then just let your cousin avenge himself; and since he is a disciple of our Blue Wind Profound Palace, don't tell me that he doesn't even have this much backbone, and need an Inner Palace



Disciple like you to harass a newly entering disciple?" Sikong Du spoke with a mocking tone. Just these few short sentences, made everyone's attention turn toward Murong Ye. Most of their gazes were full with disdain and contempt.... Sikong Du was right; to not avenge his own grudge, but instead went to cling on to someone more powerful; it was simply despicable.

Murong Ye's face and ears were flushed red from the gazes, as his hatred for Yun Che reached the extremity in his heart.

With Sikong Du blocking in front of Yun Che, Murong Yi basically arrived at a difficult situation that was similar to getting down from a tiger's back. If he was to go with

force, he simply wasn't a match for Sikong Du. If he were to just let it pass like this... With countless disciples watching from the side, where would his face be as a dignified disciple of the Inner Palace. He took a step forward, and said unyieldingly: "Since it's like this, then alright. Sikong Du, I'll just give you this face, and won't assault Yun Che! But I can't just let the matter of Yun Che injuring my younger cousin rest, or else what face could I, Murong Yi, have! If you make Yun Che apologize to my younger cousin right here, and slap himself on the face ten times, I will then let this matter go. If you are still ignorant of what's good for you.... Hmph, then from now on, it's either you or me in the Inner Palace!"

Sikong Du tightly knitted his brows; actually, he had also arrived at a dilemma. Even though he could defeat Murong Yi, Murong Yi's powerful background was something that no one in the Blue Wind Profound Palace dared to look down upon. If he were to completely offend him, it would bring nothing but harm to both himself and Yun Che. However, if Yun Che had to apologize to Murong Ye as he demanded, and even slap himself in the face under the gazes of everyone... This was entirely a kind of great humiliation that no normal man would possibly accept.

At this moment, a hand rested onto his shoulder. Yun Che walked out from behind him, stood by his side

and said with a relaxed smile: "Big Brother Sikong, I thank you for your graciousness. However, since this is a matter that I instigated, it's naturally best for me to settle it myself."

As he finished speaking, he directly faced Murong Yi who had a grim expression without waiting for Sikong Du to respond, and said without any hint of fear: "Murong Yi, it was indeed I who had hit your younger cousin Murong Ye. To speak out for him, can also be considered as the way of the world. But with my big brother Sikong here, it's should be a bit difficult for you to do as you wish right now. If you really want to personally teach me a lesson, I can actually give you a chance."

“You? Give me a chance?  
HAHAHAHA...” As if he had heard  
some funny joke, Murong Yi started  
to guffaw with extreme disdain:  
“Who the hell do you think you  
are?”

Yun Che didn't become angry in the  
slightest. His brows sunk as his eyes  
narrowed, and unfeelingly replied:  
“Do you have the guts to give me  
three months of time?”

“Murong Yi, three months later, I'll  
voluntarily challenge you. If I were  
to lose at that time, no matter if you  
want me to apologize to Murong Ye,  
or to injure and cripple me, I will  
never resist. Including Big Brother  
Sikong, no one would stop you  
either!”

As Yun Che's words came out, the expressions of everyone around instantly became remarkable.

"Hah? What did he say? Challenge Murong Yi after three months? Am I hearing things?"

"You didn't hear it wrong! Is this Yun Che insane! To have defeated Feng Yue, he is indeed pretty great, but what kind of character is Murong Yi? He is someone on the Heavenly Profound List, and his profound strength is as high as the ninth level of True Profound Realm! Yun Che is only at the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm, which means that there's an entire Realm of difference. What kind of challenge is this!"

“This Yun Che, did he get carried away to the extent of knowing no bounds just from defeating Feng Yue? Let alone one of him, even if there were a hundred of him, he still wouldn’t be a match for Murong Yi! This is simply overreaching, and seeking his own death.”

“I’m guessing that this is certainly Yun Che’s stalling tactic. Think about it, no one with a normal head on his shoulders would ever propose this kind of arranged battle. Yun Che is obviously saying this in deliberation, in order to solve the present situation after seeing Murong Yi come seek him out. He wanted to solve the stalemate before his eyes first, and then apologize to Murong Yi in private,

or just directly flee. This is definitely the most perfect explanation.”

Hearing Yun Che's words, Sikong Du's eyebrows abruptly creased as he said with an anxious tone: "Yun Che! What are you saying, are you insane? Murong Ye is someone on the Heavenly Profound List! Let alone arranging a battle with him, you don't even have the qualifications to exchange moves with him! Are you trying to drive yourself into a dead end?"

However, Yun Che turned a deaf ear and continued to speak toward Murong Yi: "Murong Yi, do you dare to or not! Of course, if you are afraid of getting beaten by me to the point of looking everywhere on



the ground for your teeth, you can totally decline. In this world, aren't cowardly turtles the best at preserving their own life."

The expression of Murong Ye, who was below them cramped, as he forcefully endured to not laugh out loud. The inside of his heart had long become overjoyed.... This Yun Che, was as expected, a reckless and arrogant idiot! He was boundlessly arrogant at New Moon Profound Palace before, and was still so arrogant after coming to this Blue Wind Profound Palace; he was even so arrogant in front of the face of his Elder Cousin Murong Yi! He simply wouldn't know what had hit him even if he died!

Murong Ye didn't laugh, because he

felt that this Yun Che brat before him was a complete moron. Moreover, he had seen quite a lot of morons before; but someone moronic to this degree, it was a first in his entire life!

“Brat, are you serious?” Murong Yi pinched his chin, and looked at Yun Che as if he was looking at a clown. He had already confirmed again and again that Yun Che’s level of profound strength was truly, and undoubtedly, at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm. Amongst the newly entering disciples, this was unquestionably outstanding. But in his eyes, he was merely a slightly bigger grasshopper that he could crush on a whim with any two of his fingers.

A grasshopper like this, actually wanted to voluntarily challenge him! Moreover, he even professed about what would happen if he lost, and even used “Cowardly Turtle” in order to instigate him, lest he were to decline.

“Of course I’m serious?” Yun Che said while smiling: “But you are the one who has not responded yet... Do you dare, or not?”

“HAHAHAHA....” Murong Yi finally laughed wildly. His laugh was incomparably contemptuous: “To challenge me, there’s only the question of whether you are worthy or unworthy, not whether or not I dare to or not! It is very obvious, that someone as insignificant as you at the Nascent Profound Realm,

is not worthy! However, given that you actually have a dog's gall and dared to injure my younger cousin, then I may as well. After three months, I'll take a minute or two to play with you a little. Training in the Inner Palace is very boring, occasionally finding a flea or grasshopper to play around with for a bit isn't bad either."

"But you better remember what you said earlier; to be handled as I wish after you lose, without any outside meddling! Everyone who's present are clearly listening! Sikong Du, I think that you heard it clearly too, no?" Murong Yi's gaze turned toward Sikong Du as he spoke with a sneer.

Sikong Du's complexion fluctuated

for a while, and said to Yun Che in a low voice: “Yun Che! Do you know what you’re doing! If you are to retract your words earlier right now, you would still barely have enough time! If this is your stalling tactic, it’s not necessary! As long as I am in this Inner Palace, I will never let Murong Yi harm you.”

But Yun Che actually shook his head while faintly smiling, and then said with a clear voice: “Very well, since you’ve already accepted, you can’t go back on your words anymore! Three month later, right here in this spot, we’ll have a showdown then! Everyone here are witnesses!”

“Hahahaha, I also can testify.”

An amiable voice came from the outside of the crowd. This voice wasn't very loud, but it overshadowed the chatter and clearly traveled into everyone's ears as if it was magical.

The crowd split apart and two middle-aged men, respectively wearing a purple robe and verdant colored clothing, walked over shoulder by shoulder. One of them was Qin Wuyou and the other, had black hair, a black beard, and a slender figure; his verdant attire was plain yet elegant, his face carried kindness and a faint smile, and his gaze was like an unmoving calm pond of water. Just by standing there in a casual fashion, his entire body naturally exhibited an elegant, otherworldly, and sage-

like disposition. When people looked at him, he evoked the uncontrollable growth of reverence in their hearts.

“Pa... Palace Chief Qin! Instructor Qin!”

The moment these two middle-aged men appeared, the scene instantly became restless. Because among these two, one of them was Middle Palace Instructor, Qin Wuyou, and that verdant clothed man, was shockingly the Blue Wind Profound Palace’s Vice Palace Chief... Qin Wushang!

Sikong Du and Murong Yi simultaneously retracted all of their oppressive air, and respectively yelled out: “Palace Chief Qin,

Instructor Qin.”

“Sky Profound Realm!” As Yun Che’s gaze fell onto Qin Wushang, Jasmine’s voice traveled to his mind and greatly shook his heart.

Qin Wushang was Qin Wuyou’s biological brother who was twelve years older than Qin Wuyou. However his talent in profound cultivation was far greater than Qin Wuyou, and he had already stepped into the Sky Profound Realm at the age of fifty, arriving at a supreme level that countless profound practitioners wouldn’t even dare to aspire toward in their dreams. His lifespan had also greatly increased, and thus, he even appeared to be much younger than Qin Wuyou.



Blue Wind Profound Palace's Palace Chief's whereabouts were erratic, and rarely ever bothered with matters in the Profound Palace. There were some disciples who had stayed in the Palace for three or four years who had yet to have met the Palace Chief even once. The matters inside the Profound Palace, whether big or small, all basically fell onto Vice Palace Chief Qin Wushang. When the Palace Chief was absent, he possessed the highest right-of-speech and decision-making authority.

# Chapter 133:

## Straight into the Inner Palace

“Palace Chief Qin, why have you come here?” Instructor Qi immediately rushed to escort him and solicitously asked.

Qin Wushang laughed, but did not reply, and turned his gaze to Yun Che instead. After giving him a once over, he said, “Yun Che, you just said that you wanted to challenge Murong Yi three months later, is this true? If it was something you just said without thinking through the matter, it is still not too late to take back your

words now.”

In regards to Qin Wushang calling him by name, Yun Che wasn't surprised at all. He nodded and replied, “Of course it's real. Murong Yi has also agreed. Since Palace Chief Qin also happens to be here, I'd like to ask of you to bear witness for us. Within Blue Wind Profound Palace, I believe there is no one who has more authority than Palace Chief Qin to be a witness.”

After the other newly admitted disciples came to know of Qin Wushang's identity as Palace Chief, most of them revealed expressions of reverence, yet Yun Che's expression seemingly did not change. His gaze was calm and his speech was neither servile nor

overbearing. “May Palace Chief Qin coincidentally bear witness for us” this sentence was spoken in an incomparably natural tone, as if he wasn’t speaking to the earth-shaking Blue Wind Imperial City’s Palace Chief, but a normal passer-by on the road. This sort of reaction made Qin Wushang feel slightly surprised. He nodded while laughing and said, “With Profound strength at the tenth level of Nascent Profound Realm, you’re challenging a ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm; it’s my first time encountering such an interesting matter in all my years at Blue Wind Profound Palace. Not bad, young man. You have courage and drive. If you are certain that you’re not playing around here, I am quite willing to be your

witness.”

“Murong Yi, you’ve just agreed too. About this, do you have any other questions?” Qin Wushang asked Murong Yi.

Murong Yi laughed, but it was a very contemptuous laugh. He said respectfully, “Reporting to Palace Chief, although agreeing to a little rat’s challenge is very demeaning, but he wounded my cousin first. After Sikong Du prevented me from taking up for my cousin, he still came to me of his own accord to get abused. I have no reason not to agree. And with Palace Chief bearing witness yourself, I won’t be afraid that he’ll take back his words after he’s beaten into a sorry state!”

“Very well.” Qin Wushang nodded as he revealed a hint of a smile on his face, “It’s settled then. The appointed date will be ten o’ clock in morning three months from now, and the location will be right here. At that time, I will be here personally. Yun Che, if you lose, you won’t retaliate no matter how Murong Yi decides to punish you, and you can’t let anyone hinder him either. This is what you’ve said personally. You cannot go back on your words.”

“Of course.” Yun Che replied without any hesitation. Then, he narrowed his eyes and stared at Murong Yi, saying, “But what if I win?”

“You win? Haha.....

HAHAHAHAHAHA!" Murong Yi laughed loudly and the audience also burst into raucous laughter. For a new disciple at the Nascent Profound Realm to challenge Murong Yi of the Inner Palace..... and think of winning? This was practically the biggest joke under the heavens.

Murong Yi laughed until he was rocking back and forth and was unable to catch his breath for a long while. It was only after laughing for a long time did he stutter out in the midst of his laughter, "I, lose? HAHAHAHA.... I will lose? If I... lose, I'll accept your punishment! Whatever you make me do, I'll do. HAHAHAHAHA!"

"I won't need that." Towards his

face filled with sneers, Yun Che also began laughing, "If you lose, I only need you to agree to three conditions, three conditions you definitely cannot reject, do you dare?"

"Dare! There isn't anything I wouldn't dare to do! Let alone three things, even if it's thirty things or three hundred things, I still wouldn't frown upon that." Murong Yi shouted out straight away without any hesitation. Rather than believing that Yun Che could possibly beat him, he would rather believe that hogs could climb trees. But there was a niggling doubt in his heart; it was strange that Palace chief Qin Wushang would suddenly have interest in witnessing this sort of thing that didn't concern him



one bit. It was also totally meaningless, and was a challenge initiated by a fool.

“Very well.” Qin Wushang nodded his head again with a gentle look on his face, “All these years, Blue Wind Profound Palace has been peaceful and always conformed to norms. Many years have passed since a challenge has appeared with an entire large gap between realms. Three months can indeed change a lot. Perhaps after three months, you would really have the ability to fight against Murong Yi. Nobody knows for certain. It really makes one anticipate. Yun Che, you’re the top scorer in the Profound Strength Assessment for this group. This shows that you have good foundation. In the Combat Strength

Assessment, you've transcended your level to beat Feng Yue. This shows that you're stunningly gifted in your usage of profound strength, and today, you've challenged Murong Yi. This shows that you have a shocking amount of courage and boldness. These few attributes you've manifested prove that you are qualified to be an important disciple that the Profound Palace would nurture."

"As Vice Palace Chief, I'd really like to see what you'll bring forth to fight Murong Yi with after those three months. Murong Yi always trained within the Inner Palace, so for the sake of fairness within these three months, Yun Che, you don't have to report in tomorrow. Within the three months time from

tomorrow onwards, although you are an official disciple of my Blue Wind Profound Palace, you don't belong in any of the three palaces, not Outer, Middle or Inner, but you can freely enter all three palaces, and you can also enjoy all the resources in the Inner Palace. Your living quarters will also be arranged to be within the Inner Palace."

The moment Qin Wushang said these words, apart from Qin Wushang, everyone's jaws dropped open in shock. Even Yun Che was also greatly shocked.... Allowing a disciple who had been recently admitted, who was only at the Nascent Profound Realm, to enjoy all the resources within the Inner Palace; within the history of Blue Wind Profound Palace, this was a

definite first. It was something that all the disciples who were just admitted didn't even dare to dream about.

Qin Wushang disregarded the crowd's reactions and continued, "With this, you and Murong Yi will have the entirely same set of training circumstances, and this will be considered fair to a certain extent. Three months later, if you win, you will replace Murong Yi's position on the Heavenly Profound List, and will officially become an Inner Palace disciple. But if you lose, not only will you be chased out of the Inner Palace, you'll also never be able to become an Inner Palace disciple thereafter, even after your strength afterwards is satisfactory. Yun Che, do you have any

objections to this sort of arrangement?”

Qin Wushang's initial words were undoubtedly an enormous grace to Yun Che but the few very last words added an extremely cruel condition. As such, some people's dissatisfaction at Yun Che being allowed to enter the Inner Palace straight away were completely eliminated. At sixteen, Yun Che was an astonishing genius who actually defeated a Middle Palace disciple. There was a definitely possibility for him to be able to enter the Inner Palace in a few years. But if he were to enter the Inner Palace now for three months and then be defeated, even if he had the right to enter the Inner Palace a few years later, he can only feel powerless and regret

his past deeds.

Yun Che glanced at Qin Wushang and nodded, "Alright, I agree."

Yun Che understood, the sudden special treatment he received was definitely related to Qin Wuyou. At the same time, it was also definitely related to Lan Xueruo.

To let a stately Vice Palace Chief come in person for him and break traditions that had never been broken before in order to allow him to enter the Inner Palace.... Yun Che was sure that even if Qin Wuyou was Qin Wushang's own brother, he still wouldn't let Qin Wushang make such decisions. Then, the only explanation would be Lan Xueruo.

What exactly was Lan Xueruo's identity and background.....

"This.... Isn't this rather inappropriate? For such a lowly person like Yun Che, what right does he have to step into the Inner Palace? It's just like allowing a pariah to enter a lion and wolf's den!" Murong Yi said as he knitted his eyebrows.

"Murong Yi, you have objections?" Qin Wushang shot Murong Yi an indifferent glance. His voice was as calm as usual, but it contained a force that made one's heart beat rapidly.

Murong Yi trembled in his heart and rushed to say, "No! Your disciple doesn't dare to question

Palace Chief Qin's decision. Your disciple was only.... only worried that the Inner Palace's reputation would be tainted by this kid at the Nascent Profound Realm."

"This matter is settled here. Within this three months, there must be no conflicts between the two of you. Alright, continue the assessment. Elder Qi, I'll leave it to you to personally assess this group's combat strength assessment. Sikong Du, take Yun Che for a walk through the Inner Palace later, and help him settle into his living quarters while you're at it. My order will immediately be sent through a sound transmission to the Inner Palace."

After he finished speaking, Qin



Wushang looked deeply into Yun Che's eyes and prepared to leave. Yun Che suddenly spoke, "Palace Chief Qin, this disciple has a request to make."

Qin Wushang had just acknowledged Yun Che's identity as a Palace disciple straight away, so Yun Che naturally felt like referring to himself as a disciple. Qin Wushang turned and replied, "What is it."

With his gaze, Yun Che hinted at Yun Xiaofan, who had been beaten up by Feng Yue, and said, "In the strength assessment, Yun Xiaofan has yet to display his abilities. He was hurt gravely in malice by Feng Yue and is incapable of continuing his assessment. Yun Xiaofan is

merely fifteen years old, but has come here all on his own from a distant place. If he has to give up on the assessment just because of this, it'll be simply too cruel and unfair to him. So this disciple would like to request Palace Chief Qin to give him a chance to take a make up exam after his injuries have healed.”

Yun Xiaofan who was previously ashen-faced due to being grievously injured, lifted his head and gratefully looked at Yun Che as the light in his eyes violently trembled.

Qin Wushang took a look at Yun Xiaofan and nodded while smiling, “So I see. Mn, even though he is still young, he has a good foundation, and will be accomplished in future.

My Blue Wind Profound Palace would also hate to lose any moldable talent. Sikong Du, later on, bring Yun Xiaofan to the Medicine Hall to treat his injuries while you're at it. After he's healed, Wuyou, I'll let you assess his combat ability personally, how about that?"

Qin Wuyou chuckled, "Of course there's no problem."

Yun Xiaofan's eyes were already filled with tears. As he struggled to get up, he spoke while choking back his emotions, "Thank..... Thank you, Palace Chief Qin. Thank you, Instructor Qin..... Brother Yun, thank you...."

After he said this, his consciousness

relaxed and he completely passed out.

At this moment, regardless of male or female, all eyes on Yun Che held an extra portion of respect.

Qin Wuyou and Qin Wushang left. Murong Yi also left with Murong Ye after passing a disdainful look at Yun Che. Yun Che then propped Yun Xiaofan up and followed Sikong Du. After bringing Yun Xiaofan to the Medicine Hall, he then followed him towards the Inner Palace.

“I simply do not understand what you were thinking. But based on how calm you are, I just cannot relate you to an idiot.” Sikong Du said in confusion.

“There’s a phrase that goes ‘Place someone on a field of death and he will fight to live’.” Yun Che replied, “The higher the pressure, the greater the motivation.”

“Place someone on a field of death and he will fight to live? But what you’re doing is simply just rushing towards death!” Sikong Du shook his head and continued, “Do you know the disparity between Murong Yi and yourself? You have an entire realm’s worth of difference! In just three months, even if you’re a world class genius, even in the most extreme of circumstances, in three months, you will only be able to close the gap by two levels. What’s more is that in these three months, you will be training under the same conditions as Murong Yi. Not only

does he have resources from the Inner Palace, he also has tremendous supplies from his clan. His improvement speed, can only be faster than yours! When the moment comes, what can you possibly bring out to fight against Murong Yi!”

# Chapter 134:

## Overlord's Colossal Sword

The Inner Palace was situated in the deepest region of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, and a small expanse of dense forest separated the Inner Palace from the Middle Palace. After passing through the forest, the main entrance would be presented right in front of one's eyes. A gate did not block the entrance; rather, it was a slowly revolving purple-colored seal formation.

After Sikong Du walked near, the seal stopped revolving and

disappeared shortly after. But when Yun Che took a step forward, the seal suddenly reappeared, and an irresistible repulsive force came from the front, forcing Yun Che to take a step back. At the same time, a hoary voice came from an unknown direction:

“Sikong Du, is this person you brought the ‘Yun Che’ whom Palace Chief Qin mentioned?”

Sikong Du called out brightly: “Yes. May Elder Xu authorize passage.”

Ding!

A thin strand of profound energy suddenly came from the front, touched Yun Che’s body, and disappeared promptly after entering



his body. Right after, the hoary voice sounded again: "This is the inner palace's mark of passage, but it's effectiveness only lasts three months. Three months later, the mark will automatically disappear; you may enter now."

"Let's go." Sikong Du took a step first and entered the Inner Palace.

The environment of the Inner Palace could only be described as simple and peaceful. Looking around, there wasn't even a single person in view, and a sense of rusticity permeated from the simple buildings.

However, the moment Yun Che took a step into the Inner Palace, he clearly felt that the atmosphere of

profound energy here was especially rich. It was at least twice as thick as the atmosphere outside.

“Do you feel it?” Sikong Du glanced at Yun Che’s reaction, and explained: “Although the Inner Palace is small, under the Inner Palace, there actually lies a rare natural profound pulse! This is the reason for the especially rich profound energy atmosphere here. The seal we just passed, is not there to simply seal the entrance to the Inner Palace; Its greater purpose is in fact to prevent these profound energies from leaking out.

“This tower directly in front of us, is known as the Profound Gathering Tower, and contains a total of ten floors. There is a special formation

set up in the tower which is able to greatly condense and gather the profound energy in the Inner Palace's atmosphere, thus making the profound energy in the tower thicken up to an incredible extent. While cultivating inside the tower, one's cultivating speed will certainly far surpass their cultivation speed outside.

Following the direction Sikong Du pointed, Yun Che saw that ten-story tower erected in the heart of the Inner Palace.

“You only have three months worth of time, so you must seize all of your time and cultivate; it is best to not waste even a minute or a second.” Sikong Du said seriously. Even though he knew that no

matter how desperately he cultivated, it was simply impossible for Yun Che to defeat Murong Yi. The only thing he could hope for, was for some kind of miracle to occur... For example, Murong Yi, in the next three months, choking to death while drinking water, dying from eating too much food, dying by getting struck by lightning, falling to his death while walking, or dying on a woman's belly from exhaustion and etcetera...

“So, you should probably enter the Profound Gathering Tower as soon as today to cultivate, dedicating all your time and effort, and even eat and sleep in there... As for food and drinks, it's no big deal for me to personally bring them to you everyday.

Yun Che's heart warmed as he heard this, and said with a face full of gratitude: "Big Brother Sikong, thank you for your hospitality."

"Ha ha, don't mention it." Sikong Du smiled, and said: "Even my life, was saved by your grandfather. Without your grandfather Xiao Li, I, Sikong Du, would not be here today. These years, I have always been thinking about how to repay your grandfather's kindness; your arrival has finally provided me a way, to an extent, of expressing my desire. No matter what I do for you, is what I should be doing for you. Alright, let's go, I'll bring you to the Sky Weapon Pavilion first."

"Sky Weapon Pavilion?"

“Blue Wind Profound Palace has three great Weapon Pavilions, which are respectively the Common Weapon Pavilion, Earth Weapon Pavilion, and Sky Weapon Pavilion. The Common Weapon Pavilion is in the Outer Palace, Earth Weapon Pavilion is in the Middle Palace, and Sky Weapon Pavilion belongs to the Inner Palace. These three pavilions are places where disciples can select weapons. Of the three, the weapons in the Sky Weapon Pavilion are naturally of the highest level. Any single Inner Palace disciple will have one opportunity to enter and select a weapon. After choosing a weapon, you can go to the Supreme Profound Hall to select Profound Arts and Profound Techniques that you wish to cultivate... In addition, only Inner

Palace disciples can cultivate Blue Wind Profound Palace's unique Profound Arts; as for profound techniques, naturally, they are also of the highest level.

“Also, the Inner Palace do not have any instructors; all of the cultivation will depend on one's own abilities.”

While he was speaking, they had already arrived at the Sky Weapon Pavilion.

The Sky Weapon Pavilion was located beneath the ground, yet it didn't seem dusky at all. Weapons of all colors and assortments laid in sight: swords, blades, spears, halberds, lances, axes, hammers, daggers... Everything was there; the

majority radiated all sorts of dazzling colors, but there was also some that were dim and devoid of light that laid in a random corner. The moment Yun Che entered, he felt gusts of ice-cold wind rush at him; the auras were either ethereal, or noble, or sharp, or overbearing.

“The lowest-grade weapons in the Sky Weapon Pavilion are True Profound weapons but the majority are Spirit Profound weapons. Originally, there were several Earth Profound weapons, but they were taken by our seniors long ago; the only remaining Earth Profound weapon, is actually something insipid that no one wants. Yun Che, what weapon do you usually use?” Sikong Du asked.



Yun Che went silent for a moment, and nevertheless truthfully answered: "I am not proficient at using any weapon."

During his time at Azure Sky Continent, he needed to use his hands to control the Sky Poison Pearl, so he simply had no way to wield a weapon. After all, at that time the Sky Poison Pearl had not been embedded in his body like it was now.

"You don't use weapons?" Sikong Du's face was filled with surprise, then shook his head and said: "Since you are a profound practitioner, you shouldn't neglect the important role of a weapon. A comfortable weapon can allow a profound practitioner's attack and

defensive capabilities to increase greatly. Its role, is equivalent to that of a hand. In a battle between two people of similar power, taking other factors into account, a fighter not wielding a weapon simply cannot contend against a fighter wielding a weapon. But you're still young; if you start cultivating now, it is not late at all."

Yun Che nodded his head; he approved of Sikong Du's words. Before, he needed to control the Sky Poison Pearl so he didn't train with a weapon, but now, he should definitely train with a fitting weapon.

"If you really haven't trained with any weapon before, then I'll recommend a sword to you." Sikong

Du said: "The sword holds the respect of ten thousand soldiers; it can slash, hack, stab, cut, gouge, slice, parry, is flexible, easy to control, and has incredible power and defensive capabilities. Furthermore, it is easy to learn and easy to train. In the present Sky Profound Continent, around seventy percent of profound practitioners use a sword. Unless a specific weapon is required to operate a profound technique to its fullest power, one will usually choose a sword as a weapon. My weapon is also a sword."

Yun Che also agreed with what Sikong Du had just said. Before, at the Phoenix trials and fighting with the Black Demon Mercenary Group, he used the Tiger Soul Sword he

had taken from the Xiao Branch Sect. Prior to that, he had never used the sword before but when he had wielded the Tiger Soul Sword, it was indeed very easy to control. A sword's flexibility, ability to attack and defend, and ease in learning and training, were all traits other weapons simply could not match.

"Alright, then I'll pick a sword." Yun Che nodded.

Amongst the numerous weapons in the Sky Weapon Pavilion, swords also constituted the greatest number. There were several hundreds of swords. Yun Che's gaze meticulously swept through each and every type of sword; after going through all of them, he was a little disappointed in his heart. Because

the none of the auras of each sword there could compare to the Tiger Soul Sword he possessed.

After all, all the swords here were True Profound swords and Spirit Profound swords, and the Tiger Soul Sword was an authentic Earth Profound sword.

Just as he was about to prepare to look for other weapons, Yun Che's footsteps suddenly stopped. His gaze focused underneath the weapons rack.

Underneath the weapons rack that held all sorts of magic swords and weapons, a massive sword quietly lay there, covered by a thick layer of dust... That's right, this was a genuine greatsword, with a width of

around thirty centimeters, and no fancy decorations; it didn't even have any imposing external aura, and it looked just like a chunk of ordinary iron silently lying inside of the dust, as if it had long been neglected and forgotten. If Yun Che's vision wasn't especially acute, he would not have noticed the weapon's existence at all.

"This sword is?" Yun Che squatted and asked curiously.

Sikong Du glanced at the greatsword for a moment, then trivially said: "Oh, this is what I was just talking about. This is the only remaining Earth Profound weapon here. It's called 'Overlord's Sword', and it was once wielded thousands of years ago by someone from the

Blue Wind Empire known as the ‘Overlord’. He once used this sword to slaughter countless enemies and made several impressively outstanding military exploits. After his death, this weapon was sent to this Sky Weapon Pavilion, and it has silently lain here for many years. Unfortunately, this Earth Profound weapon is a heavy sword; as profound practitioner, there is simply no one who would pick it.”

“Why?” Yun Che asked.

“It’s very simple. Because it is a heavy sword, with a huge sword body and incredible weight, even though it is classified as a ‘sword’, it is not as flexible as a sword should be. Also, with its incredible weight, just controlling it is an incredible

difficult task, and even if you could control it, after time you wave it, you will consume a considerable amount of profound energy.

Cumbersome, difficult to control, consumes a lot of energy; these three disadvantages ensure that no profound practitioner will select it. Its greatest advantage, is that once you strike with it, it will generate massive destruction; but with such a cumbersome weapon, it is impossible to swing it with any speed. Hitting the opponent is very difficult, and swinging it will create many opportunities for the opponent to strike back.”

“Because of this, this sword is only suitable for the battlefield; if one can control it well, it would definitely be a weapon capable of



slaughtering many. But this is definitely not suitable for us profound practitioners; when fighting someone, not only will it not provide assistance, it would even become a burden.”

“Also, even though a greatsword is considered a sword, its characteristics are completely different than a regular sword, so all profound techniques involving swords are not suitable for this greatsword. As of now, the Supreme Profound Hall has three hundred forty-seven sword-related profound techniques, but none pertain to greatswords.”

As Sikong Du spoke, Yun Che intently stared at the dust-covered Overlord’s Colossal Sword. He

imagined seeing himself recklessly brandishing this greatsword... At this time, he suddenly extended his hands, grasped the hilt of the Overlord's Colossal Sword, and lifted with force.

Yet the Overlord's Colossal Sword didn't even move an inch.

Yun Che was silently shocked in his heart... it was actually this heavy!

He took a deep breath, fiercely clenched his teeth, and suddenly gathered all the profound energy in his body. He poured all the profound energy into his hands, and yelled loudly.

“HAAH!!”

Clang....

In the midst of an incomparably heavy sound of metal scraping against the ground, the Overlord's Colossal Sword was finally being lifted up bit by bit as Yun Che grasped it by the hilt; the entire process was very tedious and slow... Only after more than a dozen breaths' worth of effort, did Yun Che finally manage to raise the sword hilt to his hip; after trying so hard, his entire face was flushed red from exhaustion, and his forehead was covered with hot sweat.

So heavy! Why is it so heavy! Just what was the material used in making this sword!

"This Overlord's Sword was rumored to be made from meteorites. It weighs one thousand

nine hundred and fifty kilograms; the fact that you can even pick it up with your current profound strength is already quite impressive.” Sikong Du said: “Hm? You couldn’t actually be interested in it?”

“Evil Soul!!”

Yun Che uttered a low growl in his heart, opened “Evil Soul”, and the profound energy instantly surged wildly. Under the explosively increased profound energy, he roared and gathered all his energy in a frenzy. Instantaneously, the tip of the Overlord’s Colossal Sword was lifted off the ground as he picked up the entire sword, and lifted it in front of his body... However, just after keeping the

sword raised horizontally for a few short breaths of time. Under the frightening weight, he was then unable to endure any longer. The tip of the sword suddenly dipped, and crashed onto the ground with a “boom” sound. In the midst of the extremely loud noise, even the floor of the entire Sky Weapon Pavilion trembled for a moment.

Yun Che still clung onto the sword hilt, intensely gasped in a ragged manner; yet on his face, there actually revealed an excited expression: “I’ll be taking... this sword!”

# Chapter 135: Run- of-the-mill Profound Techniques

Yun Che was a person who did not adhere to common sense. This was one of Sikong Du's impressions of him after the short time they were in contact.

For example, he, a Nascent Profound practitioner actually challenged Murong Yi. And also.... Amongst all the weapons in the Sky Weapon Pavilion, he had actually selected the weapon he had continually warned Yun Che to not

pick no matter what!

“Did you not listen to anything I just said?” Sikong Du said coolly: “This sword is simply not fit for us profound practitioners! Controlling it, is several hundred times more difficult than controlling a common sword! Even though it is in the Sky Weapon Pavilion and is of the highest grade, when picking a weapon, the first thing to consider is whether it is suitable for you. Don’t mention that it’s an Earth profound weapon; even if it was a Sky profound weapon, within the Inner Palace, there still wouldn’t be anyone who would select it!”

“I understand everything you’ve said.” Yun Che clenched his teeth while trying to support the weight

of the Overlord's Colossal Sword, and said slowly: "But, I feel that this sword is a weapon that fits me the best."

"Just the simple action of lifting it requires almost all of your strength. How do you plan on controlling it?"

"That's only because my strength is not sufficient. As my profound strength increases, there will be a day when I can easily control it." Yun Che responded.

"Inner Palace, and even the entire Blue Wind Profound Palace, does not have any profound techniques involving heavy swords or any instructors who use a heavy sword. If you actually pick it, you won't even know how to train with it



properly.” Sikong Du’s eyebrows furrowed as he patiently tried to discourage him. He completely could not understand; he had clearly given so many reasons, yet Yun Che still directly selected this basically forgotten heavy sword.

“It’s not a problem, learning by myself is also not a wrong decision.” Yun Che breathed deeply, raised both hands, and stored the Overlord’s Colossal Sword into the Sky Poison Pearl. After, he patted his hands and said with satisfaction: “Big Brother Sikong, I’ve already finished selected a weapon. I’ll head over to the Profound Gathering Tower by myself, so let’s head over to the Supreme Profound Hall.”

“You...” Sikong Du really wanted to say that he was simply ridiculous. Ultimately, he could only helplessly shake his head, and said: “Forget it, I’ve said everything I needed to say. Since you’re still going to make this selection, I don’t have any right to interfere. Let’s go.”

The Supreme Profound Hall, used by the Blue Wind Profound Palace to store all sorts of profound arts and profound techniques, accumulated by the Blue Wind Profound Palace over the course of several thousand years. The Supreme Profound Hall existed in the Inner Palace, but a transmission formation was set up inside, so anyone from the Outer, Middle, and Inner Palaces could enter. It was just that Outer Palace disciples

could only enter the first floor, Middle Palace disciples could only enter the first two floors and only Inner Palace disciples were allowed to freely enter the third floor. The higher the floor, the higher the grade of the profound arts and profound techniques stored inside.

After passing the gatekeeper elder's imprint inspection, Yun Che followed Sikong Du and directly arrived at the third floor. This place was a field of silence, flowing with a mysterious and thick aura of profound energy. At first glance, everything in his line of sight was filled with all sorts of jade tablets and jade scrolls with inscriptions of profound arts and techniques.

“Inner Palace disciples may visit the

Supreme Profound Hall once every two months, and select up to two profound techniques or profound arts. And within one month, no matter whether or not you fully comprehend it, you must return it.”

Sikong Du took a few steps forward and stood in front of a jade rack, and said while signaling: “Yun Che, your luck is pretty good, the unique profound art of our Blue Wind Profound Palace, Supreme Profound Heart Formula, is still here, and it has not been borrowed by the other Inner Palace disciples. Entering the Inner Palace, the first thing you must get is this scroll! Cultivating in the Supreme Profound Heart Formula will allow your ability to control profound energy to greatly increase; once it reaches a sufficient

level, skipping levels to battle will be a breeze. Furthermore, a majority of our Blue Wind Profound Palace's unique profound techniques, also requires the Supreme Profound Heart Formula as a foundation to initiate. Other than this mandatory Supreme Profound Heart Formula, you can pick another sufficiently powerful profound technique."

Yun Che walked next to Sikong Du and picked up the 《Supreme Profound Heart Formula》. After using his profound energy to briefly ascertain the ability and properties, he put it down and started flipping through other jade tablets and jade scrolls. Sikong Du's eyebrows furrowed, but didn't say anything. Facing such an amount of profound

arts and profound techniques, yet only being able to select two, of course he'd have to choose and compare carefully. He thought of the time when he had first entered; he had been shocked so hard he didn't recover until a long time, and then spent an entire day excitedly choosing before leaving.

However, he believed that after Yun Che finished comparing, he would definitely return and select the  
《Supreme Profound Heart  
Formula》 .

Yun Che went through one jade rack after another. Every time he picked up a jade scroll, he would examine it briefly before hurriedly putting it down; the one he spent the most time on, only stayed in his

hand for five or six breaths worth of time. After an hour passed, Yun Che still had not made a selection.

“Yun Che, are you already bewildered to the point of being cross-eyed? It’s not a problem, look slowly. That year, I, your brother, spent an entire day searching.” Sikong Du said, very understanding of Yun Che’s situation.

Yun Che nodded and walked to the next jade rack. This jade rack was close to the east wall, and as he walked over, he noticed a bamboo basket, which was half of a man’s height, in the corner of his eye. The basket was completely stuffed with crumpled jade scrolls. These were obviously also jade scrolls, yet the aura they released were extremely

weak.

“Big Brother Sikong, what’s in here?” Yun Che said while pointing at the bamboo basket.

“Oh! Those are the profound techniques that Blue Wind Profound Palace had gathered through various means from the various places within the empire over these past few years. Some of the decently powerful ones would be placed in the first or second floor, and an extremely small portion are also placed in the third floor. And some run-of-the-mill profound techniques of the common folks that’s extremely poor in quality and power, are naturally placed in the first floor without anyone even bothering take



another look at them. Thus, a while ago, the elder who looked after Supreme Profound Hall had picked out those overly useless and ignored common folk profound skills. He had said before that they would all be thrown away or destroyed, seems that it was just tossed there and was forgotten about.

“Oh?” Yun Che responded with a sound, walked straight towards the bamboo basket and casually picked up the few jade scrolls that Sikong Du had called “the common folk’s run-of-the-mill profound techniques” and started flipping through them. After taking one up and putting it down, there came the second, then the third, the fourth...

As Yun Che walked towards the

bamboo basket, Sikong Du had a bad premonition. Considering his conduct before, Sikong Du had concluded, no matter how outrageous something was, that brat would definitely be able to do it.

Sure enough, Yun Che didn't let Sikong Du. Yun Che took two jade scrolls out of the bamboo basket and said: "Okay, I'll take these two books. Big Brother Sikong, let's go."

《Flame Fist》 , 《Fire Cloud Palm》 ...

Looking at the names of the two profound techniques, Sikong Du almost sprayed out a mouth of blood. He finally threw away his image of virtuosity, and started

yelling and cursing: “Yun Che!! Has water gotten into your head! You challenged Murong Yi, I can’t do anything about that, you selected a heavy sword that no one wants, I also put up with that... But what are you trying to do picking two useless? profound techniques!! Flame Fist and Fire Cloud Palm... damn! These two techniques are the lowest of the low! All you need is some rudimentary knowledge of a fire-attribute profound art to turn profound energy into fire. Even a three year old would only need one hour to fully master that! Also, their power is the trashiest of trash! You want to select this type of profound technique at the Supreme Profound Hall? A single cyan profound coin can buy you half a kilo of those at any random store!”

Yun Che quickly waved his hand, and smiled as he said: "Calm down, Big Brother Sikong. I just happen to have a fire-attribute profound art, so I selected two fire-attribute profound techniques. I think these are very fitting for me."

"Fitting your sister!" Sikong Du pointed behind him, and said: "Even though there aren't many fire-attribute profound techniques here, there are still several tens of them! The 《Disastrous Profound Flame》、《Sky Sun Finger》、《Soul Burning Fist》 over there... Which one of those wouldn't be a hundred times stronger than the ones in your hand!

"But I feel that these two are more suitable for me, because they look

easier to cultivate.”

Yun Che's response almost made Sikong Du faint in suffocation from being unable to breath.

“Now that I've selected a weapon and profound techniques, I'll trouble Big Brother Sikong to bring me to my living quarters.” Yun Che stored the [Flame Fist] and [Fire Cloud Palm], and said seriously.

The corner of Sikong Du's mouth twitched a little, and he didn't care to say even one more word. As Yun Che wished, he brought him out of the Supreme Profound Hall and directly led Yun Che to his living quarters.

Blue Wind Profound Palace

naturally wasn't stingy with their inner disciple's living quarters. When Yun Che saw the house in front of him, he couldn't but be a little shocked in his heart. The house was unexpectedly spacious and even came with a matching elegant courtyard. All the living facilities were readily available inside, even the beddings were made from fine silk.

Every single disciple of the Inner Palace were figures that even the Blue Wind Imperial Family would need to graciously invite, so there naturally wouldn't be any neglects.

"This is your living quarters. I live in courtyard number 41; if you need anything, you can come and find

me anytime. Also, your profound gathering room number in the Profound Gathering Tower is 101. Your body had been implanted with the corresponding Profound Imprint, and you are also the only one who is able to enter, so you may cultivate there anytime without worry. Furthermore, don't forget to head to the Inner Palace's Profound Pellet Pavilion every seven days to pick up ten medium Profound Recovering Pellets, three Bone Quenching Pellets, and two small Heaven Returning Pellets. Also, if you happen to encounter other Inner Palace Disciples in this Inner Palace, absolutely do not instigate any conflicts; because any single person here, is not someone you can afford to offend."

“The Profound Palace doesn’t have any restraints towards the freedom of Inner Palace disciples. You can freely move about in the Outer, Middle and Inner Palaces, and may also freely leave the Profound Palace at any time... If you wish to waste the cultivation time in the Inner Palace.”

After he said what needed to be conveyed, Sikong Du stayed no more, went ahead and left. He had now started to become even more confident, that either there was something wrong with Yun Che’s brain, or he was simply a madman.

After half a quarter of an hour, Sukong Du appeared before Qin Wushang. He was currently sitting directly facing Qin Wuyou, leisurely



enjoying tea.

“Is everything properly settled?”  
Qin Wushang asked while laughing.

“Yes, this disciple has already properly settled Yun Che down. Only...” Sikong Du had a muddled expression, and seemed as if he could not bear to say it out loud.

“Only what?” Qin Wushang gave a sidelong glance.

“At the Sky Weapon Pavilion, he selected that Overlord’s Colossal Sword.”

“Oh?” Qin Wushang had a surprised expression, and looked at Qin Wuyou questioningly: “That little boy specializes in heavy swords?”

“No!” Qin Wuyou shook his head, “To my knowledge, he actually doesn’t use any weapon. As for why he chose that heavy sword, this is truly curious. However, at least with my understanding of him, he is definitely not one of those simple people that would choose the Overlord’s Colossal Sword just because of its high grade. Oh right, Sikong Du, which two profound arts and profound techniques did he choose?”

“He didn’t select a profound art.” Sikong Du took a deep breath, and said with hunched eyebrows:

“Rather, he selected two profound techniques, which are respectively, [Flame Fist] and [Fire Cloud Palm].”

“Pfff!”

The tea in Qin Wushang and Qin Wuyou's mouths simultaneously sprayed out... onto each other's faces.

# Chapter 136: Great Way of the Buddha

The Inner Palace was very quiet. Upon entering the Inner Palace a long time ago, Yun Che still had not seen a single Inner Palace disciple. At this time, most of them were cultivating in the Profound Gathering Tower.

Yun Che stood in the small courtyard and found a level spot. After taking in a deep breath, he activated his profound energy and summoned the Overlord's Colossal Sword out of the Sky Poison Pearl.

With the Overlord's Colossal Sword that was close to two thousand

kilograms in hand, even though Yun Che had been prepared for that weight, it sunk down and almost fell out of his grip. He gritted his teeth tightly as both hands unwaveringly grabbed at the sword's hilt. But he was simply unable to lift the greatsword in its entirety.

“Evil Soul!”

After opening Evil Soul, Yun Che gathered all of his profound strength, gave a low growl, and lifted the Overlord's Colossal Sword. But after a mere breaths of time, half of the sword's body once again, ruthlessly smashed back into the ground. If it weren't for Yun Che's teeth clenching support, even the sword's hilt would fall as well.

“Phew...” Yun Che heaved a long sigh of relief after withdrawing the Overlord’s Colossal Sword. He wiped his sweat filled forehead and whispered to himself

“Why did you pick this heavy sword? Is it really just because that it is of a high grade?”

Jasmine’s voice suddenly rang out within his mind.

“Of course not.” Yun Che shook his head and replied seriously: “Before entering the Sky Weapon Pavilion, I had already decided to pick a sword; a light sword that most profound practitioners use. But when I got closer to this heavy sword, I suddenly had a fantastic sort of feeling. Then I believed that it was

the most suitable for me.”

“Why?” Jasmine asked. She rarely questioned something in detail, but it appeared as if she was extremely interested in why Yun Che had selected the heavy sword.

“Because this is a sword used to protect.” Yun Che slightly faced upwards as he slowly responded.

Jasmine: “...”

“What Sikong Du had said was not wrong. A heavy sword is a weapon that isn’t suitable for any profound practitioner and is only suitable to be on the battlefield. If I was purely a profound practitioner, I too, would not select this heavy sword. But, I am not.”

“Previously, I had also frantically pursued power and still do to this day. The reason why I hastily challenged Murong Yi is also to give myself sufficient pressure. But my purpose in the pursuit of power and my way of thinking now is completely different than before. Because I had gone through something that others would never be able to experience in their lifetime.

That was death... And reincarnation.

“The Profound Sky Continent is named the Profound Sky Continent because cultivating in the Profound is this land’s main objective; and probably even this world’s main objective. The level of profound



strength represented one's status and prestige in this world. The Profound Sky Continent possessed an innumerable number of profound practitioners. They used most of their life to vigorously chase after a higher level of profound strength. However, amongst the majority of them do not understand the reason why they pursue power... They simply chase, and simply wanted to reach an even higher height.”

“But I am not the same as them anymore. The current me is very clear in the reason why I pursue power. Yun Che closed his eyes and softly continued in a slow manner: “I want to properly protect all the people who are important to me by my side. Previously, I thought that

as long as I had the heart, and as long as I treated my companion well, it would give my important person security and happiness. But it was only after losing them time and time again, did I finally realize that in this place where the weak are preyed on by the strong, in this world that respected power, in order to give them a sense of security, I must get stronger myself. Strong enough to let people look up to me, enough to make people not dare to bully and humiliate me. Only in this way would I truly be able to protect and not lose anyone a second time.”

Jasmine: “...”

“Light swords are suitable for profound practitioners; they are

easy to use and easy to master. Not only are they agile, they vary in a multitude of ways. Since ancient times, they were the most perfect of weapons. But when it comes to protection, they would never compare with the heavy sword. When brandishing a light sword, one could at most protect three, or five... As for the brandishing of a heavy sword, even against an approaching thousand strong army, as long as the people I wish to protect are at the rear, they shouldn't even bother to think about harming them unless they obstruct my heavy sword and walk over my dead body. No only that, in regards to compatibility with profound practitioners, I do not completely approve of what Sikong Du had said... The reason why none

had picked the heavy sword is because it is hard to master the heavy sword; mastering the heavy sword is hundreds of thousands of times harder than a light sword. Becoming familiar with the heavy sword takes time and also takes hundreds of thousands worth of time. But, if there is a day in which one could swing a heavy sword as agilely as one would for a light sword...”

“Then, in this world, what could possibly withstand the might of the heavy sword?”

Yun Che said each word without hesitation. Ever since the first time he saw the Overlord’s Colossal Sword, that was the image he had in his mind. However, he was

completely aware of how difficult it was to accomplish this one bit, and how much time it required. One could choose the light sword and achieve mastery of the sword in twenty years. But in regards to someone else who chose the heavy sword, perhaps he would barely be able to control the heavy sword in twenty years. Moreover, in this twenty year time period, their profound strength cultivation might even be implicated. Against an opponent on the same level, there was a extremely low chance of winning, and they might even be looked down upon. As a result, practitioners who chose the heavy sword were as rare as phoenix feathers and qilin horns.

Nevertheless, Yun Che stubbornly

wanted to do this. Perhaps there was an important additional reason; perhaps he unconsciously did not want to choose the same option that the majority of profound practitioners chose to take.

After Yun Che finished speaking, Jasmine also did not reply for a long time. It was only right when Yun Che was about to give the Overlord's Colossal Sword another go, did Jasmine's voice faintly come out: "The reason why you selected the heavy sword... is exactly the same... as brother's..."

Yun Che's movements halted as he softly asked: "Your... brother? He also used the heavy sword?"

Jasmine's voice was filled with

emotion; Yun Che could basically imagine her red-eyed appearance, because the word “brother”, was the most warm and soft in her heart, yet also the one with the most deep-seated pain: “In the very beginning, brother’s weapon of choice, was also the light sword. After, he put down the light sword and picked up the heavy sword, because brother said... The heavy sword, is a weapon for slaughter, an overbearing weapon, but even more so a weapon for protection; he wanted to use the heavy sword to protect me, protect mother, and protect our homeland...”

“In order to train with the heavy sword, brother took a great risk to cultivate the forbidden book  
《Great Way of the Buddha》, and

after experiencing many untold hardships, he found the Prison God Sirius' legacy, and obtained

《Prison God Sirius' Tome》.

Afterwards, with great perseverance, brother successfully completely cultivated the Great Way of the Buddha and Prison God Sirius' Tome. When he carried the heavy sword on the battlefield, with only one swing of the sword, tens of thousands of soldiers would be completely eradicated.”

“At that time, what I liked to do most was watch the image of brother brandishing the heavy sword on the battlefield; brother was the most handsome, the most powerful, and he gave me and mother an indescribable feeling of safety and reliance. If brother was



there, even if the sky was falling, we didn't need to be afraid even a bit, because brother would use his heavy sword, and always protect us, the ones behind him."

Jasmine's voice became lower and lower, until it finally became a distinct tremble.

Because her brother, had died in the end... From within her description, one could tell her brother was an unparalleled strong existence, possibly so powerful it was beyond Yun Che's realm of comprehension. Jasmine didn't actually say how her brother died, and Yun Che did not dare to ask, because that was probably the most tragic memory in her heart.

“Giving up the light sword and picking up the heavy sword in order to protect those around him. Your brother was definitely a very mighty person.” Yun Che said with a sigh: “If it is possible, I really want to meet him.”

Jasmine didn't speak for a long while, appearing to be stabilizing her emotions. After a long time, she calmly asked: “You, are you really going to continue using the heavy sword in the future?”

“Since I have already selected it, of course I wouldn't change my mind or regret it.” Yun Che said without any hesitation. “Moreover, I possess the Evil God's Profound Veins. Under the same level, I can exert a stronger force; controlling the

heavy sword is much easier for me compared to other profound practitioners.”

“Good...” Jasmine answered, and after a brief pause, said simply: “Then, starting from today, I will teach you the ‘Great Way of the Buddha!’”

“Great Way of the Buddha? The one you just mentioned, the one your brother cultivated?” Yun Che was shocked.

“That’s right; it is precisely the forbidden book my brother cultivated in order to control the heavy sword!” Jasmine said coldly: “The reason it is known as the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, is because it is just like the ‘Evil God’s

Secret Arts' in your body; a divine  
Profound Art that belonged to a  
True God of the Primordial Era! It  
came from a primordial true god  
once called the 'Rage God'. What's  
different is that the Evil God's  
Secret Arts exists in the profound  
veins and do not need to be  
cultivated but the Great Way of the  
Buddha affects your blood,  
meridians, muscles, skin, and hair...  
and actually has not even the  
slightest of relationships with  
profound veins or even profound  
strength.

“Similar to the Evil God's Secret  
Arts... Divine profound art?” Yun  
Che was shocked in his heart. The  
Evil God's Secret Arts' immense  
power goes without saying; as of  
now he could only open the first

gate, and under the condition of being in the tenth level of the Nascent Profound realm, he was able to easily defeat Feng Yue, who was in the third level of the True Profound realm. Since the “Great Way of the Buddha” was also a divine profound art, its power shouldn’t be any less than the “Evil God’s Secret Arts”?

“After the death of the primordial true god, even though no one knew how the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’ had been circulated, it has still become a forbidden existence. Since it is a divine profound art, it simply cannot be cultivated by humans. Over the course of countless years, the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’ has passed through many hands; an uncountable number of peerless

experts who relied on their own profound strength to reach the pinnacle of existence, have ultimately exploded to death because of their attempts to forcefully cultivate the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’. The strength of gods, is not something mortals can withstand.”

Yun Che: “...”

“Only until later, the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’ vanished from the world, and the legends regarding it had also began to fade gradually. Only until one day, brother chanced upon it in a mystical, dangerous land. And his discovery of the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, is also a secret untold of to others. In this world, only brother and I knew

about it; not even father and mother were ever aware of it.”

Jasmine didn't lie, the “Great Way of the Buddha” was a secret between her and her brother; other than the two of them, no one else knew about the reappearance of the “Great Way of the Buddha”. After Jasmine's brother died, the “Great Way of the Buddha” only existed within Jasmine's heart.

She had never thought of cultivating “Great Way of the Buddha”, much less passing it on to someone. She actually intended to never tell anyone about it. Rather, she wanted the “Great Way of the Buddha” to forever stay in the depths of her soul with fond memories of her brother.

But Jasmine kept seeing the visage of her older brother on Yun Che's body... and had even felt a trace of her older brother from him... The first time, was in the Flame Dragon's Den, when he used half his blood without hesitation to save her... When she vaguely regained her consciousness and woke up, she thought that she was looking at her brother...

And when Yun Che selected the heavy sword, then explained the reason why he picked it, she felt as if someone had heavily pounded at her heart as it trembled for a very long time...

She knew why she really wished to teach Yun Che this forbidden "Great Way of the Buddha"...



Because she wanted to see the image of her brother brandishing the heavy sword on Yun Che... as if she was creating a scene that could only be seen in her dreams.

“Since the “Great Way of the Buddha” cannot be cultivated by mortals and gods no longer exist in this world, how was it possible for your brother to successfully cultivate it?” Yun Che asked, while interrupting her thoughts.

“Because he is like you, someone who inherited a primordial true god’s power... That primordial true god was known as ‘Star God Sirius’. Both his profound veins and blood contained the true god’s mark and thus, he was about to bear the weight of the ‘Great Way of the

Buddha's' power. However, the 'Great Way of the Buddha' has a total of twelve stages yet the sixth stage was brother's cultivation limit. Continuing any further would result in the same exploding death that the previous others had futilely attempted to do.

"And you, with the Evil God's Profound Veins, should be the same as brother, and can cultivate until the sixth stage of the 'Great Way of the Buddha'! And as long as you cultivate to the first stage of the 'Great Way of the Buddha', you can easily control this heavy sword."

Each and every line Jasmine had said, shocked Yun Che. He swallowed a mouthful of saliva and asked with a somewhat

unconvinced tone: “You’re saying.... just the first stage of the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, will allow me to master this Overlord’s Colossal Sword? This heavy sword is not an ordinary heavy sword, it weighs one thousand nine hundred and fifty kilograms!”

And what Jasmine said after, almost made Yun Che kneel on the spot.

“Hmph, of course I know the weight of this heavy sword.” Jasmine said coldly: “But, if you were to successfully cultivate the first stage of the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, under the condition of no increase in profound energy at all, it could increase your arm strength by one thousand five hundred kilos! The second stage, will be able to

increase your arm strength by four thousand kilos; and the third stage, ten thousand kilos.... Just the first stage, would be enough for you! If you reach the second stage, wielding this heavy sword in your hands would be no different than a light sword in an ordinary profound practitioner's hands.

“Also, even if you don't use the heavy sword; just with the addition of arm strength, and without activating ‘Evil Soul’, there will be simply be no one who can be your match within the same rank. With the support of ‘Evil Soul’, it'll also be enough to defeat opponents half a great realm above you!”

# Chapter 137: Sound Transmission Jade

“Is it really that amazing?” Yun Che said in shock. The first stage of cultivation could already increase one’s arm strength by one thousand five hundred kilos, and the third stage increases it by ten thousand kilos.... Then if one reaches the highest twelfth stage, couldn’t they split the heavens and earth with a single fist?

“Raising one’s strength is only one of the effects of the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’. If it was only capable of this much, how would it be worthy of the title “Forbidden Heavenly Tome”. After cultivating

the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, no matter the inside or the outside, your body would be completely reborn. Not only will your physical body’s strength increase by a great degree, the extent of your physical body’s toughness will also greatly soar. At that time, even if you don’t protect yourself with profound energy, it would still be very difficult for others to harm your body. The higher the realm, the tougher the body; after reaching a high enough realm, your body, veins, organs, or even the most fragile of all, eyes, would become as tenacious as fine steel.”

“At the same time, your body will possess an extremely strong power of self-regeneration; the higher the realm, the greater the power. After

Big Brother cultivated the “Great Way of the Buddha” to the sixth stage, for grievous wounds that others would need two months under the nourishment of profound energy to fully heal, he only required two or three days to completely recover. Big Brother had even told me before that if one can cultivate it to the seventh stage, even if they were bodily handicapped: for example: broken arms, physical impairments, or even blindness... I could all can be self-regenerated. It’s just that the sixth stage was my brother’s reachable limit. The seventh stage is, after all, a realm that he could only hope for but never reach.”

Yun Che became more shocked as he listened on; he naturally

wouldn't doubt what Jasmine had said. But he had never imagined that in this world, there actually existed such an incomparably frightening and unbelievable profound art. If these words didn't come from Jasmine's mouth, even if he chose to believe them, he would only treat it as a fantasy.

“If you are able to successfully cultivate “Great Way of the Buddha”, that would be equal to you having the Evil God's Profound Veins, and the physical body of the Rage God. No matter the Evil God's power, or the Rage God's power, what you have experienced and heard is only a tiny corner of the iceberg. The powers left by the True Gods of the Primordial Era are much more formidable than what



you can imagine. I granted you the Evil God's Profound Veins... The biggest reason was to save my own life. As for teaching you how to cultivate the 'Great Way of the Buddha'... I only want you to never give up the heavy sword, and to never forget your original intention for choosing the heavy sword!"

"Yes!" Yun Che nodded without any hint of hesitation as excitement surged in his heart... If the "Great Way of the Buddha" was really as frightening as Jasmine had described, there was no reason for him to refuse at all.

"You had battled with that Feng Yue earlier, and is still somewhat exhausted. Rest today for now. Revitalize your condition, head to

the Profound Gathering Tower tomorrow, and then start cultivating the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’!”

.....

One night passed....

And the matter of Yun Che’s arranged battle against Murong Yi of the Inner Palace had also spread throughout the entire Blue Wind Profound Palace; almost everyone knew about it.

“Hah! A new disciple that had just entered the Palace actually wants to challenge Murong Yi three months later? Did his head get squeezed by a door or kicked by a mule?”

“Cough cough, this brother, what

you are saying is not right; that Yun Che's head was obviously squeezed by a door and kicked by a mule at the same time!"

"That said, what kind of cultivation does that Yun Che have... Hah? Nascent Profound Realm? Damn! Challenging the True Profound Realm rank nine Murong Yi at Nascent Profound Realm? And moreover, proclaiming to let Murong Yi do whatever he wanted if he lost? You're not joking, are you?"

"I heard that Palace Chief Qin personally testified to this matter, and even said that he would personally go see this arranged battle three month later. What's more ridiculous is, for the sake of

‘fairness’, Palace Chief Qin actually allowed Yun Che to directly enter the Inner Palace for these three months, and enjoy the same cultivation conditions as Murong Yi!”

As this matter was still uproaring within the entire Blue Wind Profound Palace, news that made one spray even more rice came.

“Big news! I heard that Yun Che had already picked a weapon from the Sky Weapon Pavilion and actually chose that Overlord’s Colossal Sword that no one had even touched for who knows many years.”

“It’s definitely because that heavy sword is an Earth Profound

Weapon, so he just choose it based on the grade. Tsk tsk, this clown.”

“More news! Yun Che choose two profound skills in the third floor of Supreme Profound Hall; they’re respectively 《Flame Fist》 and 《Fire Cloud Palm》 .”

“Pffft~~~”

.....

A Nascent Profound Realmer challenged Murong Yi, chose the Overlord’s Colossal Sword as weapon, and chose two profound skills that couldn’t be any more trashier....

In conclusion, Yun Che very naturally became the “Biggest Clown in the History of the Blue

Wind Profound Palace” in the Profound Palace disciples’ mouths.

And at this time, this biggest clown had just woken up from the big bed in the Inner Palace’s living quarters, and was actually awakened by the sound of door knocking. This big bed was really too comfortable; if he had not been woken up by the sound, he probably would’ve satisfiedly slept until almost noon.

“Who is it?” Yun Che got up, and said while stretching. He speculated that the person outside would definitely be Sikong Du because, within the Inner Palace, the only person who would come find him could only be Sikong Du.

Contrary to his expectations, a girl’s

voice came from the outside.

“Junior Brother Yun, it’s me.”

“Senior Sister Xueruo!” Yun Che hastily fixed his clothing, jumped off the bed, and opened the door. Outside the door, Lan Xueruo stood there with lively charm; her blue attire fluttered as she wore soft breezy smile on her face.

“Senior Sister, why did you come here?” Seeing Lan Xueruo, Yun Che was naturally joyful. However, he remembered Qin Wuyou saying that Lan Xueruo was a disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace’s Middle Palace in name, so why would she come to the Inner Palace?”

Lan Xuerou smiled softly, and said:  
“Instructor Qin told me that you were here, and even temporarily gave me the qualifications to enter the Inner Palace. Junior Brother Yun, first of all, let me congratulate you on becoming an official disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace. Only, I didn’t imagine that so many things would actually happen yesterday. For you to defeat Feng Yue, I am not surprised in the slightest; but I had never thought that because of Murong Ye, Murong Yi would actually deal with you by striking out, and even forced you to arrange a battle with him three months later... This incident, the Blue Wind Profound Palace from the top to bottom had all heard the news. Discussions about you are everywhere right now; moreover,



they are essentially all voices of mockery.”

After she finished speaking, trepidation was revealed on Lan Xueruo’s face. Yun Che let out a laugh, and said: “Senior Sister, no need to worry. I am not the kind of person who would let himself suffer losses.”

“Mn, I also understand that Junior Brother Yun is not the kind of person who is insolent and arrogant without any sense of propriety. And so, even though challenging Murong Yi is very exaggerated, I actually don’t feel too worried about it.” Lan Xueruo made a slight smile and took out a piece of yellow colored jade and a stack of talisman paper: “The reason why I’m here is

to give you these; this is your Sound Transmission Jade. The Sound Transmission Imprint is already set. Instructor Qin Wuyou's Sound Transmission Imprint as well as mine are also added in. And these, are thirty sheets of Hundred Mile Sound Transmission Talismans and five sheets of Thousand Mile Sound Talismans; if any urgent matter arises in the future and you need to seek me and Instructor Qin, you just need to transmit sound to us using the Sound Transmission Talisman."

Yun Che received them and carefully stored them away. As a matter of fact, if Lan Xuero didn't come and give these to him, soon enough, he would've also gotten a piece of Sound Transmission Jade

himself. After all, it was something that could transmit sound over a distance of hundreds or even thousands kilometers; it really was too convenient.

Lan Xueruo examined Yun Che's room, and said with a light smile: "Even though I've been in the Blue Wind Profound Palace for a while as well, it's still the first time I've ever entered the living quarters of the Inner Palace disciples. It really is unexpectedly extravagant; better than the Middle Palace disciple's living area for who knows how many times. Just this big bed, it wouldn't even be a problem for two or three people to sleep on it."

As she said till here, Lan Xueruo's voice suddenly froze. Unbeknownst

to what she had suddenly recalled, two touches of red glow emerged lightly onto her face.

Yun Che's gaze blurred as he gently looked into Lan Xuero's eyes:

"Even though the bed is very big, I didn't sleep very well because I kept on feeling that something is missing in this emptiness... Senior Sister, did you feel a little unaccustomed when sleeping last night?"

In the ten days during their travel toward the Blue Wind Profound Palace, they had always shared the same bed and slept together. Ten days, was enough for a dubious habit to quietly develop... What Yun Che had said, was blatantly asking her: Are you not accustomed to

sleeping without me to keep you company?

This question of Yun Che's, directly struck the insides of Lan Xueruo's heart. Because, she still had not been relieved from the emptiness and feeling of loss in her heart before sleeping and waking up. Her expression became slightly flustered, and she shook her head in a somewhat discomposed demeanor: "In my own home.... Of course I would very accustomed. I... I'll be leaving first, I still have important matters to do, and won't disturb your cultivation anymore. Every minute of cultivation time in the Profound Gathering Tower is valuable; at least, in these three months, you need to work hard."

After she finished speaking, as Lan Xueruo was preparing to leave, Yun Che caught the hastiness within her complexion... Clearly, she really was going to busy with something.

“Senior Sister.” Yun Che went up to stop her, and asked with concern: “What are you going to busy with? Can you tell me? Maybe I could be of help.”

“It’s alright.” Lan Xueruo slightly smiled as she shook her head, hesitated for a second, and said with a whisper: “It’s just that my father’s body has always been ill. When I went to visit this morning, I discovered that father’s condition turned for the worse again, so I’m going to go invite a doctor back.”

Even though he didn't know what Lan Xueruo's identity is, to be able to influence Qin Wushang who was the Vice Palace Chief of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, her background must be extraordinary. Having such a background, yet she needs to personally go invite a doctor; this made Yun Che unable to hold back, and he asked while slightly knitting his brow: "Senior Sister, there's no need to find anyone, let me accompany you to see your father. Even though I'm still quite young, I am a authentic genius doctor. You've also seen my medicinal skills, if you bring me, your father's illness will definitely be quickly cured."

Lan Xueruo froze for a bit. Then, her face revealed a slightly strained

expression. She shook her head once again, and reluctantly smiled: "It's okay, my father's illness is from constant overwork, and it has already been like this for many years. Over these years, it has always been that doctor who nursed him. It would be good for Junior Brother Yun to stay here without worry, and properly cultivate. There's nothing to worry about on my side."

"After everything is completely settled in my family, I'll come visit you more often."

Lan Xueruo's charming eyes fixated onto Yun Che for a second. Then along with a smile, she turned around and left.



After Lan Xueruo left, Yun Che stood in the same place. He slightly knitted his brows and remained speechless for a long time.

Because from within Lan Xueruo's gaze, he saw many things that he didn't want to see... Anxious, worry, hesitation, and there was even a bit of melancholy.

Senior Sister, what exactly happened in your family? Yun Che muttered to himself in his heart. But it was obvious that Lan Xueruo didn't actually want him to be involved with her family matters.

He also didn't plan on snooping around for Lan Xueruo's background. He was waiting for that one day, when Lan Xueruo

could completely open the window of her heart to him and voluntarily tell him everything he wanted to know. But at least up until now, what he could be completely positive about, was that even if Lan Xueruo was concealing something from him, or if her actions up until now was for the purpose of “contriving” something from him.... She definitely wouldn't do anything that would try to harm him. After all, her gentle and kind nature would never change.

# Chapter 138:

## Heavenly Profound Ranking

The Profound Gathering Tower was situated right at the center of the Inner Palace. Its existence could be seen from anywhere in the Inner Palace; hence, Yun Che did not need anyone to guide him, and was able to find the entrance to the Profound Gathering Tower easily.

The Inner Palace's profound energy was already especially rich; however, the moment he stepped into the Profound Gathering Tower, profound energy that was several times richer than before blew

across his body, exciting Yun Che's Fifty four Profound Entrances and caused them to spontaneously expand and contract.

“There is indeed a natural profound pulse beneath this Profound Gathering Tower. No wonder this place was where the country's Imperial Profound Palace was situated. If a sect were to settle down here, within three hundred years, a small sect would definitely develop into a renowned and mighty large sect.” Jasmine said.

Yesterday, Sikong Du told Yun Che that his Profound Cultivation Room was the 101st room, which was the first room on the tenth floor. The moment Yun Che was about to walk forward, he suddenly noticed

densely packed names on the right wall. A dense aura of profound energy surrounded those names. Evidently, the names were inscribed with profound energy, and could be altered at any time.

“Heavenly... Profound... Ranking?” Looking at the three big words at the very top, Yun Che’s spirit shook. He went closer to the wall, and started to inspect the names on the wall seriously. On the wall was exactly a hundred names. In other words, they were the names of the hundred disciples in the Inner Palace who were also a part of the Inner Palace’s Heavenly Profound Rankings that everyone in Blue Wind Profound knew of.

Yun Che started looking from the

bottom to the top and his eyes swept across every single name on the wall. These hundred people, were super elites among the countless elites in the Blue Wind Profound Palace. They were existences that all Profound Palace disciples looked up to, and were all renowned figures in all of Blue Wind Imperial City.

Although there were one hundred people there, the difference in their profound strengths were very small. From the seventy eighth to a hundredth place, their profound strengths were at the eighth level of the True Profound Realm. From the forty first to seventy seventh place, their profound strengths were at the ninth level of the True Profound Realm, and from the fourth to

fortieth place, their profound strengths were all at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm.

On the seventy third placed name, Yun Che found Murong Yi's name:

Murong Yi: Twenty Years Old. True Profound Realm Ninth Level.

On the thirty third placed name, Yun Che found Sikong Du's name.

Sikong Du: Twenty Years Old. True Profound Realm Tenth Level.

The age of these two people, confirmed that this would be their last year in the Blue Wind Profound Palace. And among this hundred Inner Palace disciples, their ages were mostly nineteen and twenty years old. After all, in the same set

of conditions, the level of profound strength was usually a direct ratio to the disciple's age. From the forth to hundredth place, only two people were below the age of nineteen. Both of them were at the age of eighteen, and they were both ranked at the ninety sixth and ninety ninth... After all, the Heavenly Profound Ranking was precarious, and the ranks could always be replaced by others whenever.

Yun Che's gaze then landed on the first three names.

Third Place: Fang Feilong. Twenty Years Old. Spirit Profound Realm First Level.

Second Place: Feng Bufan. Twenty



Years Old. Spirit Profound Realm  
First Level.

From third place onwards, the strengths suddenly leapt into a whole new level. From the True Profound Realm, the three disciples crossed into the Spirit Profound Realm. Even though, by simply comparing the levels, they were only a single level higher than the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, the difference in strength from crossing into a whole new realm cannot be compared to the difference from simply gaining a single level.

When he saw the first place, his eyes were fixated there for a long time.

First Place: Fen Juechen. Seventeen  
Years Old. Spirit Profound Realm  
Second Level.

Yun Che: “!!!!”

Looking at the name of the very top  
position of the Profound Sky  
Ranking, Yun Che was in a state of  
turmoil. he was not shocked by how  
this person’s profound strength was  
a level higher than the second and  
third place, rather... The age of this  
Fen Juechen, was actually only  
seventeen years old!!

He was the only person out of this  
entire Heavenly Profound Ranking  
who was under eighteen years old,  
and, he actually took first place on  
the Heavenly Profound Ranking!

A seventeen year old who was at the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm!!

What shocking talent. What a monstrous genius. At the age of only seventeen, he actually reached the Spirit Profound Realm!

Although his profound strength was only a level higher than the second and third place, his shocking age, proved that his talent was much, much deeper than the disciples who took the second and third places. The publicly acknowledged number one genius in New Moon City, Xiao Luocheng, who reached the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm at the age of sixteen, was not even worthy of being his attendant.

Wait a minute... Fen Juechen... Fen?

Yun Che's brows slightly twitched. According to what he knew, the surname 'Fen' could only belong to the Burning Heaven Clan. Only the members of the Burning Heaven Clan would have the surname 'Fen'. But, why would a member of the Burning Heaven Clan enter the Blue Wind Profound Palace? Burning Heaven Clan's inherited arts, heritage, and resources... were all much better than Blue Wind Profound Palace. Putting aside the fact that these greatly attached clan disciples would not betray their clan in their entire life, even if Blue Wind Profound Palace were to hand out invitations personally, disciples of the Burning Heaven Clan wouldn't even pay any mind to Blue

Wind Profound Palace at all.

Unless the surname 'Fen', did not only belong to the members of the Burning Heaven Clan?

Right at this time, at the entrance of the Profound Gathering Tower, two people entered. On the right was a young man dressed completely in white. His handsome face revealed a hint of femininity, and the scattering gaze from his half-opened eyes emitted a cold chill. When he saw Yun Che, he frivolously whistled: "Whew~! I actually see an unfamiliar face. Little brother, are you new here?"

Yun Che gave a sidelong glance, and was shocked to see Murong Yi standing beside this man in white.

And when Murong Yi saw him, he was startled for a second, before laughing loudly in disdain: “Hahahaha. And here I thought who it was. Isn’t this the little mouse who declared that he wanted to challenge me? Hahahaha.”

“Oh?” The man in white rolled his eyes, his interest grew as he looked at Yun Che. “So, you’re that Yun Che? Tsk tsk. You actually have a good complexion, but it’s a pity that you don’t have a good brain. I really wonder if your brain was damaged when your mother gave birth to you.”

The profound energy coming from the man in white was evidently stronger than Murong Yi’s. And it was not just by a little, rather, it was

comparable to Sikong Du's. Even though he looked handsome, he gave Yun Che a very uncomfortable feeling. And, his words were even extremely vicious, causing Yun Che to frown. Killing intent began to rise in his heart.

“Feng Baiyi, watch your words!”

Sikong Du walked in from the Profound Gathering Tower's entrance with a sullen face.

Feng Baiyi? Hearing this name, Yun Che quickly recalled his Heavenly Profound Ranking... thirty sixth place! He was three ranks higher than Sikong Du.

Feng Baiyi turned around, and looked at Sikong Du with a smile.

“Yo, isn’t this brother Sikong? I heard you brought in a little mouse from outside. Tsk tsk, you have to keep a good watch of it. If a mouse were to run about in the Inner Palace, we will be thoroughly disgusted. Brother Murong, don’t you agree?”

Murong Yi grinned, and said while shaking his head: “Speaking of this little mouse entering our Inner Palace, I’m greatly responsible for it as well. Haah, if I knew this would happen, I would have immediately crippled this little mouse’s limbs yesterday... Since it have already become like this, Brother Sikong, heed my Brother Feng’s advice, and keep a tight leash on your little mouse. Prevent him from running around and polluting our eyes and



mood. Hahahaha... Brother Feng, let us go.”

Giving a last disdainful look at Sikong Du and Yun Che, Murong Yi and Feng Baiyi laughed loudly as they entered the Profound Gathering Tower.

Sikong Du heaved out a long sigh, and forcefully suppressed his anger. He then walked over to Yun Che, and said calmly: “Don’t mind them. Feng Baiyi’s and Murong Yi’s families have a marital relationship and usually, they sing to the same tune.”

Yun Che laughed lightly, showing that he did not mind. Then, his gaze moved towards the Heavenly Profound Ranking, and asked with a

skeptical expression: “Big brother Sikong, what’s the situation regarding the Heavenly Profound Ranking’s first place, Fen Juechen? The surname ‘Fen’, doesn’t it belong to only the Burning Heaven Clan?”

Sikong Du nodded, and replied: “That’s right. Fen Juechen, is indeed a member of the Burning Heaven Clan. And, he’s also the youngest son of the current Burning Heaven Clan Master, Fen Duanhun.”

“Mn?” Yun Che glanced at Sikong Du with an expression full of shock.

“It’s just as you thought. Currently, Fen Juechen has left the Burning Heaven Clan.” Sikong Du slowly explained: “Fen Juechen’s talent is

absolutely frightening. He's a worthy genius, but at the same time, he's an extremely arrogant genius. He never tolerates failure. And a year ago, he lost terribly to his brother, Fen Juebi, and was humiliated. Because of his anger, he left the Burning Heaven Clan, and swore that he would never return until he defeated Fen Juebi. Even when his father persuaded him, it was of no use. Of course, this kind of absence does not consider as a form of betrayal. As one of the sons of the clan master, there shouldn't be any betrayal to talk about to begin with."

"Then why did he enter the Blue Wind Profound Palace?" Yun Che asked curiously.

Sikong Du glanced at Yun Che, and said: “Looks like, you really don’t understand the current stormy situation in the Blue Wind Imperial Palace.”

“Blue Wind Imperial Palace? How are they related?”

“The reason why Fen Juechen enter the Blue Wind Profound Palace, was the third prince’s idea of forming a good relationship with the Burning Heaven Clan, by allowing Fen Juechen to cultivate in this Profound Gathering Tower.” Sikong Du sighed, and then explained simply: “Currently, the Blue Wind Emperor is bedridden, and there’s rumors that he won’t be able to last another three years. To fight over the emperor’s seat, the crown

prince Cang Lin, and the third prince Cang Shuo, went to seek help from the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan respectively. So as to gain more support from the Burning Heaven Clan, Cang Shuo obviously had to do all he could to get into their good books. Haah, that basically sums up everything. Anyone with a discerning eye is able to see that, Blue Wind Imperial Palace, and even the entire Blue Wind Empire, is about to undergo a great change. Even this Inner Palace, is being drawn into the change that's about to come... The second place, Feng Bufan, and third place Fang Feilong, are backing the crown prince and third prince respectively. Currently, they're acting rather arrogant as well, so it's best that you don't mess with

those two for now. And you can't afford to mess with them anyway."

"..." Yun Che pondered for a moment, and said: "If that's the case, Big brother Sikong, the crown prince and third prince must have tried to rope you in as well, right?"

Sikong Du nodded, and replied: "In this year, I have received dozens of invitations of different kinds from the crown prince and third prince, but I had been finding excuses to turn them all down... After graduating from this place, it would no longer be possible for me to stay in this imperial city. I should be returning to New Moon City the moment that happens. If there ever comes a time you enter the Inner Palace, you will also experience

receiving these sorts of invitations. When that time comes, what choice you make, will be up to you to decide.”

“Go cultivate. Three months worth of time, isn’t that short, and isn’t that long either. You gain a sliver of hope for every second you fight for.” Sikong Du looked deeply into Yun Che’s eyes, and then entered straight into the Profound Gathering Tower.”

Yun Che also followed after him from behind, and headed directly towards the tenth floor of the Profound Gathering Tower. The 101st Cultivation Profound Room Sikong Du spoke of, was just right in front of him.

# Chapter 139: What is the Great Way

The profound room in the Profound Gathering Tower was much bigger than Yun Che expected and it was surrounded by a strong profound energy seal. When entering the room, it felt like an entire new world compared to the outside. The atmosphere and sound from the outside could not be heard in the room.

The atmosphere of the profound energy aura was also saturated to a shocking extent.

A red figure shook in front of Yun Che and slowly, Jasmine appeared.



She eyed the environment and gradually nodded: “Not bad, this place is completely isolated from the outside world. We aren’t affected by any sound or movement from the outside. It’s an exceptionally good place to cultivate.”

“After three months, it will be your arranged match with Murong Yi. If you rely on all fifty four open profound entrances of your Evil God’s Profound Veins, and train hard on improving your profound strength in this three months, with the aid of Evil Soul and power of the Phoenix Flame, you might barely beat Murong Yi. However, while training your profound strength within these three months, if you are able to achieve the first

stage of cultivation of the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, at that time, it would not be a case of where you can barely beat him. Instead, it would be a crushing, absolute victory that transcends ranks!”

“However, ‘Great Way of the Buddha’ is an extremely difficult skill to cultivate. If one’s comprehension ability is insufficient, merely understanding the skill would take huge amounts of time. Even an absolute genius like my brother took an entire thirty three days to be able to initially comprehend it. Therefore, for you to obtain the first stage of cultivation for the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’ in just three months might indeed be a difficult task, but it’s not impossible.

Initially at the grounds of the Phoenix Trial, you were able to bypass the initial stages of the power of the Phoenix's flame and forcefully understand the fifth and sixth stage of the World Ode of the Phoenix's Flame Techniques. This proved that your comprehension ability isn't weak."

As Jasmine finished, she placed her tender hands behind as her petite figure stood upright in front of Yun Che. There was coldness behind the extreme cuteness on her face and her tone was aged: "Now, sit on the floor, close your eyes. I will imprint the profound formula of the Great Way of the Buddha's first stage into your mind. How long it takes for you to actually comprehend and find out the methods of cultivation

is based on your level of comprehension.”

Yun Che sat down in the centre of the Profound Room, calmed himself down and closed his eyes.

Jasmine went forward, held out her youthful thin finger, and gently poked Yun Che on the head.

In the silence, the profound formula of the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’s first stage was imprinted in Yun Che’s mind.

When he intentionally interacted with the profound formula, Yun Che entered a state extended confusion. Even though the profound formula was so clear in his mind, it still seemed to be so

vague. Whether he used his heart, his concentration, his profound strength..... No matter what method he used to try to understand the profound formula, whenever he touched upon it, he felt that it was a clearly visible yet untouchable mist. The more he probed, the more vague and scattered it became.

Yun Che's heartbeat and breathing became lighter and slower. It was as though he had become more calm. His five senses were completely isolated from the outside world. All of his conscious focused on capturing the profound formula. However, the more he focused, the more vague it became..... He felt that his mind was in the center of the vast ocean, and he did not know

what to do in order to find the shore.

Then, an elderly voice suddenly rang inside his mind.

“Sixteen year old youngster, you, do you really have the ability to comprehend the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’?”

The voice did not come from his ears. Instead, it came from deep inside his soul.

“Yes.” Yun Che replied in his mind.

“Then, what is your understanding?” The elderly voice continued to ask.

“I desire strength. The strength that exceeds everyone. The strength to

protect all those I want to protect.  
That is what I have comprehended.”  
Yun Che replied truthfully.

“Very good.” The elderly voice revealed some admiration: “That is indeed the comprehension the deepest part of your soul has. You are truthful enough. However, if you really want to practice the ‘Great Way of the Buddha’, you must first understand what is the ‘Great Way’, and what is ‘Buddha’. Then, can I ask you to tell me what your understanding of the ‘Great Way’ and ‘Buddha’ is?”

What is the Great Way? What is Buddha?

Yun Che thought about it long and hard, before slowly saying: “The

Great Way, is the fundamental law that governs heaven and earth. The Way, exists within nature and all beings. It exists in every space and time between heaven and earth,”

“A person is born as a baby before he grows up. If he were a normal person, his lifespan would not exceed a hundred. And that is the way. The fact that water can extinguish fire, grass is unable to grow taller than a tree, the world having not just earth, but also the skies and the seas... These are the way! It is the most fundamental law that governs this world. When these ways come together, they become the base of this world, supplementing the contents of the world. It causes the world to have law and order, allowing the world to



function based on the 'way'.

"That is my understanding of the Great Way."

"As for Buddha, it is the symbol that represents the epitome of kindness, benevolence, forgiveness and similar qualities.

"Heheheheh." The elderly voice laughed calmly: "Young one, at your age, you already have such a comprehension of the 'Great Way'. This is rare. How about I bring you on a journey through your life?"

Yun Che: "!?"

The darkness in front of Yun Che suddenly vanished and was gradually replaced by a vividly colored image.

It was a place of scenic mountains and rivers. The grass was green and the river flowed noisily. A kind looking man who was nearly fifty carried a medicine basket and walked along the small river, until he saw a small baby by the river. The baby looked to be not more than a few days old and was completely naked other than an intricate ornament hung on his neck.....

“Master.....” Seeing the man walk towards the baby and carefully picking him up, Yun Che uttered out loud.

The elderly voice rang again: “That is Azure Cloud Continent. This scene was from the third day of your birth. What is the way you

have encountered?”

Yun Che remained silent for a while before answering: “The way, is the rule..... I have been abandoned, but I did not die there. I was fated to meet Master. These are all the doings of the Great Way..... These are all the ‘way’.”

“Very good.”

The scene in front of him promptly changed, and soon, what he saw was the front door of Floating Cloud City’s Xiao Clan. He was walking out of the door with a rigid expression. He was suffering from insults, looks of disdain, sneers and gloating from others.

That was the scene from when he

was expelled from Xiao Clan. Even now, he still clearly remembered the rage he had in his heart, and the worry he had for his grandfather and little aunt. He also felt angry and contempt at his own inability.

“That is Profound Sky Continent. You’re already sixteen years of age and had yet accomplished anything. Being expelled by your clansmen, other than your close relatives, the others all view you in contempt. They all sneered at your expulsion and would soon forget you. The you then, was so pathetic that you were not even worth remembering..... The you then, what is the ‘way’ on you?”

“Perhaps, that was a trial and test sent by Heaven’s Way.” Yun Che

replied faintly.

“Hehe, based on what you understand from the ‘Great Way’, the ‘Great Way’ is the law that nature lives by. That means, you think that whatever you do in this life, even in your previous lives and your future lives, could never escape the control and the plans of the ‘Great Way’. Because no matter what you do, what you say, who or what you interact with, these are all the planned by the ‘Great Way’. These are within the laws and control of the ‘Great Way’. Am I correct?”

“.....” This stunned Yun Che, and he did not reply even after quite some time.

The scene in front of his eyes changed yet again. Now, he saw the greenery of a forest, except that the forest seemed to have gone through a thunderstorm, and was now in a mess. There were broken trees everywhere and in the midst of it, he was carrying a quiet weak girl, and was crying devastatingly. However, the girl had already passed on and could no longer answer his call.....

“Ling’er.....”

“This was the only person you have ever loved on the Azure Cloud Continent, Su Ling’er. In the entirety of your soul, this was the most painful moment. Even until now, the pain has not yet vanished completely; this pain is etched deep

within your soul. If you truly believe everything in this world does not escape the ‘Great Way’, then, if you had a second chance, do you still believe that you and her would still be unable to escape the plans of the ‘Great Way’, and that she would still leave you at the same time, at the same place.

Yun Che: “.....”

The scene yet again changed. Now, it showed a cliff where one could not see its summit, nor could one see the bottom of the abyss. And he, was not plummeting down in despair.....

“This was your last moment in the Azure Cloud Continent. You had been forced into despair, and

jumped into this bottomless abyss after swallowing the Sky Poison Pearl. You believed that that, was the last moment of your life.

However, when you woke up, you realized you had been reborn.

Furthermore, you were reborn in a person that had already died on another continent..... Your rebirth, what you went through, what is the 'way' in that? If you had just died, what would be the 'way' in that? After your death, what does the 'way' give you?"

Yun Che: "....."

Soon, the scene in front of him vanished and the elderly voice also stopped. Yun Che mind was in a chaotic mess right now. His conscious was writhing and his soul



was in turmoil. The things that he previously thought was the truth, the things he subconsciously knew could not be changed. All these were in chaos in his mind..... His entire subconscious became the raging waves of a storm and was unable to settle down. The profound formula for the “Great Way of the Buddha” seemed to have washed away with the waves and disappeared amongst the chaos.

This chaos lasted for some time..... An uncertain amount of time passed before Yun Che’s thoughts finally calmed down. After calming down for some time, he suddenly laughed. He laughed with extreme satisfaction and relaxation. It was as though he had let down a huge boulder in his heart and released

the emotional lock in his heart.

“How was it, what have you realized?” The elderly voice said.

“I understand.” Yun Che smiled faintly. At this moment, he felt that his body and soul was ever so relaxed. Even how he viewed the outside world had already changed. It was as though he jumped from one world into another entirely different one: “In this world, there is no such thing as the ‘Great Way’. If one insists on there being one, then the ‘Great Way’ is myself.”

“Because I was born, that was why I was able to speak of the ‘Great Way’ in my heart. If I do not exist in this world, then the ‘Great Way’ would not even concern me. This is

because I am not born because from the 'Great Way'. Instead, the 'Great Way' is born because of my existence. All the elements in this world: "Water, Fire, Wind, Lightning, Earth, Light, Darkness, Time, Space..... They all exist for me, providing me the means to survive. The people, beasts, things I encounter, enhance my life and also exist for me. My loved ones, the people important to me, all of them supplement my emotions, igniting my passion and determination. Similarly, they exist for me..... And I, am the center of all things, the ruler of all these!"

"Everything in this world is for my use, every being in this world exists because of me. This is my 'Great Way' and the only 'Great Way'! And

‘Buddha’ similarly exists within me. I can create it at anytime and destroy it at anytime. It is all controlled by my desires and cannot be interfered by anything else. Because I, am the ‘Great Way’!”

“HAHAHAHA!” The elderly voice laughed heartily: “Young one, you surprise me. No wonder you had two lives, no, three lives! You actually realized it so quickly. Then, from now onwards, let heaven and earth be within your control, let all beings in this world exist only because of you. Go and seek your own ‘Great Way’ and ‘Buddha’.

Yun Che, who had already been sitting in the Profound Room of the Profound Gathering Tower for three whole days, suddenly laughed.

When he smiled, a faint silver light suddenly appeared from the surface of his body. At the same time, a miniature silver pagoda appeared on his head, before slowing descending, and entering Yun Che's body.

Jasmine silently looked at this scene in a state of great shock before softly uttering: "That year, Big Brother used thirty three days to comprehend it, but he, he only used..... Three days."

# Chapter 140:

## Breakthrough, True Profound Realm

Under the comprehending process, the profound formula that was originally uncertain in his mind clearly revealed itself. And this, also meant that the fundamentals of the “Great Way of the Buddha” was successfully completed. From now on, he was now able to start to cultivating without any hindrances. At the same time, Yun Che’s spirit and body became extremely relaxed. Originally, towards the incomparably immense world and nature, Yun Che... as well as every living soul, would all carry a kind of

innate awe; however, at this moment, not the slightest hint of this awe existed in Yun Che's body.

Because I am my own way of heaven! I do not exist relying on you, or under your grace. In my world, I am the ruler of everything; at least during the time of my birth, everything in the world, existed because of me!

The awe before, turned into pride. All of Yun Che's fifty-four profound entrances opened, and even the hair follicles on his entire body were opened; they proudly faced all the elements within the world, and unscrupulously absorbed the profound energy and world's essence from the atmosphere.

Yun Che opened his eyes and noticed Jasmine unblinkingly staring at him. He smiled lightly and said: "Jasmine, I have successfully crossed the threshold."

Jasmine nodded slowly, and said: "I know, and not just that. You only took three days."

"Three days... what? Three days!?" Yun Che suddenly froze. At this time, a feeling of hunger came from his stomach. Only then did he believe that three whole days had actually passed. While he was in silent comprehension of the 'Great Way', he couldn't sense the flow of time; to him, it felt like only several breaths' time had passed.

Jasmine said with a face devoid of



expression: “This time, you have far exceeded my expectations. But, you have only stepped through the threshold. As for when you’ll officially enter the first realm of the “Great Way of the Buddha”, it’ll be up to your own comprehension and dedication. If you’re hungry, you should go eat right now. After that, the true cultivation of the “Great Way of the Buddha” will officially begin!”

Yun Che nodded, and retrieved a small pile of rations he had prepared earlier from the Sky Poison Pearl. With a burst of voracious devouring, he was completely full in a short time. Then, he sat on the ground, closed his eyes, and rapidly entered a meditative state.

I am the Great Way, Buddha exists  
in my heart...

Everything in the universe, are all  
my captives...

A layer of silver light loomed on the  
surface of Yun Che's body. Then, it  
gradually became more and more  
clear and rich as it attaching to the  
surface of Yun Che's body, and  
lingered for a long time. The air  
around him also started to become  
agitated, and gusts of the world's  
pure vitality quietly flowed into Yun  
Che's body like a stream of water.

The purpose of the first stage of the  
“Great Way of the Buddha” is to  
absorb the vitality of the world; to  
allow the world's vitality to fill,  
refine, and transform the body...

Including the flesh, hair, blood, bones, organs, and marrow...  
Allowing the body to be born anew.  
Every following elevation of the realms in each stage will also result in a new reformation of the body.

And every new reformation of the body signified a slight separation from the mortal realm. One's lifespan would also increase exponentially.

And during this process, with the profound energy-filled Profound Gathering Tower, as well as Yun Che's completely opened Fifty Four Profound Entrances, the cultivation of his profound energy was also similarly advancing.

In the silent Profound Cultivation

Room, the only sounds that could be heard were Yun Che's even breathing and the sound of his heart beating. Under the total silence in the Profound Cultivation Room, it was impossible for cultivators to detect the flow of time. However, Yun Che could clearly feel the changes in his body. He felt a warm current wrap around all his cells, and he could feel his body slowly transforming in the midst of the warm currents.

Unknowingly, twenty days passed. In these twenty days, Yun Che didn't even take half a step out of the Profound Cultivation Room; other than being awakened by hunger, all of his time was spent in a state of cultivation. Even when he was sleeping, the profound

entrances and all the pores in his body were still completely open, and the rich profound energy and pure vitality of the world continued to unceasingly flow into his body.

Cultivating without a sense of time or day, even Yun Che himself didn't know how much time had elapsed. This day, his silent consciousness was awoken by the bizarre fluctuations in a gust of profound energy. He activated his inner vision, and suddenly discovered that the profound pulse seemed to be in the process of breathing as it gently expanded and contracted.

After consuming the Fire Seed of the Evil God, the color of his profound veins had turned into a crimson color; yet now, his

crimson-colored profound veins emitted a brilliant glow, giving them an appearance similar to a glistening crystal.

Yun Che's face instantly revealed a delighted expression... because, this was a clear sign that his profound strength was about to rise a level! And, this was an elevation spanning realms!

Yun Che quickly calmed his heart, focused his mind, and guided the profound energy in his body back into his profound veins. Then, he released it again and let it wander around his entire body. The three drops of Phoenix blood also seemed to sense the change in his profound strength's nature and started to burn with excitement within his

body. The noble essence belonging to that of a Primordial Divine Beast's brought about an unparalleled supremacy that filtered inside the entire body's profound energy and urged on the qualitative change that was about to take place.

Profound energy circulated in his body, and then returned to his profound veins. Every time a complete revolution occurred, his profound veins would visibly expand a little.

In the midst of the silence, two hours crept by. Yun Che's profound energy had already circulated around his body over sixty times. This time, just as the profound energy returned once again, his

profound veins suddenly expanded greatly, and after a moment, began to contract even more, until the profound veins returned to its usual size. Then, the turbulence stopped, almost as if it had solidified.

And the crimson glow around the profound veins became even more rich and strong, as if the entire profound vein had turned into a bright and eye-catching red crystal. This red glow persisted for several breaths' time longer until it gradually dimmed. Once the light completely disappeared, a stream of profound energy gushed out, and spread throughout his body. This profound energy was much stronger than before, and also much more rich and powerful! As for the source of profound energy in



his profound veins, whereas it could be considered a tiny creek before, in this short span of time, it had expanded into a huge river.

A wave of comfort spread across Yun Che's body, and he couldn't help but let out a comfortable moan.

After entering the Profound Gathering Tower for twenty-three days, his profound strength had directly completed the crossing over a great realm. From the Nascent Profound Realm, he had splendidly entered the first level of the True Profound Realm!

This was also under the condition where he was simultaneously training the "Great Way of the

Buddha”, because otherwise, he would have taken much less time to do so.

“Hmph, you’ve finally entered the True Profound Realm, even though you were a little slower than I had expected. Now that you’ve entered the True Profound Realm, you can finally easily control ‘Evil Soul’; it wouldn’t be a problem even if you kept the first realm open all the time.”

Yun Che opened his eyes and looked at Jasmine, who was currently in front of him, and revealed a slightly confident smile.

The clothes on his body had long since been drenched by sweat, and stickily clung onto his body.

However, after these twenty-three days of closed-door cultivation, the greatest change was nevertheless his external appearance. Yun Che was currently sixteen so his skin was naturally suppose to still be tender, but at the moment, his skin was actually as white and tender as a woman's... No, it was just like that of an infant's. It was so white and tender that pinching it once would discharge water. His face had a slightly significant thinness during his profound strength promotion. The "Great Way of the Buddha" had not made him more masculine. Instead, it added an additional prettiness and gentleness; his eyes became even more clearer, like perfect gems that had been soaked in water.

Yun Che was not surprised in the slightest when he saw his current appearance. He firmly gripped both fists and felt an immense power and vitality course through his body, and his face revealed a confident smile. He retrieved a common dagger from the Sky Poison Pearl, and stabbed at his own palm.

The sharp dagger pricked the palm of his left hand. If he had used the same amount of force before, his palm would have been splattered with blood, and possibly could have been directly punctured. But this time, Yun Che only felt a trace of slight pain. After removing the dagger, only a white mark remained on his palm; even the outer layer of his skin had not been punctured.

“Now do you believe in the power of the “Great Way of the Buddha?”  
Jasmine asked lightly.

Yun Che nodded: “It is indeed worthy of being a Forbidden Heavenly Tome. I have only crossed the threshold, yet it has already produced astounding results. If I proceed at my current pace, I believe that within a month’s time, I can officially enter the first stage. At that time, even if my profound strength does not increase, I would still be able to defeat Murong Yi!”

The shocking power that filled Yun Che’s body brought him this confident feeling.

Jasmine, with the air of a tiny adult, nodded with dignity and said: “We’ll

temporarily stop cultivating at the Profound Gathering Tower for now. Your profound strength just broke through, so you'll need a period of time to get used to it."

When Yun Che found out from Jasmine that he had stayed in the Profound Cultivation Room for twenty whole days, he was also a little surprised. After looking through the Sky Poison Pearl, he discovered that he had completely consumed all of the rations he had prepared before. Yun Che touched his stomach, which was flat from hunger, changed into a set of new clothes, and left the Profound Cultivation Room... After all, he was only in the True Profound realm, far from the realm where, with the support of profound energy, he

wouldn't need to eat or drink for a long time.

But now that he was at the True Profound Realm, he would finally be able to do something with the stuff on the body of the Emperor Profound realm Fire Dragon... For example, with his current profound strength, he would probably be able to withstand a Dragon Blood Pellet made with small quantities of dragon blood.

Other than dragon blood, four types of herbs and a type of precious crystal was required to create a Dragon Blood Pellet. He had found all four of the necessary herbs from the Xiao Branch Sect's treasury, but he was still missing a cyan crystal.

I should be able to purchase it from the Black Moon Merchant Guild... Confidently surmised the nouveau riche Yun Che, who had pocketed fifty thousand purple profound coins.

He walked out of the Profound Cultivation Room and traveled from the tenth floor to the first floor. Just as Yun Che took a step out of the Profound Gathering Tower, a young man slowly walked over.

The young man was clad in black, and he looked to be around the same age and height as Yun Che. His face was cold; his thick, black eyebrows were like two inclined sharp swords, and his gaze was as calm as a pool of still water,



without any waves of motion.

Yun Che's gaze fell on his body, and his eyelids jumped a little.

This was a very arrogant person... And arrogance, is usually presented in one's demeanor, or eyes, or actions, or language. However, one could not detect a trace of arrogance from his outer appearance, because that air of arrogance had already been ingrained in his bones.

He walked past Yun Che without even giving him a glance; even the corner of his eyes didn't move, for he acted just as if Yun Che didn't exist. After brushing shoulders, Yun Che slowly turned around and watched the silhouette of the young

man while lost in deep thought...

At such an age, and that suffocating aura of profound energy which he deliberately released from his body, along with that searing fiery power...

Without a doubt, this person was the first on the Heavenly Profound Ranking, who also had the status of being the Burning Heaven Clan Master's son... Fen Juechen!

Sikong Du had said he was an extremely arrogant man, and it looked like his evaluation was not exaggerated in the slightest.

# Chapter 141:

## Explosive Rage

The Inner Palace was the deepest place in the Blue Wind Profound Palace. If one wished to leave, they must cut across the Middle Palace and Outer Palace after leaving the Inner Palace.

The moment Yun Che stepped into the Outer Palace after passing through the Middle Palace, he was immediately recognized by the people there.

“Quick, look! That’s Yun Che! I saw him at the examinations for the new incoming disciples. He’s the one that’s challenging Murong Yi in

two months.”

“So he’s that history’s number one clown? He looks pretty normal.”

“He indeed looks pretty normal, but his brain is definitely abnormal! Otherwise, why would he have the audacity to challenge Murong Yi, who is from the Inner Palace? And even chose a heavy sword and two of the trashiest Profound Skills?”

“In two months, he will definitely be abused by Murong Yi like a dog. I reckon that Murong Yi doesn’t even take him to heart, and simply sees him as a circus monkey.  
Hahahaha...”

Different forms of sarcastic remarks could be heard from afar.

Yun Che turned a deaf ear on them, and proceeded forward. When he entered the Outer Palace's Cultivation Area, Yun Che saw Xia Yuanba with a single glance.

The big and robust body Xia Yuanba had was obvious no matter where he was, even if Yun Che tried, he wouldn't be able to miss his figure. He quickly walked over, and greeted him: "Yuanba!"

The moment Xia Yuanba saw Yun Che, his two eyes widened, and ran over excitedly: "Brother-in-law, why are you here? Aren't you supposed to be in the Inner Palace?"

"I'm exhausted from my cultivation, so I came out for a walk." Yun Che said casually, and then inspected

Xia Yuanba. He realized he did make some improvements in his profound energy, and he was not too far off from breaking through into the seventh level of the Elementary Profound Realm.

“Yuanba, did your acceptance into the Outer Palace go smoothly? Did you tell your father that you’re here?”

“Hehe, Instructor Qin did not go back on his words. On the second day you entered the Inner Palace, he finished the arrangements of accepting me into the Outer Palace. I have already sent a letter to my father, and I received a reply a few days before. Father was very happy to know that I was able to enter the Blue Wind Profound Palace.” Xia Yuanba was full of smiles, and then,

he praised: "As expected of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, it cannot be compared to the New Moon Profound Palace at all. The experts here are far too many. While I'm here, I have experienced many things that I could not hope to see in the past... Oh right, brother-in-law, look." Xia Yuanba opened up both of his hands, and in his hands was a box of fresh pellets which emitted out a medicinal smell.

"Today is the day the Outer Palace's Profound Pellet Pavilion distributes the pellets. The pellets distribute here are much better than the ones in the New Moon Profound Palace... There's thirty Small Profound Recovery Pellets, ten Small Profound Opening Pellets, and even three Bone Quenching Pellets and three Profound Quenching Pellets. I

wouldn't even dare to imagine something like this in the past."

No wonder he was this excited, so they distributed the pellets today.

Yun Che laughed, and said:

"Yuanba, work hard. Even though you started off a little late, I believe that as long as you work hard, you will definitely not be worse off than anyone else... In any case, we must work hard together!"

After saying that, Yun Che casually patted on Xia Yuanba's robust arm. He did not use a lot of strength, but the moment his hand made contact with Xia Yuanba's arm, he withdrew his arm as if it was shocked by electricity. Xia Yuanba groaned, and his face revealed a pained expression.



Startled, Yun Che quickly took a step forward, and pulled the sleeves on Xia Yuanba's left arm up. He suddenly realized, a large half of his left arm was reddish green.

Especially on his shoulder joint, was a large swell. With a single glance, Yun Che was able to discern that it was dislocated not too long ago.

“What happened?” Yun Che's brows sank. “How did you get injured?”

Xia Yuanba hurriedly pulled down his sleeves, and let out a smile.

Without paying it any mind, he said: “It's nothing. I was sparring with the seniors. Since my profound strength is bad, it's very normal to for me to be injured. And they're not serious injuries, so they will

completely recover in a few days.”

What Xia Yuanba said made sense. Spars are unavoidable while training in the Outer Palace. It was hard to prevent injuries if one were to spar a lot. But Yun Che felt that Xia Yuanba’s injuries were too unusual. His gaze landed on Xia Yuanba’s neck, and he once again frowned. “Then what’s with the bruise on your neck? You guys even target the neck during your spars?”

Xia Yuanba quickly shrank his neck, and even pulled up his shirt. He hurriedly showed the same indifferent expression, and laughed. “Brother-in-law, I know you’re worried about me, but I’m really alright. Although I usually get injured during my spars, I would

always gain new insights and improvements after getting injured every time. So, even if I'm injured, I'm still very happy about it. And I'm not the only one injured. No disciples in the Outer Palace is injury-free. If we don't spar, how are we supposed to improve? Hehe."

Yun Che's expression was somewhat relieved, as if he believed his words, and nodded. "Although cultivation is important, do not break your body because of it. Also, even though your profound strength can be said to be the weakest in this Outer Palace, it definitely does not mean that you should be bullied by others... If anyone were to bully you, you must definitely tell me!"

“Hehe, understood, brother-in-law.” Xia Yuanba smiled sillily. “The seniors are all very nice to me. Why would there be anyone bullying me? You don’t have to worry. In two more months, you will be fighting against that Murong Yi. You must work hard with your cultivation in the Inner Palace. But I believe that even if it’s that Murong Yi who is rumored to be really strong, brother-in-law will definitely be able to defeat him... Then, brother-in-law, I will be going back to the Cultivation Room. I won’t hold up anymore of your time.”

“Mn, go on then.”

Looking at Xia Yuanba’s quickly disappearing figure, Yun Che’s expression sank slightly.

He did not head for outside the Profound Palace, rather, he changed his direction, and slowly walked towards the Cultivation Room Xia Yuanba was heading to.

Xia Yuanba's Cultivation Room was the 2296th room. Every Cultivation Room had five Outer Palace disciples. Yun Che soundlessly walked over, stood beside the window, and looked inside.

The Cultivation Room was not large, as it was not even at the size of Profound Cultivation Room in the Profound Gathering Tower. When Xia Yuanba entered, the other four disciples were already inside. Seeing Xia Yuanba's return, they looked at each other in the eye, and revealed a teasing smile.

“Yo, big lunk, you’re back? You even retrieved the pellets, right?” A blue clothed youth who was originally sitting down on the floor cultivating, stood up. He laughed as he looked at Xia Yuanba, and cynically said.

Xia Yuanba’s neck evidently shrank, and his face revealed a scared expression, as he forced out a smile. “Senior Han Feng, this time, is it possible to leave me a few pellets...? A few of them is enough...”

The expression of the disciple called Han Feng instantly changed. He grinned at Xia Yuanba and said: “Oh? You actually learnt to bargain? Are your bones itching again, and you want us to loosen them for you? Cut the crap, and

give us all that you have! Every day, the four of us have to give pointers to you, a trash who is only at the Elementary Profound Realm, and you actually forgot to show even the basic form of respect!?”

The other three disciples also began to laugh coldly in disdain.

Especially the seemingly handsome male youth dressed in white, who was sitting in the middle, just simply by how he glanced at Xia Yuanba, it was as if he was looking at a lowly clown.

Xia Yuanba's face was furiously red, he gritted his teeth, but still obediently handed over the pellets he received. Han Feng grabbed all of them with a single hand, and did not leave even a single one of them.

Then, he praised smilingly: "Tch, that's better. Don't worry, as long as you listen to us obediently, and show us the proper respect, we will treat you, our little junior, well. In our future 'spars', we will definitely hold back, hahahaha."

While laughing complacently, Han Feng took ten Small Profound Recovery Pellets, then, he distributed ten Small Profound Recovery Pellets each to the other two disciples. Finally, he arrived in front of the youth in white, bent his waist, and said fawningly: "Senior Kui Yang, here's ten Small Profound Opening Pellets and three Bone Quenching Pellets. Please kindly accept them."

The youth in white called Kui Yang



was nineteen this year. His profound strength was the highest among the four, as he had already broke through into the True Profound Realm, and was at the first Level of the True Profound Realm. Among the fifty thousand disciples in the Outer Palace, he was also a leading figure whose ability is enough to be placed in the top two thousand. He stretched out his hand to receive the pellets, and then stood up. He approached Xia Yuanba, and suddenly grabbed onto Xia Yuanba's left hand, snatching away the three pellets he was tightly holding onto in his palm.

“He actually hid three Quenching Profound Pellets.” Kui Yang squinted as he laughed coldly. Then, his leg suddenly flew, and it

landed on Xia Yuanba's lower abdomen, causing him to tumble.

"Whelp, if you dare to be dishonest next time, believe me, I will rip your legs apart!"

"As expected of Senior Kui Yang."

Han Feng and the other two disciples hurriedly laughed as they sucked up to him.

Being kicked in the lower abdomen, Xia Yuanba fell onto the floor. His body painfully spasmed, but he did not let out a cry. Rather, he propped himself and stood up. His red face was ashen, but even though he dared to be angry, he did not dare to say a single word as he slowly moved to the corner of the Cultivation Room.

Yun Che burned red with fury, a surge of bloodlust exploded from his chest. He could not watch any longer, as he took a step forward, and kicked the door of the Cultivation Room.

Bang!!

The Cultivation Room's sturdy wooden door was shattered with Yun Che's single kick. The wooden scraps scattered in the air, startling the five people in the Cultivation Room.

Seeing furious Yun Che standing there, Xia Yuanba panicked for a moment. He hurriedly stood up, stuttering: "Brother... brother-in-law..."

Yun Che ignored Xia Yuanba, his gaze swept across the four standing Outer Palace disciples as he said in a low voice: “I shall give you two choices. One, hand over all the pellets you have, then break your own right arm, and then, prostrate in front of Xia Yuanba and admit your mistakes. Two... Die!!”

They were actually about to ask who was the person who came to challenge them. After hearing Yun Che’s words, they were stunned for a moment, and then, all of them laughed loudly.

“Where did this whelp come from? Daring to act wildly here... You want me to prostrate? You want us to break our own right arm? Did you forget to take your medicine

today? Ahahahaha!”

“Yo! This guy looks a little familiar... Aiyo, woah! Isn’t this that extremely famous Yun Che, the number one clown in Blue Wind Profound Palace history, who shouted that he wanted to challenge Murong Yi the moment he entered the Palace!?”

“Mn? So he’s that Yun Che?” When the white clothed disciple Kui Yang heard the name “Yun Che”, he began to laugh scornfully. “I heard that Yun Che was half insane, but from the looks of it, the rumors weren’t the least bit untrue. What was it? You want us to kneel? Hehe. If you were to kneel in front of us now and beg for forgiveness, I could still break one less leg of yours

later.”

The moment Kui Yang finished uttering those words, his vision suddenly blurred. A surge of bloodlust came pouring down on him, causing his entire body to stiffen. His expression paled for a moment, but before he could even react, Yun Che’s ice cold face already appeared right in front him.

Bang!!

Kui Yang felt like his chest was directly struck by a ten ton sledgehammer. His entire body convulsed, and a violent energy of incomparable strength instantly assaulted all of the profound veins in his body. He spit out a mouthful of blood, and his body flew from the

kick, landing heavily onto the wall of the Cultivation Room... With a short tremor, a large crack formed in the wall of the Cultivation Room, and Kui Feng's entire body was embed in the wall. It was only after a long while, did his body slide down like a dead dog.

# Chapter 142: Clean Sweep

“Se..... Senior brother Kui Yang!”

The three other disciples were shocked by the sudden scene. None of them expected Yun Che to suddenly attack; the speed of the attack was ghastly, and did not give them a chance to react. What made them even more shocked was the fact that Kui Yang, who was at True Profound Realm, was severely injured in one blow. He sprayed out a shockingly vast amount of blood. After sliding to the ground, his entire body twitched and he was unable to stand up until a long time.



“How dare..... How dare you sneak attack Senior brother Kui Yang. Let’s attack together, cripple him!!!” Han Feng’s expression was hideous as he pulled out a longsword. He and another disciple rushed ahead and tried to stab his chest while another tried to slash his head.

“Brother-in-law, careful!”

After Xia Yuanba’s sudden cry, he heard a “Cra” sound. The longsword in Han Feng’s hands had already been broken by a kick from Yun Che while the other disciple’s longsword was disarmed bare handedly by Yun Che. After which, he landed two solid punches on their chests.

Crackkk!

The chests of the two caved in and their sternum was fractured as they flew into the same wall as Kui Yang while shrieking in pain.

The remaining disciple was about to attack but as he saw the others being severely injured, he was shocked that his pupils contracted and his whole body shivered, not daring to come forward. After a weird cry, he ran out like a scared mouse. However, Yun Che turned around and stared coldly. Putting out his left hand, a scorching hot flame dragon shot out from Yun Che's palm, instantaneously surrounding the escaping disciple. As he closed his palm, the escaping disciple was thrown back to the wall violently by the fire dragon while screaming.

“Brother..... Brother-in-law.....” Xia Yuanba who was standing at one corner had been stupefied. He knew the four’s profound strength well. Kui Yang was already at the first level of the True Profound Realm. Han Feng was in the ninth level of the Nascent Profound Realm. The two others were also at the eighth level of the Nascent Profound Realm. Their profound strength levels were what he longed and thirsted for. Although he was bullied, he did not dare to retaliate, nor did he have the ability to. He also did not dare to tell Yun Che, for fear that Yun Che might impulsively seek revenge for him..... How could Yun Che have defeated the four of them?

However, he did not expect his

brother-in-law to have already become so powerful. The four of them were practically like trash in front of Yun Che, and they were casually beaten like a dead dog by Yun Che.

“Yun Che, you..... You..... You’re finished!!” Han Feng sat up using the broken wall as a support. He wiped off the fresh blood at the corner of his mouth. Although he was still rattled by the overwhelming strength of Yun Che, he forced himself to coldly laugh: “You actually..... Dared to injure us Outer Palace disciples..... Instructor Qi is Senior Kui Yang’s uncle. The fact that you injured Senior brother Kui Yang..... Instructor Qi definitely won’t let you off. You just wait to be crippled and thrown out of Blue

Wind Profound Palace!”

The killing intent on Yun Che’s body still had not vanished. The entire cultivation room was now as cold as the freezing winter, and made the four beaten disciples shiver as they laid on the floor. He did not bother with what Han Feng said, and slowly walked in front of Kui Yang, who was still vomiting blood. Seeing him approach, Kui Yang revealed a face of terror but he immediately suppressed it. He forced a laugh: “Yun Che, if you kneel down and apologize now, I can consider letting you go..... If not..... my uncle..... will make you suffer a fate worse than death.....”

Yun Che eyed him slightly before saying in a muffled voice: “When

you kicked Yuanba, it was the right leg, right?”

Once Yun Che finished speaking, he did not wait for his reply and suddenly raised his leg and mercilessly stomped on Kui Yang's right ankle.

“Crack!!”

“AHHHH~~~~~”

A painful cry that seemed like pigs being slaughtered was heard. Kui Yang's right ankle had been forcefully broken by Yun Che. Yun Che slowly removed his foot. His expression was as calm as ever, as if he had just snapped a normal twig. He coldly stared at Kui Yang, who held his right leg while rolling and

howled in pain, before turning to face the three other disciples.

As Yun Che sweep his gaze, Han Feng's face had already turned pale white..... They originally believed that Yun Che daring to harm people here was already extremely audacious, and he would stop after they mentioned the relationship between Kui Yang and Instructor Qi. Not only did they not expect Yun Che's strength to be so unexpectedly frightening, they had not anticipated that he would be so decisively vicious. He did not even hesitate to break Kui Yang's ankle..... Then, if he wanted to cripple them, or even take their lives, they were sure that he wouldn't even blink at that.

How could Han Feng possibly dare to say any other malicious words? His entire body was already shivering from fear. As Yun Che walked towards him, his trembling body went limp and he laid paralyzed in place as he panickly pleaded: “Yun-yun-yun..... Yun Che, I..... I know I was wrong, forgive me..... Don’t kill me..... Don’t kill me..... Spare me.....” As if suddenly remembering the conditions Yun Che said earlier, he took out all the pellets that he had stolen earlier and turned to face Yuanba while kowtowing repeatedly: “Junior brother Yuanba, I know my mistakes..... I shouldn’t have treated you like that..... I’m a beast, I’m a bastard. I deserve death..... Please forgive me. I won’t dare to do it again in the future, never dare to



do it again.....”

In an instant, Han Feng kowtowed more than ten times, and repeatedly banged against the ground. The other two disciples frantically knelt down, removed all their pellets, and kowtowed as well.

Yun Che revealed a cold sneer before turning back to Kui Yang to coldly speak: “What about yours? Or do you feel like not having both your hands?”

To dare break his ankle without hesitation meant that snapping off his hands was an even simpler task. Although Kui Yang was suffering from an abyssal pain, he still had his consciousness. He frantically rolled and crawled in Xia Yuanba’s

direction before knocking his head on the ground several times. Then he handed over all the pellets he possessed with his trembling hands.

Yun Che walked over and collected all the pellets they returned and coldly spoke with indifference:

“Since you all are still quite obedient, I’ll spare your pathetic lives for now. However, if you dare to bully Xia Yuanba again, I’ll make you regret coming into this world.”

“Won’t dare, we won’t dare to ever do that anymore. Next time, we will treat Yuanba exactly like how we treat our fathers..... We won’t dare anymore.....” Han Feng said in a frightened manner.

“Then, about today’s matter, what

are you going to say?” Yun Che squinted, as his gaze filled with killing intent.

“It..... It was injuries we suffered during sparring..... It is not the slightest bit related to Junior brother Yuanba or Junior brother Yun Che.....” Han Feng replied cautiously.

“Hmph!” Yun Che coldly snorted, before saying: “Lastly, don’t let me hear anything outside that I don’t want to hear. Otherwise, I will come take your lives at any time.”

The four people, including Han Feng, remained silent..... After seeing the frightening strength and ruthless methods he employed earlier, they did not dare to doubt

what he had said.

“But even if you guys spread word of this, it doesn’t matter anyway,” Yun Che began to laugh scornfully: “Do you know why Palace Chief Qin allowed me to enter the Inner Palace straightaway? Do you really think that Palace Chief Qin would break a thousand year old precedent just for a slightly special battle? Truthfully speaking, my relationship with Palace Chief Qin is one that you all cannot imagine even in your dreams. If rumors were to really spread, know that the ones being punished won’t be me, but you guys. It may even be possible that you guys may evaporate from this world without a trace, for the dead cannot testify as witnesses..... Yuanba, come out with me.”

As he finished, Yun Che turned and left the cultivation room in heavy steps, leaving the four injured people trembling with faces still filled with fear.

The last words Yun Che said were naturally made up, but he believed that it was sufficient to make the four cower. Because if the four really spread word of today's incident out, although he didn't care one bit about it, he was afraid that it would affect Xia Yuanba's future prospects in Blue Wind Profound Palace.

Xia Yuanba drooped his head like a child who had done something wrong as he followed behind Yun Che. Yun Che kept walking until he arrived under the shade of a big tree

before stopping and turning to face Xia Yuanba.

“Uuu..... Brother-in-law. I, I, I..... I was wrong.” Xia Yuanba timidly said as he lowered his head.

“Sigh.....” Yun Che let out a long sigh, before returning the pellets he retrieved back from the four to Xia Yuanba: “Just take these. Although they’re not any sort of high quality pellet, they just happen to suit the current you.”

Yun Che refined numerous pellets using his Sky Poison Pearl. However the were too high in quality and they were too unique and unsuitable to be of use to Xia Yuanba.

Xia Yuanba received the pellets and shrunk away nervously while mumbling: "Brother-in-law, I know I was wrong, don't be angry at me. I..... I didn't mean to lie to brother-in-law. But I was afraid it would cause you to lose focus, and affect your match in two months time, I....."

Yun Che shook his head before patting Xia Yuanba on his arm, and calmly replied: "Yuanba, the fact that you're bullied is actually not surprising to me. It's because your profound strength is still too weak. Perhaps letting you stay in Blue Wind Profound Palace was a wrong decision. The differences in your profound strength and this sacred training ground is too overwhelming. However, I will not

ask you to leave because of this. In fact, I hope that you continue to stay here. Yuanba, in this world, the only people that won't be bullied are the strong. If you are strong enough, no one would dare bully you, nor would anyone have the ability to bully you. How those four trash acted towards you, was because they were stronger than you, much stronger than you. If you don't want to be bullied, become strong, become stronger than them. Becoming stronger than anyone."

"I understand!" Xia Yuanba tightly clenched his fist: "I will definitely use you as my role model and work hard!"

"That's not the main point." Yun Che shook his head, before saying



sternly: "What I truly hope for you to understand, is that one can have weak profound strength, he can even be weak, he can even be looked down upon by others, but he cannot lose dignity and uprightness! I am not angry that you hid it from me..... I know that you are thinking about me and don't want me to get into trouble. I am just angry..... Why did you not retaliate and not resist? Even if you weren't the other party's match, you should have resisted!"

"I..... I didn't dare..... Brother-in-law, I know I was wrong. I won't be like this next time." Xia Yuanba drooped his head even lower as his face filled with guilt.

Yun Che exhaled deeply, and let out

a helpless sigh in his heart. Xia Yuanba's temperament was one that he was familiar with. Even though he looked rugged and tough, he was actually overly kind. He even had the weak immaturity of a child that had yet grown up. That was expected as he was not even sixteen yet.

Changing his personality with a few words was definitely impossible.

“Yuanba, let me see your profound veins.”

“Ah? Ou.”

Once a person reached the True Profound Realm, under the condition that they had permission from the other party, one could

inspect the other party's body using profound energy. Yun Che stood in front of Xia Yuanba, pressed his hands on Yuanba's chest, and slowly closed his eyes. Then, he instantly removed his hands from Xia Yuanba's chest with an undisturbed complexion. But in his heart, he was extremely shocked.

Because Xia Yuanba's profound veins were just too strange. They were more than two times thicker than a normal person's profound vein and the vein was a kind of creepy greyish black color. His profound entrances were also located at completely different locations when compared to an ordinary person's. It was as if he was an entirely different entity.

Why were Yuanba's profound veins like this? Could they really be the "Tyrannical Emperor's Profound Veins" that Jasmine had mentioned before?

These profound veins possessed such a domineering name, but why were they so weak?

# Chapter 143: Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal

After sending Xia Yuanba back to the Cultivation Room, the four people were already gone. It was not known whether or not they crawled off to the Medicine Hall to treat their wounds. Afterwards, Yun Che left the Outer Palace and headed towards the Black Moon Merchant Guild, with his heart heavy with thoughts on the way there.

“Are you thinking about Xia Yuanba’s Profound Vein?”

Jasmine’s voice sounded in his

mind.

Yun Che's footsteps stopped for a moment, and he asked seriously: "Are Yuanba's profound veins really the 'Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins' you spoke about? If they really are, then exactly what kind of profound veins are they?"

Jasmine's response was brief but cruel: "His profound veins are, without a doubt, the extremely rare Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins. In the Profound Sky Continent, he is the only one I've seen that possesses the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins. Only, the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins are a set of divine veins for some people; but for him, they are just useless veins."

“Why?”

“The reason that the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins is known as the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins is not because once it is awoken, it would provide a power capable of tyrannizing the heavens, but because one needs to possess the heart of a tyrant and the desire to become the emperor in order to awaken it. One also needs a tremendous desire for power; a desire so great it overwhelms all other aspirations. Once the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins is awoken, the owner must dominate everything and proclaim himself emperor. But if one cannot awaken it, while it is not evident in the Elementary Profound Realm, once one enters the Nascent

Profound Realm and profound energy matures, to rise in one level will require ten times the effort of any regular person! And one will only be able to enter the Nascent Profound Realm; it is impossible to break through to the True Profound Realm.”

“Xia Yuanba’s personality is not weak, but it is definitely not strong either. Furthermore, he does not possess the heart of a tyrant, or the desire to become emperor. As for profound strength, he only longs for it, at most obsesses over it, but he is far from the extent of crazy desire one must have. The Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins in his body, will never awaken. So, not only is it of no help to him, it will actually serve as the biggest deterrent. Even



if he spends his entire life trying, he shouldn't even think about entering the Nascent Profound Realm.”

Yun Che was speechless for a long time.

He would never doubt Jasmine's words.

He was even more clear about the fact that the heart of a tyrant and the desire to become emperor were things that could not be brought up in someone. Even if he told Xia Yuanba that he could obtain a miraculous power by igniting his desire for great strength... But this desire, is not something that can be stimulated through language.

“If, and I'm saying if, Xia Yuanba's

Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins awakens, will his profound strength increase explosively?" Yun Che asked tentatively.

Jasmine was silent for a moment, then calmly said something that greatly startled Yun Che's heart...

"In one night's time, his profound strength will directly break through the Emperor Profound realm... possibly even the Tyrant Profound Realm!"

---

Blue Wind Imperial City's Black Moon Merchant Guild was the headquarters for the Black Moon Merchant Guild in the Blue Wind Empire, and it was also the largest

establishment in the empire. Since it was located close to the Blue Wind Profound Palace, before entering the Imperial City, Lan Xueruo had specifically brought him here. Because of this, he was able to locate the Black Moon Merchant Guild quickly.

Compared to New Moon City's Black Moon Merchant Guild, the Imperial City's Black Moon Merchant Guild could only be described as utterly magnificent.

The Black Moon Merchant Guild was several tens of feet tall, and it occupied an area with a radius of several hundred feet. The entire Merchant Guild building released a feeling of indescribable luxury. A pitch-black crescent moon was

suspended in mid-air above the main entrance. The four words, “Black Moon Merchant Guild”, on the horizontal placard shined with brilliance under the sunlight.

Yun Che arrived in front of the main entrance to the Black Moon Merchant Guild. The doors automatically opened, and a tall and pretty welcoming maid walked in front of Yun Che, and lightly smiled with a dignified air:

“Esteemed customers, welcome to the Black Moon Merchant Guild. Please enter.”

The Black Moon Merchant Guild in New Moon City was only a small branch establishment; regarding the quality of their services, they naturally paled in comparison. As

Yun Che entered the Black Moon Merchant Guild, he was immediately shocked by the magnificent and grand air of the interior. Only, other than the many beautiful maidens in the hall, there weren't many visitors, making the whole building seem deserted. But Yun Che didn't find that odd at all, because the Black Moon Merchant Guild did not sell common items; this was especially so for the headquarters of the Blue Wind Empire. No matter whether something was being purchased or sold, everything was calculated with the standard purple profound coin; one simply could not purchase an item for less than a purple profound coin here. So even though there weren't many visitors in the Black Moon Merchant Guild, any

transaction was a golden bucket full of profit.

“Esteemed customer, may I ask what you need?” The maid, who had welcomed Yun Che into the building, politely asked with a light smile.

“I need three Cyan Profound Crystals.” Yun Che stated, straight to the point.

“Precious crystal merchandise are located on the third floor, please follow me.”

The maid slightly bowed, then walked in front with a willowy posture and brought Yun Che to the third floor.

The third floor was deserted,

without a single visitor present. The moment he entered the third floor, Yun Che instantly felt a incomparably strong aura pave over. With a glance, he discovered that the huge third floor was filled with all sorts of exquisite jade boxes and wooden boxes. With one glance, one could tell these jade and wooden boxes were definitely not common items, yet these items of high value were only here for storage purposes; it was plain just how precious the items kept here were.

At the same time, gusts of fluctuating profound energy also spread over. Yun Che quickly noticed that the room was filled with invisible formations, some of which were defensive formations,

while others were attack formations. Once anything out of the ordinary occurred, these formations would instantly start up... Of course, this was provided someone would actually have the guts to act wildly in the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

“Elder Qiao, this guest would like three Cyan Profound Crystals.”

The maid walked in front of the old man and said with respect.

The old man glanced at Yun Che lightly, and got up emotionlessly. A moment later, he brought three jade boxes containing Cyan Profound Crystals, placed them in front of Yun Che, and asked mechanically: “Three purple profound coins a



piece, for a total of nine purple profound coins.”

Yun Che placed nine purple profound coins on the trading desk, and then put away the three Cyan Profound Crystals; thus, completing the transaction.

“Esteemed customer, may I ask if you need anything else?” The maid asked with a light smile. In this Black Moon Merchant Guild establishment, every guest was aided personally. Once one entered, a maid would be present for aid the entire time until one left the establishment.

Just as Yun Che was about to say that he didn’t need anything else, his nose suddenly twitched. To the

left of his line of vision, he noticed a jade box locked firmly not far from the right hand of the old man, and said: "What's the price of that Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal over there? If it's acceptable I'll buy it."

The old man, whose expression had been rigid the entire time, showed slight surprise as he looked at Yun Che, and finally said: "Young man, the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal is formed in extremely volatile grounds of Yang attribute. They are scarce in the world, and those that have seen it are few in number. How did you know that this jade box contains a Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal?"

Yun Che smiled faintly and said: "By chance, this junior once came

in contact with a Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal, and had a deep impression of the extremely volatile and Yang aura. Even though it is covered by the jade box, and its aura is quite weak, this aura belongs solely to the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal; junior was still able to identify it in an instant."

"Hehe, I'd have never thought someone as young as you would have such a broad range of experiences. I wonder what you need this Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal for? You don't seem to be a fire-attribute profound practitioner." The old man said slowly.

Yun Che said calmly with a smile: "Does the Black Moon Merchant

Guild need to know what the merchandise they sell is for?”

The old man smiled faintly and didn't press any further. He brought the box over and placed it in front of Yun Che: “Six hundred purple profound coins.”

Yun Che immediately took out his Profound Currency Card. After deducting six hundred purple profound coins, he opened the box and stored the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal away. The Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal was very beneficial to the Phoenix fire power in his body. In certain dire circumstances, if he forcefully consumed the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal, the power of the flames he released would drastically

increase for a short time.

At the same time, because the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal was extremely volatile and extremely Yang, it could dispel all sorts of ice-related poisons.

With his objective achieved, Yun Che left with the guidance of the maid. Right as he arrived at the end of the stairs, a maid with a woman clad in white walked over.

This was a woman masked with an ice silk gauze veil; her body was covered with a pristine snowy attire, and a thin ice veil masked her appearance, only revealing a pair of ice-cold beautiful eyes. The small patch of skin revealed was as white as suet white jade, and also like a

patch of flawless snow. Under the snowy dress, her figure was graceful and moving, extremely delicate, and indescribably beautiful as she released a kind of faint ethereal attitude. She was elegant and noble like a goddess from the Ninth Heaven, without a trace of taint from the mortal world; it was almost as if one extra glance at this figure was blasphemy.

Yun Che could not help but freeze for a moment as he stared. Even though he could not clearly make out her appearance, this was undoubtedly an extremely beautiful woman. Even though her appearance was hidden, just her temperament and figure alone was extremely beautiful, capable of making one's mind waver

uncontrollably... Other than Xia Qingyue, this was Yun Che's first time encountering a woman who emitted such an incredible feeling.

At the moment, if someone had told him this woman was a goddess who had descended to the mortal realm, he wouldn't have had any doubts.

It was as if the woman had no perception whatsoever when facing Yun Che's attentive gaze. That pair of ice-cold beautiful eyes didn't move even a bit. As she had passed Yun Che, she brought a gust of cool, fragrant wind.

Yun Che's gaze also unconsciously turned. Only after appreciating the dreamlike beauty of her silhouette for quite a while did he reluctantly

follow the maid downstairs... This great pleasure from admiring beautiful things was something Yun Che could never suppress.

“This tiny Blue Wind Empire, is indeed a crouching tiger and hidden dragon.” Jasmine’s voice sounded out of the blue.

Yun Che said thoughtfully: “You’re talking about... could it be that white-clothed beauty that just walked by?”

“When you looked at her before, your heartbeat visibly quickened, and your soul also produced some desirous fluctuations. Hmph, perhaps this is the quality people find most annoying in men. However, you must not think about



hitting on her; at least for now, the level between you and her is as far as the heavens and the earth!”

Jasmine said coldly.

“... You mean?”

“Peak of the tenth level of the Sky Profound Realm... a half-step from the Emperor Profound Realm! Strong enough to be considered one of the top ten practitioners in Blue Wind Empire!”

Yun Che was so shocked his legs went soft on the spot, and almost face-planted onto the stairs.

After Yun Che went downstairs, the white-clothed woman arrived in front of the old man with the maid’s guidance. The maid

respectfully said: “Elder Qiao, this esteemed customer would like a Devil’s Flaming Blood Crystal.”

# Chapter 144:

## Goddess, goddess

“The only Devil’s Flaming Blood Crystal we had in stock was just purchased by that young man.”

The old man sat there playing with with an azure-colored jade and did not even look up. But suddenly, the hand playing with the jade stopped, and he abruptly raised his head. He looked at the white-clothed woman behind the maid with an expression of shock. Afterward, his whole body stood up from the seat as if he had been shocked by electricity. His demeanor had also become especially respectful: “Esteemed customer, please forgive this little

old man's rude behavior. There was indeed one piece of Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal in the store, but it was just purchased by that young man."

"I cannot be of help, esteemed customer. I am very sorry; please forgive me... How about esteemed customer leave behind a Sound Transmission Imprint? If another shipment of Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal arrives, we will definitely inform you first."

The reason for the old man's sudden attitude change was very simple; it was because he had casually probed this woman's profound strength and actually discovered that her profound energy aura was as vast as the sea,

making it impossible to find its limit. Without a doubt, the profound strength of this woman in front of him was at least a great realm higher than his own. How could he not be shocked?

Seeing this old man suddenly become so respectful and even a little terrified, that maid's attitude also became much more respectful. Just as she was about to speak, a white silhouette in front of her flashed, and the white-clothed woman disappeared like a ghost in front of her eyes.

Yun Che left the Black Moon Merchant Guild and returned to the Blue Wind Profound Palace through the same path, but his footsteps were not as hurried as before,

walking at a leisurely pace. At the same time, he was making an unusual bet with Jasmine...

“I bet that little fairy from before will immediately come to seek me.”

“Her? Seek you? Where’s your confidence from? With her level, she wouldn’t even give you more than a glance.”

“Do you want to bet with me then?”

“I don’t believe it.”

Just as Jasmine finished speaking, a gust of cold wind blew past Yun Che’s body. The scene in front of him blurred for a moment as white clothes fluttered, and the snowy-veiled woman appeared in front of him like an illusion. A pair of

beautiful eyes emotionlessly stared at him. Yun Che's gaze had been attracted to her the moment she appeared, because everything around him, even the sky and the earth, lost its color in comparison.

“Sell me your Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal. I'll pay double the price.”

The woman's voice was very soft, but an ice-cold feeling permeated through the softness. The cold directly pierced his bone marrow and an irresistible oppression was entrapped within the cold.

If Yun Che was only a normal True Profound Realm profound practitioner, he would have been frozen with nervousness under her cold gaze and oppressive voice,

wouldn't dare to make eye contact with her, wouldn't dare to rebuff her statements at all, and would've obediently given the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal to her almost out of free will.. because this power that was half a step away from the Emperor Profound Realm was not something a True Profound Realm profound practitioner could resist.

But Yun Che clearly could not be classified as a “normal True Profound Realm profound practitioner”; he did not evade her gaze with shame. Rather, he stared directly at her without any subtlety. His gaze revealed an unabashed look of amazement and appreciation. After a moment, he shook his head and said slowly: “I am definitely unwilling to sell



something I just purchased for twice its price. But, I advise you not to try to buy this; the ice poison you are infected with is simply not something a Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal can dispel."

This young man in front of her only had profound strength at the True Profound Realm, but under her coercion with power that was half a step away from the Emperor Profound Realm, he actually didn't look nervous in the slightest and was completely unperturbed. This behavior surprised the white-clothed woman a little, and his following words made her crescent-shaped eyebrows crease slightly: "How do you know I've been infected with ice poison?"

Yun Che smiled lightly, and said leisurely: “Not only do I know you’ve been infected with ice poison, I also know that the ice poison you’ve been infected with is a Poison of Origin! If I didn’t guess wrong, you must have fought with an ice-attribute profound beast a few days ago, and not only did this profound beast have an ice attribute, it also had a very powerful poison attribute. You killed this profound beast, but in the instant before its death, you were infected by its poison.”

White-clothed woman: “...”

“I believe, with your profound strength a half-step away from the Emperor Profound Realm, that poison from that ice poison

profound beast shouldn't have affected you at all. However, you must not have that much experience with high-level poison profound beasts. It is useful to know that several powerful poison profound beasts' profound cores will generate a type of 'Poison of Origin'; this Poison of Origin is the source for all of its other poison, and is also its life source. Its toxicity is incomparably frightening so in the case it releases it, it would automatically die. As a result, unless it is facing certain death, the Poison of Origin would never be released. The ice-poison beast you fought against must have been facing its looming death and desperately released its Poison of Origin. I'm guessing you had assumed it was just a common

poison, so you didn't take it seriously. Once you realized it was impossible to suppress this poison, you thought of searching for a Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal to dispel it."

The white-clothed woman revealed an expression of shock for a instant, because everything Yun Che had said was completely accurate.

Seven days ago, she had indeed fought and killed an ice-attribute poison profound beast, and was infected by its poison right before its death. After, outbursts of the poison had occurred rapidly, and her abundant profound strength could only forcefully suppress it, but was completely unable to dispel it. It was only at this point that she

began searching for a Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal, which could dispel all sorts of ice poisons... And in her lone travel, no one else knew about her condition, yet everything had been described by this young man in front of her. He had even described her profound strength without a single mistake.

“What are you?” The white-clothed woman's gaze at Yun Che had changed, and did not use the same gaze she used on a True Profound practitioner.

For one a half-step to the Emperor Profound Realm, with profound strength strong enough to be recognized as top ten in the Blue Wind Empire and the pinnacle of profound practitioners, to

cautiously ask a True Profound realm little being “what are you”, one could only imagine how pleasurable this must’ve felt. Yun Che revealed a mysterious smile, and said: “My name is Yun Che, and I am only a common disciple from the Blue Wind Profound Palace... Additionally, I have another identity; I am also a genius doctor.”

“Looking at the symptoms of your poison, you can only utilize about one-third of your usual profound strength. With your incredible profound strength, there will be a day when the Poison of Origin in your body dissolves, but it may take twenty or thirty years for that to occur. Also, in this time, your profound strength will not increase at all, and you will only be able to

fully utilize one-third of your total profound strength. As for this Poison of Origin, it simply cannot be dispelled by the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal. On the contrary, you cultivate an ice-attribute profound art, and the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal contains a rich accumulation of the flaming blood's volatile fire; if you rashly consume the Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal and something bad happens, it is very likely your profound veins will be injured... Or even permanently damaged."

"I've said everything needed to be said; if you're still set on acquiring this Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal, you can go search for it elsewhere. For your best interest, I'm not going to sell this Devil's Flaming Blood

Crystal to you... No matter how much money you offer.”

After Yun Che finished speaking, he glanced at her for a moment, then took a half-step forward. He passed by the white-clothed woman, and continued walking towards the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

“How did you know she was infected by a Poison of Origin?” Jasmine asked with surprise.

“Regardless of the poison, symptoms will always show on one’s expression. If I can’t even tell whether she was infected by a poison, or what poison she was infected with, it would be embarrassing to call myself a genius doctor.” Yun Che replied.



“Then how did you also know she cultivated ice-attribute profound arts.”

“That’s even more simple. That little fairy’s profound strength is so scary that it is obvious she didn’t go out and personally hunt a profound beast for money. This means the only reason for her to do so is that the profound beast possessed something greatly beneficial to her. She was infected by an ice poison, so the profound beast she killed must have been an ice-attribute profound beast. And the item on the ice-attribute profound beast must be beneficial to profound practitioners that cultivate ice-attribute profound arts. It’s just like that time when the Burning Heaven Clan, which cultivates fire-attribute

profound arts, mobilized their strongest members to kill that Flame Dragon.”

Yun Che patiently explained his thought process, but his attention was completely focused behind him. He felt that this goddess had already turned around, and her ice-cold gaze had landed on his back.

“Wait!”

Yun Che finally heard the sound he was expecting come from behind him. He paused his footsteps, cracked a smile, and then naturally turned around: “Did goddess call me over for something else?”

The white-clothed woman’s crescent eyebrows furrowed as her

bright eyes cleared, and said lightly: “Since you can tell I’ve been infected by an Poison of Origin at a glance, and claim to be a genius doctor, then, do you also know how to quickly dispel the poison in my body?”

Yun Che was waiting for her to say these exact words. He nodded very casually and said: “Of course I know. Although this Poison of Origin is quite troublesome, there is indeed a relatively quick method to dispel it; the treatment only takes around ten days, and doesn’t have any side effects... Goddess, you couldn’t be asking me to dispel the poison for you?”

After hearing Yun Che’s words, the white-clothed woman’s eyes

brilliantly shined. She slowly nodded and said: "Then, I'll have to trouble you to dispel the poison in my body for me. I will reward you greatly after you do so."

Yun Che's face revealed a surprised expression, and then a hesitant expression. After quite a while, he finally said: "Goddess, not only is your profound strength immensely great, you are also the incarnate of an angel. I am but a lowly Profound Palace disciple, aren't you afraid that I'm plotting something?"

"Your eyes are pure. At the very least, you are not a villain." The white-clothed woman responded evenly.

Yun Che started laughing, happy

she had spoken about her trust in him. He nodded: "Alright then, since goddess trusts me, I will try to dispel the poison in goddess's body. However, I am a disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace after all, and I cannot leave for long periods of time... How about this; I'll head back to the Blue Wind Profound Palace first, and you can come find me at Number 101 in the Inner Palace disciple quarters at dusk. I believe that with goddess's capability, bypassing the guard for the Blue Wind Profound Palace should be easy. Also, the houses for Inner Palace disciples are very quiet, so it is also a good place for goddess to rest."

The white-clothed woman didn't speak and faintly glanced over at

Yun Che. She then flew into the sky and her sleeves fluttered as she suddenly disappeared from Yun Che's line of sight.

Eh? She left just like that?

Damn! She left just like that?!

If you're going to leave, at least say something!!

Yun Che bared his teeth as he stared at the beautiful silhouette that had vanished into the sky. Did that little fairy think I was a trickster?

Ah, whatever...

Yun Che shook his head, and walked back to the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

He passed through the Outer and Middle Palaces and entered the Inner Palace, walking all the way to his courtyard. Yun Che stretched a little, and then pushed open the door to his house. Just as he took a step in, his entire person instantly froze on the spot.

Because in front of the bamboo window in his house, dressed in a snowy attire and possessing a dreamlike beauty, stood a woman's silhouette.

# Chapter 145: Poison Spirit

“H-how... How did you get in here?” Yun Che’s brain lagged for a second, and even stuttered as he spoke.

“Weren’t you the one who told me to come?” The white-clothed goddess’s charming eyes turned as she emotionlessly replied.

“But, aren’t you too... fast!” Yun Che silently swallowed down a mouthful of saliva.... Holy smokes! It wasn’t weird for her to be able to silently enter the Middle Palace. However, the Inner Palace’s entrance had an extremely strong warding seal, as



well as elder-ranked figures of the Profound Palace keeping watch all day and night. She was actually able to enter just like this, and was even faster than he, himself!

The Blue Wind Profound Palace belonged exclusively to the Imperial Family, and had existed for thousand of years. Other than Qin Wushang, there must also be other masters of the Sky Profound Realm who stood guard; yet she evaded the eyes and ears of everyone in the Profound Palace, and came here as if entering a place bereft of anyone.... Could the difference between someone half a step into Emperor Profound Realm and someone of the Sky Profound Realm actually be this great?

“When will you start the detoxification?” The white clothed goddess obviously didn’t want to speak with him much, and spoke coldly.

Yun Che walked in and closed the door. He thought for a bit then said: “We can start right now. However, you’ve also first-handedly experienced how powerful this Ice Poison of Origin is. It couldn’t be detoxified even with your profound strength; surely, you also understand that detoxifying it is definitely not an easy task. You and I are strangers, if I were to just detoxify the poison for you without any reason like this, I trust that you wouldn’t feel at ease either. And as for myself, I am also not selfless to that extent.”

“I’ve said before, I’ll repay you greatly.”

“What kind of great repayment?”

“...What do you need?” As the white-clothed goddess spoke, her gaze revealed a kind of bone-piercing chill from beginning to end. It was like a never melting ten thousand year old profound ice atop a snowy mountain.

“I want you to agree to three of my requests!” Yun Che said bluntly. Not waiting for the goddess to reveal a scowl, he continued to explain right away: “But don’t you worry, I am definitely not a person who would force someone to do something they don’t want to do. These three requests I have would

never violate any of your principles or conscience. They especially would not be mixed in with any criminal activity, greed and the like, and would never harm any of your interests. Not only that, if you ever feel like any request is too much, you can immediately turn it down.

“Are you certain that you can completely detoxify the poison in my body?” When the white-clothed goddess heard him say “three requests”, her beautiful eyes distinctively became even more coldly penetrating. Only after hearing his following words, did they finally somewhat ease up.

“Not very confident.” Yun Che said: “Probably around 99.999%. Because during the process, I can’t

guarantee that a bolt of lightning would not suddenly come from the heavens and strike me to death.”

It was a sudden sick joke, but it did not raise any trace of emotion from the goddess in front of him. What answered him was only a flat, ice-cold word: “Speak.”

“Then I’m going to say it....” Yun Che silently pouted in a dull demeanor, and secretly thought in his heart: Even though Qingyue my wife also has an ice-cold personality, she is still a sixteen year old young girl in the end, and would at least have some kind of reaction when teased. This little fairy... is simply just a chunk of profound ice! The difficulty to melt her open is abnormally high...

“The first request, is for you to tell me your name.” Yun Che said in all seriousness: “This should be something that couldn’t be any easier, right?”

The goddess went silent for a bit, then shook her head: “No.”

“Hey hey! Even though your appearance is as beautiful as an goddess, you still can’t be so stingy. If I detoxified the poison on your body, I’ll be considered as half your savior, yet you actually wouldn’t even tell me your name! I’ve already told you my name a long time ago. If nothing else, you wouldn’t even tell me your name, how am I supposed to call you?” Yun Che disgruntledly clamored.

“Call me whatever you want.” The goddess spoke coldly.

“Alright.” Yun Che revealed reluctance: “If that’s the case, then let me change my first request a little. I won’t ask for your name anymore, so just let me call you Little Fairy from now on; this has to be fine, right?”

“Little Fairy?” The goddess’s elegant brows slightly rose a little, and said coldly: “Absurd! With my age, it’s enough to be your elder!”

Yun Che fiercely jumped up, and said with a face brimming with fury: “Even if you were an actual goddess, aren’t you a little too high-handed like this! I am someone that will detoxify the terrifying Ice

Poison of Origin for you and save half of your life! I didn't demand anything from you at all, and only wanted to know your name, yet you refused.... Alright, I endured that one, and you had also told me to call you whatever I wanted from your own lips. Now I only wanted to call you Little Fairy, and yet you refused again! You are too unreasonable!!”

“And you even lied about your seniority on purpose to take advantage of me! I'm almost seventeen, and you also look to be at most twenty; in what fashion can you be considered my elder! It's too unfair! Forget it, I'm not detoxifying this poison anymore, not going to do it.”



Like a little kid who had been wronged, Yun Che sat his butt down, with his back to the goddess and a grumpy expression on his face.

The goddess went silent. Then, as if she also felt that she was being a little too unreasonable, she softly spoke: "In that case, just call me whatever you wish."

Yun Che turned back around with a "woosh", and all of the anger on his face had all vanished without a trace. He said with a grin: "Now that's a good girl. Little Fairy, I'm about to say the second request... Take off the veil that's covering your face, I want to see your true appearance."

“I refuse.” The goddess immediately refused without hesitation.

“Hey! I had only wanted to know your name, this also isn’t going too far, right?” Yun Che said with dissatisfaction.

The goddess spoke in a cold tone: “You and I had only met by coincidence. If you were to really able to detoxify the poison in my body, I will naturally repay you greatly. After that, we will not owe each other and return to our respective paths, perhaps never to meet again. It is not necessary for you to know my name, and more so my appearance.”

While clearly asking a favor from others, her voice was still so

unyielding and ice-cold; her demeanor and aura also repelled others thousands of mile away. If not for this little fairy's terrifying strength and beauty, Yun Che would have definitely just washed his hands off this matter. He said helplessly: "Alright alright. Since it's like this, then I'll switch my second request a bit too... If I were to perfectly detoxify the ice poison in you, I wish that you can protect me for a while after two months. The time-span of protection doesn't need to be too long either; just three or four months is good enough... Any problems with this?"

Half of the goddess's loftiness came from her nature, and the other half was because her position was already so high that it was

unreachable. However, the more that someone was like this, the more they wouldn't want to owe others anything. Toward this request of Yun Che's, she only thought for a short period of time before directly nodding: "Okay. This, I will accept. After two months, I'll start to protect you in secret for a period of three months."

"Then it's settled!" Yun Che nodded with a joyous expression: "As for the third request... I haven't decided upon it yet, and I'll tell you after I've decided. Of course, you still have the right to decide whether to accept it or not. Now then, let's start detoxifying the poison."

Yun Che stood right before the

goddess, extended his hand toward her, and said very seriously: "Little Fairy, extend your hand out first. I must first ascertain the condition of the ice poison in your body.

Towards the name "Little Fairy", the goddess was extremely uncomfortable; but since she had reluctantly promised Yun Che, she could only accept it with a frown. However, what Yun Che said after, as well as the motion he made, caused her face to become as cold as condensed ice: "I had never and will never allow any man to touch my body."

Yun Che said while beaming: "Don't worry, as a genuine genius doctor, how could I not know how to feel the pulse without touching. I

promise that I won't touch any part of your body at all."

The goddess's ice-cold gaze swept over him once, and she finally extended out her right hand. Her palm was excessively white like snow, and also faintly revealed the glistening of ice. It made Yun Che, who caught sight of it, dizzy for an instant and caused him to somewhat not dare to believe that this was actually a woman's hand... He was more willing to believe, that this was a flawless work of art meticulously carved and polished by the heavens.

Yun Che calmed his state of mind, extended out his palm and made a strange hand posture that suspended above the goddess's jade

hand. His profound energy was gently released, touched onto the goddess's wrist, and then slowly crawled along the wrist, spreading to the meridians in her entire body.... Of course, even if he had ten times the guts, he still wouldn't dare to misbehave in anyway with his profound energy in the goddess's body, or else this goddess could end his life with just a single palm strike.

As he probed on, Yun Che was secretly shocked in his heart.

Because the severity of the Ice Poison of Origin she was inflicted with, had far exceeded his expectations.

Such a terrifying Poison of Origin....

It appears that, what this little fairy had killed, was at least a Sky Profound Beast!

Yun Che's heart slightly cramped for a bit... To kill a Sky Profound Beast alone, how terrifying was this little fairy!

Yun Che's profound energy continued to spread. As it reached the vicinity near the profound veins, Yun Che's brows suddenly tightened, as his expression immediately changed right after... Because in the heart of her profound veins, there was a very small ball of a fog-like thing that continuously squirmed as it emanated an icy and ghastly chill outwards. Yun Che was only touching it with profound energy,



yet he could still feel how shockingly terrifying the chill emitted by that ball-thing was.

This is...

A Poison Spirit!!

This Poison of Origin that came from a powerful ice-attribute poison beast, was actually terrifying to the point of gaining awareness, and formed into a Poison Spirit! Clearly, this little bit of awareness must have been injected into the Poison of Origin by that ice-attribute poison beast before it died.

Originally, it would be very simple for Yun Che to detoxify the acute poison for her, as he only needed to purify using the Sky Poison Pearl.

However, after surprisingly discovering the existence of the Poison Spirit, it was already too late to simply be purified with the Sky Poison Pearl. Because a Poison Spirit was an acute poison that grows by consuming the host's profound energy, lives within the profound vein, and to a certain extent, had already fused with the profound vein into one. If one were to forcefully purify it, then along with eliminating the Poison Spirit and acute poison, the profound vein would receive permanent damage.

As Yun Che's profound energy touched the Poison Spirit, the goddess had also noticed as her expression immediately swayed a little.

Yun Che retracted his palm, and said solemnly: “Little Fairy, you should have also felt it just now. The acute poison in your body actually produced a Poison Spirit! To rid of this sort of acute poison, the Poison Spirit must be eliminated first! And to destroy this ice-attribute Poison Spirit, the bond between the Poison Spirit and profound veins must be severed by flame energy that’s pure enough. The Poison Spirit then needs to be forced out of the profound veins, and sucked out by force using flame energy.... This Poison Spirit hasn’t fully taken shape yet, and my flame energy can barely accomplish it. But if we wait for it to continue developing, then it would become extremely dangerous... Don’t move!”

Yun Che shouted in an almost commanding tone. His gaze concentrated as the Phoenix blood in his body boiled, and scarlet-red colored flames began to burn on top of his palm.

“Phoenix Flame? You are someone of the Divine Phoenix Sect?”

As an incomparably strong being who was half step into the Emperor Profound Realm, how extensive was her experience! She had exchanged moves with disciples of the Divine Phoenix Sect before, and possessed some understanding toward the Phoenix flame’s special attributes. As the flame ignited on top of Yun Che’s hands, she instantly recognized that this was clearly the Phoenix’s flame. Moreover, it was

even several times purer than the Phoenix flames she had seen before.

“This is indeed the Phoenix flame, but I am definitely not someone of the Divine Phoenix Sect.” The Blue Wind Empire possessed extremely great reverence and fear toward the Divine Phoenix Sect; Yun Che clearly knew this, so he casually threw out an explanation. From a distance of a few centimeters, his palm aimed at the center of the goddess’s chest, and the Phoenix flame traveled through the air and slowly extended into her body.

Everything of the ice attribute dreads fire, and the fragile ice attribute Poison Spirit was even more so, not to mention that this

was an extremely high grade Flame of the Phoenix. The instant the Phoenix flame burned in the goddess's body, the bond between the Poison Spirit and her profound veins was forcefully severed, and the flame energy directly wrapped toward the Poison Spirit.

Next, was to force the Poison Spirit out of the profound veins... Yun Che closed his eyes completely. Because in order to chase away the Poison Spirit, he must completely concentrate his mind. Little Fairy closed her eyes as well, and as she felt Yun Che's Phoenix flame energy move within her profound veins, surprise rippled through her heart... She was now even more certain, that this was without doubt, indeed the Phoenix's flame.

He said that he wasn't someone of the Divine Phoenix Empire... But if he isn't, how could he possess the Phoenix flame?

The Poison Spirit struggled and fled in the midst of its fear.... In just a few short breaths of time, it had already been forced out of the profound veins by the Phoenix flames.

Very good... Yun Che let out a long sigh of relief. The Phoenix flame's speed suddenly accelerated, and completely wrapped the fleeing Poison Spirit inside it in just an instant.

Good, come out for me... Yun Che made a low shout in his heart. The Phoenix flames abruptly flung, and

his right hand that was controlling the flame quickly grabbed toward his front... The moment his palm touched the Poison Spirit, it also fully grasped onto a towering hill of softness as his open fingers deeply sunk in...



# Chapter 146:

## Departure

The poison spirit was only a type of primitive spirit with low levels of awareness. Colorless and formless, it was similar to a simple soul-body. After being forcefully sucked out by Yun Che's Phoenix flame, it combusted as the Phoenix flame wrapped around it... A terrifying poison spirit that was enough to render almost all the doctors in the world useless, had been settled in merely a few minutes under Yun Che's hands. This was something that should make one excited, but the moment Yun Che realized what his right hand was grabbing, his

heart abruptly went cold, and three words flashed in his mind...

Fuck! I'm dead!

As he had expected, the moment his palm covered her chest, the goddess's body stiffened. Her slightly closed eyes suddenly flew open, as her body instantly emitted an incomparably ice-cold killing intent and boundless profound energy.

With her profound strength at half-step from the Emperor Profound Realm, there were only a few in all of Blue Wind Empire that could touch her without her permission, and until now, she had always been like a snowflake that had yet to touch the ground. Let alone her

body, no man had even touched the corner of her clothes before. This had to do with the profound art she cultivated, and also with her own personality. Only, she had also detected the poison spirit in her profound veins earlier. While focusing her consciousness to observe the movements of the poison spirit, she had temporarily let her guard down against Yun Che, and had actually gotten grabbed on the chest by Yun Che with one hand... Oh, that's not right! It was a grab! And it was a very forceful grab at her chest.

Anger and killing intent was mixed into her profound energy aura, which had completely exploded outwards subconsciously. But as the goddess saw the lump of poison

spirit in the conflagration, her heart suddenly softened, and forcefully retracted the profound energy aura back into her body... But Yun Che was too close to her, and how could the profound aura, which had been released with anger and killing intent, be easy to retrieve; a small portion of her residual energy still swept onto Yun Che's body... Even though it was not even one percent of her residual energy, it was still from someone with a terrifying strength at the peak of the tenth level of the Sky Profound Realm; how could Yun Che possibly withstand it?

With a "bang" sound, Yun Che's body was struck as if hit by a heavy hammer. He felt that his entire body become overturned and all of

his internal organs had ruptured in a split second. After that, even his consciousness began to disperse.

Bang! Bang!!

Yun Che's body flew outwards like a cannonball, smashed through the wall, snapped a tall tree in the courtyard that had the thickness of a bowl's mouth, and continued to fly for several tens of meters before heavily crashing onto an ancient boulder. The huge boulder cracked and split into pieces, and Yun Che, bounced off onto the ground as he bled profusely from his entire body. Not long after, a large pool of blood had already gathered under him.

All of Inner Palace disciples usually stayed in the Profound Gathering

Tower. They normally operated with complete freedom and were restricted by none. Perhaps it is also because mutual sparring was a common occurrence within the Inner Palace disciples, so these noises were commonplace. Thus, even though such a huge sound was emitted, not a single person rushed over. Even to the extent that no one had noticed the sound at all.

A white shadow flit past a distance of several tens of meters in a flash and landed in front of the already unconscious Yun Che. The goddess's gaze was extremely complicated; her left chest still retained the feeling after his forceful grab that made her feel ashamed and angry. But she was even more clear that Yun Che did it

completely unintentionally; in fact, the reason why he had committed such a blunder, was actually to expel the terrifying poison spirit for her.

Yet she had instinctively spread her profound energy aura and directly killed the person who had just saved her... Even though he had touched her taboo, he had, after all, done so in order to save her.

A hint of guilt flashed through the goddess's eyes, and she faintly sighed. She gently raised her snowy hand, and plumes after plumes of beautiful dreamlike ice aurora fluttered under her hand and fell toward Yun Che, attempting to freeze his body. But just as the first glimmer of the ice aurora touched

onto Yun Che's body, all of the ice aurora instantly vanished, and the goddess's brows swayed slightly...

He's not dead yet!?

A youngster at the first level of the True Profound Realm was actually still alive after colliding with her aura, and his signs of life were not faint at all either; this amazed her. With a brush of her right hand, Yun Che's body was carried by a gust of cold wind back into his room.

.....

When Yun Che regained consciousness, he felt as if his entire body was immersed in ice. However, this cold feeling was not uncomfortable at all; rather, it gave



him a very comfortable feeling.

“Hmph, you finally woke up.”

Jasmine, after detecting the awakening of his consciousness, said snappily: “If you didn’t cultivate the Great Way of the Buddha, you would’ve been dead to the point where you can’t be more dead long ago.”

Yun Che opened his eyes, and thought back to what had happened before right away. His heart was immediately filled with lamentation; only, he wasn’t lamenting about his brush with death once again, but it was about... The feeling of this goddess’s breast, was really too too too too wonderful... To trade half his life for just one grab, why did he feel that it

was kind of worth it!

“You’re awake!”

An ice-cold voice came over. Yun Che turned his head to the side, and saw the goddess who was currently standing in front of his bed. The corners of his mouth moved, revealing a touch of very light smile: “Unexpectedly, I’m still alive.”

“I am also very surprised that you are still alive.” The goddess’s eyes were cold, her gaze was like two daggers made of ice that pierced toward Yun Che’s eyes: “After colliding with my aura, you actually didn’t die And with such a heavy injury, I’d originally thought you would at least be unconscious for

half a month, yet you awoke just after being unconscious for three days, and a small portion of your injuries have already healed.

Perhaps this has to do with Phoenix flame's strong regeneration properties; your life is much more sturdy than I had thought."

Facing her cold stare, Yun Che smiled bitterly: "What I did before, was really an accident. I had only wanted to grab the poison spirit out, I didn't think that..."

"If it wasn't because you were saving me, do you think you'd still be alive to talk with me right now?" The goddess said coldly.

Yun Che shook his head, and said: "After desecrating Little Fairy, I

fully deserve this kind of punishment I have received.”

“If you don’t want to force me to kill you, then completely forget what happened three days ago, and don’t ever mention it to anyone!”

The goddess’s voice became even colder, but didn’t possess that piercing killing intent anymore.

After few days had passed, she no longer had that desire to kill Yun Che; otherwise, she wouldn’t have let him live till now.

“I will definitely not speak of this to anyone.” Yun Che swore. He examined his body for a moment; even though his body was injured both internally and externally, none of his injuries were untreatable.

With his medical skills, he would be

able to fully recover given enough time. On the other hand, he had detected the origin of that ice-cold aura he felt. Even though this aura was ice-cold, it hid a incomparably thick profound energy, leaving no gaps while protecting and restoring his internal organs. Not only did his internal injuries not worsen over the past few days, they instead had actually recovered much faster than his external injuries.

And after three whole days had passed, she hadn't left either... With her status, against someone who had profaned her, she could've just completely cast him away and leave, but she actually didn't do so. The only explanation, was that underneath that external appearance akin to profound ice,

her heart was similarly cold, but by no means merciless.

“Little Fairy, thank you. You not killing me is already kindness, and you even saved me.” Yun Che said weakly.

“Hmph, don’t be so sentimental. I only saved you because I still need you to dispel the ice poison in my body.”

The goddess turned her snow veil-covered face to the side, and spoke with a cold and stern voice.

“Actually, I lied to you about something.” Yun Che said slowly: “I had said before, detoxifying the poison in your body required around ten days’ time. Actually, to

me, it will only take me a few breaths' time to completely dispel the poison in your body. Also, I wanted to help you out of my own selfish motives, since you are at the pinnacle of profound strength, a level high enough to look down upon the entire Blue Wind Empire. I wished to have you owe me a favor by saving you.... Even in the worst case, we would still have had ten days of crossing paths. For my future, it would create a possible great power of assistance. Haha... Indeed, tricking a girl, and such a beautiful little fairy at that, is something I should suffer retribution for."

Little Fairy: "..."

After Yun Che finished speaking, he

lifted his left hand, palm facing the goddess. He strugglingly circulated his profound energy, and in an instant, the Sky Poison Pearl's purification ability brushed upon the goddess's body along the flow of his profound energy... The goddess's brows furrowed for a moment, but she did not reject or obstruct.

The purification power expanded into the goddess's body, and under Yun Che's guidance, completely dispelled the Ice Poison of Origin in her body in the short span of a few breaths of time. A Sky Profound Realm profound beast's Poison of Origin was naturally, incomparably terrifying. But with the Sky Poison Pearl being a Heavenly Profound Treasure, comparing this kind of



poison with the poison that Jasmine was inflicted with, it can't even be said as a speck of dust in front of an iceberg. Even the poison Jasmine was inflicted with could be slowly purified by the Sky Poison Pearl, let alone this insignificant ice poison of origin.

“Alright, like this, the poison should be completely detoxified now.” Yun Che retracted his hand and let loose a breath of relief as a hint of exhaustion was added onto his ill-looking face.

The toxic poison she couldn't dispel with all her profound energy, was actually dispersed in an instant. The heart of the goddess whose emotion rarely swayed was immediately filled with shock. She had a vast

range of experiences, and there were few in the entire Blue Wind Empire that could compare to her. But she had never heard that there was actually a method to completely detoxify such an acute poison in an instant. Even Blue Wind Empire's number one genius doctor Gu Qihong would definitely be incapable of such a feat.

And this person, was merely a youngster who had just entered the True Profound Realm!

If she hadn't been poisoned personally, and also experienced this personally, she simply wouldn't be able to believe that all of this was real.

Finally seeing a trace of emotion on

Little Fairy's face, Yun Che smiled somewhat complacently, and said: "I have a unique poison-dispelling method. I implore Little Fairy to keep both this and the Phoenix flame in my body a secret, or else, I will would definitely instigate a great deal of trouble. However, if Little Fairy was ever to be inflicted with an incurable poison again in the future, you can look for me, and I will definitely help dispel it."

The goddess's gaze was complicated. She could no longer link this heavily injured youngster together with a minuscule Blue Wind Profound Palace disciple of the insignificant True Profound Realm. No matter his ability to identify this Poison of Origin, or his calm and unmoving gaze that was

profound to the point where even she couldn't see through, or his ability to exterminate the acute poison with a mere lift of his hand, she was inflicted with just a glance... All had made her deeply feel his mysteriousness and unusualness.

As well as, with an unknown origin, a faint sense of danger.

“The poison on my body has been dispelled, and your injuries are no longer life-threatening. Such being the case, I no longer have any reason to stay here.”

After she finished speaking, without waiting for Yun Che to react, spirits of ice was already floating on goddess's body, and her graceful

body that was encased in the ice spirit slowly turned into mist, and completely disappeared in front of Yun Che.

“Hey! Little Fairy...”

Yun Che hastily scrambled up, but her silhouette was gone before he was even able to speak. Yun Che’s voice paused, and turned into a few dejected words: “She really... left just like that...”

At this time, strands of a gentle yet cold voice descended from the sky: “In two months time, we will meet again. At that time, I will protect you for three months as you had wished.”

The voice dispersed away like

smoke. Yun Che froze for a moment, then laid back onto his bed, exhaled with extreme comfort, and closed his eyes. He faintly smiled, and a very silent whisper was uttered from his mouth...

“She should be someone from Frozen Cloud Asgard... It’s also been almost a year since I separated from Qingyue my wife. I wonder how she’s doing over there...”

# Chapter 147: Prison God Sirius' Tome

Yun Che had only comprehended half of the first realm of the Great Way of the Buddha at most, but its regenerative abilities were still incredibly shocking. Yun Che had been dealt with in one blow by Little Fairy; his injuries could be considered very severe, but over the course of a few days, regardless whether it was an internal injury or external injury, he had almost fully recovered from all his injuries. Even though his medical expertise played a big role, if he didn't have the Great Way of the Buddha, no matter how skilled he was in

medical arts, he would've required at least one month to have healed to this extent.

After recovering from his injury, Yun Che prepared some food and headed back to the Profound Gathering Tower. He spent almost all of his time in the Profound Gathering Tower, and the cultivation of his profound strength and the Great Way of the Buddha progressed hand-in-hand. Lan Xueruo would visit him once every several days, but she wasn't able to locate him most of the time, so she could only silently leave some good food and hand-picked clothes in his room. Sometimes, just as he was returning to his living quarters, he would meet Lan Xueruo, who had come to visit him. Lan Xueruo



didn't stay for long and would leave hurriedly; even though she was always smiling warmly, Yun Che could see an ever-deepening worry in the deepest recesses of her eyes.

Lan Xueruo never took the initiative to speak, and Yun Che never inquired about her worries; he focused all of his energy solely on cultivating.

This day, Yun Che, in the midst of cultivation, suddenly opened his eyes. The silver light coating his body expanded, and a small silver pagoda appeared above his head. While rotating, it slowly sunk into his body. In that instant, he felt as if he had been exposed to another world. Even though it was still that extremely familiar Profound

Cultivation Room, what he saw, heard, smelled, and felt were completely different.

It wasn't the surrounding things that had changed, but his entire body that had reformed.

His eyes had become more pure, and was able to discern every speck of dust on the ground. After calming down, he could even faintly hear the sound of air flowing about. His skin had become even more soft and tender, similar to that of a newborn baby's, and his exterior also contained a shiny luster. Don't mention sturdiness or roughness, even the masculinity that a male must have had completely disappeared; his appearance was so delicate and refined that it was

enough to make a woman green with envy.

The first stage of the Great Way of the Buddha, had been officially mastered!

“To have only used two months’ time, you have left me speechless again.” Jasmine, who had been napping against the wall, raised her eyes and looked at him. Yun Che’s devilish comprehension ability made it impossible for her not to be shocked.

Yun Che stood up, suddenly had an idea, and summoned the Overlord’s Colossal Sword from the Sky Poison Pearl. He firmly grasped it with both hands, and held it horizontally in front of his body. This time, he

didn't open 'Evil Soul', yet was able to steadily hold the one thousand nine hundred fifty kilogram heavy sword... Even though it was as heavy as before, he still would never be in a state where he couldn't control it. It was as if he was holding a two hundred fifty, or three hundred kilogram weapon.

As Yun Che waved his arm, the heavy sword danced, drawing a huge pitch-black arc in front of his body.

“Whoosh!!”

This almost two thousand kilogram heavy sword, while being brandished, brought about a sound akin to a roaring storm. Even Jasmine, who was several tens of

steps away from Yun Che, felt a heavy force roar over. The airflow in the Profound Cultivation Room instantly became chaotic, and even the protective seals in the Profound Cultivation Room faintly tremored.

When wielding a light sword, its power was incisive and threatening, but it would never possess this power of total annihilation, feeling of peerless tyranny, and ability to devastate the heavens and rend the earth; of the ten thousand types of weapons, only the heavy sword was capable of this.

That sound that even made the air shudder and whistle caused Yun Che's eyes to open wide. The blood in his entire body began to boil as his body turned, and he swung the

heavy sword in his hands about recklessly: horizontal sweep, inclined chop, striking upwards, heavy strike... Every brandish was executed in a manner as grand as a rainbow, was utterly tyrannical, and brought about a deafening whistling sound. It made Yun Che feel that even if a large mountain stood in front of him, he would be able to slice it in half in one strike, and even if ten thousand horses were charging at him, he would be able to stop their rampage in one strike.

“Haah!!”

On the last strike, Yun Che heavily struck the ground.

“Boom!!!”

The floor of the Profound Cultivation Room, which was similarly protected with profound energy and incomparably sturdy, was definitely not something the profound strength of the True Profound realm could damage. But under this one strike from Yun Che, the entire floor shook violently, and in the midst of a tremendous noise, a crack several meters long instantly appeared on the ground. Only after a long time did the crack slowly fade.

After ten or so continuous strikes, Yun Che was already soaked with sweat and breathless. While supporting himself with the heavy sword, he sat down on the ground and wiped the sweat off his forehead as an excited smile hung

from his face. After wielding this sword, he sincerely believed that selecting it had been the right decision.

Jasmine walked over, and said while nodding: “As I expected, now that you have officially entered the first stage of the Great Way of the Buddha, you are able to wield this heavy sword. But being able to wield the sword does not necessarily mean you can completely control it. Just now, you used it for such a short period of time, yet you are already this tired. You’re not even close to the extent of being able to fight against another person.”

“So, for the following month, your mission is to get comfortable with



the weight of this heavy sword, and be able to control it proficiently!”

Jasmine said solemnly: “From now on, you may not store it into the Sky Poison Pearl; every time you train with the sword, you must train until you’re completely exhausted and unable to get up. And the moment you stand up, this heavy sword must be in your hand. Even if you are eating, or need to leave this place, you must carry this heavy sword; it must not leave your body for even a moment! You must do this until you are so used to its weight that you won’t even feel it, and so comfortable with it that it would feel like your own arm or leg!

“Okay!” Yun Che didn’t hesitate at all and nodded directly. Even if Jasmine hadn’t brought it up, he

still would've done the same thing. But right after, he shook his head: "No... In the Profound Cultivation Room, it won't leave my body for even a moment, but when I leave occasionally, I can't carry it on my back."

"Why?" Jasmine raised her slender eyebrows.

"Do you know why I selected those two useless profound techniques at the Supreme Profound Hall earlier?" Yun Che responded with a question, then began to explain: "The reason is very simple. One reason is that I had never intended to cultivate profound techniques in these three months; I had only wanted to focus on raising my profound strength while also

cultivating Star God's Broken Shadow. I had casually picked two trash profound techniques to purposefully let people ridicule and underestimate me. Because I am very clear about the disparity between me and Murong Yi, and even more clear that if I concentrate on cultivating in these three months, defeating him will still be quite difficult. I can't let him have even a shred of wariness towards me... Because Murong Yi is an Inner Palace disciple, he definitely cannot lose to me; and if he has even a shred of wariness, he might employ some other side-handed tactics before the fight or during the fight. I simply have no way of anticipate what he might try to do if he does that."

“I selected this heavy sword and the two trash profound techniques so that he and the others would mock me, and to make him believe that I am an arrogant, ignorant, and laughable person. Also accounting for the great disparity in our strength, he will not have any wariness towards me. During our fight, there will also not be any unforeseeable accidents. But if I carry this one thousand nine hundred fifty kilogram heavy sword outside, it would definitely cause a commotion, because even Murong Yi cannot bear the weight of this sword effortlessly. So once he hears about it, he will definitely be alert and vigilant.”

After Yun Che finished speaking, Jasmine however, gave a disdainful

snort: "You usually present yourself with an air of arrogance, acting arrogant and conceited, yet now you're acting so cautiously; so contradictory.

"No no, this is not contradictory at all." Yun Che said as he smiled: "Acting conceited and arrogant is merely a show for others. But cautiousness, must always be hidden in the heart and it's not necessary to reveal it to others. The former can allow me to live entirely free from worry, and the latter will allow me to live longer; there is no contradiction whatsoever."

"Hmph, do whatever you want outside the Profound Cultivation Room. But within this month, you must not put down the heavy sword

for even a moment while in the  
Profound Cultivation Room.

Whenever you are completely  
exhausted and unable to get up, you  
still have other things to do.” Once  
Jasmine finished speaking, her eyes  
flitted away for a moment, and  
seemed to recall a deeply imprinted  
memory; even her voice softened  
considerably: “With all your effort,  
try to comprehend... the 《Prison  
God Sirius’ Tome》 !”

“Prison God Sirius’ Tome?” Yun  
Che immediately thought: “Is that  
what you spoke of before, the heavy  
sword Sword Art your brother  
cultivated?”

“Correct.” Jasmine nodded slowly  
and turned her little face, not  
allowing Yun Che to see the deep

grief inside the depths of her charming eyes. She said with a remote coldness: “Big Brother said, the Prison God Sirius’ Tome is the strongest heavy sword Sword Art in this world; cultivating it will allow one to exhibit the superiority and strength of the heavy sword to the greatest extent. And in this world, only Big Brother and I have seen the Prison God Sirius’ Tome. When I watched Big Brother train, I had flipped through it in curiosity. After an entire year, I unintentionally comprehended the art’s fundamental stage and Sirius’ first sword style. But because my weapon of choice was the dagger, and the only reason why I had comprehended it was out of my love for Big Brother so there would never be a day when I can put it to

use... Now, I will entrust the sword art's fundamental stage and first sword style to you. In the next month, how much you comprehend, will be up to your own comprehensive ability!"

"The art's fundamental stage covers how to wield a heavy sword, the advantages and disadvantages in using a heavy sword, and the way to maximize the advantages while minimizing the disadvantages. Only when you're completely at home with the fundamental stage can you say that you are truly able to, and completely wield the heavy sword. After, you will be able to comprehend the first sword style, 'Sky Wolf Slash'. Even though this is Prison God Sirius' Tome's fundamental sword style, its



immense power will definitely exceed your expectations greatly.”

While Jasmine spoke, she raised her finger and pointed at the space between Yun Che’s eyebrows, imprinting the Sword Art’s fundamental stage and the first sword style of the 《Prison God Sirius’ Tome》 into his mind. To want to completely comprehend the art’s fundamental stage in one month was simply impossible for others, but Jasmine had long since been shocked by Yun Che’s astonishing comprehensive ability multiple times; she believed that if it was Yun Che, he may be able to make it happen.

As the profound formula entered his mind, Yun Che only lightly

swept over it on purpose, but had a deeply shocking feeling. The profound art originally seemed dead, but from this 《Prison God Sirius' Tome》, Yun Che clearly felt an overbearing feeling, a firm fierceness, a sense of tyranny, and an unparalleled imposing manner. It was only a profound art, yet it contained such tremendous power; it was truly remarkable.

“Is there only the art's fundamental stage and first sword style?” Yun Che couldn't resist asking.

“I only know the art's fundamental stage and the first sword style; I don't actually know what comes after that.” Jasmine shook her head: “Big Brother always carried the Prison God Sirius' Tome on him.

After Big Brother passed away, the Prison God Sirius' Tome should have also disappeared from the world with Big Brother. You, are perhaps the last inheritor."

# Chapter 148: Day of the Arranged Battle

“Sky... Wolf... Slash... Haaah!!!”

With an explosive roar, a tremendous wave of aura like the rough sea was suddenly released from the Overlord's Colossal Sword. Instantly, the surrounding space stirred and the air was forcefully split open. The instant the heavy sword slashed downwards, an illusionary image of a blue wolf roaring towards the sky flashed momentarily behind Yun Che...

Boom!!!

The heavy sword slammed onto the ground and the Profound Room which had a strong profound energy resistance greatly shook. Countless wide cracks spread at an extremely fast pace as large amounts of fragmented rocks scattered into the air. A thick cloud of dust filled the entire Profound Room in an instant... If not for the protection of the strong profound energy in place, with this one blow, the entire Profound Room would have been shattered into pieces.

“Su... Success!!” Yun Che grasped his heavy sword and slowly knelt onto the ground. He was panting heavily, yet an extreme excitement could be seen from his expression: “Finally... Finally, I have succeeded in executing the Sky Wolf Slash!”

Jasmine had originally believed that for Yun Che to comprehend the fundamental stage of the Prison God Sirius' Tome in one month was already his limit. She did not expect that not only did Yun Che completely comprehended the main stage, he was even capable of executing Sirius' First Sword Style, the Sky Wolf Slash. And within this period of time, other than the times when he occasionally left the Profound Room, the heavy sword had never left Yun Che's side. He even carried the heavy sword on his back when he slept. And when he was practicing with the heavy sword, he was extremely harsh on himself. Every single time, he had to thoroughly exhaust himself to the point where his fingers were not even able to move... At first, he

thoroughly exhaust himself ten times in a single day. Then after, the number of times decreased. The Overlord's Colossal Sword also became lighter and nimbler in his hands and the strong winds brought about by the dance of his heavy blade were even more tyrannical than before.

The cloud of dust in the Profound Room did not disperse for a long while. Behind the cloud of dust, Jasmine silently looked at Yun Che's blurry figure with eyes that were already filled with the glint of her tears... It was for this very moment that she taught Yun Che the Great Way of the Buddha on impulse, and even taught him the Prison God Sirius' Tome...

Earlier, when Yun Che executed his first complete “Sky Wolf Slash”... the swing of his sword, his roar, his stance, and even the sound caused by the slamming of his heavy sword... was so similar, causing her to suddenly see the figure of her dreams...

But, her reasoning mercilessly told her that the person currently in front of her was not her brother. Her brother would no longer appear ever again.

A single “Sky Wolf Slash” emptied every bit of strength Yun Che had. He knelt onto the ground and did not get up for a long time. At this moment, the Sound Transmission Jade in the Sky Poison Pearl suddenly flashed and Xueruo’s



voice resounded in his mind:

“Junior brother Yun, tomorrow is the appointed date for your arranged battle with Murong Yi. Remember to finish your preparations early. It would be best if you have a nice rest for an entire day. Early tomorrow morning, I will come over and call for you.”

Lan Xueruo's voice caused Yun Che to open his mouth widely...  
Tomorrow?

Tomorrow is the appointed date of my arranged battle with Murong Yi?

When one fully concentrates on cultivation, it was hard to perceive the flow of time. Sometimes, when

one enters a state of meditation, a few days worth of time may fly past. Without realizing it, since the first time Yun Che had entered the Profound Room, an entire three months had passed.

During these three months, other than the time he went out once when he met Little Fairy and had encountered a little “accident”, he basically spent the rest of the time in the Profound Room. Three months could be said to be a long period of time, but it could also be said to be short as well. And in these three months, the results he obtained were fairly large. With just the cultivation in both the Great Way of the Buddha and Prison God Sirius’ Tome, it had caused a complete reformation of his body.

Since tomorrow was the appointed date of his arranged battle, Yun Che naturally would not continue his cultivation. He was already satisfied with his mastery of Sirius' First Sword Style. After recovering a little of his stamina, he changed his clothes and left the Profound Gathering Tower. He returned to his quarters, leapt onto his bed, and slept.

Half a month ago, his profound energy had already reached the peak of the first level of the True Profound Realm. In his sleep, Yun Che's profound energy ripened under the calmness and made a quiet breakthrough into the second level of the True Profound Realm.

During his stay in the Profound

Room, Yun Che had only slept four to six hours every day. However, this time, he slept from noon all the way into the morning of the next day, and was only woken up by the knock on the door.

“Junior brother Yun, are you in here?”

Yun Che woke up from the knock on the door. He had an exceptionally sound sleep, and after waking up, his mind and spirit were extremely refreshed. He stretched his waist and after leaping off the bed, he straightened his clothes and went to open the door. Lan Xuero was standing outside the door spiritedly with a light smile with a big lunch box, which was emitting out a delicious aroma, in her hands.

“Wa! What is this? It smells so good!” In this period of three months, Yun Che had been eating different types of dry rations. Although, he usually wasn’t bothered by that fact, he was hooked by the aroma of the food in front of him, and his entire stomach trembled.

“Your breakfast.” Lan Xuero raised the lunchbox in front of his eyes with a wide smile.

Opening the lunch box, four exquisite dishes and a soup appeared in his eyes, overflowing with fresh aroma. Ever since he left the Xiao Clan, he ate whatever he could find in the wild for the first half a year, and ate dry rations that were simply only capable of

satisfying his hunger for the second half of the year. Such delicacies had not appeared before him for so long.

Yun Che sat next to the table, and started to eat wildly. After eating a few bites, he suddenly thought of something, and said embarrassingly: "Senior Sister, have you eaten yet?"

Lan Xueruo slightly smiled, and replied: "I've already eaten. Take your time, it's only eight in the morning. There's still an hour till the appointed time of your arranged battle."

Yun Che then began to wolf down his food again. With her chin resting on her two hands, Lan

Xueruo silently looked at his child-like behavior, and unconsciously smiled lightly to herself. In less than half a quarter of an hour, Yun Che had already cleanly finished his meal with not even a single bit left. She blinked her eyes, and asked with a smile: "Was it delicious?"

"Un, it was very good. It seems to be comparable to the food my little aunt makes." Yun Che patted his stomach, and said satisfyingly.

"Un, then that's good." Lan Xueruo cheerfully nodded as her brows revealed a hint of comfort and joy.

Her slight change in expression startled Yun Che, and then, he probed: "Senior sister, did you personally make these dishes?"

“Un.” Lan Xueruo nodded, and then smiled. “It’s good that they suited your taste. But when you’re eating, you really look like a little child.”

“I’m already seventeen, how am I a child!?” Yun Che pressed the tip of his nose, raised his head, and with a hint of shallow anger, directed his gaze into Lan Xueruo’s beautiful eyes. “Senior Sister, you’re so beautiful and gentle, and yet you’re able to cook so well as well... I wonder which man, who is lucky enough to even be struck by lightning from the high heavens, will obtain your favor in the future... Ahem, are you really not going to consider a married man, who is also younger than you?”

“Here you go again.” Lan Xueruo



gave him a helpless look. “If you dare to tease your senior sister again, I’m not going to make you anymore food in the future.”

“Uh... In other words, as long as I don’t tease you, senior sister will still frequently make me food in the future?” In an instant, Yun Che made a surprised expression, and smiled.

“It depends on your performance.” Lan Xueruo lightly smiled. Within her tenderness, she unconsciously brought out a bit of her feminine charm. She took out a set of a clean white silk garment from her spatial ring, and placed it in front of Yun Che. “This is the training uniform I made for you earlier, it should fit well with your body figure. This

training uniform underwent special handling; not only does it allow convenient movements, it also has a certain degree of defensive ability against attacks. Wear this for your match with Murong Yi later.”

When Yun Che took the uniform, he did not immediately wear it. Rather, he lightly sniffed the scent on the clothes. Although it was faint, the scent was familiar, as it was the exact gentle and touching fragrance on Lan Xueruo’s body. He smiled and said: “Did senior sister personally make this set of training uniform for me as well?”

Lan Xueruo’s lips moved, and snow-white skin revealed a slight blush of red. She avoided his gaze as he said: “This is the first time I made

clothes for a man, so, I'm not really sure if it will fit you... In any case, try it out."

After saying that, Lan Xueruo turned her back against him. Looking at Lan Xueruo's back, Yun Che started to slightly smile as a feeling of warmth surged in his heart. With his fastest speed possible, he took off the clothes he was wearing, and changed into the training uniform Lan Xueruo had personally made.

"Senior sister, I'm done changing."

Lan Xueruo turned back to face him, and when she saw Yun Che who changed into the white training uniform, a strange luster suddenly bloomed in her beautiful

eyes.

Compared to three months ago, Yun Che was now a little bit taller. When Lan Xueruo was sewing it, she took this point into consideration; hence, the training uniform fit his body completely and there was not even a single feeling of discomfort. But in these three months, it was not only Yun Che's height that changed. From the reformation of his body brought about by the Great Way of the Buddha, his eyes, skin, aura, and temperament underwent slight changes. His eyesight were now even more profound. With just a simple glance, it was as if he could see the boundless starry sky. In the midst of the warmth in his smile was an indescribable strange

feeling, and his maturing face displayed an abnormal charm... She had seen countless of handsome men, and her heart had never been moved by any of their looks but when she looked at the current Yun Che, her vision suddenly blurred, and her heart flopped about erratically.

She hurriedly shifted her gaze slightly to the side, and with a slight fluster, she said: "It fits well, and... and looks really good."

Yun Che raised his arms, lightly sniffed the scent on the sleeves, and said with a smile: "This is a set of clothes personally made by senior sister. I will definitely cherish it well..."

Thank you senior sister.”

“Then... How are you going to thank me?” Lan Xuero’s eyelids slightly curved, and asked a little saucily.

“Well, let me think.” Yun Che raised his head, and went into deep thoughts. Then, he suddenly smiled mysteriously, and said: “Senior sister, first, close your eyes.”

“Mn?” Lan Xuero’s beautiful eyelids blinked, and then, obediently closed while waiting for Yun Che’s “thanks”. She guessed that Yun Che was going to give her a surprise. Girls, no matter their personalities, will always irresistibly look forward to things like “surprises”, without fail.

She had only just closed her eyes and felt the scent of a familiar male suddenly approach. Then after, a pair of arms suddenly wrapped around her waist. Before she could even react, in an instant, her lips had already been kissed, and the thick scent of a man came from right under her nose.

“Mmm!”

Lan Xueruo instantly opened her eyes wide. Her tender body suddenly stiffened as her mind completely blanked out. Then after, she instinctively struggled, and a whimpering sound similar to what an injured little animal makes leaked out from her mouth. But Yun Che was hugging her really tightly, and her weak struggle was

basically not enough to escape from his embrace. The feeling of the warm touch on her lips was becoming clearer, and the scent of the man that was at such close proximity to her heavily tugged her heartstrings, causing her heart to beat erratically. The strength in her body slowly dispersed, her struggle was becoming weaker and weaker. Before her raised small hands were about to fall on Yun Che's chest, they gently drooped down, her body stiffened, and she no longer dared to move. Finally, her eyes slowly began to close.

Lan Xuero's reaction had also caused the nervousness in Yun Che's heart to vanish, and a hint of a smile curled up on the corner his lips. He was no longer satisfied with



the simple contact between their lips. He began to greedily suck on her delicate petal-like lips. This invasive aggressive action caused Lan Xueruo to breathe erratically, and the pounding of her heartbeat became even more frantic. She, who had no prior experience to this, was basically unsure of how to defend against his advances. Yun Che's long tongue easily bypassed her set of light, jade-like teeth to finally touch her soft lilac tongue.

“Uuu...” Lan Xueruo's body trembled as if her entire body had been electrocuted. Thin strands of scented saliva entered Yun Che's mouth, and the taste was surprisingly sweet, tempting him to demand even more. His two hands held tightly onto her waist as he

encroached into every corner of her mouth.

Lan Xuero slightly opened her eyes. Her vision blurred, and she was breathing heavily. Under Yun Che's increasingly aggressive advances, she stretched her delicate neck up high. From her subconscious retreat to her unconscious quiet response, the hot air that she breathed out had been landing on Yun Che's face. The temperature of her body had begun to increase, and unknowingly, her slender arms were also tightly wrapped around Yun Che's body.

Yet one of Yun Che's hands quietly left her slender waist, and misbehaving landed on Lan Xuero's silky towering breasts.

Grabbing onto that plump ball of softness, he began to gently rub them through her not very thick clothing.

“Ah...”

The strong stimulation caused Lan Xueruo's body to stiffen. Her beautiful eyes widened as she suddenly emitted out a short moan. Her body instantly escaped from Yun Che's embrace in a panic as she subconsciously raised her hands to cover the part of her body where she had been violated. Her eyes were misty, her expression was flushed red, and her hair was in a slight mess as she heavily panted.

“Senior sister, I...” Yun Che's mind also instantly cleared up a little,

realizing that he had violated her too abruptly.

“You...” Lan Xueruo bit her lips, and did not dare to look at Yun Che. No matter what she did, she was unable to suppress the franticness in her heart.

“B... Bad man!” She had originally wanted to lecture Yun Che, but the moment she started talking, the situation that was similar to one between an annoyed girl and her own lover caused her entire face to flush red. As if to escape from her dilemma, she ran out of the room.

“Senior sister, wait for me.”

Yun Che hurriedly chased after her and caught onto Lan Xueruo’s small

hand. Lan Xuero instinctively tried to break free from his grasp, but no matter how many times she tried, she was unable to break free. She had no choice but to allow him to hold onto her as they walked side-by-side together. Her head fell and drooped. She did not dare to look into his eyes the entire time.

# Chapter 149:

## Center of Attention

The center plaza of Blue Wind Profound Palace's Outer Palace was immensely big. There would usually be numerous outer palace disciples sparring at this location, attracting the attention of even more disciples. This plaza was also the location of all sorts of profound strength competitions of the outer palace.

And today, the plaza was tens of times more livelier than any other day. Numerous crowds of people densely packed with the stage at its center. Of the fifty thousand or more Outer Palace disciples, there

were actually more than eighty percent of them gathered here, causing the central area to be wrapped so tight that it was impenetrable. Their attention was focused on the stage, they were waiting for the arrival of the today's main character.

Today was the date of Yun Che and Murong Yi's arranged battle.

However, the main character in the heart of these Outer Palace disciples was most certainly not Yun Che, but rather Murong Yi. The majority of these disciples who were present today came to catch a glimpse of an Inner Palace disciple's elegant prowess. As for Yun Che, he had always existed in their mouths as a laughingstock for

the past three months.

Originally, a newly joined Outer Palace disciple overestimating himself and challenging an Inner Palace disciple was not something that would instigate so much attention. However, what was crucial, was the fact that this arranged battle had actually disturbed the Palace Chief Qin Wushang. Furthermore, Qin Wushang had even personally become a testimonial for this arranged battle. As such, it was impossible for this battle to not evoke the attention of the entire Profound Palace.

The promised time for the battle drew nearer and nearer by the second; less than a quarter of an



hour remained. However, neither Yun Che nor Murong Yi had appeared yet. Right at this moment, a disturbance suddenly appeared from the east side of the plaza, and waves of exclamations resounded.

“Look! It’s Palace Chief Qin! Palace Chief Qin has arrived!”

The crowd separated, and a group of people slowly walked over. The leading middle aged man wore a purple robe. He had a benevolent and peaceful appearance, and he walked carrying an aura that caused awe in one’s heart; he was precisely the Blue Wind Profound Palace’s Vice Palace Chief, Qin Wushang. Next to him was Qin Wuyou, who wore a slight smile and following behind them were several Elders, as

well as instructors of the Outer Palace.

Qin Wushang and company sat down in a pavilion not far away from the stage, gazing indifferently at the empty stage. All the disciples subconsciously moved back; their gazes that looked at the pavilion were filled with reverence.

“Palace Chief Qin really came!”

“Rubbish! Who did you think Palace Chief Qin is? Of course he’ll keep his word!”

“But why would Palace Chief Qin agree to personally witness a battle like this? Yun Che is an entire great realm below Senior Brother Murong; even if three months had

passed, it would be impossible for the gap to be a lot closer, and perhaps it even got further apart. Even a fool could imagine the conclusion of this battle...”

“Palace Chief Qin’s intentions, naturally aren’t something that we could understand. There’s also the chance that Palace Chief Qin did this merely on a whim...”

Some time had passed since the arrival of Qin Wushang, yet Murong Yi and Yun Che still had not shown up. It was only a few minutes away from the time of the battle, and the chattering in the plaza had also grown increasingly louder. Then, at this moment, large burst of shouting came from the north side of the plaza.

“Murong Yi! Murong Yi’s here!”

Under the gazes of countless disciples that brimmed with excitement, Murong Yi had finally appeared. To his side, was a man donned in all white who followed along shoulder to shoulder. The man’s facial feature was handsome yet feminine; his eyes were narrow and his gaze was undisciplined and cold.

“Look at the person next to Murong Yi! That’s Feng Baiyi, who’s ranked thirty six on the Heavenly Profound Ranking!”

“Woah! Ranked thirty six?” The screams of the Outer Palace disciples suddenly increased by another few notches.

The arrival of Murong Yi and Feng Baiyi had caused Outer Palace disciples in the jam packed plaza to completely sink into an uproar. The reason why the majority of the Outer Palace disciples came pushing into the crowd today, was just to personally see the legendary Inner Palace disciple. Each and every one of them were tiptoeing as their gazes burned with fervor.

“Elder cousin, you must certainly teach that Yun Che a lesson this time, at best, beat him until he’s crippled! That grudge from last time, I had already endured for a whole three months!”

Murong Ye, who was in the crowd, spent an immense amount of effort before he finally pushed through to

Murong Yi's side, and said while gritting his teeth.

"Rest assured, that Yun Che is only a little rat that doesn't know the difference between heaven and earth. If I want him to be round, then he'll be round; if I want to flatten him, then he'll flatten. If you want to personally vent your anger then, humph," Murong Yi sneered disdainfully: "After I finish stepping on him, I will let you deal with him... After all, he had previously said it himself that if he were to lose, his life will be in my hands."

"Hehe," Murong Ye rubbed his hands together; an "unable to wait any longer" expression filled his face: "Cousin, then I'll be waiting for you to mercilessly beat him into

a dead dog. For the next three days, if there's anywhere cousin wants to have some fun at, just ask away."

"It's only stepping on a suicidal locust, was there really a need for you to take it so seriously?" Feng Baiyi yawned, he had a face full of boredom.

Murong Yi glanced at the arena and groaned coldly. "That Yun Che still hasn't come yet?"

"Not yet." Murong Ye hastily replied. He then sneered. "Perhaps he is simply too afraid to show up."

Right after Murong Ye said those words, a burst of rowdy clamoring suddenly came from the distant crowd. Feng Baiyi squinted his eyes,

and started to laugh with extreme mockery. “My! He actually showed up!”

Yun Che was wore a set of white training clothes. He had arrived at about the same time as Murong Yi. However, in addition to the fact that not many had actually seen him before, due to the crowd’s noise, and that he also walked in keeping a low profile, it took a long time for the crowd to recognize him. It was only after he crammed his way through the crowd with effort into the center of the plaza and walked onto the stage without any sense of urgency did the crowd’s gaze finally turn his way.

Yun Che stood atop the arena. His line of sight swept over the area



below and immediately saw Qin Wushang and Qin Wuyou in that pavilion not far away. After momentarily stopping at the pavilion, his gaze fell onto an unremarkable corner at the rear of the crowd. Lan Xuerou was standing there quietly as she looked over with deep concern and nervousness. As their eyes met, Lan Xuerou first smiled faintly, then uncontrollably remembered what happened earlier, and blushed while quietly lowering her head ... Even till now, her mind was still in a muddled state. She simply did not understand why, that even though she was treated like that and violated by him, she actually didn't feel a single hint of the rejection that she was suppose to feel....

“Hmm? Second level of the True Profound Realm? Murong Yi took a glance at Yun Che and immediately saw through his current level of profound strength.

“Wh...what? Second level of the True Profound Realm? That’s impossible! He was only at Nascent Profound Realm three months ago!” Murong Ye said with his eyes wide open.

Feng Baiyi was all smiles. He said. “Tch, a locust that’s slightly fatter is still a locust, if brother Murong wants to squash him to death, just a pinky would be more than enough. However, if I were you, tsk tsk, before I thoroughly stomp him to death, I would play till my heart’s content; You need to know, that

there's not so many locusts in this world that are stupid enough to offer themselves up to be abused."

"I will make him remember this day the rest of his life." Murong Yi coldly grunted. Suddenly, he kicked the ground below him with his foot, and his body soared to the sky like a large bird. After leaping over a distance of over a hundred meters, he landed steadily on the arena and stood directly in front of Yun Che.

"Woah!!"

Murong Yi's leap made all the people who came to watch him exclaim in shock. More than half of the Outer Palace disciples opened their mouths agape; their faces full of admiration and reverence as they

fantasized the day they would reach Murong Yi's level themselves.

“As expected of an Inner Palace disciple, he leaped over a distance of one hundred meters! Sigh, I reckon that it's impossible for me to reach that level before the age of twenty.”

“That one in white is Yun Che? Tsk tsk, he looks so soft and tender, not at all like the appearance of a profound practitioner. He is totally a pretty boy; even a trash like him would actually dare to challenge Murong Yi? Even I could knock him down in a single strike.”

On the stage, Murong Yi and Yun Che stood facing one another. Murong Yi had a sturdy stature,

tanned skin and his exposed muscles mustered up into chunks. From just a single glance, one could tell that he was full of explosive strength. On the other hand, Yun Che was slender and delicate, his skin was tender and pure, without even a hint of aggression. Even calling him a pretty boy was being modest, he's practically half a woman.

“How many moves do you think it'll take for Murong Yi to take down this Yun Che? I think just three moves would be enough.”

“Say what? Three moves? You're practically insulting Inner Palace disciples! If Murong Yi wants to get even a little serious, then one move.... just a single move would be

enough!”

In the pavilion not far from the stage, Qin Wushang had a smiling face; it seemed as if he was really looking forward to the upcoming fight. He casted a side glance at Qin Wuyou who was next to him and said. “In three months, he leveled up two ranks, not bad, not bad. However, Murong Yi is a ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm. Furthermore, in these three months, his profound strength had also increased greatly, and is not too far away from reaching the tenth level. Wuyou, do you think that there’s any possibility for Yun Che to defeat Murong Yi?”

“This...” Qin Wuyou hesitated for a moment, but still shook his head

and sighed: "To be honest, I do not think that is possible at all. After all, there is a gap of an entire seven realm. Even though he was able to gravely injure his opponent who was at the tenth level of the Nascent Profound Realm with the strength of a first ranker of the Nascent Profound Realm, the gap between each level in the True Profound Realm is completely incomparable to those of the Nascent Profound Realm."

"Humph, this rascal was simply just arrogant, conceited and overestimating his capabilities." Instructor Qi, who was in the back, said while sneering.

However, Qin Wushang only faintly smiled and said. "I, however, think

that Yun Che may possibly win.”

Qin Wuyou was immediately looked to the side and said in shock: “Elder brother, you never speak words that you aren’t certain of, why are you so optimistic toward this Yun Che?”

Even though Yun Che’s innate talent is astonishing and can fight a person above his rank, a gap of seven True Profound realm is still fundamentally insurmountable and I have also never heard of anyone surpassing it before.”

Qin Wushang gazed attentively at Yun Che and slowly replied.

“Murong Yi has greatly advanced in profound strength in the past three months; I can clearly sense all the improvements he made in the past three months. However, what this



Yun Che advanced in the three months is not only his profound strength. Other than his external appearance that remained the same as it was three months ago, everything else is completely different. It is as if he's a completely different person. Furthermore, his body is faintly giving off an... an aura that I am completely unable to see through. This feeling that I am unable to fathom has also made me unable to fathom the outcome of this match."

Qin Wuyou: "..."

"Wuyou, it is time. Go and preside over this arranged battle.... but no matter the results, under the eyes of many, I hope you will be absolutely fair. Any other matters can be

determined at a later time.” Qin Wushang said with hidden profoundness.

Qin Wuyou nodded and then flew up, to then land on the edge of the stage. His appearance had caused the entire plaza to immediately quiet down. All the disciples who stood around the stage held their breath; they were waiting for the upcoming scene.

“The time is nigh. You two may begin now.” Qin Wuyou flatly said with dignity. “However, bear in mind that this is nothing more than a spar and not a battle to the death. You are not to kill your opponent. Otherwise, you will be punished severely. Alright begin!”

After Qin Wuyou's voice faded, Murong Yi still wore the same indifferent expression. To fight against someone with only the strength at the second level of the True Profound Realm, he had determined that there was no need for him to be serious. He cast a glance at Yun Che and said, feeling beneath his dignity. "Yun Che, have you finish thinking about how you want to be killed?"

"That is something that I ought to ask you." Yun Che gave the same disdainful sneer in turn. "Take out your weapon."

"Weapon?" Murong Yi laughed loudly. "Against you, is it even necessary for me to use a weapon?"

“Is that so?” The corner of Yun Che’s mouth raised. He swept his wrist around without any sense of urgency. “Since that’s the case, there’s also no need for me to use my weapon. I hope that you’re still able to laugh later on.”

As Murong Yi and Yun Che conversed, the crowd below them were already hissing with displeasure.

“Fuck! I can’t take hearing this anymore! Does this Yun Che know who he is?! Does he know who the person standing in front of him is?!”

“I heard before that there’s a problem with this Yun Che’s brain and didn’t believe it then, but now I

believe it completely. A ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm needs to use a weapon to deal with a second ranker of the True Profound Realm? This trash actually dared to act so arrogant up there! Our grand Blue Wind Profound Palace actually has such a joke of an existence!”

“This Yun Che should take a piss and use that as a mirror to see himself! A second ranker at the True Profound Realm dares to act so arrogant in front of Senior Brother Murong?! Bah! Senior Brother Murong, hurry up and beat him off the stage!”

# Chapter 150:

## Shocking the Entire Audience

“Arrogant brat. Today, I shall let you know the difference between heaven and earth!”

Murong Yi was angered by Yun Che’s words. He felt as if a little mouse was being arrogant in front of him, a lion. He extended his hand towards Yun Che, and said scornfully: “Come, let me see how you’re going to amuse me.”

With Murong Yi’s identity, he obviously wouldn’t take the initiative to attack Yun Che in front

of such a large audience. Yun Che also stopped talking. His two legs kicked off the ground, reaching the absolute limit of his speed in an instant. A shadowy blur flew towards Murong Yi, and a punch directly smashed towards Murong Yi's chest.

Yun Che evidently poured his full strength into that strike. He held nothing back, and did not leave room for any follow-up attacks. Which also meant that, this strike of his, was an actual head-on smash.

A second ranker of the True Profound Realm attacking a ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm head on? All the Outer Palace disciples watching the

confrontation almost could not hold in their laughter. If Yun Che were to use his movement skills, he might really be able to block one or two attacks. But he actually clashed head-on right from the start... he was actively seeking death!

“Idiot!” Murong Yi gave a cold laugh. With a wave of his right fist, the profound strength of a ninth ranker at the True Profound Realm was released, bringing about a whizzing gust of profound energy in an instant. He ruthlessly smashed towards Yun Che’s chest, and whispered these cold-hearted words: “Lie on the ground and cry for me.”

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”



Yun Che's right fist directly collided with Murong Yi's torrent of profound energy and three continuous dull bangs resounded. As if it was a balloon being forcefully exploded, Murong Yi's torrent of profound energy scattered from the collision. But Yun Che's attack did not weaken even a slightest and his straight right fist was now only five feet away from Murong Yi's chest.

"Wh... what!!"

Murong Yi, who was originally scornfully preparing to see Yun Che heavily injured on the ground, was greatly shocked. His body instinctively retreated, and all the profound strength in his body, with his quickest speed possible,

concentrated onto his two arms which were blocking the front of his chest.

Bang!!

There was yet another loud sound. Yun Che's right fist heavily collided with Murong Yi's right arm. In an instant, a torrent of profound energy exploded at the point of collision, blasting the two away from each other. Yun Che flew back a distance of fifteen feet, and caught his balance. Then, he casually swung his right arm. As for Murong Yi, he retreated three steps back, and he stood there for a long while without making any movements. His pair of eyes stared at Yun Che long and hard as his entire face became furiously red.

At that moment, the entire hall was in a state of silence. All the disciples were thoroughly dumbfounded. No one expected that the result was actually like this. In a duel with such a great disparity in strength between the two sides, when their first exchange was actually a direct collision using profound strength, they initially thought Yun Che would lose terribly in an instant, and even suffer heavy injuries. But... those two actually looked to be evenly matched!

How was that possible!?

And as to whether it was actually an even match, a few were able to see that even clearer. In the pavilion, Qin Wushang's face

revealed a shocked expression, and slowly, it grew into a smile.

Although Yun Che flew back by fifteen feet while Murong Yi was only pushed three steps back, there wasn't any change in Yun Che's expression, and the atmosphere emitting from his body was as calm as ever. As for Murong Yi... his right arm was evidently slightly trembling, and his five extended fingers were displaying a slight numbed state... Evidently, his hand was numbed directly from the collision earlier between his hand and Yun Che's fist. His expression, was even uglier to behold.

“This is... a lie right? That Yun Che, is obviously only at the second level of the True Profound Realm!”

“Senior brother Murong Yi must have definitely only tested Yun Che casually, and did not even use a tenth of his profound strength. That must be it.”

“Why aren’t you laughing anymore?” Facing Murong Yi, whose expression was ugly to behold, the corner of Yun Che’s lips curved as he asked sarcastically.

The numbing sensation of Murong Yi’s right fist finally calmed a little. With a sullen face, he forcefully laughed: “Do you think, because you were able to take one of my attacks, victory is in your grasp? What a joke! Earlier, I did not even use a half of my profound strength. In my eyes, you’re still a laughable little mouse... Die!!”

Murong Yi's body shook, and his profound energy was released without any restraints. All the muscles in his body expanded; his bones crackled, and below his feet, a violent wind suddenly swirled as he charged towards Yun Che with shocking speed.

“It's the high-grade profound movement skill, ‘Shadow Chasing Steps’! When Murong Yi uses it, it's basically being executed to perfection!”

“Senior brother Murong Yi even used his profound movement skill... Is he preparing to defeat Yun Che in a single blow?”

Murong Yi's body became a speeding shadow. His speed was

surprisingly quick; in half a second, he had already charged right in front of Yun Che. Then suddenly, his shadowy figure flashed. He strangely transversed by half a step, and he instantly tilted his attacking target from Yun Che's front to Yun Che's side, fiercely crashing towards Yun Che's ribs with his elbow... The onlooking disciples cried out of shock from that instantaneous change.

With such a shocking speed, it was already hard for people to immediately react, but he still managed to swiftly change his posture... While using this mysterious profound movement skill, it would not be possible for the opponent to react at all.

But in the next moment, what everyone saw caused them to hold their breath.

Yun Che's reaction speed was quick, much quicker than everyone's predictions. He seemingly straightened his left arm, blocked his side, and thus collided heavily with Murong Yi's elbow. Within the spread of profound energy ripples, the faint sound of bones crackling resounded.

Although Murong Yi was shocked that his attack was actually blocked, he once again revealed a cold smile... A blow using his full strength, so what if he blocked it? The only outcome that would happen next, was his opponent's arm being broken, his entire body



severely injured from his own powerful rush of profound energy, and getting sent flying while vomiting a mouthful of blood. But, his cold smile only lasted for a moment as his face completely stiffened.

Because the recoil he felt after his elbow collided with Yun Che's arm was so overbearing that all the blood veins and organs in his body writhed for a moment. The floor under Yun Che's feet largely cracked and his two feet also sank deeply into the ground but he was not pushed back by even a single step...

He actually blocked that attack completely and thoroughly.

How... How is this possible! Murong Yi's entire body stiffened; his pupils contracted and violently trembled. From his and Yun Che's first exchange, the outcome was that they were on equal grounds. This made him greatly feel embarrassed. Hence, this strike was completely unrestrained and used a hundred percent of his strength. It was a surprise attack accompanied with a profound movement skill. He obviously wanted to end Yun Che with that single strike. But not only had his full powered attack been totally blocked by Yun Che, he did not even get pushed back a single step.

Impossible! This is impossible! This is definitely a coincidence! Or maybe he's just holding it in, and

had actually already suffered heavy internal injuries!

Murong Yi was howling wildly in his heart. He was unable to accept the fact that his full strength had actually been completely blocked by someone who was simply at the second level of the True Profound Realm. He roared out loud as his body quickly turned to the opposite side. With his left fist raised, another full powered attack struck towards Yun Che. This attack, was once again thoroughly blocked by Yun Che, and did not even manage to push him half a step back.

Murong Yi became agitated. With a solemn face, he stomped his feet and activated his profound movement skill to its limit... His two

fists, elbows, shoulders, knees, and legs were all in an offensive position. He infused every part of his body with a raging profound energy and ruthlessly attacked Yun Che. Those fierce attacks that fell like a violent storm brought about a relentless windstorm on the stage that roared unceasingly.

Yun Che's expression was as tranquil as water. He dealt with all of Murong Yi's attacks in a calm and composed manner. Whenever the blows of the two collided, they would always be accompanied by thundering explosions. The stage below them had long since been shattered and was in pieces; even more cracks were still forming and spreading at an alarming rate.

And all the onlooking disciples,  
were already completely  
dumbfounded.

If they were only evenly matched  
from their first exchange, where  
they clashed head-on, the onlookers  
could understand if Murong Yi  
deliberately held back. But now,  
Murong Yi's expression was fierce;  
his muscles flexed, his veins were  
clearly seen. Evidently, he was using  
his full strength, and he was even  
fully executing his profound  
movement skill. But after colliding  
simultaneously with Yun Che, he  
was not even gaining a single  
advantage over his opponent.  
Although he was currently on the  
offensive and Yun Che was  
focusing entirely on defense, Yun  
Che was actually displaying a

relaxed expression, and there was not even half a hint of pressure shown on his face.

Everyone was utterly stupefied... Between the two of them, they had a difference of seven levels in the True Profound Realm!

Forget about the disciples, even the elders and instructors watching from the pavilion had faces full of shock. As to whether Murong Yi was using his full strength, they were able to see it very clearly. But an outcome like this made them stare for a very long time with tongues tied.

The difference between seven levels of profound strength in the True Profound Realm were undoubtedly

large, but with Evil Soul and the weight of a thousand five hundred kilograms brought by the Great Way of the Buddha, the difference had already been made up... even so much that it had been surpassed.

His dozens of full powered attacks were not even able to trouble Yun Che. This outcome was something Murong Yi would have never been able to predict. His mind was becoming more and more frenzied. Suddenly, he roared loudly as a cold radiance came from his hand. A silver spear of about seven feet in length crossed through Murong Yi's hands and directly pierced towards Yun Che.

“Junior brother Yun, watch out!”

At the front of the crowd, Lan Xueruo, who had been watching the situation on the ring suddenly exclaimed nervously.

And everyone else was shocked pale from this scene as well. An Inner Palace disciple at the ninth level of the True Profound Realm was not even able to do anything against a second ranker of the True Profound Realm, even with his full strength. Not to mention, he was also a disciple that was three years older than him. While this fact was shocking, at the same time, they also felt embarrassed for Murong Yi. But during this fierce battle, the act of him suddenly revealing his weapon, was basically contemptible!



The reason why Murong Yi would act in this way was because his frenzied mind was already at its limit. In these dozen or so of exchanges, he became more and more apprehensive. He felt that he had already completely lost face. He even had a premonition in his heart that he might even be defeated... But, he could not lose, and he could not afford to lose either! If he were to really be defeated, then from this day onwards, he would no longer be able to raise his head high in this Blue Wind Profound Palace. This battle would also spread throughout the entire Blue Wind Imperial City. Yun Che would become reputed in the entire city, but Murong Yi, the son of the Northern Field Marshal, would become a stepping stone for others

to mock.

He could not lose, no matter what. No matter the means, he could not lose.

The sudden thrust of his spear was unbelievably swift. Even Yun Che did not think that Murong Yi, as an Inner Palace disciple, would use such despicable means in front of this large crowd. But even though he was shocked, he did not panic as his body suddenly flashed.

“Star God’s Broken Shadow!!”

In that split second blitz, Yun Che instantly transversed his body and dodged the strike that would not have been possible to dodge by a hair’s breath. Murong Yi’s cold

spear thrust into a ghostly shadow, but the shadow was suddenly swept away, as if it was an instep worm. Countless spear shadows appeared from the silver spear and swirled into a frightening windstorm of spears. Yun Che's body was firmly locked within the countless spear shadows:

“Die! Blue Dragon Stirs the Sea!!”

Murong Yi's face revealed a frightening savageness, and his explosive roar reverberated through the audience.

“This is one of Murong Yi's finishing moves. Not only did he despicably use his weapon to initiate a sneak attack, he even used a final move immediately after! This

is bad!” Qin Wuyou cried out worriedly as he stood up with a shocked expression. But everything happened too quickly. Even he wanted to stop him, it was already too late. And as a ‘referee’, he was also not allowed to step in.

Yun Che had just activated his Star God’s Broken Shadow so he did not even get a proper footing before being instantly trapped within the countless spear shadows. It was basically impossible for him to dodge them. With no other choices, he growled as he poured out all the profound energy within to protect his entire body.

Bang!!!!

Murong Yi’s spear shadows

ruthlessly struck onto Yun Che's body and loud sounds, as if a mountain was collapsing, echoed out. Yun Che's protective layer of profound energy was instantly dispersed by the attacks and he was struck in the ribs. Fresh blood wildly spurted out and his body was also sent flying from the tremendous force. He flew a distance of a couple hundred meters, and crashed heavily at the side of the ring.

The audience, at that moment, cried out in shock.

“Outrageous!” Qin Wushang, whose complexion had been serene without ripples, furiously stood up. He slammed his hand on the stone table beside him and the stone table

shattered in an instant.

“Junior brother Yun!!” Lan Xueroo paled in fear. The moment when Yun Che was sent flying while spitting out blood, she felt like her heart was ruthlessly stabbed with a blade, and was suffocating from the pain. She painfully exhaled, and just when she was about to sprint over to Yun Che without regards to the consequences, she suddenly saw Yun Che, who was at the corner of the ring, actually getting up smoothly.

The ruckus outside the ring suddenly stopped. Each and every eyeball bulged wide open. Murong Yi’s sinister grin was also completely stiffened. Even Qin Wuyou’s and Qin Wushang’s

expressions were filled with shock.

Everyone present were extremely clear about what they had seen. Earlier, Yun Che did definitely take Murong Yi's "Blue Dragon Stirs the Sea" head on. That was one of the three ultimate moves in 《Blue Dragon Spear Arts》, and perfecting it was extremely difficult. Once it was successfully executed, its strength was absolutely formidable; it was able to forcefully push back a large wave of water and shatter large sturdy rocks. When it was smashed against Yun Che, the aftereffects were absolutely deafening. Even if it was used against a block of steel, it might even be thoroughly smashed.

Everyone thought that even if Yun

Che did not die from that one blow, he would still be heavily injured. Him being in a coma for ten days to half a month was the most understandable outcome. But no one would have thought, and would not even dare believe that Yun Che would actually stand up...

And Yun Che, who stood up once more, looked frighteningly calm. His handsome face only held a stern expression and did not have the paleness from being heavily injured. There were no hints of being pained, nor were there any traces of anger. He turned around and blankly looked towards Murong Yi. Other than the long slice of blood at his waistline, there were no other visible signs of injury on his entire body.



Even Yun Che did not expect that the physical defensive capability brought about by the first stage of the Way of the Buddha would be so frightening!

“You... You...” Murong Yi’s pupils enlarged. Seeing the Yun Che in front of him who once again stood up, his right hand, which was holding onto the long spear, trembled uncontrollably.

Yun Che slowly raised both his hands. A black light flashed between his hands, and the gigantic Overlord’s Colossal Sword appeared in his grasp. Following the sinking of Yun Che’s wrists, it crashed onto the ground with a loud bang.

After the loud sound, the ring under Yun Che's feet immediately caved in. A heavy and dominating pressure caused everyone to suffocate. It was as if the aura of a returning overlord enveloped the hearts of every single person present.

# Chapter 151:

## Steamrolled

When the Overlord's Colossal Sword appeared, everyone present was momentarily shocked.

Whether or not a sword's aura was threatening, depended on who was wielding the sword. If it was in the hands of a three year old child, even if it was a heavenly weapon, it still would not be of the slightest deterrence. But in an expert's hands, even if it was a common sword, it would still release an awe-inspiring aura.

There were quite a few people present who had seen the

Overlord's Colossal Sword before; especially the elders and instructors, who were extremely familiar with it. Because over the past several hundred years, it had silently lain under the weapons rack in the Heavenly Weapon Pavilion, until it had been covered by a thick layer of dust. The disciples or instructors would only glance at it and marvel at its enormity, then look away completely... In their eyes, it was only huge, cumbersome, lacking in grandeur, and completely uninteresting. Over time, people had practically ignored and forgotten its existence.

But right now, grasped in Yun Che's hands, its incomparably large pitch-black sword blade released a tyrannic aura that caused one's

heart to palpitate; just like the arrival of an army's emperor that could make the world cower. It made the gazes of everyone present subconsciously focus on its body. They were incapable of moving for a long time as their gazes shook, their hearts shuddered, and their chests felt suffocated.

Qin Wushang was extremely startled after watching Yun Che stand up right after receiving a blow from Murong Yi's "Blue Dragon Stirs the Sea", but seeing the Overlord's Colossal Sword grasped in his hand, his heart was several times more shocked... Because he was the most clear about what this feeling implied.

"To release this domineering aura

from the Overlord's Colossal Sword, which has been silent for the past several hundred years, as if a fierce tiger has completely awoken... Could it be that he can actually completely control such a heavy sword? A one thousand nine hundred fifty kilogram heavy sword! With profound strength at the second level of the True Profound Realm... how could this be possible!"

Even Qin Wushang at the Sky Profound Realm, a supreme realm, still did not dare believe everything he was currently perceiving. In his cognition, let alone a second ranker of the True Profound Realm, merely brandishing this Overlord's Colossal Sword freely would be a difficult task for even the second

ranker of the Spirit Profound realm... Completely mastering it would be out of the question.

But it was evident through the imposing manner of the Overlord's Colossal Sword that Yun Che's own aura was closely linked to it. This mutual fusion proved that Yun Che was already extremely familiar with it, and controlling it was practically like controlling his own arm or leg.

“W... What a big sword!”

“Don't tell me, could that be the rumored heavy sword Yun Che selected from the Heavenly Weapon Pavilion?”

“It's said that weapon weighs one thousand nine hundred fifty

kilograms... that can't be possible!"

Yun Che's expression was completely tranquil, and it looked like other than the scar on his lower back, there were no other large hindrances. But in reality, even with a reformed body brought by the Great Way of the Buddha, how could a finishing blow dealt with the strength of a ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm be easily withstood. Although he didn't sustain any heavy injuries, his injuries definitely could not be considered light; the only external injury was the long streak on his lower back, but his internal organs had sustained several injuries that weren't light. Just as he got up, he already had to forcefully swallow a gulp of blood that almost bubbled



up to his throat.

And at the same time, his anger had been completely incited.

“Murong Yi, I originally challenged you merely to use you as a form of pressure and to test my worth; but I never would have thought that, with your status as an Inner Palace disciple, you would actually be so contemptible and cowardly. To throw away your face just for victory... Since this is so, I also have no reason to be polite anymore.” Yun Che stated in a low voice.

“Ha... hahahaha!” Murong Yi began laughing wildly, but his laugh was very dry and tedious. He then said with a gloomy face: “Yun Che, you are indeed just a little stronger than

I had imagined but you are still far from being to fit be your daddy's opponent! Soon, I'll let you understand the power of the peak of the True Profound Realm! Contrariwise, that sword in your hand, can you really wield it? Hahahaha..."

In the midst of his wild laughter, Murong Yi suddenly bellowed loudly and the profound energy in his body crashed forward crazily like a surging wave. The thick profound energy circulated the surface of his body like waves as it wrapped around his entire person. The air surrounding him instantly became chaotic and it stirred up waves of ripples.

This time, Murong Yi thoroughly

and completely, did not hold back in the slightest. Because, the shadow of “possible defeat” on Yun Che had stood up once again. The moment he had grasped the gigantic sword, his internal organs shook violently and expanded crazily, as if the grin of a demon had produced a great fear within him... He couldn't lose; no matter what, he could not lose.

The forcefully released profound energy surged substantially, and Murong Yi's entire body rose into the air. With a roar, the silver spear in his hands thrust at Yun Che rapidly like lightning; and every time the long spear thrust forward, it left behind an array of spear shadows. In the blink of an eye, a myriad of spear shadows

horizontally spread in the sky like a huge lethal storm and enveloped Yun Che... Sealing off all his possible escape routes.

Every spear shadow released an awe-inspiring cold light and each possessed enough strength capable of piercing through a boulder.

Once this technique was released, all the instructors and elders present revealed expressions filled with shock.

“The strongest ultimate technique of the 《Blue Dragon Spear Arts》 – Purgatory Dragon Shadows! He actually successfully mastered it!”

“When Murong Yi selected the spear back then, I had tried to

dissuade him from doing so because the sword is the path for a king... I never would have thought that Murong Yi's comprehension of the spear was actually so incredible. In the past century of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, I'm afraid the number of disciples who have cultivated this technique before graduation does not exceed ten!"

"Now that he has released this move, it's impossible for Yun Che to win... At least a dozen holes will puncture his body."

Yun Che slowly raised his head and fearlessly looked at the inescapable trap of spear shadows that filled the sky. Just as the spear shadows fell from the sky amid the screams of countless people, Yun Che's eyes

flashed and abruptly raised the Overlord's Colossal Sword grasped in his hands. The Overlord's Colossal Sword drew a humongous pitch-black arc and smashed towards the spear shadows that filled the sky.

The way of the spear had a line that described a battle against the sword: No matter how many of your sword rays, I need only one sweep of my spear. Even though a sword was agile and versatile, when compared in terms of how overbearing it is and the range of its attacks, swords could never compare to spears... But this only applied to light swords; if it was a heavy sword, then the formula would be completely reversed.

No matter how many of your spear shadows, I need only one sweep of my sword!

In the face of the one thousand nine hundred fifty kilogram Overlord's Colossal Sword in Yun Che's hands, the spear in Murong Yi's hands wasn't overbearing in the slightest!

Along with Yun Che's one wave, the entire plaza, and perhaps even its farthest corners, all heard a tremendous whistling sound that pierced the air...

Bang bang bang bang bang bang bang bang...

The huge sword body collided with the countless spear shadows; in an

instant, an incomparably dense crushing sound was emitted. The spear shadows that filled the sky exploded and shattered like pieces of fragile glass. In a split second, the spear shadows that Murong Yi had used all his profound energy to produce, were swept away cleanly like leaves blown away by a fierce wind. In the end, the Overlord's Colossal Sword brought about a whistling sound akin to a storm wind, and heavily bombarded upon the silver spear grasped in Murong Yi's hands.

Clang~~~~~

An extremely ear-piercing sound of a strike resounded. The silver spear in Murong Yi's hands instantly turned into the shape of a full



moon, to then directly snap with a “crack” sound. The tremendous power, which had not yet dispersed, ruptured the webbing between Murong Yi’s thumb and index finger in its vibrations. In the midst of a blood-curdling scream, the broken silver spear flew out of his hand and flew a huge distance before landing at the periphery of the huge crowd.

Yun Che’s Overlord’s Colossal Sword, had also been lifted from his lower left to the upper right at this time, completing a perfect half-arc... At the same time, the area under the stage in which he was facing suddenly burst into chaos. Under the violent impact brought by the heavy sword, the crowd up to ten feet away from the stage all felt

as if a heavy hammer had been slammed onto their chests. A majority of the people present were directly blown backwards, turning the large crowd into a chaotic heap of people.

The power of this sword, which was merely from one strike of a profound practitioner at the second level of the True Profound Realm... was utterly shocking!

Murong Yi, who had been suspended in midair, finally landed on the ground. Sitting there while paralyzed in place with eyes that stared blankly, it appeared as if he could not believe that everything that had happened was reality... He had spent two years comprehending this sure-kill strike

and it had always been his deeply hidden last resort and trump card. But when he used it for the first time today, it had been thoroughly defeated by just one strike from the opponent. Even his beloved spear, had been snapped as if he was in a nightmare... The spear he used was obviously not a common spear; it was a Spirit Profound Artifact, the Silver Dragon Spear, from the Heavenly Weapon Pavilion. But the roaring Silver Dragon had encountered the awakened Overlord, so the only outcome was a wanton trampling.

“Yun Che... Yun Che! I’ll kill you!!”

Murong Yi, who had been in a daze for quite a long time, suddenly roared and jumped up abruptly. As

if he had gone insane, he reached out to grab at Yun Che's neck. Murong Yi's consumed a large portion of his profound energy and used "Purgatory Dragon Shadows" once more. As of now, he could at most, only utilize around seventy percent of his strength at his peak state. In contrast to the calm and composed Yun Che who had the heavy sword in hand, what qualifications did he have to fight Yun Che?

Facing Murong Yi's final struggle, Yun Che laughed coldly. His body exploded outwards with a flash, with his hands still holding onto the huge heavy sword, yet his movement speed was not any slower compared to before. Then, without even looking at Murong Yi,

the heavy sword casually swept upwards.

Whoosh~~

A windstorm swirled amid the whistling sound. The heavy sword didn't actually touch Murong Yi's body, but even this frightening storm was something Murong Yi could not resist at all. Murong Yi's body was directly blown upwards until he was almost ten feet in the air. At this time, Yun Che suddenly jumped up and traveled ten feet in one leap. The heavy sword arced, and ruthlessly slammed it upon Murong Yi's body.

Boom!!

Murong Yi plummeted downwards

like a loud cannonball. What followed was the rumbling explosion of the stage beneath him. Broken stone was scattered about and his entire body, from head to toe, smashed into the stage.

When the heavy sword had not been taken out and the two fought unarmed, they could barely be regarded as evenly divided. But once the heavy sword was taken out, Murong Yi was defeated in a landslide and was crushed so badly that he simply could not fight back. If he had only been able to control the heavy sword, it would still be impossible for Yun Che to do this. But what kind of existence was the 《Prison God Sirius' Tome》? Once he had comprehended the fundamental stage of the 《Prison

God Sirius' Tome》, the heavy sword in Yun Che's hands was no longer a heavy sword, but an angry celestial dragon who had been awakened. Every swing inevitably rumble the heavens and shake the earth as it cleaved stone and frighten the heavens.

In the midst of everyone's dazed gazes, Yun Che landed from the air next to the area Murong Yi had smashed into the ground. With a casual wave of the heavy sword, only a "boom" sound could be heard as the majority of the stage collapsed immediately and flew upwards. Murong Yi's body also flew into the air and landed in front of Yun Che. At this time, Murong Yi's clothes were completely tattered; he was covered with

bloodstains, his face had been blurred with dirt and blood. Although his eyes were still open, they were already void of any expression and were as dim as dead ash.

Yun Che took a step forward, plunged the heavy sword into the ground, and loftily stared down at Murong Yi: “Murong Yi, do you still want to fight? If you want to continue, I’ll be more than happy to comply. You’re a ninth level True Profound realm Inner Palace disciple, yet with your full strength, you were only able to make me swing my heavy sword three times... Ah, you really must feel like you haven’t demonstrated your strength yet.”



# Chapter 152:

## Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet

“No need to keep fighting.” Qin Wuyou walked over: “Even though you acted with mercy, Murong Yi’s injuries are still not light and he no longer has the energy to fight. This battle... Yun Che, you have won with an overwhelming victory.”

He had seen clearly that if Yun Che had not shown mercy in his third strike, the ferocity and matchless strength of that heavy sword would be enough to disperse the protection from his almost-depleted profound energy, and crush Murong

Yi into a meat patty.

Yun Che stored the Overlord's Colossal Sword away and did not speak any more as he stood there with a slight smile.

The entire stage had disappeared, turned into a pile of crumbling ruins. Every one of the surrounding disciples nearby had expressions of deep shock and disbelief written on their faces. When Qin Wuyou had proclaimed the outcome, not only did no one cheer loudly, there was actually only a field of deathly stillness.

A confrontation between a second ranker of the True Profound Realm and a ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm, the difference in

profound strength in this battle was incomparably large. To everyone, the outcome of this battle had no suspense whatsoever; they had come today only to witness the splendor of Inner Palace disciples and watch the miserable ending of an arrogant disciple. They had mocked Yun Che for overestimating his own abilities, laughed at him for being stupid and idiotic. He had even been a source of laughter for discussions during leisure time; they mocked him in order to enjoy a feeling of intellectual and mental superiority...

Today, the shocking truth that had appeared in front of them told them that they simply lacked all qualifications to ridicule Yun Che.

This person, which they had laughed at for several months, already stood at a height they could only dream of, looking down upon all of them. Thinking back to all of the glib ridicule addressed to Yun Che, many of the Outer Palace disciples flushed with embarrassment, and a few of the people that had just been shouting insults really wished they could find a hole and crawl into it.

Everyone looked at Yun Che blankly, their gazes never to have that contempt they showed before the match ever again; replacing it was a deep look of shock and reverence, which evolved into fanaticism and worship. To prevail over an opponent that surpassed him by seven levels and shake the

entire stadium with one wave of the heavy sword; in their eyes, the current Yun Che appeared almost like a character from myths. Especially those three earth-shattering strikes, which were enough to leave everyone a lasting impression of shock.

“Too... too powerful! Before, I had actually ridiculed him continuously... Turns out I’m the most laughable one.”

“Ninth level of the True Profound Realm doesn’t count for much, I’ll be able to reach it one day too... but stepping across seven levels to defeat an opponent... This is true strength! I reckon I’ll never be able to accomplish this in my lifetime. This Junior Brother Yun is too... too

frightening.”

“This heavy sword, is really too flashy; this is a true weapon for men... Which son of a bitch told me heavy swords were garbage? This won’t do! I want to train in another weapon! I’ll apply to reselect a weapon at the Common Weapon Pavilion immediately!” An Outer Palace disciple roared with a face full of emotion before breaking into a run towards the Common Weapon Pavilion.

Once these words were spoken, countless people that thought the same instantly appeared. A huge expanse of Outer and Middle Palace disciples clamored to head back towards the Weapon Pavilion area, afraid that all the heavy sword-type

weapons would already be seized. Those three strikes from Yun Che had shocked them too much, and they burned with passion amidst the shock.

The final result was that in not even half a day of time, the countless heavy sword-type weapons in the Common and Earth Weapon Pavilions were completely looted.

Qin Wushang slowly stood up and stared at Yun Che who stood in the center of the plaza with a face filled with deep emotion. He murmured with a voice only he could hear: “Worthy of being someone selected by Princess Cang Yue... Second level True Profound realm controlling the Overlord’s Colossal Sword, easily defeated a ninth level True

Profound realm, has a threatening aura yet reserved manner, seems unassuming but is actually very sharp and shrewd... This kind of genius is barely seen in one's entire life!"

He also firmly believed, all this wasn't Yun Che's full strength. After all, after Yun Che revealed his heavy sword, he had only swung three times.

But these three strikes revealed a godly strength and brought about an overbearing feeling; even millions upon millions of a light sword's swing could not even begin to compare to it.

Subsequently, Qin Wushang's clear and bright voice sounded, and



spread widely throughout the entire Central Plaza with a peculiar penetrating force: “This truly was shocking, yet brilliant battle. Yun Che, you defeated the Inner Palace disciple Murong Yi with second level True Profound Realm strength, and controlled the Overlord’s Colossal Sword, which none have been able to control in the past several hundred years of the Blue Wind Profound Palace; without an exception, all of this is truly breathtaking! With just what happened today, addressing you as the number one genius in the past three hundred years of the Blue Wind Profound Palace would not be a stretch. And you are still young; your future prospects are boundless.”

Once Qin Wushang spoke, the noise in the plaza died down. Every one of his words, was sonorous and solemn, and not one felt they were exaggerated: “Starting from today, you are officially an Inner Palace disciple, and you will replace Murong Yi’s position in the Heavenly Profound Ranking, which is the seventy-third rank.

Furthermore, according to your performance today, you will be allowed to enter the Supreme Profound Hall at any time, and there will be no restriction on the number of profound techniques and profound arts you choose, or how long you hold them for. You will also be awarded a Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet.”

Whoaaaa

Once Qin Wushang finished speaking, the entire crowd instantly went into an uproar.

To have the right to enter the Supreme Profound Hall at any time, and be able to select an unlimited amount of profound arts or profound techniques, it can be said that this was an unprecedented occurrence in the Blue Wind Profound Palace. Just this award, was already immeasurable. And what truly shocked people was the “Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet” he spoke about. The Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet was something everyone in the Blue Wind Imperial City knew about, a high-grade pellet everyone dreamed of possessing. The Blue Wind Profound Palace was directly

subordinate to the imperial family and was Blue Wind Empire's largest profound palace. Naturally, their tremendous strength was undoubtable but they could only make one Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet every two years. It was said that it took approximately one hundred medicinal materials and dozens of precious crystals to make a Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet. Refining it was even more incomparably harsh but its effects was even more incomparably astonishing: After ingestion, it would let any profound practitioner at the Spirit Profound Realm or below... to gain a level in one night.

In the past, the Blue Wind Profound Palace's Goldscale Dragon

Transforming Pellet would only be given to the Blue Wind Profound Palace disciples who were seeded competitors prior to the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. It was so that they would take a big leap before the competition. Nevertheless, it was the first time it had been given to a disciple as a reward.

While all of the disciples envied this award greatly, none thought it was excessive. Because Yun Che's performance today completely deserved of this kind of reward.

As for the Murong Yi who was just lying there, he had been the main character of the event at first , yet now he had been forgotten. Everyone's gazes were focused on Yun Che, and practically no one

looked directly at him.

Murong Ye charged forward, helped Murong Yi get up, and prepared to leave while clenching his teeth. Just as he took two steps, Yun Che's figure sounded from behind him.

“So you're just going to leave like that?”

Murong Ye's body shook from head to toe, and turned around with difficulty: “Yun Che, you better not bully intolerably... My cousin is the only son of the Northern Field's Great General. You have completely offended my cousin today. J... Just wait to regret it.”

Murong Ye had on a stern expression but his insides were soft;

while he spoke maliciously, his body was cowering and trembling, and his heart was beating even more violently. Even though he didn't want to admit it, the reality was, as one who had always bragged about being a genius, the disparity between him and Yun Che was no less than the distance between the sky and the earth. In front of Yun Che, let alone being arrogant, he didn't even have the qualifications to lick his shoes.

"Senior Brother Murong, there's no need to be so nervous. I only wanted to remind Murong Yi about something." Yun Che smiled lightly: "Back then, when we scheduled the fight, we agreed in front of the crowd that, if I lost, you could punish me however you like, but if

you lost, you would have to agree to three of my demands, and you definitely cannot decline any of these demands... Murong Yi, you couldn't have forgotten about this, right? It's alright if you did forget, any of those present at the time can help you remember; Palace Chief Qin also a witness at the time."

"You... " The heavily-wounded Murong Yi's face suddenly turned purple, and his lips shivered. After, his eyes rolled upwards, and directly fainted out of anger.

A white silhouette flashed in front of Yun Che and Feng Baiyi appeared, standing between him and Murong Yi. To have ended this appointed battle with such a conclusion, Feng Baiyi's expression



was very ugly, but a cold smile still hung on the corners of his mouth: “Yun Che brat, not bad... Sadly, for a wild brat with no background like you to be so arrogant, you’ll pay bitterly later.”

Yun Che returned a similar cold smile: “There have been countless people who have wanted me to pay bitterly, but if they didn’t end up crippled, they ended up dead. I’m actually really looking forward to see, just who’ll be the next that wants me to pay bitterly?”

Feng Baiyi’s eyes narrowed ferociously and a strand of coldness flashed in his eyebrows. He turned around, and brought Murong Ye and the unconscious Murong Yi away.

“Brother-in-law... Brother-in-law!!”

Xia Yuanba wasted a considerable amount of energy to finally push through the layers of people, and charged in front of Yun Che. His face glowed red, and exclaimed with extreme emotion: “I just knew, brother-in-law would definitely win! Waaaah... brother-in-law! You’ve actually become this powerful now! I look up to you, look up to you so much that... Ahh ahh. In short, I really look up to you! If my sister knew that brother-in-law was no longer a person with crippled profound veins, and had become this strong, she would definitely be very shocked.”

“Hehe.” Yun Che could not resist but laugh a little. Listening to Xia

Yuanba's words, the heavenly image of Xia Qingyue couldn't be restrained as it flashed in his consciousness... A year's time had passed since he had left the Xiao Clan and in this year's time, he would think of her often. Without mentioning anything else, they had paid respect to the heaven and earth, entered the bridal room, and through the sixteen year old engagement, she had become Yun Che's official wife. With this identity, it was impossible for him to forget about Xia Qingyue.

He looked to the side, and instantly identified the four people who had bullied Xia Yuanba in the crowd. Once those four people met Yun Che's gaze, their bodies shrunk, and they all revealed incomparably

flattering smiles... They had originally come today to watch Yun Che humiliate himself and vent their anger, yet they'd have never thought a disciple on the Heavenly Profound Ranking would be beaten like a dog by him. Now, even if they were given a hundred guts, they would definitely not lay even a finger on Xia Yuanba, and they would work like mad to curry favor with him.

This included several disciples present who were familiar with Xia Yuanba and had ridiculed him for his low profound strength; now that they saw his relationship with Yun Che, their intestines turned green on the spot. While sweating, they were also silently thinking about how to apologize to Xia Yuanba,

how they would have to try to maintain a good relationship with him in the future, and so on...

“Big Brother Yun, you’re truly too mighty, too powerful!” A delicate and pretty young man squeezed forward, and exclaimed excitedly.

“Yun Xiaofan?” Looking at the young man he had met during the palace entrance exams, Yun Che smiled lightly: “You really were able to stay in the Profound Palace.”

“Mn mn.” Yun Xiaofan nodded: “It’s all thanks to Big Brother Yun’s help, I had a second chance at the exams with Instructor Qin and passed smoothly. Otherwise, not only would I not have been able to stay here, I would’ve had to leave with a

body full of injuries... Big Brother Yun, not only are you my great benefactor, you are also my idol. In these five years at the Profound Palace, reaching your level will be my highest goal!"

"Haha! Good luck! The Outer Palace is only your temporary residence, your goal is the Inner Palace."

"I will definitely work hard." Yun Xiaofan clenched his fists, and said with conviction.

In the periphery, watching Yun Che, who had become the focus of the entire plaza, was a completely relieved Lan Xueruo; her face now revealed an incomparably happy smile. She herself couldn't see just how gentle and beautiful her smile

was, and her heart was filled with a kind of deep sense of pride that she herself didn't even notice.

In this long length of time she had associated with Yun Che, she knew that he was definitely not one to speak without thinking or one to overestimate his own abilities, and that he had the shocking ability to fight those who were several levels stronger than him. Because of that, when he had challenged Murong Yi, she didn't actually have a very pessimistic attitude... But she never would've thought Yun Che had become strong to this extent, and not only did he defeat Murong Yi... he had utterly steamrolled him.

But once the happiness passed, a deep anxiety began to spread in her

heart.

She was clearer than anybody about what might happen after this showdown.

The Blue Wind Profound Palace was directly subordinate to the imperial family and helped foster a younger generation of geniuses for the imperial family which would in turn foster the future backbone and cornerstones of the imperial family. In a sense, it was also the face of the imperial family. If a disciple entered the Inner Palace, his name would be known to the entire Imperial City, because the future accomplishments of those who can enter the Inner Palace would definitely be extremely great, without an exception.



And, a disciple that completely defeated a ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm at second level of the True Profound Realm, moreover, at the age of seventeen... What kind of peerless genius was this! At least in the last several hundred years, the Blue Wind Profound Palace had never produced such an incredible person, and he was only seventeen years old; his future accomplishments are practically unimaginable.

Without a doubt, the name Yun Che would spread throughout the entire city in a short duration of a few days; so much so that it would cause a commotion in the entire city. This would allow him to obtain an extremely great amount of attention and praise, but at the

same time, he would also sink into a whirlpool of public opinion.

But Lan Xueruo was actually not worried about all of this.

What she was anxious about, were her two brothers... The Crown Prince Cang Lin and Third Prince Cang Shuo.

She believed they would definitely try to rope Yun Che in. Not only that, they would definitely try to rope him in much more vigorously than the other Inner Palace Disciples... Even more than the top ten in the Heavenly Profound Ranking!

# Chapter 153: Cang Yue

Hence, the duel between Yun Che and Murong Yi concluded. The outcome of this battle was out of everyone's expectations, shocking their state of mind. Naturally, right after, Yun Che's name swept through the entire Blue Wind Profound Palace like a huge storm, and even the entire Blue Wind Imperial City.

A second ranker of the True Profound Realm, defeated someone at the ninth level of the True Profound Realm in a direct confrontation. This point alone was enough to shake the entire city.

However, Yun Che, at the age of seventeen, who was only at the second level of the True Profound Realm was also able to wield the Overlord's Colossal Sword, which no one in hundreds of years was able to successfully wield, as he pleased. This additional fact added a certain amount of colors to his legend.

In just a short period of time, from all the different kinds of rumors about the duel, countless exaggerated names were posed upon Yun Che. For example, "Blue Wind Profound Palace's No. 1 Star", "The No. 1 Genius Blue Wind Profound Palace produced in a few hundred years", "The Peerless Demon who seems to be capable of challenging an entire Profound

Realm higher than himself”, and even “Blue Wind Imperial Palace’s Future Support Pillar”.

In a single night, from being a completely unknown existence, Yun Che became someone that seemed to be known by the entire city. Following after the spread of the different versions of the rumor, he became the target of envy and worship of countless young practitioners.

But in regards to all these, Yun Che was clueless.

After the battle with Murong Yi ended, Yun Che was pulled back into his quarters by Lan Xueruo.

The wound at Yun Che’s waist was

not light as it was at least half an inch deep, and the spill of fresh blood stained a large portion of his clothes red. After Lan Xueruo cleaned his wound, she carefully applied the medicine she prepared beforehand and wrapped his waist tightly with bandages. Although the injury he suffered was much lighter than she expected, the shocking wound and bloodstains still ached her heart.

“Senior sister, don’t worry, it’s not that big of an injury. Something like this will heal really quickly.” Yun Che slightly smiled. With a body honed by the Great Way of the Buddha, he was able to recover to a large extent in just ten days when Little Fairy almost killed him before, let alone a small wound like

this.

Throughout the entire process, his tender gaze was on Lan Xueruo the entire time. Lan Xueruo's actions were rough and clumsy; evidently, she rarely... or she might not even have cleaned and applied medicine on someone's wound before. His entire body and soul were filled with warmth by this fact.

"But... The new clothes Senior Sister made for me got stained." Yun Che raised the training clothes which was largely stained by fresh blood, and even had a large hole, as he said dispiritedly.

"It's alright, I can still make you a couple more. As long as you're okay." After tying the final knot,

Lan Xueruo was drenched in sweat. She still clearly remembered the moment Yun Che was struck by Murong Yi's spear. She felt as if her heart sank into the deepest of abyss at that very instant. Although Yun Che's current injury pained her heart, at the same time, it also made her feel as if she had returned to heaven.

“Really?” Hearing Lan Xueruo's words, Yun Che, in an instant, joyfully laughed: “That's the kind of promise a girl would make to her own husband, you know... Senior Sister, are you finally willing to be together with me?”

“You, you~~” Lan Xueruo's entire face was dyed red in an instant, and her feelings were in a great mess.



She bit her lips, and straightened her face with great effort. “Hmph! You married playboy! I have yet to lecture you for offending me before, how dare you try to push your limits! Next time... Next time, don’t you... Don’t you dare steal a kiss from me ever again!”

“Well, if I can’t steal kisses... Does that mean I can kiss you upfront?” Yun Che gave a small laugh. Lan Xueruo’s stern face was not even the least bit scary, but instead, included a hint of a girl’s cuteness.

In terms of relationships, Lan Xueruo’s experience was like a completely blank piece of paper. How could she be a match for Yun Che? With that single line from Yun Che, her feelings were even

more confused than ever. Before she could think of anything to rebut, her hand suddenly warmed. Her sweaty small hand was already gently held by Yun Che. In front of her, Yun Che wore a warm smile as his face slowly approached, closer and closer... The scent of the man that made her heart beat slowly came closer.

“Wh... What are you trying to do?”  
Lan Xuero instinctively pulled her body back as she nervously asked.

“Before, I stole a kiss and frightened Senior Sister. That was my mistake. So to make it up for Senior Sister, I have to once again kiss Senior Sister seriously.”

Yun Che softly said. His every word,

caused Lan Xueruo's heartbeat to speed up. While she was muddled, Yun Che's face was already really, really close. She could clearly feel his warm breath gently caressing her face. If she did not retreat now, in the next second, her lips would once again be kissed by him...

Her reasoning told her that she must dodge it immediately, but women, were never living beings who put reasoning first to begin with. Her heartbeat crazily accelerated; the blushing redness of her face was already spread down her neck, but she was still not making any sort of movement to avoid him... Because deep in her heart, she was basically not able to reject this sort of "offense". Rather, she had a certain... feeling of

longing and expectation that she could not understand.

Suddenly, she could feel her own lips were finally lightly pressed against, and her waist was also sneakily wrapped around by an arm. Her body stiffened and her vision turned hazy. Slowly, she began to close her eyes...

The door to the room was pushed open with a “bang”, and a hearty voice, coupled with loud laughter, spread throughout the room.

“Hahahaha! Yun Che, you little rascal, your performance today was simply amazing! As expected, you once again gave me a good shock. So no matter what, I have to personally hand you this Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet...”

Qin Wuyou brought in a gust of wind as he stepped into the room. Before he could finish his sentence, as if he was stopped by a stone wall in front of him, his pair of eyes instantly widened even larger than a pair of cow's eyes... In front of him, Yun Che's chest was exposed, his waist was wrapped in bandages, his left arm was tightly held around Lan Xueruo's thin waist, and was currently kissing deeply against her lips...

“Ah———” Lan Xueruo cried out of shock as she escaped from Yun Che's embrace with a lightning fast speed. She helplessly turned around and covered her beautiful face, which was currently flushed red, with her pair of hands.

Yun Che however, kept his cool. As he unsatisfyingly licked the scented saliva at the corner of his lips, he calmly said: "Instructor Qin, you're here."

"I... I... I... I... I..." Qin Wuyou, one of the only few Chief Instructors of Blue Wind Profound Palace, was currently utterly dumbfounded. His lips were curved and his eyes were slanted as he revealed a terrified look. He stuttered: "I-I... en... entered the wrong room. Y-y-y-you... You two... go on... go on..."

Qin Wuyou said as he retreated. When he reached the door, he even fell heavily onto the floor from tripping over the door's sill. It was obvious that he did not even turn to look at where he was going. After

struggling to stand up, without even daring to raise his head to take another look at them, he fled from the lodging.

Yun Che stared at his every movement, up till the moment he fled. He then said softly: "He's already so old but he's still not able to take the sight of Senior Sister and I making out? He's really exaggerating things. Ah... mn. Senior Sister, let's continue."

"Who... Who would continue! I... I still have matters to attend to. I can't... I can't be bothered with you any longer!"

With one hand, Lan Xueruo grabbed Yun Che's torn and bloodsoaked training clothes, then

ran out of the room with a reddened face while leaving a tint of her fragrance behind.

Yun Che did not chase after her. He raised his hand and pressed it against his lips as he laughed satisfyingly. He then softly muttered to himself: "That's why, the strength of a man's charm, is completely unrelated to whether or not he's married..."

Yun Che stood up, wore a shirt he randomly picked out over his body, and walked to the door. Just when he was about to close the door, he saw Qin Wuyou returning with an extremely queer expression on his face.

"Instructor Qin, did you walk into



the right room this time?” Yun Che laughed.

“You... You rascal.” The corner of Qin Wuyou’s mouth twitched. Then, he let out a long sigh as he walked into the room. He sat in front of the table, poured a cup of tea for himself with the teapot, and gulped it down.

In Yun Che’s eyes, this action, no matter how he looked at it, looked as if he was suppressing his astonishment.

“Instructor Qin, are you personally here to hand me the Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet?” Yun Che sat in front of Qin Wuyou and asked this rhetorical question.

However, Qin Wuyou did not nod at his question. Instead, he stared at him and said in a strange tone:

“Three months ago, you said you and Xueruo, during that period of time... uhh, slept together. I had my suspicions but I didn’t expect that, y-y-y-y-you...”

He really could not find the right words to describe Yun Che. He clearly knew of Lan Xueruo’s identity. And even if she abandoned her identity, her appearance was still rather unparalleled in the country. The number of handsome youths who had tried to woo her, just by the ones he knew alone, were more than he could count with his bare hands. But even though Lan Xueruo was kind and gentle to everyone, she never had

any deeper relationship with a single man. She was burdened with too many things in her heart and basically did not have any room for that sort of thing.

He did not expect that, not only was Yun Che's talent frightening beyond compare and surpassed everyone's expectations every single time, he was even an expert at flirting. He actually conquered Lan Xuero in less than a half year's worth of time. The main issue was that Yun Che did not have any sort of background. He did not have any relatives to speak of, was two years younger than Lan Xuero, and was even married! In Qin Wuyou's eyes, this was really... too illogical!

"I like Senior Sister Lan Xuero, and

Senior Sister Lan Xueruo likes me as well. Isn't that a really normal occurrence?" Yun Che said calmly.

Qin Wuyou shook his head, looked directly into Yun Che's eyes, and said: "Then do you know of Xueruo's identity and background?"

Yun Che was startled for a moment, and then shook his head. "I don't know. But from Senior Sister's temperament and manner of speech, and even the many feelings I get from her, Senior Sister Xueruo must be of a noble background. But I have never took the initiative to ask her about it, and had never intentionally inquire someone else about it. If she doesn't want me to know, I will only be making it difficult for her if I attempt to ask

her. She will naturally tell me when she thinks it's the right time to do so. But she will definitely not harm me, and that's the only thing I need to know."

"You don't know her identity, yet you dare to do that sort of thing to her. You're really... really... haaa." Qin Wuyou once again sighed. He scratched his head out of frustration, and then raised his head. "Since she still did not tell you yet, then let me tell you... I admit you're a genius that's hardly seen once in a century. Not just me, even my elder brother Qin Wushang was deeply shocked by your performance today. But, you are still too young at the moment, and is still a little fledgling. Even though in this entire Blue Wind Empire,

when compared to all the youths of this generation, you could be considered to be one of those at the top without question, if you remove this age restriction, your strength is still at the very bottom of the spectrum. On the real stage, you basically do not possess any ability to cause any sort of huge stir in the empire.”

“I wish that, after you hear what I’m about to say, you will take the opportunity to think about your current level of strength. Then, objectively consider whether you have sufficient ability and courage to take on the things that might happen... If you think you can act without fear of the consequences, then, protect Xueruo with all your might. If you lack this conviction,

then, please take the initiative to distance yourself from her. For her future, and especially more so, for your own life.”

“...” Qin Wuyou’s words were extremely heavy. With a heavy heart, Yun Che furrowed his brows and asked with a stern expression: “Senior Sister Xueruo’s identity... Just what is it?”

Every word that came from Qin Wuyou was articulated very clearly. “Cang Yue, the current Blue Wind Emperor’s only daughter, and Blue Wind Imperial Palace’s only princess, titled ‘The Blue Moon Princess’.”

“...” Yun Che’s expression stiffened and his pupils began to violently

tremble.

“The name Lan Xueruo, came from her mother. Princess Cang Yue’s mother’s surname was “Lan”, and she passed away when the princess was fourteen. Before she passed away, she changed the princess’ name to ‘Xueruo’, hoping that she would stay as pure as the white snow, and distance away from the corruption and impurities of the world. Probably because at that time, her mother had already felt of the impending crisis in the imperial palace, and hoped that Princess Cang Yue could distance herself from the chaos and protect her own life.”



# Chapter 154: The Truth

“Blue Moon Princess.... She’s actually... the Blue Moon Princess....” Yun Che muttered somewhat listlessly. As a citizen of the Blue Wind Empire, Yun Che naturally wouldn’t have not known the name Blue Moon Princess. The current Blue Wind Emperor Cang Wanhe had a total of seven sons and one daughter, The crown prince was “Blue Dragon Crown Prince” Cang Lin, and the only daughter, was “Blue Moon Princess” Cang Yue. When he was young, both the Emperor and the Princess were existences in legends. Even though

he and Xiao Lingxi had occasionally fantasized about how the emperor and princess would look like, he had never expected to meet them one day.

As a boy, there would always be a special type of fantasy toward the “Princess”. It was because the title “Princess” symbolized nobility, elegance, and beauty; the most flawless and grandeur of females in the world. Yun Che had never at all expected, that Lan Xueruo was actually the Blue Moon Princess he had longed for and fantasized about countless times when he was young, just like many other men did.

He ascertained that Lan Xueruo’s identity must be incomparably dignified, but had never thought

about her toward the identity of “Princess”. It was because the Princess originated from the imperial family, and was also the only daughter of the emperor; naturally she would carry a thick pampered aura and imperiousness. But he couldn’t find the slightest of those within Lan Xueruo; there was only gentleness and kindness. She was so kind to any and everyone, never possessed a conceited attitude, and would never look down upon or discriminate against any single person. When seeing others in trouble, her first thoughts would be to help them.... These dispositions were completely different from the Blue Moon Princess’ image in his mind. She was even more approachable and gentle than a woman from an

ordinary official's family.

She's the Blue Moon Princess.... But I, am only a vagabond without any background, influences nor family who came from the insignificant Floating Cloud City. Why did she treat me like that in the first place?

“Since she is the Blue Moon Princess, why would she be in the New Moon City during that time?” Yun Che asked absentmindedly.

Qin Wuyou did not directly answer him, and questioned back: “Yun Che, do you know the current condition of the Blue Wind Imperial Family?”

Yun Che thought for a bit, and lightly nodded: “I know a little,

Senior Brother Sikong had briefly mentioned it to me before. It seems as if the Emperor is very sick, and Crown Prince Cang Lin as well as the third prince Cang Shuo, is secretly preparing to scramble for the next seat of the Emperor. They have also respectively hooked up with the Xiao Sect and the Burning Heaven Clan.”

As he said till here, Yun Che’s heart stifled. The Emperor was gravely ill.... No wonder why the depth of her eyes had always hid such a deep melancholy; so that was the reason.

“That’s right.” Qin Wuyou nodded, then started to narrate in detail.

“It was around three years ago. The Emperor suddenly fell ill and could

not recover, and none of the doctors in the palace had any curing methods. I invited the publically accepted number one genius doctor Gu Qihong afterwards to diagnose and treat the Emperor. The conclusion he arrived at was that the Emperor had overworked himself these years, and already had hidden ailments in his entire body. With the wind chill that time, all of the hidden ailments broke out and damaged his Life Vein, making his vitality extremely feeble. Damages to the Life Vein can't be cured by any medicine; there is no other way but to be nourished throughout day and night with extremely nourishing items."

"How many years of hidden ailments? To damage the Life

Vein?” Yun Che’s brows locked together immediately. These sort of symptoms exist?

“Several tens of famous doctors throughout the land were also invited afterwards, and they all concluded that the Emperor didn’t have any ailment at all, only that his body is inexplicably feeble. And these conclusions all directly prove the genius doctor Gu Qiuhong’s words to be true. And Gu Qiuhong had also said before, damages to the life vein can’t be healed by any medicine. If the Emperor is well nourished, he could live for five years at most. As the number one genius doctor in the Blue Wind Empire, Gu Qiuhong had never spoke baseless words in medicinal arts. It’s already been three years

now, which also means that the current lifespan of the Emperor is at most two more years. Last month, my elder brother had even entered the palace and met the Emperor. When he came back, he said the Emperor's complexion was extremely poor, and his breath was weak; Let alone two years, it's difficult to say whether he can last one year or not."

Yun Che "..."

"After the Emperor's Life Veins were damaged and he could not get up from bed, troubles started everywhere in the palace. The Crown Prince Cang Lin started to knock from the side for the Emperor to let him succeed, and the Third Prince Cang Shuo had already



eyed the Emperor's throne for even longer. The two of them only secretly fought at first, but along with the escalation of the battle, it became a open war that everyone in the Blue Wind Imperial City knew about. The Crown Prince has the support of the Second and Seventh Prince; the Third Prince on the other hand, is being supported by the Fourth, Fifth and Sixth Prince. The two used various methods to win over the power within the palace, even to the point of devouring the Emperor's core power bit by bit. The two sides had always been evenly matched, and neither could completely suppress the other side."

"Originally, this kind of battle for the throne is perfectly normal in

the imperial palace. Virtually before every succession of a new emperor, this kind of prelude will always happen. The Emperor had always let it happen and didn't mind it. However, no one had ever expected that to suppress the Third Prince Cang Shuo's camp, the First Prince Cang Lin actually borrowed the power of Xiao Sect. To contend against that, The Third Prince Cang Shuo also went along and borrowed the power of Burning Heaven Clan."

"Sigh." Qin Wuyou made a long sigh, and said: "The Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan secretly had ambitions all along, eyeing the privilege that could control the world. The Imperial Family had always been careful when dealing

with them, and the Imperial Family also had good relations with the Heavenly Sword Villa; with the Heavenly Sword Villa restricting them, the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan didn't truly dare seize the Imperial Family's power either. However, them directly seizing and the Imperial Family voluntarily borrowing their influences are two entirely different concepts. The latter, they can let their influence slowly penetrate into the Imperial Family bit by bit via Cang Lin or Cang Shuo. When the time comes, even though the surname of the Imperial Family would still be Cang, the main power will be in the control of Xiao Sect or Burning Heaven Clan. Even the Heavenly Sword Villa wouldn't be able to say anything."

“If that’s the case, then there’s a higher chance that Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan are the ones who took the initiative in luring Cang Lin and Cang Shuo.” Yun Che said calmly.

“That’s right.” Qin Wuyou nodded: “The emperor was extremely furious upon finding out about these, but it was already too late. Because at that time, no matter the Crown Prince Cang Lin or the Third Prince Cang Shuo, their influences had already spread throughout the imperial palace; even if he was their father and the emperor, he could already no longer forcefully affect them, not to mention that Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan are also secretly helping them from their respective sides. It was to the extent

where, if the emperor didn't possess a fragment of deeply rooted core power, as well as the Heavenly Sword Villa's protection, Crown Prince Cang Lin and Third Prince Cang Shuo may have already forced him off his throne long ago."

As he spoke to here, Qin Wuyou's face was brimming with anger. After he calmed his state of mind, a pained expression emerged on his face: "These years, Crown Prince Cang Lin and Third Prince Cang Shuo became the main characters of the Imperial Family; yet the Emperor laid in the bedchamber all year long, and is almost forgotten by the people. Out of the Emperor's seven sons and one daughter, the only one left who truly cared for and accompanied him in the end, is

his only daughter, which is also Princess Cang Yue. Sigh... These three years, it was really tough for her. It's also fortunate that she's only a girl, and didn't have any power and threat. Otherwise, she perhaps would have already received the Crown Prince and Third Prince's secret persecutions, sigh."

"She wants to prevent the Crown Prince and the Third Prince from inviting wolves into the palace?" Yun Che said with a frown.

"She tried before, but gave up. Because it's simply impossible for her to prevent it at all." Qin Wuyou sentimentally shook his head: "In this battle, we, the Blue Wind Profound Palace stands in a neutral

position and is only devoted to the Emperor; at the same time, we also became Princess Cang Yue's only backing. However, the will of the disciples can not be controlled by us. Out of the one hundred disciples in the Inner Palace, more than half have already been roped in under the flag of Crown Prince Cang Lin and Third Prince Cang Shuo, including the Heavenly Profound Ranking's second place Feng Bufan and third Place Fang Feilong."

"Princess Cang Yue knows it herself that she cannot stop the ambition of Crown Prince and Third Prince with her insignificant power, and had always accompanied the king. Two years ago, to satisfy a leftover regret of the Emperor, she entered

the Blue Wind Profound Palace with the identity “Lan Xueruo”. Leaving after one month, she then left the Imperial City and transferred throughout the big Branch Profound Palaces within the empire to look for someone to help her father, the Emperor, achieve his wish.”

As he spoke to here, Qin Wuyou looked at Yun Che with a fixed gaze.

“So I am the person she was looking for?” Yun Che spoke with a face void of expression: “What is her father’s wish? Why was I chosen? Why does she think that I can help her father realize this wish?”

“Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.”



Qin Wuyou coolly spoke out four words.

These four words, shook Yun Che's heart all of a sudden. He said:  
“Could it be...”

“Sigh~~” Qin Wuyou sighed once again. After bringing up the “Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, his expression also became very gloomy. He stood up, walked to the bamboo window with both hands behind his back, and spoke slowly: “Speaking of Blue Wind Profound Palace, no one does not know that it was established by our Blue Wind Imperial Family. It is the biggest Profound Palace in the entire Blue Wind Empire, and is the cultivation dreamland of innumerable young profound practitioners. However,

Sects are like the trees in a forest in the Blue Wind Empire, and there are countless strong individuals. In the eyes of those great sects, us Blue Wind Profound Palace is no more than a joke.”

“The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament was originally held once every ten years, then was shortened to once every five years. One hundred years ago, it was shortened once again to be held once every three years. From the first Blue Wind Ranking Tournament until now, it has been held exactly ninety nine times. The Blue Wind Imperial Family, as the political core of the nation, will naturally be invited every time. However, after an entire ninety nine tournaments, no one of the

Imperial Family was ever able to enter the top one hundred; no one ever! What kind of joke and humiliation was that. And when the current Emperor ascended the throne, his biggest wish was to see the Blue Wind Imperial Family squeeze into the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament's top one hundred during his reign... But after near twenty years since he ascended the throne, and having gone through the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament six times, this wish of his could never be realized. Now, his lifespan is almost up, and this has become his lifetime's regret. In order to help the Emperor realize this wish, Princess Cang Yue left the Imperial Family to search for gifted profound practitioners who can represent the Imperial Family

and enter the top one hundred ranks. After two years of time, she choose you.”

“... So that’s.... how it is.”

He had finally solved the puzzle as to why Lan Xuerou was so good to him, to the point of willingly risking great dangers to save him. After knowing the truth, he couldn’t really tell how he felt in his heart either.

“The Blue Wind Imperial Family possesses a special type of Profound Art, called the ‘Monarch Heart Secret Art’. Only those with the Imperial bloodline who are also kind and pure in heart may cultivate it. Out of the seven princes and one princess, Princess Cang

Yue is the only one who successfully cultivated the ‘Monarch Heart Secret Art’. With the ‘Monarch Heart Secret Art’, one can peek into a person’s fate and luck to a certain extent. Princess Cang Yue probably saw extraordinary fate and luck on you using the ‘Monarch Heart Secret Art’. That together with your shocking performance at New Moon Profound Palace, made her chose you without hesitation.”

Yun Che: “...”

“Now, do you understand what I meant by ‘conviction’?” Qin Wuyou turned around, and said meaningfully.

“I’ve basically understood. At least,

I'll need to represent the Blue Wind Imperial Family to participate in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament for her." Yun Che had dull expression on his face. It was unknown as to what he was thinking.

"No, just this point, can't really be considered a conviction. After all, there is only success and failure in participating in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, and there's no relation with life and death." Qin Wuyou continued: "Two years ago, finding the appropriate person was only one of the reasons why Princess Cang Yue left the Imperial City. The more important reason is... to escape from a frightening person."

“Who?” Yun Che slightly raised his head.

“The fourth place in the previous Blue Wind Ranking Tournament— Burning Heaven Clan Master Fen Duanhun’s eldest son, who’s also the Young Clan Master of Burning Heaven Clan— Fen Juecheng!”

Author PS + TL note: [Three sons of Fen Duanhun: Fen Juecheng (absolute city, 22 yr), Fen Juebi (absolute wall, 19 yr), Yan Juechen (absolute dust, 17 yr, rank 1 in Blue Wind Profound Palace)]

# Chapter 155: Two Invitation Letters

“Why must I avoid this person?”  
Although Yun Che had already vaguely guessed the reason, he still asked while frowning.

“In the previous Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, Princess Cang Yue personally showed up to watch the fights. As for how charming Princess Cang Yue was, I suspect there’s no need for me to give unnecessary details. Furthermore, at the time, Princess Cang Yue wore a luxurious rosy cloud dress and an purple-gold phoenix coronet. Even though she’s quite young, her beauty still overwhelmed everyone



present and captivated the hearts of numerous young outstanding talents. Amongst them was Fen Juecheng.”

“After the previous Blue Wing Ranking Tournament ended, Fen Juecheng did not immediately return to the Burning Heaven Clan. He instead arrived at the Blue Wind Imperial City to seek attendance from the Emperor and sought for the hand in marriage of Princess Cang Yue... At that time, the Emperor did not consent to his request. However, he also did not refuse him. Instead, he tried to evade the issue with the excuse that Princess Cang Yue was too young for marriage. In actuality, the Emperor was roused by the proposal. Fen Juecheng was, after

all, the young master of the Burning Heaven Clan, and was extremely probable to succeed the Burning Heaven Clan's Clan Master. Should Princess Cang Yue marry him, she would become the future Burning Heaven Clan Master's wife. Her status would be very high, so high that it would overshadow the position of an Empress. It was undoubtedly an excellent destination for her. The strife between the crown prince and the third prince would certainly not be able to harm her. Furthermore, this would bring bring the Imperial Family a connection with the Burning Heaven Clan... Princess Cang Yue was after all a girl; she will marry off one day. Thus, there would be no need to be afraid of any consequences of her marriage,

such as the Burning Heaven Clan infiltrating into the Imperial Family.”

“In regards to the Emperor’s attitude, Fen Juecheng was delighted. He vowed that he would certainly take Princess Cang Yue as his wife.”

“However, not long after, news of the Third Prince Cang Shou borrowing the strength of the Burning Heaven Clan had arrived in the Emperor’s ears. This caused the Emperor to suddenly rage in anger. For the Burning Heaven Clan to be willing to assist Third Prince Cang Shou, one of the reason was because of their ambition for more power in the world and the other was because Fen Juecheng was

deeply infatuated with Princess Cang Yue. This was because after those events, Third Prince Cang Shou became particularly good toward Princess Cang Yue. Every single time he would come across Princess Cang Yue, he would recommend her to marry Fen Juecheng and enjoy status, honor, glory, and splendor far beyond that of an imperial princess. Fen Juecheng also regularly came to the imperial palace under the guise of various reasons and, under the arrangements set up by Third Prince Cang Shou, come into contact with Princess Cang Yue. When he meet her, he would express his goodwill and intent to marry her using various methods.”

Yun Che’s heart slightly moved, but

he remained silent.

“The Burning Heaven Clan was immensely powerful. Thus, the Imperial Family obviously did not dare to offend them. With the Emperor coming down with a serious illness, the Imperial Family was in turmoil. Princess Cang Yue, like all others, did not dare anger Fen Juecheng. All she could do was evade and not dare to flat out reject him. This was because she was somewhat familiar with Fen Juecheng’s character; while he appeared cultured and refined on the outside and possess the charisma of a great person, he was in fact filled with extreme shrewdness. In order to attain his goal, he would use any means possible, be it fair or foul.

Sometimes, he would even do things from the shadows.

Furthermore, he was very cruel and merciless, so much that it would cause one to shudder. Should she strongly rejected him and cause Fen Juecheng to lose all his patience, it would be impossible for her to anticipate what he might do.”

“So in order to break away from Fen Juecheng and to resolve a regret that her imperial father had, she left the Imperial City and toured each and every great profound palace of the empire...” Yun Che slowly said with a dull expression. As for what he was thinking, only he himself knew.

“That’s correct.” Qin Wuyou nodded, and then said depressingly.

“Yun Che, I don’t know how you feel after hearing all these. I grew up in the Imperial City since a young age and I have regularly come across Princess Cang Yue from when she was very young. The she from back then was like a carefree and worryless angel. After her imperial mother’s death, the amount of things she had to endure, to bear, became greater and greater, heavier and heavier; it was as if all her carefreeness and happiness had left her. How much sadness, hardships and tiredness she had been through, is something that you cannot imagine because at the moment, you are close to Princess Cang Yue, enjoying her beauty and grace, enjoying her deep sincere concern and care for you.... At that time, when she selected you,

it was indeed merely to realize her imperial father's wish. All she had toward you back then was... something that could be considered as a 'scheme.' But now, I could tell that she had real genuine feelings toward you. If she didn't, then she wouldn't personally deliver something like a Sound Transmission Jade to you. You have enjoyed all that she gave you but had you ever thought of shouldering her burdens? Shouldering the things that she carries in her heart?... Or do you have that kind of sincerity, courage, and conviction?

Yun Che did not respond.

"Like what I had previously said, if you do not have that kind of



courage and conviction, then you should take the initiative and distance yourself from Princess Cang Yue. The gap between your statuses is as far as heaven and earth. Also, if others were to know that you two had developed feelings for each other, just Fen Juecheng himself is enough to easily and quietly, tragically die without a grave. Even though you distancing yourself from her would break her heart, I still wish that you would select this option for her good, and also for your own good. I am more or less familiar with your personality; with your pride, I believe that you would most likely not select this option. Even if you had to bite your teeth, you would still not cower.... But the current you is too insignificant; you are

incapable of helping Princess Cang Yue, you are incapable of sharing her burden. Instead, the only thing that you are doing is adding another layer of emotional burden for her to worry about. If you were to throw yourself in immense danger to support this layer of emotion, then perhaps it could be considered as being bold, but not courage.... If you were to, at this point, distance yourself from Princess Cang Yue, in my eyes, that is true courage and genuine sincerity.

Yun Che: “...”

Qin Wuyou turned around, patted Yun Che's shoulder, and said.

“Everything I needed to say has been said. As for what you choose to do, carefully consider it for a

while. The reason Princess Cang Yue never dared to tell you her identity was also because she feared that you'd be drawn into her strife... On the other hand, it was also because you're too insignificant; if you actually had enough strength, I believe that she would've told you everything long ago, for what she needed the most was a shoulder that she could depend on. But you... at least the current you, is fundamentally incapable of being that shoulder for at least ten years time. Instead, you will surely become her burden and another shackle to her soul."

"I have placed the Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet on the table. If you are able to succeed in refining it, then it would allow your

profound strength to rise all the way up to third level of the True Profound Realm... In short, sigh, just think over it.”

Qin Wuyou left with heavy footsteps. Yun Che did not send him off and instead, stood baffled in place for a long time.

Qin Wuyou's words were like strikes from a heavy hammer; one by one, they ruthlessly pounded at Yun Che's heart.

Previously, Yun Che believed that Lan Xueruo certainly possessed a high social standing. But he was also completely confident that the him now was worthy enough for her... Or perhaps he was overconfident and arrogant, and

had never thought that there would be any individual he was unworthy of. However, he was currently deeply astonished after knowing that Lan Xueruo was actually the legendary Blue Moon Princess. Furthermore, she was involved in the Blue Wind Imperial Family's upheaval and there was also the Burning Heaven Clan's tremendous pressure from behind...

While it was true that he was very impressive defeating a Inner Palace disciple who was ranks over his own, and he himself also felt very satisfied, this kind of impressiveness was merely limited to the Blue Wind Profound Palace; it was only limited to the younger generation under the age of twenty. To the circle Lan Xueruo was

involved in, his miniscule amount of strength was so small that it was simply negligible and wasn't even worth their time.

What Qin Wuyou had said was right; Lan Xueruo needed a shoulder she could depend on. However, his miniscule self was simply incapable of giving her that kind of shoulder; he could only become another chain in her heart.

The other thing that Qin Wuyou said was even more correct... He enjoyed Lan Xueruo's beauty and grace, enjoyed all of her continuous deep sincere concern and care; he even enjoyed the feeling of capturing her heart bit by bit. However, he had never actually tried to share her burden.

“This is a world where the strong rules; if one doesn’t have enough strength, then they are not qualified to discuss honor and dignity.

Furthermore, one would not be able to protect the person they want to protect.... Grandpa and little aunt are waiting for my return. I do not have the ability to share the burden of shouldering what Xuero carries with her... I merely defeated a little miniscule ninth ranker of the True Profound Realm, yet I acted so loftily and complacent here. What a joke... how laughable.”

Yun Che slowly tightened his fists and closed his eyes as his body began to slightly tremble. Only after a long time did he heave a sigh of relief and pick up Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet Qin Wuyou left

on the table. He concentrated his gaze and threw the pellet down his mouth.

As the Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet entered his body, Yun Che immediately felt a surge of vigorous stream of energy rush out from his chest; it flowed towards all his veins and meridians in his body. A part of it directly rushed toward his head, and dazzled his sight.

What a powerful medicinal force...

Yun Che was slightly startled. He immediately sat down on the ground cross legged and closed his eyes. While concentrating on the energy, he began to activate the Great Way of the Buddha. How



high of a profound art was the Great Way of the Buddha? In less than a mere four or five breath's time, the warm flow of energy that was moving all over his body started to gradually settle down. The wild and unruly medicinal force soon became warm and calm. Without needing any guidance, the medicinal force progressively assimilated into his body. The profound energy within his profound veins began to surge and slowly expand....

Sunset. Sunrise.

An entire day and night quietly went by during Yun Che's meditation. When he completely absorbed the Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet and opened his

eyes, it was already noon of the second day. The fluctuations of the profound energy within his profound veins were already completely settled, and his profound energy had become even more thicker than yesterday.... Six hours ago, he had already successfully entered the third level of the True Profound Realm.

Although leveling up with medicine was not that stable, it was nevertheless the fastest method. However, pellets that gave such an astonishing effect like the Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet were extremely rare, and even tens of thousand of gold could not purchase a single one of those pills. Furthermore, due to the pellet's strong and fierce nature, there was

still a certain risk to taking them.

After sitting for an entire day and night, with a body that was still wounded, Yun Che's stomach was already rumbling with hunger.

Right when he was about to leave the room, the door was once again pushed opened by Qin Wuyou, who had yet to learn his lesson.

"Instructor Qin." Yun Che immediately greeted him. After noticing Qin Wuyou's bad complexion, he immediately asked. "What happened?"

"Something within my expectations." Qin Wuyou sighed. He then took out two letters. "These are two invitation letters. One of them is from Crown Prince Cang

Lin, inviting you to his Crown Prince Palace in ten days time at noon, to participate in his thirty third birthday banquet. The other invitation letter is from Third Prince Cang Shuo, inviting you to join his Beast Battle Convention that he personally manages. The time.... is also in ten days at noon.”

# Chapter 156:

## Conspiracy

The arrival of the two invitation letters was completely within Qin Wuyou's expectations. However, what he didn't expect was that not only did the two invitation letters from the crown prince and third prince arrive at the same time, the appointment was at same time, and were also completely identical.

Yun Che accepted the two invitation letters and quickly browsed through them. The wordings of both invitation letters were very polite and believable. First they spoke highly of Yun Che; they praised him as the dazzling

star of the young generation, stated their admiration for him after hearing the results of yesterday's match with the inner palace disciple, and sought to personally see his grace. As a result, they respectively invited him to the birthday banquet and the beast battle convention, which were at noon in ten days time, and asked him to do the honor of showing up....

Seeing that Yun Che had finished looking through the letters, Qin Wuyou said. "I believe it was also within your expectations to receive invitations letters like these. Every disciple that was able to become a Inner Palace disciple would receive invitations to join the camp of both the crown prince and the third

prince. What's more, with the fight from yesterday, your reputation had increased so much that it's practically above every one of the Inner Palace disciples. For these two invitation letters to come to fast, it was within my expectations. What do you plan to do?"

"What does Instructor Qin think I should do?" Yun Che put down the invitation letters and asked a question in reply.

Qin Wuyou shook his head. "It is beyond my capability to help you choose. You are weak and have no background; you can not afford to offend either of the two. Originally, the best choice for you to make was to accept both of their invitations, give an ambiguous and tactful

attitude to their offers while refusing neither yet not accepting either. However, I don't know if it's purposely done or by coincidence, the time for these two invitations are completely identical. If you were to accept, you can only accept a single invitation. However, regardless of whichever invitation you accepted, you would have clearly showed your position and, at the same time, thoroughly offend the party that you didn't accept. And if you were to go to neither, it could be interpreted as looking down on both parties. If it was me in that situation, I have absolutely no clue as to what to do."

Yun Che smiled and said. "Whether the birthday banquet or the beast battle convention, there's still ten



days for me to consider. There's no need to worry. What I am more concerned about... is that I am but a mere disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace. It was as you had said, my strength is extremely insignificant in that big circle, so why did the crown prince and the third prince so graciously invite me?"

"Your current individual strength is indeed quite minuscule. However, what they care about is not your individual strength but rather your prestige and your huge potential. Perhaps you are not aware of this, but after yesterday's battle, your name had already spread through the entire Blue Wind Imperial City. And through the various versions of exaggerated rumors, you have

become close to a legend. This was especially true for the younger generations; they had grown a strong adoration and yearn for you. Furthermore, the fact that you have no backing and is born a commoner, gave rise to the approval and support of countless young profound practitioners of common birth. If you join either camp, with the influence that you currently possess, you would surely cause the young profound practitioners to tilt to the side of your choosing. On top of that, your current performance showed that you will certainly become extraordinary in the future.

Although the current you is weak, in another five or ten years when you have matured, you'll certainly become a great assistance. Thus,

both the crown prince and the third prince would spare no effort to try to get you into their camp.”

After thinking for a long time, Yun Che slowly nodded. “I understand.”

“How you will choose is completely up to you. However, I must remind you, if you actually join either the crown prince or the third prince’s camp, then no matter how strongly Princess Cang Yue feels for you, she would still sever her relationship with you.” Qin Wuyou firmly looked at Yun Che and then departed with heavy footsteps. Had Yun Che been a mere profound palace disciple, then even if he was ten times more gifted, he would not be this anxious. However, Yun Che’s relationship with Princess Cang Yue had caused

him to be unable to take this matter lightly.

The information that Yun Che received invitations from both the crown prince and the third prince was somehow leaked. One person told ten and ten told a hundred; in an afternoon's time, practically everyone in the Blue Wind Profound Palace knew of the matter. One could hear people discussing the matter from every corner of the Palace.

“Hey! Have you heard that Yun Che received invitations from his highness the crown prince and his highness the third prince at the same time.... So enviable, if one were to be able to join the camp of either the the crown prince or the

third prince, regardless of which, he will enjoy glory and splendor for his entire life.”

“Tsk tsk, you can admire all you want. For a genius like Junior brother Yun Che to be noticed by both his highness the crown prince and his highness the third prince at the same time is absolutely reasonable. If you were to be able to crush an opponent seven ranks above you, then I can guarantee you that you’ll also receive this kind of treatment the next day.”

“Say, do you think Junior brother Yun Che would choose the crown prince or the third prince?”

“Hmmm, that’s very hard to tell. I’ve heard that the crown prince

and the third prince was completely incompatible. If he chooses the wrong person and his master ends up being defeated in the future, then perhaps he, too, might be done for.”

.....

Blue Wind Imperial City, Northern Field General's mansion.

Murong Yi was deeply injured in the battle against Yun Che. On that day, he was carried back into the mansion by Feng Baiyi to recuperate from his injuries. The rumors regarding Yun Che that was spreading like wildfire had led Murong Yi to gnash his teeth and fume with endless rage. In those rumors, he had become that

pathetic and ridiculous side character... Or, more accurately, a stepping stone.

“Yun Che, I am going to kill you...  
KILL YOU!!”

In less than two days time, Murong Yi had already roared those words over three hundred times; each and every time carried an immense hatred. He had grown up with flattery and honor; never had he received such extraordinary shame and humiliation before. It was also the first time he had such an overflowing grudge against someone.

“Brother Murong, there is news that might be unpleasant to you.”

Feng Baiyi walked in, and said with slanted eyebrows.

“What news!” Murong Yi sat up from his sickbed and asked with a steady face. “Is it about Yun Che?”

“That’s right.” Feng Baiyi pinched his chin as his expression became gloomy. “I’ve heard that he received an invitation from both the crown prince and the third prince at the same time today, asking him to participate in the crown prince’s thirty three year old birthday banquet and the third prince’s beast battle convention.”

“Crack, crack....”

Murong Yi did not say anything but a sharp and crisp bone cracking



sound could be heard from his hands.

“Both the crown prince and the third prince had thrown the olive branch at him and even invited him to such grand occasions; one could tell how much they valued Yun Che. Although they had both tried to entice all the Inner Palace disciples to a certain degree, it was the first time for them to invite someone to such grand and important occasions. In this way, it’ll be a bit hard for us to try to make Yun Che suffer in the open. Even if your father were to personally step in, it is already something that he cannot accomplish because it’ll be the same as not respecting the crown prince and the third prince.” Feng

Baiyi said with indifference.

“He must die... MUST DIE!!”

Murong Yi violently roared. His violent movements immediately caused his wounds to reopen and made him howl in pain.

Feng Baiyi glanced at Murong Yi and said. “In that case, you can only attack him secretly. Not only that, we have to be quick about it.”

“Baiyi, you must certainly help me with this matter! I have never received this kind of humiliation in my entire life. All the dignity and honor I possessed was trampled into pieces by that bastard Yun Che! How could I restrain my anger? How could I let him use my dignity to bask in the limelight!”

Murong Yi's entire body raged with an immensely deep malice. "Baiyi, you must help me!"

"Rest assured. We have been good brothers for many years now. For you to receive such a humiliation, as a brother, I would naturally not brush it aside." Feng Baiyi slowly stated. "In fact, you were too anxious in the battle yesterday. You initially fought him with bare hands and were basically evenly matched. His innate talent is indeed astonishing; a true profound second ranker actually managed to exhibit a profound strength of your level. However, the gap between you guys were, after all, an entire seven ranks; while he could exhibit a profound strength on par with yours, if we compare the foundation

and the deepness of the profound strengths, his cannot compare to yours. If you had continued fighting him bare-handed, he would slowly become unable to brace your attacks and eventually fall. But when you were unable to successfully land your attacks on him for a long time, you decided to use a weapon instead.”

“To be unable to win against someone who’s seven ranks below me, how can I not become irritable!” Murong Yi clenched his teeth and defended himself. He completely agreed with what Feng Baiyi said, and now that he thought about it, if they both didn’t use weapons, he would, without a doubt, end up to be the victor. Even though the way he’d win would be

somewhat unsightly, at the very least, he would not receive such a humiliation.

“In fact, Yun Che’s heavy sword wasn’t even that scary either; it’s just that there are too few heavy sword users and you lacked the experience in fighting against the heavy sword. Otherwise, how would your Silver Dragon Spear get knocked away by Yun Che so easily with his first sword strike, and even sustain internal injuries... With the loss of your Silver Dragon Spear, your mind became disordered and thus, you were doomed to be utterly defeated. I was nearby and what had happened very clearly. Yun Che’s heavy sword attack was indeed outstanding, but a heavy sword is incomparably heavy; its

attack speed was very slow and it also leaves a large opening after every attack. With your profound movement skill, you could easily dodge his attacks and strike back at the opening he leaves. If you did that, Yun Che would never be able to win against you. And the first time your weapon met his in a head-on collision, which was the strongest aspect of heavy swords, how could you not lose?!”

“Besides, that Overlord’s Colossal Sword weighs one thousand nine hundred fifty kilograms; even if it was you and I, we wouldn’t be able to swing that sword easily. The three strikes Yun Che had swung, I suspect that’s his limit. Therefore, your defeat yesterday was actually not mostly because of Yun Che, but

yourself. I believe that after listening to me, if you were to fight him again, it would be absolutely impossible for him to win against you. On the other hand, if it was me..." A cold light flashed through Feng Baiyi's eyes. He sneered. "I'll only need at most three exchanges to have his life."

When recalling the events of yesterday's battle, the more he thought about it, the more Murong Yi began to feel that Feng Baiyi's words were completely reasonable. He immediately began to regret and replied while gritting his teeth. "You're right. If I could fight him again, it is absolutely impossible for me to lose.... But at the moment, I'm covered all over with injuries. I can't even get down from my bed.

Otherwise, I would most certainly, personally... tear him from limb to limb!”

“Rest assured. I will help you take revenge. In at most five days of time, I will bring you Yun Che’s head. I guarantee that all your anger and resentment will completely fade away.” Feng Baiyi said while beaming.

“Really?!” Murong Yi immediately opened his eyes wide with excitement. But then, he knitted his eyebrows and said. “But Yun Che had received invitations from both the crown prince and the third prince. If we were to take action....”

“Rest assured. I will flawlessly handle this matter, and just to be



safe, I even invited another person.”

“Who?” Murong Yi immediately asked.

“Xue Lang.” Feng Baiyi’s eyes narrowed.

“Xue Lang... Seventh rank on the Inner Palace’s Heavenly Profound Ranking, Xue Lang?” Murong Yi revealed a shocked expression. “He really agreed to help?”

Feng Baiyi laughed indifferently and nodded. “You too, know this person’s character. As long as we give him enough profit, he would be willing to do anything. As for this matter, he demanded 800 purple profound coins. After all, Yun Che’s current influence is immense; one

must take on a certain amount of risk when killing him. It all depends on whether or not Brother Murong is willing to take out this sum.”

“Absolutely no problem!” Murong Yi’s expression became grim. “As long as you kill him without leaving a trace and dissolve my hatred, don’t even mention eight hundred purple profound coins, even if it was eight thousand purple profound coins, I would still not hesitate!”

“Good!” Feng Baiyi stood up. His voice had also become cold and grim. “Brother Murong, just wait for my good news... Ah, I am also itching to see this person, who dared to act so arrogant in front of me, kneel at my feet while

desperately begging for forgiveness.  
Hahahaha.....”

# Chapter 157: Love, Promise

The night breeze was cool as night fell. The entire Inner Palace was quiet; even the cries of insects could not be heard. Yun Che sat on the roof of the Sightseeing Pavilion at the rear of the Supreme Profound Hall and was silently immersed in thought while bathing in the moonlight.

It had already been a year since he'd left Floating Cloud City. His original life's plan was pretty simple; he wanted to restore his profound veins, accomplish something within three years, return to Floating Cloud City to free

grandpa and little aunt, and also get back his dignity. After that, he met Jasmine and because of her, he was given a new lease of life. His fate, had also become intertwined with hers, and his life's trajectory was then destined to turn upside down because of Jasmine.

But now, there was an additional Lan Xueruo in his life.

Liking Lan Xueruo was something that he was really certain of. He was deeply attracted by her beautiful appearance and her refined temperament the first time he saw her. Having been in contact for half a year, especially because they had experienced a life and death calamity together, the feelings they had for each other had slowly

ripened.

And it was only until yesterday, did he find out who Lan Xueruo's true identity, and also found out the things she had to bear, as well as what he would have to face if he wanted to stay together with her.

What Qin Wuyou said yesterday was extremely cruel. However, Yun Che was unable to deny that each and every word he said was the indisputable truth. His ability was way too minuscule; while he might be able to take care of any personal grudges, toward the disputes of the imperial household that even involved two enormous sects, if he were to force his way in, then, like the sand used to fill up the sea, he will be immediately be engulfed and

disappear without a trace.

“Junior Brother Yun, so here’s where you are.”

Lan Xuero’s gentle voice sounded behind Yun Che. Subsequently, a fragrant wind brushed by and Lan Xuero had already leaped onto the roof of the pavilion. She smiled at Yun Che. “I had just went to your quarters to find you, only to discover that you were gone. I didn’t expect that you’re actually interested in sitting here to admire the moon. Is something bothering you?”

“I won’t consider it as being bothered.” Yun Che continued to look ahead. “I am just pondering about a decision that might be very

important in my life.”

Lan Xueruo sat down next to Yun Che. She hesitated for a bit, and then carefully asked. “Junior Brother Yun, I heard that you’ve received invitations from both the crown prince and the third prince at the same time. Furthermore, the time of the invitations were exactly the same. Are... Are you hesitating about whose invitation you should accept?”

Yun Che did not respond, instead, he asked. “Senior sister, whose invitation do you think I should accept? One is the crown prince and the other is the third prince; neither one of them seems to be someone who I could refuse.”



A deep, complicated expression flashed across Lan Xueruo's face as she said hesitantly. "I, I want to hear about your decision. I... have no authority to interfere in your matters."

"..... I heard that the current Blue Wind Imperial Palace is in turmoil with movements from the shadows. The emperor is currently bed-ridden; he doesn't have much longer to live. If he were to die one day, all the unstable and hidden movements would erupt at once.... Senior sister, I want to know, do you want me to enter this Imperial Family's dispute?" Yun Che asked with a calm and indifferent expression.

"No! I don't! I would never want

that.” Lan Xueruo hurriedly shook her head. “Junior brother Yun, I know that you are not the type of person who lusts for power, and you would certainly not do that, right?”

“What if I must join the fray?” Yun Che faintly asked.

Lan Xueruo stiffened as her large pair of eyes panickedly looked at Yun Che. “Why must you join the fray? You’re not clear of how dangerous and dreadful the Imperial Family’s internal instability and undercurrents are. Once you get involved, it’s possible that you would never be able to get away. You can not imagine how complicated and dangerous it is. Junior brother Yun, you shouldn’t

be a person who lusts for power, or is fond of conflicts, what exactly are you planning? Could it be that you really are planning to submit yourself to either the crown prince or the third prince?"

"You're right. I have no interest in power and have even less interest in conflicts. But in this world, there are a lot of things that I can't just not do only because I'm not interested in them." Yun Che turned around to look at Lan Xueruo; he looked at her affectionately. "Senior sister.... should I call you Senior Sister Xueruo or.... Princess Cang Yue?"

Lan Xueruo beautiful eyes immediately widened as unrest and nervousness instantly appeared in

her eyes. She hung her head and stammered. “You... you knew? Did Instructor Qin tell you about it? I... I really didn’t deliberately hide it from you. I only... only...”

Yun Che did not wait for her to finish and continued to mutter. “From the first time I saw you, I was captivated by your gentle, graceful and pleasing appearance. Afterwards, when Xiao Sect’s Branch Sect launched an attack, you risked the dangers of being involved to save me. Following that, you even personally left for the Branch Sect and we ended up fleeing for our lives together... Then, we arrived at the Blue Wind Imperial City and entered the Blue Wind Profound Palace, you were always carefully arranging and taking care of

everything. If it weren't for you, I would already been killed by Xiao Zaihe, or perhaps I would've become a vagabond, or perhaps I would still be fleeing for my life while having wind for meals and dew for drinks. How would I possibly have such a stable place to stay?"

"You had done so much for me, and I thought it was because you liked me. I, too, enjoyed every moment that I spent with you.... Until yesterday, when I received the invitation letters, Instructor Qin told me everything. Only then did I become aware that the reason you treated me especially well, the reason why you personally went to the Xiao Sect's Branch Sect, the reason why you brought me to the

Blue Wind Imperial City, was all because you fancied my aptitude and potential; it was all done to complete your imperial father's single wish and have me represent the Imperial Family in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. Everything that I had thought of before, they were merely my own imagination of your affection for me....”

Yun Che's words faintly contained a sense of loss and grief. It made Lan Xueruo's mind become disorderly chaotic and the last sentence he had said could not help but stab at her heart. She panickedly shouted. “That's not it.... That's not it! It was indeed because of my imperial father that I choose you, but I didn't deliberately hide the truth from you

because of that, nor did I want to exploit you. I only wanted to find a proper time to tell you everything. Because the longer I was with you, the more afraid I became... I feared that if you knew everything, then you'd think that I was deceiving and using you. But the reason why I was so scared was because.... because..."

"Senior sister..." Yun Che once again broke her off. He said with a sad voice. "I want to... have a moment in peace..."

After saying that, Yun Che slid down the roof and silently disappeared into the night.

"Junior brother Yun.... Junior brother Yun!!"

The moonlight was shining and brightened the surroundings. However, Lan Xueruo was unable to find Yun Che's silhouette.

"It's not like that, it really isn't like that.... I really didn't deliberately conceal it from you. I never wanted to exploit you...." Lan Xueruo's heart dropped into a bottomless abyss. Her body powerlessly crouched down and her arms hugged her knees as she began to weep.

When her father was seriously ill, she didn't cry.... When the Imperial Family caught into a calamity, she didn't cry.... When Feng Juecheng of the Burning Heaven Clan continually press forward, she didn't cry.... She quietly took on



everything. However, at this moment, with Yun Che leaving, she felt that her mind and spirit had become absolutely empty. It was as if she lost some kind important thing from her life; as if her heart was being stabbed by needles. She was unable to control her tears and they frantically pouring down her face. She was as helpless as a fallen leaf that had been abandoned by the world.

“Senior sister, your tears are too precious. So precious that... I have no choice but to exchange my life for them.”

A soft dreamlike voice sounded near her ears. She immediately raised her head and saw Yun Che right in front of her through her

tear muddled eyes. He extended his hands and softly rubbed her cheeks to wipe away her sparkling teardrops.

“Junior brother Yun, don’t... leave me!”

The words came with a deep sobbing noise and uncontrollably burst out from Lan Xueruo’s mouth. Because those words had been buried deep in her heart for a long time; even she herself did not realize that she said those words. The heart-stabbing pain from earlier was like a sharp blade that sliced open her heart and soul; it released the deeply buried emotions within her and allowed her to be completely aware of how deep her feelings for this ‘Junior brother

Yun' had become.

She threw herself into Yun Che's bosom and began to cry her heart out. She had never willfully cried like this before, but being beside Yun Che and leaning against his chest, she felt that she did not need to pretend anymore and no longer needed to constrain her emotions. The worry, pressure, pain and remorse that she accumulated in her heart throughout the years... Flooded out and torrented willfully, like a broken dam.

“Senior sister, I’m sorry....” Yun Che softly apologized as he embraced her. “I did not mean any of the words I said earlier. I have known you for all this time, so how could I not know about how softhearted of

a girl you are; how could you possibly be willing to hide the truth from me and use me. The reason why I said those words was because I was uneasy and afraid.... I do not know if I had actually entered Senior Sister's heart because Senior Sister was so good to me and was also a princess. I, on the other hand, am powerless and of low birth. Other than my pride, hot-headedness, and my feelings for you, I have nothing else. Therefore, I was really uneasy and afraid.... I selfishly wanted to see if you would shed tears for me....”

“A man who makes his woman cry is the most repulsive man in the whole world... Senior sister, please forgive my unruly selfishness. I will properly treasure your tears in my

heart forever; they will be my life's most valuable treasure and also become my largest motivation....”

“It’s not your fault. You don’t need to apologize to me... It’s my fault, it’s all my fault. It was me who concealed the truth from you, it was me who had always possessed that sort of intent toward you...” Lan Xueruo forcefully shook her head within Yun Che’s embrace and mournfully wept. “I had always thought that all my worries, longing and urges to see you were only because you held the potential to achieve my father’s wishes... It was only just now when you disappeared from my side that I realized that I can’t separate myself from you anymore.... Uuu.... Don’t leave me. I don’t want to be a

princess.... I won't even make you participate in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. I just want... you to stay with me so that I can always see you... Don't leave me....”

Lan Xueruo had at last, completely revealed every last bit of her true feelings without restraint. Yu Che faintly smiled. He held Lan Xueruo closer and said softly. “The feelings that I have for Senior Sister are exactly the same as you have for me. Since our feelings are the same, then we share our burdens together. Senior sister's matters are now also my matters. If I were to be unable to even accomplish such a minor desire that Senior Sister has, then how can I be worthy of Senior Sister's love?... I will enter the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament and I

will also participate in the Blue Wind Imperial Family's complications.... Don't stop me yet. I had previously stated that I was making a really important decision in my life... and this is my decision."

"Even though I am currently a mere eagle chick, give me time, and I will one day obtain wings. Please give me the opportunity to use my wings to protect you from the rain.... Even if the weather is too unstable and I cannot shelter you, I could still take Senior Sister and fly away. We can leave this land of unstable weathers forever to once again, look for a place that only belongs to us. This is the privilege I have because I like Senior Sister... Even if it's Senior Sister, you still cannot take it away from me."

Lan Xueruo did not respond. She only tried her best to hold down her sobs and violently trembling shoulder. The shoulder of the man she was nestled against was not big or wide but it gave her an immense feeling of warmth and ease. She felt as if she was a drifting and homeless duckweed that had finally found its warmest home.

The two sat cuddled on top of the pavilion's roof and bathed in the moonlight together. For a long time, neither of them spoke. The tears, accusations and promises made the final layer that separated the two disappear completely. Their hearts were inseparable and closely connected as they listened to each other's heartfelt wishes.



“Take me to see your imperial father tomorrow, okay? Don’t forget, your man is actually a genius doctor and there are no illnesses that he can’t cure.”

“Mn...” Lan Xueruo softly replied while leaning on Yun Che’s shoulder. She closed her eyes as the corner of her mouth slightly raised. With tears at the corner of her eyes, her beauty incomparable.

# Chapter 158:

## “Medical Saint”

The morning of the second day, Yun Che followed Lan Xueruo to the Blue Wind Imperial Palace.

This was the first time he entered the imperial palace in this life. Yun Che, more or less, had a feeling of being overwhelmed by the luxurious surroundings. The imperial palace's architecture was naturally luxurious; golden colored tiles glittered under the sunshine in every direction and directly dazzled Yun Che's eyes.

Lan Xueruo was still plainly dressed. She wouldn't be recognized

by others outside, but within the imperial palace, who wouldn't be familiar with the only princess of the imperial family. Everywhere they went, every bodyguard and palace maid would all hurriedly bow down as soon as they saw Lan Xueruo, respectfully calling her "Princess Cang Yue". When following alongside Lan Xueruo, Yun Che did not have to disguise himself or dress up at all. The crown prince and third prince had many eyes within the imperial palace; this incident of him following Lan Xueruo to enter the imperial palace would definitely would be known by the crown prince and third prince before long, but Yun Che didn't care about this matter. Contrarily, if he disguised himself, and news got out that

Princess Cang Yue brought an unfamiliar person to the imperial palace to see the emperor, and the crown prince and third prince could not investigate this person, it could potentially inconvenience Lan Xueruo.

The imperial palace was huge. As Lan Xueruo walked, she also introduced the important structures of the imperial palace to Yun Che. Unintentionally, they had already arrived in front of a grand and imposing palace.

“Here’s my father’s chambers.” Lan Xueruo said with a slightly nervous expression. It was as if she was a normal girl bringing her sweetheart to her parents, and was nervous that she might not gain her parents’

approval.

The passage leading to the palace had a large pond on either side; the lotus flowers in the ponds just happened to be in bloom as its clear water rippled in waves. The green willows brushed alongside the water and the lotus leaves slightly drooped as their flowers faced the wind, permeating the air with a faint sweetness.

“Mn, let’s go in.” Compared to Lan Xueruo, Yun Che was unexpectedly very calm.

With Lan Xueruo at the front, she brought Yun Che towards the emperor’s chambers. As soon as they stepped through the door, they saw an elderly man in a gray robe,

who had a beard that hung down to his chest, walk toward them.

Although this elderly man was clearly very old, his hair and beard were pitch black; it was evident that he was an expert in maintaining good health. Although far away from him, Yun Che was able to faintly smell the scent of medicine.

Behind the elderly man followed two attendants; although they were only attendants, within the deepest parts of their eyes, their arrogance was clearly visible — even though they were in the imperial palace.

Seeing this elderly person, Lan Xuero's footsteps paused, hurriedly moved forward to meet them, and humbly greeted with respect, "Master Gu, you came. How

is my father's condition?"

Lan Xueruo's actions caused Yun Che to burst into astonishment. From the way this elderly man dressed, he clearly wasn't a person of the imperial family, but with her grand identity as the princess, she unexpectedly took the initiative to greet him, and even made a simple salutation... As soon as Lan Xueruo said the two words "Master Gu", Yun Che's brows moved slightly; he immediately remembered someone.

"So it was your highness the princess." The elderly man saluted in turn with a chuckle and very amiable face, "This morning, I received the emperor's summons so I came to take a look. Last night, the night air was cold and caused the

emperor to suffer a little wind chill; it already isn't an issue. As for the matter of the emperor's life veins... Sigh, please forgive this old one for his incompetence, I still have not found a way to deal with it.

“Master Gu, please don't speak in that way, my father's life veins were already damaged beyond repair, and there is no cure in this world. If my father wasn't under Master Gu's care these years, I fear... In short, Master Gu must not blame himself. Cang Yue once again thanks Master Gu for this kindness.” Lan Xueruo said gratefully.

“When Princess Cang Yue says it in that way, it really is overpraising this old one. Your highness, please be at ease, this old one will



definitely do his best to ensure the emperor's health... The emperor is about to retire to bed now, so if your highness wishes to see the emperor, then quickly enter, this old one shall take his leave."

"Take care, Master Gu."

The elderly man carried a medicine chest and strolled away with his attendants. Lan Xueruo followed him with her eyes until he left; one could see the respect she had towards this elderly person. It was only when the elderly man was very far away did she turn her gaze back to Yun Che. She explained. "He is the Master Gu that I mentioned before; in these couple of years, my father's illness was being treated by him. It was only because of Master

Gu that my father had been able to struggle with death until now.”

“Is his medical expertise that strong?” Holding his chin on his hand, Yun Che casually asked.

“Master Gu Qihong is already one hundred and sixty years old this year. Possessing the title ‘Medical Saint’, his medical expertise is the absolute best in the Blue Wind Empire. He is the publicly recognized as the number one genius doctor. Moreover, not only is Master Gu’s medical expertise very high, he also knows the art of opening profound entrances; he is able to help profound practitioners posteriorly open the three profound entrances of the Sunflower Dew, Vacant Seed and Heart Gate. ,

Having Master Gu open one's profound entrances is practically the dream of every single profound practitioner in the Blue Wind Empire. Even the four major sects have always treated Master Gu as a prestigious guest because of that. Every year, they would respectfully request Master Gu to open profound entrances for the core disciples of their sect. Therefore, Master Gu is extremely renowned in the Blue Wind Imperial City. The number of people who request him, owe their lives to him, and owe him favors, is uncountable. Thus, there was never anyone who would dare to offend Master Gu. Otherwise, there would be an uncountable amount of people who would take the initiative to stick up for Master Gu... Including the four major sects:

Heavenly Sword Villa, Frozen Cloud  
Asgard, Xiao Sect, and the Burning  
Heaven Clan.

While saying this, Lan Xueruo's had  
a face full of reverence; she clearly  
had some admiration within the  
respect she had towards this Master  
Gu.

“Medical Saint?” The corners of  
Yun Che's mouth drew back,  
revealing a slightly disdainful  
frown... Medical saint, was his  
master's title. And in his heart,  
since his master was a medical  
saint, there was no one else in the  
world that fits the title of Medical  
Saint!

“How is this Master Gu like?” Yun  
Che asked intentionally.

Lan Xueruo said, “Not only are Master Gu’s healing arts high, he also has a benevolent compassionate nature. He never used his status of the number one genius doctor to be haughty, never treated anyone based on their status, and gave medical treatment to impoverished families without receiving payment most of the time. So the public opinion of Master Gu within the Blue Wind Imperial Family is very good; everyone praises and admires him. But, it has been said that he has a bad temper at times; anyone who offends him, or any patient he doesn’t like for any other reason, even if one were to give ten thousand pieces of gold, he would definitely not treat.”

“Oh, is that so... “ Yun Che nodded,

“Let’s go, let’s enter and take a look at your father.”

When comparing the ability to observe people, ten Lan Xueruos still could not compare to Yun Che. The first instant Yun Che saw Gu Qihong, he could immediately conclude that... this old geezer, was definitely not a good person!

There wasn’t any sort of special reason, and was simply because of a type of feeling; the type of feeling that was nurtured after experiencing an innumerable amount of people trying to kill him, knowledge of every type of evil, and being on the brink of death an unknown amount of times.

Upon entering the chambers, the

emperor's middle aged eunuch immediately went ahead to report.

“Since three years ago when Father suddenly fell ill, he began to spend large portion of his time within his chambers and seldom went out.

Because Father's health was simply too poor, he was unable to bear the slightest bit of wind chill. Even if he were to catch some minor illness, it would still be possible for it to be a danger to his life.” Lan Xueruo said sadly, “With the condition that Father was in, he was no longer capable of managing the affairs of the nation, but my eldest imperial brother and third imperial brother began to act imprudently and had to lead wolves into the household. Afterwards, not only were they disrespectful to Father, they also

occasionally tried to coerce Father, which made it impossible for Father to pass on the throne to either of them; he had no other choice but to use his life to stall day by day...”

“Don’t worry.” Yun Che lightly grasped Lan Xueruo’s hand and comforted her, “I’ve already said this before, no matter what illness, as long as it is an illness, I will definitely have a way to cure it.”

These words weren’t Yun Che’s crazy talk. He was the successor of the medical saint; he definitely wouldn’t allow himself to sully his master’s name!

“I believe you.” Lan Xueruo softly replied.



“Your highness, as well as this young fellow, the emperor is waiting for you inside. Please enter.” The middle aged eunuch standing at the door bent at the waist and respectfully saluted.

After entering the emperor's chambers, Yun Che saw an elderly person leaning on an imperial bed at first glance. Lan Xuero was nineteen years old, the crown prince would be thirty three in eight days. Logically, the emperor should be around fifty or sixty years old. Having lived in the lap of luxury with countless elixirs and legendary fruits, the emperor shouldn't look old at that age, but the person on the bed looked withered with a wax yellowed complexion, grizzled white hair, and lifeless expression. He

looked like an eighty year old elder past his prime.

Yun Che's eyebrows abruptly raised. This is...

“Father!” Seeing how bad Cang Wanhe looked, Lan Xueruo's heart ached. She hurriedly rushed toward the bed and asked worriedly “Just a moment ago, in front of the chamber's doors, we bumped into Master Gu. He said you caught another cold last night... How do you feel now? Is it a little better?”

“Heh heh,” Cang Wanhe looked towards Lan Xueruo affectionately. Nowadays, he could only feel the warmth of being a parent from this daughter, “It isn't an issue anymore. We were afraid that you would be

overly worried again, so We didn't tell you. Yue'er, the person you brought with you, shouldn't you introduce him?"

Yun Che walked forward and cupped his hands: "Blue Wind Profound Palace Inner Palace disciple Yun Che, pays his respects to Your Majesty."

"Oh? You're Yun Che?" Cang Wanhe revealed an astounded look, and then started laughing, "Although We have resided in this chamber for a long time, We too, have heard that a youngster with an incomparably shocking talent had emerged from the Blue Wind Profound Palace. He defeated an Inner Palace disciple seven levels above him at such a young age and

also successfully wielded the Overlord's Colossal Sword that no one had been able to use for several hundred years. Simply astonishing."

Yun Che slightly smiled and said modestly, "Your Majesty is flattering me. This one is just an ordinary disciple of the profound palace who is unworthy of your highness' praise."

Yun Che's words made Lan Xueruo incapable of withstraining her laughter: "Pfft. Junior brother Yun, normally you are overbearing and always have an air of arrogance wherever you go. Why are you suddenly so modest in front of my father today?"

When Cang Wanhe heard the name

Yun Che earlier, he only had a slight admiration for him. However, as soon as Lan Xueruo's words left her mouth, the way Cang Wanhe looked at Yun Che immediately changed; he knew his daughter extremely well, it was the first time he had ever seen his own daughter tease a young male this naturally.

As the Blue Wind Emperor, his eyes were extremely keen. When Lan Xueruo spoke, from the way she looked at Yun Che, Cang Wanhe could see that something wasn't the quite the same...

Cang Wanhe's expression did not waver as he kindly asked, "Yue'er, this 'Junior Brother Yun' of yours, should be the person you spent two years looking for?"

Last night, she had completely revealed all her secrets and untied the knots in her heart. Lan Xueruo no longer needed to avoid the topic of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament in front of Yun Che. She calmly nodded and replied, “Yes. In regards to Junior brother Yun’s talent, Father should have already heard about it; I believe that after three years, Junior brother Yun can reach a very high level. He definitely has the possibility of entering the top one hundred... But the reason I brought Junior brother Yun here today, is not just to introduce him to you. Actually, Junior brother Yun is not only very talented in the profound cultivation. He is also versed in the medical arts and even has frequently claimed to be a genius

doctor.”

“Oh?” Cang Wanhe’s face revealed his growing interest, “You’re also versed in the medical arts? Could it be that you intend to treat our illness?”

“I will try my best.” Yun Che replied somewhat conservatively... From the moment he entered the door, he had been observing Cang Wanhe’s complexion, and gradually began to have a bad premonition.

“Heh heh, good.”

Even Gu Qihong couldn’t do anything, so it was impossible for anyone else in the Blue Wind Empire to be able to treat him, let alone a seventeen year old

youngster. But Cang Wanhe did not refuse and gently replied, "It's rare for someone to have such compassion, and since you are also the person Yue'er brought over, We naturally do not have any reason to refuse. Only, We have to tell you first, that according to Master Gu, what We have isn't an illness, but rather permanent damage to our life veins due to accumulated labor; therefore, there is no need to force yourself if you don't know what to do."



# Chapter 159: Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite

“Your Majesty, let me see your pulse first.”

Cang Wanhe's appearance gave Yun Che a terrible premonition, but he did not dare to make any assumptions. He walked forward a couple of steps and arrived in front of Cang Wanhe. After pressing two fingers on his right hand on top of his pulse, he closed his eyes.

Lan Xueruo suddenly held her breath. Cang Wanhe also did not say anymore; his slightly muddled

vision silently sized up the man that his daughter chose. But in his heart, he didn't have any hope that he would be able to aid his condition in any way. Perhaps his medical expertise was outstanding, but he was just too young. Such a thing like medical expertise, does not depend on knowledge from studies; it required many years to accumulate and compile.

Yun Che didn't take very long to assess his pulse. Ten or so seconds later, he said softly, "Your Majesty, next, I will use profound energy assess your internal organs. Please do not resist."

"Alright. Just go ahead and do your best. We have already said that you are the person Yue'er had brought

over. We can definitely trust you.”  
Cang Wanhe nodded.

Immediately afterwards, Yun Che’s released a very small amount of profound energy that flowed through Cang Wanhe’s internal organs. He also did not continue for too long and withdrew his profound energy soon after. Then, he opened his eyes with a complicated expression.

“How is it?” Lan Xueruo asked hurriedly. Although the total time of Yun Che’s observation was not more than a minute, it was apparent to anyone that, an “illness” which made even Gu Qiuhong helpless, could not possibly be diagnosed by a seventeen year old youngster’s

short observation. But a young girl whose heart belonged to a man, would always had a sort of blind trust towards their own man, no matter what. Lan Xuero, titled the Blue Moon Princess, also could not break free from the mindset of that sort of girl.

Yun Che was silent for a little while, and then asked, “Your Majesty, is there a scar that shouldn’t be too long on your chest area? If there is, was it left there approximately three years ago?”

Cang Wanhe thought about it for a bit, and then nodded as his pupils revealed his amazement: “That’s right. On our chest, there is in fact, a scar about an inch long that was also indeed left behind three years

ago... How did you know that we have this scar on our body?"

Seeing Cang Wanhe nod, Yun Che's expression became ugly.

Yun Che's facial expression immediately caused Lan Xuero to worry. She nervously asked, "Junior brother Yun, how is my father's condition? Did you find something out?"

"Phew..." Yun Che let out a long breath as his face became serious, "What your majesty has, is in fact, not an illness, nor poison. But it is also not the damaging of your life veins that Gu Qiuhong had said... Rather, someone implanted a parasite in you!!"

“Ah? Parasite?” Lan Xueruo’s fragrant lips opened wide as shock spread across her face.

“Oh? How did you determine this?” Cang Wanhe was still, nevertheless, calm and indifferent. It was very clear that he didn’t believe Yun Che’s words; this was not because he did not trust Yun Che, but because he trusted Gu Qiuhong even more. In these past three years, his body’s condition remained stable under Gu Qiuhong’s care. Moreover, one’s name shook the entire Blue Wind Empire as the number one doctor and one was a mere seventeen year old youngster. No matter who it was, they could not believe the words of a youngster and question a person who possessed a century of

fame as the number one genius doctor.

Yun Che wrinkled his brows, “This type of parasite is called the ‘Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite’. This parasite is planted inside the body and relies on the heart’s blood to mature. After maturing, it lives near the heart’s veins and lives by consuming a person’s vitality. This type of parasite is very small, but it requires an incomparable amount of vitality to grow; nearly half of the hosts’ vitality could be consumed by it. The reason why Your Majesty’s health had been weak beyond compare these few years while also aging at an extreme pace, is because an entire half of your vitality had been swallowed by this ‘Soul Devouring Life Binding

Parasite’.”

Cang Wanhe’s expression was as calm as before. Then, he revealed a trace of suspicion, “If it is truly as you say, then there is no way this formidable parasite that had been implanted in our body gone undiscovered by Gu Qiuhong, whose medical expertise had been the absolute best since long ago. It would be possible if you were to say that he wasn’t able to discover it in the first treatment, but in these three years, Gu Qiuhong has been treating us for several dozens of times. It is extremely unlikely that he was unable to discover it every single time. Yun Che, could it be that you have misunderstood something somewhere?”



“Impossible!” Yun Che shook his head without the slightest hesitation. “Absolutely impossible. I knew that Your Majesty would certainly not believe me, so please allow me a chance to prove it to Your Majesty... Allow me to cut open that scar on your chest. I will reveal the parasite in front of Your Majesty’s eyes.”

Cang Wanhe immediately wrinkled his eyebrows. How noble was his imperial body? How could he let a little youngster cut open his body? Before he said anything, Lan Xuero had already opened her mouth, “Father, I believe Junior Yun, and I even more so, believe in his character. He would never do anything that would harm Father’s body. Father’s illness has never

changed for the better from the start; even Master Gu could not do anything. Even if Junior brother Yun is unable to produce a favorable change, it would at least, not bring about any harm.

Something like making cuts on the emperor's body, was naturally not a small matter. But Lan Xueruo still persuaded Cang Wanhe without hesitation. On one hand, she hoped that something would take a turn for the better. On the other hand, she had an extremely deep trust in Yun Che. As soon as she opened her mouth, the words Cang Wanhe originally wanted to say were swallowed down. He slowly nodded his head, "Alright then... Even if you cut open this wound in vain, you do not need to be nervous and blame

yourself for it.”

Yun Che nodded and did not speak anymore. He pulled apart the clothes around Cang Wanhe's chest. On the area near his heart, there was indeed an inch long scar. Such a long time had passed, so this scar had already become very light. However, it could still be clearly seen.

Yun Che extended his finger forward and profound energy rush towards his fingertips. Just as he was preparing to cut towards Cang Wanhe's chest, his movement slightly slowed down, because just a moment ago, he felt a profound energy firmly lock on his own. This profound energy was hidden extremely well; normal people

would definitely find it hard to discover, but how sharp was Yun Che's perception? Not only that, he also sensed that this profound energy came with an incomparably terrifying piece of information; the strength was of, at least the Sky Profound Realm!

After the instant of astonishment, Yun Che immediately calmed down. How the emperor not have top experts protecting him at his side? But he was not trying to harm this emperor, so he didn't have the slightest fear of the consequences. As his finger lightly cut Cang Wanghe's chest, it directly cut the one inch long scar open and drops of blood quickly flowed out. Yun Che's then quickly placed his other hand upon the cut and carefully let

his phoenix's flame energy enter. In an instant, he found the place where the "Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite" was hiding.

Parasites naturally fear fire, and the Phoenix Flame just happened to be the king of flames. The frightened "Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite" immediately fled in the opposite direction, away from where the Phoenix Flame was and was slowly lured towards the position of the wound by Yun Che.

"It's coming out." Yun Che opened his eyes and said softly.

After his voice fell, the wound on Cang Wanhe's chest suddenly started abnormally wiggle. Afterwards, a slender, completely

golden parasitic worm about half an inch long, stretched out half of its body and violently wriggled.

“Ah!!!”

Lan Xueruo was so frightened that she cried out in fear. Her rosy face lost all its color. Even the emperor, Cang Wanhe, was struck dumb as his entire body stiffened...

“Don’t move!!” Yun Che roared out, putting a stop to the all of the possible movements from Lan Xueruo, Cang Wanhe and the secret person. He quickly lifting his left hand and used the phoenix flame to force the gold colored parasite to quickly return back into Cang Wanhe’s veins. Then, he released his profound energy, sealed Cang

Wanhe's wound, and staunched the bleeding.

"Our... Our body actually had something like that inside of it!" Cang Wanhe seemed as if he had already calmed down, but his stiff body showed that he was still in the frightened state he was in before.

"Junior brother Yun... why didn't you take that... that parasite from before out, instead letting it return back into Father's body? It... It had already been clearly, drawn out by you." Lan Xuero's small face was completely white. Girls usually had a natural fear for these types of unusual insects; what's more, it was still in Cang Wanhe's body.

Yun Che shook his head and

replied: “It’s not that I don’t want to take it out, but that it is simply impossible. If this were any other type of parasite, regardless of whether it was even more terrifying, as long as its location is found, it is possible to find a method to lure it out or directly kill it. But this type of parasite... it is called the ‘Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite’ because not only does it swallow a large amount of the hosts’ vitality, after this parasite drinks the blood of its host, it turns the host’s life into its own, and thus shares life and death with its host. In other words, the Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite within Your Majesty’s body, is sharing a life with your majesty! If Your Majesty were to die, it would die. Conversely, if it were to die, Your Majesty would



also die!”

“Ah!!” Lan Xuero widened her beautiful eyes as they trembled dramatically.

“Wh... What? In this world, there actually exists this type of sinister creature!” Cang Wanhe also had a face full of fear.

Yun Che continued to speak, “It also needs to absorb Your Majesty’s vitality to live. If it leaves Your Majesty’s body, it would immediately die. And for its entire life, it can only have one host; even if it was moved to another host’s body, it would still be of no use. So not only should this type of Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite not be removed from Your Majesty’s

body, it also needs to be carefully ‘supported’. There is no other choice but to helplessly allow it to swallow the body’s vitality at all times and it mustn’t be allowed to die.”

Yun Che paused as his voice became even more serious, “Senior Sister Xueruo, Your Majesty, my following words, will be a bit cruel... The lifespan of a parasitic worm isn’t too long. According to what I know, this Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite’s life expectancy is five years. And the time it has been in Your Majesty’s body, already exceeds three years. After two more years, this Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite will die. In other words... Your Majesty’s remaining life span, is at most, two more

years.”

“How could it be like this... How could it be like this... “ Lan Xueruo covered her lips and soundlessly sobbed.

Cang Wanhe gasped in a large breath of air. The parasite within his body and Yun Che’s words, undoubtedly threw his mind into complete disarray, so much that it also seized him with terror. He spoke in a deep voice: “Who could it be... Who infected us with such a malicious parasite! We will definitely find him... and dismembering his body into ten thousand pieces! !”

Yun Che’s vision fell on Cang Wanhe and said, “If Your Majesty

wants to know who implanted the parasite, you can actually find that out right away.”

Cang Wanhe’s body jolted. He immediately asked, “Yun Che, could it be that you know who implanted the parasite?”

“I, do not know, but your majesty definitely knows.” Yun Che calmly said, “This type of ‘Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite’ can only be planted inside the body, and it must soak in the host’s heart’s blood to grow. A person’s heart blood, also happens to exist near the area of the heart. So if a person wanted to implant a parasite into a body, then he would need to make an incision near his heart and release the parasite into the cut. The parasite

would be unable to grow if it went into one's food or entered the body through drink; putting it in the blood anywhere else also has the same result. All Your Majesty needs to do is remember who made the incision on your chest and left the scar three years ago. Then, you will know who implanted the parasite in you."

As soon as Yun Che's words came out, Cang Wanhe and Lan Xuero's expressions went completely blank.

"Im... Impossible! It can't be Master Gu who implanted the parasite. Master Gu has put his heart into taking care of Father these years; his relationship with the Imperial Family has always been very good... It can't be him! He simply has no

reason to harm my father.” Lan Xueruo’s face was overwhelmed with shock... She knew the person who made the cut on her father’s chest three years ago; it was the Medical Saint, Gu Qihong. That time, Cang Wanhe had a serious cold. Gu Qihong claimed that the cold was too serious and he needed to bleed some of the cold blood from his chest...

But since she was young, she deeply respected, revered and was grateful to this Medical Saint. She was momentarily unable to make the connection between him and an evil person who would infect someone with a parasite.

# Chapter 160: The Four Great Sacred Grounds of Legends

“Gu Qiuhong?” Lan Xueruo’s words caused Yun Che to be shocked for a while, and he fell into deep thought afterwards. Someone who was permitted to make a cut on Cang Wanhe’s body, moreover on the location of his heart, must be someone he trusts very much or was extremely intimate with. Yun Che had originally thought it would be the crown prince or the third prince, or other princes; he hadn’t expected that the person Lan Xueruo called out would be Gu Qiuhong.

But according to what Lan Xueruo said, Gu Qiuhong didn't seem to have any reason to deliberately plan to harm Cang Wanhe. Unless...

“Yun Che...” Cang Wanhe's expression was incomparably complicated; he asked with some difficulty: “This type of parasite that exists in the heart's vessels, is it extremely difficult to be discovered?”

Yun Che understood why he would ask such a question, and answered straightforwardly, “Ordinary doctors, especially those who haven't studied parasitic poisons and parasitic bugs, do in fact have a hard time discovering its existence. However, if Gu Qiuhong's medical expertise is as excellent as the



rumors say, it is impossible for him to not have discovered the ‘Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite’s existence. Naturally, if he was the one who implanted the parasite... He obviously would not ‘discover’ it.”

“I see...” Cang Wanhe’s heavily breathed out a turbid breath. With his body leaning on the bed, his complexion was pale, as if he had suddenly become much older.

“Yue’er, there is no mistake; all the facts testifies that the person who implanted the parasite was Gu Qiuhong. This scar on my chest, was precisely left by him three years ago. It was also after that day, that I was bedridden with a serious illness for three years. Yun Che already forced the parasite out for

us to see; it truly exists, this is the truest of facts, and everything else... is all fake.”

At this moment, he felt that he didn't deserve to be the Emperor. In these three years, he actually had always relied on, and even respected the person who was poisoning him. Thinking back on it now, he, who was the revered Blue Wind Emperor, was virtually being toyed around in their palms like a fool... It really was stupid to the point of being extremely laughable.

“But, why would Master Gu do this? Our imperial family has always been on good terms with him; even Father deeply respects him. So why would he do such a thing?” Lan Xueruo still had a hard time

accepting it, and she tightly bit her lips together.

“Perhaps he doesn’t have a direct reason, but he definitely has an indirect reason. For example, he could have made some sort of deal with those unfilial sons Cang Lin and Cang Shuo... It also could possibly involve the Xiao Sect or the Burning Heaven Clan. Moreover... Yue’er, you are too pure and kind in nature; you had always respected Gu Qihong, so much that you viewed him as a saint. But when We had associated with him in my early years, I had already discovered that his nature was not as virtuous and harmless as he seemed on the surface. On the contrary, there are times that he would secretly do despicable acts. But the excellence

of his medical expertise was unquestionable, so We had always tried to be on good terms with him. But the people who want to be on good terms with him are too many; compared with those enormous sects, our title of emperor, perhaps cannot be considered very much at all.”

Cang Wanhe shook his head, revealing a sorrowful expression on his face. Even though he was the Emperor, he was actually devastated to this extent in secret; bedridden for an entire three years while facing difficulties in his bedchamber, he was virtually not too far off from a dead person. And if he hadn't "fallen ill", how would Cang Lin and Cang Shuo dare to act recklessly; they more so, would not

have had the opportunity to lead the wolf into the house.

“Yun Che, thank you. If not for you, perhaps even until We died, We still would not have known why We died; at the end of my life, perhaps We would even be grateful to the one who harmed us in our ignorance.” Cang Wanhe self mockingly laughed, “I actually doubted your medical expertise earlier, I am honestly ashamed.”

“Please don’t say such things, Your Majesty.” Yun Che promptly waved his hand, “Your Majesty, about this matter of you being infected with the parasite, I have a suspicion, and I wish Your Majesty would give me an answer. Of course, if this matter involves the imperial family’s

secrets, then Your Majesty obviously does not have to answer me.”

“Go ahead and ask. We are already a lingering life. My final wishes, are all on Yue’er. You are Yue’er’s most trusted person, so towards you, We also have no secrets.” Cang Wanhe’s eyes were closed. His complexion was tranquil without any turbulence.

Yun Che was moved... These words coming from an emperor’s mouth, one can imagine the weight. These few sentences projected the gloom in his heart, and more so contained his pampering and love for Lan Xueruo. After being bedridden for three years, he finally saw what the most valuable treasure he had

always possessed in his entire life was... Not the seat of emperor, not his beloved subjects and seven sons, but his only daughter.

Yun Che said slowly: “According to what I know, this Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite is extremely difficult to raise. Not only is the parasite’s origin hard to find even if one had an immense amount of money, in the process of raising it, only one in a thousand would succeed; all of the others would die. Thus, obtaining a single Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite would require enormous time and money. And once this Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite entered the body, it would be extremely difficult to discover. The victim’s body would weaken,

deteriorate very quickly, and will certainly die within five years. The Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite would also simultaneously die with the host, become a pool of watery blood in the person's body, and not leave behind any trace of its existence. And so, this type of parasite is normally used to secretly kill someone without leaving a trace. It would make others unable to realize how they really died, and believe that it was due to an illness."

"But rumors say that the Crown Prince and the Third Prince are both anxiously fighting over the throne, while the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan secretly fueled the fire. Gu Qiuhong implanting the parasite in your



body, definitely has something to do with them. But since they urgently wished for Your Majesty to pass away, why do they not use faster methods such as assassination or poison, and instead used this kind of method that was not only troublesome, but would also take a long time to kill? If Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan really had this kind of ambition, then secretly assassinating or poisoning the emperor should be more rational. The only explanation I can think of... Is that behind the emperor, there is something that even the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan are afraid of, making them afraid to leave behind any traces?"

Cang Wanhe already knew what Yun Che wanted to ask halfway

through his speech. After Yun Che finished speaking, he slowly nodded. Not wanting to hide anything from Yun Che, he softly replied, "Because of the Heavenly Sword Villa."

"Heavenly Sword Villa?"

"The Blue Wind Imperial Family and the Heavenly Sword Villa were established on the same day of the same year. Our ancestor and the founder of the Heavenly Sword Villa were like blood brothers with different last names. After the Blue Wind Imperial Family came into power, they had continuously promoted the Heavenly Sword Villa with all of its efforts; straight until it became Blue Wind Empire's number one sect. And the Heavenly

Sword Villa, has always existed as the guardians of the imperial family. Although through the passage of time, the relationship between the imperial family and Heavenly Sword Villa has gradually become distant, some agreements, have never been broken. They will not get involved with movements within the Imperial Family, but if an external force threatened the Imperial Family, they will step in. Also, if We were to die from assassination or poison, they will definitely mobilize and investigate it thoroughly to the end.”

“... But Xiao Sect, Burning Heaven Clan and Heavenly Sword Villa have been called the Four Major Sects, why would they be so afraid of the Heavenly Sword Villa?” Yun

Che asked, in a somewhat confused way.

Cang Wanhe slightly shook his head, "Perhaps you didn't know of this. Even though they have been named the Four Major Sects, in theory, the combined strength of Frozen Cloud Asgard, Xiao Sect and the Burning Heaven Clan cannot compare to the Heavenly Sword Villa. Although the Heavenly Sword Villa is jointly named with them, its level actually completely surpasses theirs. Moreover, the Heavenly Sword Villa's background, would cause the other three great sects to tremble with fear."

"Background? The Heavenly Sword Villa still has a background?" Yun Che was startled once again.

Heavenly Sword Villa was already Blue Wind Empire's number one sect and was already at the top. They actually still had something behind them?

“Have you heard of the ‘Four Great Sacred Grounds’ of the Profound Sky Continent?” Cang Wanhe asked.

“Four Great Sacred Grounds... I seem to remember Grandfather mentioning it...” Yun Che thought about it for a while and suddenly asked, “but, aren't the Four Great Sacred Grounds things of legends? Could it be that they actually exist?”

“Haha, if we talk about levels, the Four Great Sacred Grounds are indeed legends, so much so that

their existence is like myth. Even We, do not qualify to approach that level, or even have the qualifications of hoping for it. Our Blue Wind Empire's Four Major Sects, in front of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, are like ants. If the Four Great Sacred Grounds are willing, destroying the Profound Sky Continent's seven empires would be no obstacle."

"There's still actually... this sort of existence." Yun Che's was stunned, "Could it be, the Heavenly Sword Villa's background is one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds?"

"Right." Cang Wanhe slowly nodded, "Absolutely Monarch Sanctuary, the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, Sun Moon Divine

Hall, and the Supreme Ocean Palace... these are the names of the Profound Sky's Four Great Sacred Grounds. Because they exist for their duty of 'guardian', they will never participate or meddle in the internal struggles of the seven empires. As for the Heavenly Sword Villa, they have a relationship with the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region of the Four Great Sacred Grounds because the founder of the Heavenly Sword Villa, was also the oldest son of a certain senior practitioner of the Sovereign Profound Realm. But because his aptitude was too poor, he had no qualifications to stay in the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. As a result, he was expelled, and later on established the Heavenly Sword Villa on this piece of land. The

sword arts that the Heaven Sword Villa uses, also possesses a shadow of the ‘Mighty Heavenly Sword Arts’.”

A disciple abandoned by the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, would unexpectedly establish Blue Wind Empire’s number one sect. The Four Great Sacred Grounds terror, was simply unimaginable.

“Because of the ancestor’s relationship, every three years, the Heavenly Sword Villa would send offerings to the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. At first, the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region didn’t pay any heed, but afterwards they finally accepted them; thus, establishing a connection between the Heavenly Sword Villa and the



Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Although this relationship was very weak and superficial, it was still the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Even if it was only a sliver, no one dared bully the Heavenly Sword Villa, nor would they dare to provoke them. We have also heard, that the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region secretly imprisoned an extremely important ‘Devil’ within the Heavenly Sword Villa a hundred years ago. It is clear that they value the Heavenly Sword Villa with a certain amount of importance.”

“Blue Wind Empire’s many sects are always fighting all year round whether openly or secretly, but never has there been a Sect that thought about touching the Heavenly Sword Villa’s title of the

number one sect. They want us to die, yet they have no choice but to worry about the Heavenly Sword Villa. So using this type of method that won't leave behind any clues, is in fact, only natural.”

After Cang Wanhe finished speaking, he let out loose a long sigh as exhaustion spread across his entire face.

Yun Che didn't speak for a long time, and silently digested Cang Wanhe's words.

The anxious Lan Xueruo did not listen to much of the words between them and they weren't what she was the most concerned about. She tugged on Yun Che's sleeve and nervously asked: “Junior

brother Yun, you still haven't told us... Since you know this type of parasite, then is there any way to remove this type of parasite?"

Yun Che continued being silent for a while and then slightly nodded afterwards, "There is."

"Ah—" Lan Xueruo's pleasantly surprised voice cried out softly as her pair of beautiful eyes momentarily became incomparably bright. Cang Wanhe also opened his eyes all of a sudden; a luster of hope was revealed in his gloomy gaze, "Yun Che, was what you said... true? This parasite is not unremovable?"

"All living things form a balance, everything has something that

subdues it. This world, does not have parasites that cannot be removed. Only, to remove this Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite, if one were to say it's easy, it is extremely easy; if one were to consider it difficult.... It is also as difficult as climbing up to the blue sky." Yun Che calmly stated.

"Then how exactly can it be removed?" Lan Xueruo tightly grasped Yun Che's arm as her complexion flushed from excitement, "As long as it can save father, no matter how hard it is, I will definitely still do it."

"Burning Soul Flower." Yun Che looked at Lan Xueruo and softly said this name, "Only a Burning Soul Flower's petal is necessary for

me to remove the Soul Devouring  
Life Binding Parasite from His  
Majesty's body. Only, this Burning  
Soul Flower... is extremely rare."

-----

Author Note: The key word in this  
chapter is actually "Devil". The rest  
is all bullshit.

-----

# Chapter 161: Ling Yun, Ling Jie

The Burning Soul Flower was a type of toxic organism that had a mystical and frightening “soul escape” function, and was also the only thing Yun Che could think of that could remove the Soul Devouring Life Binding Parasite. But the number of Burning Soul Flowers in existence was extremely small; its “soul escape” function was not inferior to the concealing ability of the Star Concealing Grass, and its rarity was also similar to that of Star Concealing Grass. No more than ten plants should exist in the entire Profound Sky

Continent.

“Burning Soul Flower... Burning Soul Flower...” Lan Xueruo repeated the name several times in succession and firmly engraved it into her mind. Yun Che’s simple statement of “extremely rare” manifested just how difficult it was to find it, but no matter how difficult it was, it was also the only hope she had been able to grasp: “I will utilize all my ability, and immediately search for the Burning Soul Flower. My Blue Wind Imperial Family controls the Blue Wind Empire; we’ll definitely be able to find it no matter how difficult it is to do so.”

Yun Che knew that this would happen after he spoke about the

“Burning Soul Flower”, but after hesitating a bit, he still did not speak out to stop her. After all, this was related to her father, and the life of the Blue Wind Empire’s emperor.

At this time, the middle-aged eunuch hurriedly walked in, and said with a bowed head: “Reporting to Your Majesty and Princess Cang Yue, Heavenly Sword Villa’s Young Villa Master Ling Yun, is requesting an audience; he is currently waiting in the Blue Cloud Hall.”

“Oh?” Cang Wanhe and Lan Xuero simultaneously exclaimed in surprise.

“Heavenly Sword Villa?” Yun Che’s heart shook... He had just heard



Cang Wanhe declare the shocking strength and backing of the Heavenly Sword Villa, and it had changed his impression of the Heavenly Sword Villa greatly. And now, someone from the Heavenly Sword Villa suddenly came to visit, making his heart go into turmoil.

“Could it be that they’re here to see father? Or is it that... the actions of the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan caused them to mobilize?” Lan Xueruo said with a low voice.

“No!” Cang Wanhe shook his head slowly: “Unless We die, or the Xiao Sect and the Burning Heaven Clan interfere with the imperial regime, the Heavenly Sword Villa will not reach out to do anything. Calculating the time, it seems about

right. Their visit this time is probably to deliver an invitation. Yue'er, bring us to receive them... Yun Che, you seem to want to go too. If you're interested in the Heavenly Sword Villa, then you should go with Yue'er."

Lan Xueruo nodded slightly: "Yes, father. As for the parasite Gu Qiuhong implanted in Father, should we bring it up with the people from the Heavenly Sword Villa?"

Cang Wanhe was silent for a moment, then shook his head: "No! Don't bring this up with anyone, and especially don't alarm Gu Qiuhong. Even if we expose it in front of him, he must have countless ways to explain himself.

Also, Gu Qihong has a very wide network of connections; even the four major sects are willing to garner his favor. Although We're the emperor, We do not have the resources to reveal his true colors."

Lan Xueruo nodded bitterly: "I understand. After seeing the guests from the Heavenly Sword Villa off, I will immediately send people to the Black Moon Merchant Guild, and search for a Burning Soul Flower, no matter the cost."

Yun Che followed Lan Xueruo to the Blue Cloud Hall. In the hall, two people were already there waiting. One looked to be around twenty years of age, was clad in white without a speck of dust, and had an elegant expression. He stood

silently in front of a landscape painting, and seemed to be examining the meaning of the painting. The other person looked to be fifteen or sixteen years old, and his expression slightly resembled that of the young man, but he still possessed a trace of childhood innocence. He was also clad in white clothing, but he wasn't as calm as the young man; he was currently walking to and fro about the hall while looking in all directions, and seemed to be extremely curious about all aspects of the imperial palace.

Hearing the sound of footsteps, the young man looked away from the painting. Seeing that it was Lan Xueruo, a look of surprise flashed in his eyes, and he cupped his hands

in greeting: “Heavenly Sword Villa Ling Yun pays his respects to Princess Cang Yue.”

At the same time, his gaze landed on Yun Che, and politely smiled at him.

As the Young Villa Master of the Heavenly Sword Villa, Ling Yun’s status was definitely not inferior to that of the imperial princess, and he possibly had an even higher status. But from his body, Yun Che could not detect even a little arrogance or air of haughtiness; not only did he give a gentleman’s salute in front of Princess Cang Yue, he was not lacking in manners to even the “unremarkable” person behind Princess Cang Yue... All this, could be said to be deliberate, but

Yun Che could not detect even a trace of impurity within his expression; it was crystal clear, and without any filth.

This is a true gentleman, definitely not an idiot like that Xiao Kuangyun... Yun Che silently praised in his heart.

“Big brother Yun.” Lan Xueruo subsequently requited his salute, and smiled elegantly: “It’s been a long time since we last met, I didn’t think you would actually personally visit.”

Ling Yun smiled lightly: “It has been almost two and a half years since I last met Princess Cang Yue at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. To be able to witness

Princess Cang Yue's noble appearance once again, is my, Ling Yun's fortune..."

As Ling Yun was speaking, the youngster accompanying him scuttled over with a "whoosh" sound, and cried out in surprise while staring at Lan Xueruo: "You're the legendary Blue Moon Princess? Whoa whoa whoa! Big Bro, this Princess Sis is even more beautiful than you described!"

"Little Jie, don't be rude!" Ling Yun glanced at the youngster meaningfully, then said with an apologetic expression: "Princess, this is my younger brother Ling Jie. He's just fifteen and a half this year, and is young and inexperienced. He also rarely leaves the Heavenly

Sword Villa so he doesn't quite understand etiquette; I hope Princess won't take offense."

Ling Yun's younger brother...

Which also meant that this youngster was also the son of the leader of the Heavenly Sword Villa. This status was naturally no small matter. Just as Lan Xueruo was about to speak, Ling Jie had already begun to mumble discontentedly: "Hey, Big Bro! I'm almost sixteen, and I'm already an adult; how am I young and inexperienced! Princess Sis's incredible beauty goes without saying, I didn't say anything wrong."

Lan Xueruo couldn't help but smile, and said in a playful mocking manner: "Little brother Ling Jie, Big Sister thanks you for your praise;



you're also very cute too. When you grow up, many little sisters will definitely be attracted to you."

Lan Xueruo's voice was always as gentle as water. Added with to her beauty that was capable of ruining an entire city, it was enough to captivate all kinds of "little brother's" hearts. Ling Jie had bitterly trained with the sword since a very young age at the Heavenly Sword Villa and rarely left, so he had never met a woman with such beauty like Lan Xueruo; and she had spoken to him so gently. All of a sudden, he felt his heart beat faster, and even his young and tender face had flushed a little. He stared unblinkingly at Lan Xueruo, and said absent-mindedly: "Princess Sis, not only are you very beautiful,

even your voice is very pleasant to hear... Ah, right! Princess Sis, marry me and be my wife, okay?"

Ling Yun and Yun Che's eyebrows simultaneously twitched slightly.

If anyone else had said those words with such a face of infatuation and gaze of immorality, no matter who he was, Yun Che would directly greet him with a slap... Having your own woman be taken advantage of in front of you was something a man cannot endure. But regardless of facial expression or gaze, this Ling Jie did not have the slightest trace of obscenity; there was only the most simplest of fondness and longing that an inexperienced youngster would have for a beautiful girl who had touched his

heartstrings. This type of simple and pure directness that held no falsehood, made Yun Che incapable of resenting and disliking him.

“Little Jie! Don’t speak nonsense! You’re offending the Princess; if you mess around anymore, I won’t bring you out next time.” Ling Yun tugged Ling Jie’s arm, and said somewhat strictly. Then, he directed an apologetic smile at Lan Xuero: “Your highness, Little Jie is still young and babbles a lot of nonsense; please do not take offense.”

“I’m not babbling nonsense!” Ling Jie said with dissatisfaction: “And I’ve already said so many times, I’m not young anymore; don’t treat me like a little child. I’m almost sixteen,

even Father said that I can make my own decisions now. I want Princess Sis to be my wife, and I'm being very serious; I'm not babbling nonsense at all! Mother also explicitly warned me before that if I meet a girl that I like, I must say it out loud, so no one else can snatch her away. And just now, Princess Sis said I was very cute; maybe Princess Sis really likes me too and will immediately consent... Princess Sis, isn't that right?"

The corner of Yun Che's eye twitched again. This time, he was unable to stay unperturbed, and said as he took a step forward: "Little brother Ling Jie, you might as well give up. Your Princess Sis won't be able to agree to you."

“Ah? Why?” Ling Jie turned his gaze to Yun Che with a “whoosh”, and stared at him with perfectly round eyes. Ling Yun also glanced at him a few times; his heart was secretly amazed at his mysterious temperament, which he was completely unable to examine. And being able to be by Princess Cang Yue’s side also sufficiently proved that he was out of the ordinary.

“The reason is very simple.” Yun Che grinned slightly: “It’s because your Princess Sis already has a man.”

Lan Xueruo’s pink lips opened, yet didn’t speak. Her head unconsciously bowed slightly, and her face touchingly glowed red.

“Eh? Already has a man?” Ling Jie stared with wide eyes, and shouted very unhappily: “Who is it! Who snatched my Princess Sis, I’m going to challenge him. Mother had said that one can yield other things, but one must never yield the woman they like. Even if she has been snatched away by someone else, one must use the most masculine of methods to snatch her back! I’ve fallen for Princess Sis; I want to defeat him and snatch Princess Sis back.”

Yun Che curled his lip indifferently, then stepped forward, took Lan Xueruo’s small hand, and said while beaming: “This person is seemingly far away, yet is actually right before your eyes; it’s me.”

This was Lan Xueruo's first time holding his hand in front of others, and was also the first time she was intimate with a man in her princess identity. She initially panicked subconsciously, but she did not let go and allowed him to gently hold it. Evidently, Yun Che was being impetuous; a good deal of trouble would come if others knew about their relationship, because it may attract Cang Lin and Cang Shuo's attention, as well as assassination attempts from Fen Juecheng.

She was very clear why Yun Che was being this impetuous; he was trying to uphold his claim on her. Even though being jealous of a little kid made her feel a bit silly, she also felt and enjoyed this almost overbearing feeling of care.

Yun Che's actions and Lan Xueruo's reactions caused Ling Yun's eyes to reveal a flash of amazement. He was very clear about the foolish love Fen Juecheng, the Young Clan Master of the Burning Heaven Clan, expressed to Lan Xueruo, and how he had even sworn in front of the Blue Wind Emperor that he would not marry anyone other than her. If Princess Cang Yue really had this person in her heart, it would, without a question, evoke Fen Juecheng's jealousy, resentment, and desire to kill.

"You?" Ling Jie sized him up. Just as he was able to voice his disbelief, he suddenly saw him take Princess Sister's hand. He immediately opened his eyes wide, and exploded



out like a young tiger gone mad: “Y-y-y-you actually dare to take my Princess Sis’s hand! How are you fit for Princess Sis; you’re so weak, and you’re not even as good-looking as me... I want to fight you! To take back my Princess Sis.”

Yun Che also instantly became angry... It was alright to call him weak, but this little brat had actually said that he wasn’t as handsome as him; this was completely unacceptable: “Fight? Tch! Why would I be afraid of a hairless brat like you! What do you want to compete in, come at me! Watch me educate you to the point of making you look for your teeth all over the ground!”

Once Yun Che said this, Ling Yun’s

gaze at Yun Che instantly became very... complicated. And Jasmine's voice sounded from within Yun Che's mind, clearly enjoying a feeling of schadenfreude: "Are you sure you want to compete against him? Even though this person named Ling Jie is much younger than you, his profound strength is already at the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm..."

Jasmine had only spoken half-way, and Yun Che was already extremely shocked... third level of the Spirit Profound Realm? This fifteen year old little kid's profound strength was actually at the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm! How could this be possible?

Number one on the Blue Wind

Profound Palace Inner Palace's Heavenly Profound Ranking, Fen Juechen, was only at the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm, and he was seventeen years old. The other two at the Spirit Profound Realm were both a full twenty years old. And this person, Ling Jie, in front of him who looked completely harmless, and also a little stupid and adorable... Was actually a fifteen year old at the the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm. An existence scary enough to be called a "freak".

"And that's not all! The profound art he cultivates is very overbearing, and the aura he faintly releases from his body is incomparably incisive, far surpassing the category of the third level of the Spirit

Profound Realm. This is enough to prove that, not only is he at the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm, he should be able to fight those of a higher level. If you reveal all your trump cards, you may be able to meet face-to-face for four or five strikes with difficulty after encountering an ordinary third ranker of the Spirit Profound Realm, but facing him... You're simply asking to be abused!"

-----

## Author's Note

Star Soul Sword Saint: My name is Ling Jie.

Ling Jie: What a coincidence, my name is also Ling Jie.

Star Soul Sword Saint: I also have a brother, his name is Ling Yun.

Ling Jie: What a coincidence! I also have a brother, and his name is also Ling Yun.

Star Soul Sword Saint: Bullshit! Who named you and your brother? Mars Gravity named me.

Ling Jie: Mars Gravity also named me.

Star Soul Sword Saint: ... This person who deserves to be cut by a thousand blades is actually lazy at naming! I won't accept this! I'm going to inform my boss!

Ling Jie: Oh! Who's your boss?

Star Soul Sword Saint: Listen up, my

boss is Holy Child Guo Guo's husband, has a might that shakes the kings of the six realms, is the king of the gods, and has an immortal and eternal saintly body. Do you have a boss?

Ling Jie: As of now I don't... But my future boss Yun Che will definitely unite the six realms, and he'll be even more incredible than your boss!

Star Soul Sword Saint: What! You actually dare say he's more incredible than my boss! You're looking to get beaten!

Ling Jie: Afraid of you? Take this!

Bang! Boom! Smack! Boom! Slap...

TL Note: A character from the

author's previous work.

-----

# Chapter 162: Three Strikes

Jasmine's words truly caused Yun Che to be shocked. Qin Wuyou had told him before that although the Blue Wind Profound Palace was incredibly dignified on the surface and was the dream of countless profound practitioners, those large sects had always looked down upon the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

Yun Che usually thought that these words were somewhat exaggerated because the Blue Wind Profound Palace was after all, established by the Imperial Family and was Blue Wind Empire's largest profound palace. Many could not even enter



it in their dreams and among them included a compilation of a countless number of Blue Wind Empire's younger generation's finest profound practitioners. So even if it was inferior them, it should not go so far as to make them feel contempt.

But the one before him who hailed from the Heavenly Sword Villa, was only fifteen, was obviously just an inexperienced youngster, yet his profound strength immediately surpassed every disciple within the Blue Wind Profound Palace... and even left them a few dozen blocks behind.

It was from this Ling Jie's body, that Yun Che distinctly sensed how terrifying the Heavenly Sword Villa

was for the first time, and was thus able to imagine what kind of shocking strength those equally famous sects possessed. No wonder the incredibly dignified Blue Wind Profound Palace could never enter the top one hundred. A fifteen year old youngster from the Heavenly Sword Villa had already surpassed every disciple within the Blue Wind Profound Palace; this kind of disparity could be said to be as different as heaven and earth. Even saying that the Blue Wind Profound Palace simply had no qualifications to compete with Heavenly Sword Villa was not the least bit exaggerated or excessive.

It was also no wonder that this kid had said that he was “so weak”. Turns out that in this kid’s eyes...

his profound strength could only be described as weak.

Yun Che had always challenged those of a higher rank; his opponents were always older than him and he had never been defeated before. So when he suddenly heard that this fifteen year old kid wanted to fight him, he was completely at ease and he felt like teaching him a lesson was no different than teaching his own son a lesson. Never would he have expected that this kid was genuinely a character at the level of a freak... Third level of the Spirit Profound Realm at the age of fifteen. What the meow! What's the point of fighting this!

But Yun Che had already said the

words, and he was certainly unwilling to take them back. Besides, the Ling Jie in front of him already had both hands at his waist. Seething with rage, he pointed at him and said: "Okay! You're the one who said it! Hmph, hmph! Someone who's only at the third level of the True Profound Realm actually dares to compete with me; see if I don't beat you into a pig head and make Princess Sis ignore you!"

After saying those words, Ling Jie waved his right hand, and a seven foot long sword horizontally appeared in front of him.

With sword in hand, Ling Jie's aura immediately changed tremendously. The immature aura suddenly disappeared without a

trace as his body emitted an incomparably sharp and piercing aura; it was as if his entire person had become a sharp sword and stopped following the norm; but once it does, it would pierce the skies.

The sword in his hand appeared very ordinary, but held in his hands, it gave off an incomparably harmonious feeling; as if it and him were a single entity, an undivided portion of his body.

This sword force and sword intent shocked Yun Che's heart. He was only fifteen, and he had such a sword force and sword intent; this Ling Jie's innate talent, was simply universally shocking. Perhaps, this also had something to do with his

pure heart that was completely devoid of filth.

Ling Jie pointed at Yun Che with his sword, and said complacently:

“Reveal your weapon; I want to let you know what a true powerful man is, and how only a genius like me can be fit for Princess Sis.”

“Little Jie, stop messing around!”

Ling Yun hurriedly took a step forward, and said to Yun Che: “This little brother, Little Jie acts impulsively and does whatever he wants to do; you don’t have to lower yourself to his level. This is an important place in the imperial palace and if you fight here, you are treating the imperial family with disrespect, so let’s just forget about this.”

With Ling Yun's ability, how would he not be able to identify Yun Che's profound strength. Ling Yun's words appeared to be berating Ling Jie, but Yun Che understood that Ling Yun was trying to uphold his face. The two were separated by an entire realm; if they actually started fighting, he would definitely lose devastatingly in a short while.

Regarding Ling Yun's kindness, Yun Che smiled appreciatively, and said: "What Brother Ling said is correct. However, as a man, a promise must be kept; just now I agreed to compete with Ling Jie, so I cannot take even a half step backwards."

Even though he knew he definitely wouldn't be able to defeat this Ling Jie, what was most prevalent on Yun Che's body was pride. Since he

had agreed, how would he be willing to retreat after knowing he was not as good as the other; furthermore, this situation had arisen over Lan Xueruo, and in front of the woman he must protect, how would he be willing to admit that he was inferior to another man... And this guy was even younger than him!

Ling Jie had originally been very discontent because of Ling Yun's words, but after hearing this, his eyes lit up, and promptly parroted: "Right right right right right! We're all adult males; a promise made must be kept. Quickly reveal your weapon, and let Princess Sis see which one of us is more powerful!"

Yun Che shot a glance at him, and



said lightly: “However, Brother Ling Yun did say something very true; this is an important place in the imperial palace, and not a place fit for us to cross hands. We should switch to a relatively ‘gentler’ method... Mn, how about we do this. It looks like you use a sword; coincidentally, I also use a sword. What do you think about a three strike showdown? A three strike showdown with all your strength; it’s not very troublesome, and it will definitely reveal a clear victor. Little Brother Ling Jie, do you dare?”

Just the phrase “do you dare”, directly incited Ling Jie’s haughtiness: “Hmph hmph, facing someone at the True Profound Realm who’s so weak that I can’t even see you, why wouldn’t I dare!

Three strike showdown? That's completely unnecessary! I'll beat you till you're on your knees with one strike!"

"Tch!" Yun Che curled his lip disdainfully: "Boasting but not afraid that you'll twist your tongue... so I, your brother, will have to teach you a lesson; since you incessantly claim that you're an adult, you must take responsibility for your words. You hoot that one strike will be able to beat me to the ground. But what if not only does one strike not beat me up, and all three strikes are blocked by me instead?"

Ling Jie stared wide for a moment, then started laughing wildly: "Hahahaha, how could that be

possible! You're so weak; if I can't beat you down in one strike, my name will be read backwards! And if you block all three of my strikes, my... m-m-m-my name won't be Ling Jie."

The corner of Yun Che's mouth stretched, and he said with a disdainful expression: "Hmph, there really isn't any importance to it. Little Ling Jie, do you dare to make a bet with me? If you strike three times, and I am unable to receive it, then I will not obstruct you at all if your Princess Sis agrees to marry you. If I completely block all three of your strikes, hmm... You must be my little brother. Not only will you have to call me Boss, you must also listen to all the commands from your Boss! What do you think? Do

you dare! If you dare, let us compete. If you're only a boastful person with no guts, tsk tsk, then let's just forget about this; I'm too lazy to compete with you anyway."

This results of a win or loss from this "bet" were obviously not equivalent; if Ling Jie lost, he would have to become Yun Che's little brother, but if Yun Che lost... If one thought even a little about the pleasant thoughts going through Ling Jie's mind, one would realize that they were simply empty words. And Yun Che's final few words goaded him to the extreme. But to Ling Jie, who rarely left the Heavenly Sword Villa, it was incomparably effective. Without thinking, he agreed: "What don't I dare to do! If I lose to you, being

your son wouldn't be a problem, let alone being your little brother."

"Cough cough..." Ling Yun was a little perturbed now. He walked next to Yun Che, and used a voice that only he could hear: "Little brother, you might be unaware of this situation to some extent. Even though Little Jie is young, his profound strength is at the Spirit Profound Realm. This battle, is not very fair for you, so... Please be cautious and reconsider."

"I thank Brother Ling for the warning." Yun Che smiled appreciatively at him.

His ordinary response shocked Ling Yun slightly. This response signified that Yun Che obviously already

knew Ling Jie's level of profound strength, but still wanted to make this kind of gamble with him. Ling Yun's eyebrows moved a little, and he didn't speak anymore.

“Let's begin.”

Yun Che stood in front of Ling Jie. Just as he spoke, the Overlord's Colossal Sword appeared out of thin air. Both his hands grasped the hilt, and the sword body sunk downwards, slamming on the floor with a “boom”. The surrounding ground up to three steps from the collision instantly shattered.

At the same time, an aura as heavy as a mountain emitted from the Overlord's Colossal Sword and Yun Che's body, flooding the entire Blue

Cloud Hall as everyone's breathing became sluggish.

“Heavy sword!?” Ling Yun was shocked as Yun Che flashed the weapon, and taking in account Yun Che's age and profound strength, he suddenly spoke out: “Could it be, you're the Profound Palace genius Yun Che that everyone in the imperial city has been talking about?”

“That's right.” Yun Che nodded: “I'm Yun Che. Brother Ling Yun actually knows my name, I'm extremely honored.”

“Haha, Little Brother Yun, you're being too modest.” Ling Yun smiled warmly: “After Little Jie and I arrived at the imperial city,

everywhere we went, we heard people discussing you. We heard that you can control a heavy sword that weighs several thousand kilograms, and can defeat an opponent that is seven levels higher than you; it really makes one feel shocked, and we wanted to find an opportunity to personally meet you the entire time. I'd have never that I would encounter Little Brother Yun here, it's truly fortunate."

"Oooh, so it turns out you're Yun Che!" This Ling Jie had obviously heard some rumors regarding Yun Che in the imperial city with Ling Yun. He disdainfully twisted his mouth: "You're only at the True Profound Realm, yet others are actually calling you a genius. Isn't it a bit too cheap to call you a



genius... This young master will immediately let you know what it means to be a true genius... Take this!"

Ling Jie gave a low growl, took a step forward, raised the longsword, and cut downwards... This was an extremely simple strike; even a little kid that only knows how to wave a sword would be able to execute it. But even this type of extremely simple movement, brought about an astonishing sword force when Ling Jie cut downwards. The plain undecorated sword trembled with an unimaginably high frequency, and an unceasingly surging enormous power crashed towards Yun Che's chest.

Yun Che proposing to strike against

each other three times, was clearly trying to use the advantages of the heavy sword against the shortcomings of the light sword. Because if it was a showdown, under the same conditions, the light sword would not be able to compete with the heavy sword at all. In addition, the Great Way of the Buddha bestowed one thousand nine hundred fifty kilograms of strength to the user; in this form of competition, even if he were facing against someone an entire realm above him, he should be able to withstand three strikes at the very least.

But when an astonishing sword force charged over, Yun Che's expression changed a little.

Ling Jie was very young, a little competitive, and didn't scheme much... He practically didn't scheme at all, so it was very easy to guess at his thoughts. Yun Che could predict that his first strike wouldn't be too serious, at most fifty or sixty percent of his strength, so he would definitely hold back on his first strike too; he wouldn't use any profound techniques, and only around seventy percent of his strength.

Indeed, Ling Jie's first strike didn't contain any power, and judging from his appearance, he probably hadn't even used forty percent of his power, let alone fifty or sixty percent. But the force of that one casual strike was like a rolling wave and was impossible to resist.

“Haah!!”

Yun Che, who had originally planned on using seventy percent of his strength, suddenly, did not dare to hold back even a little. With a low growl, he opened Evil Soul and the profound strength in his body began to revolve. Brandishing the heavy sword, he struck out with one hundred percent of his strength. As the heavy sword traveled, it brought about a whistling sound akin to a hurricane.

Bang!!!!

The heavy sword and the light sword collided without even a trace of flair, and the power of the enormous heavy sword and surging sword force instantly exploded

outwards. A storm of profound energy instantly formed between the two, then simultaneously blew both of them outwards.

Ling Jie took a few steps back, and looked at Yun Che with an expression of shock: “Ah? You actually... You actually blocked it? Oh... You appear to be a bit more powerful than I’d expected. It looks like I’ll have to be a bit more serious now.”

Yun Che had been blown back almost ten meters. His expression was tranquil, but raging waves tossed about in his heart... What Jasmine had said was correct. This brat was definitely not a simple third ranker of the Spirit Profound Realm; although he was young, his

attainment of the sword could already be regarded as that of a great master! He would definitely be able to easily fight those several levels above him.

To receive three strikes with a profound strength an entire realm lower than him, even with the advantage of a heavy sword, was going to be incomparably difficult.

# Chapter 163: Sky Wolf Slash

The enormous sound from the great hall naturally alarmed the imperial guards outside. Hurried footsteps sounded, and several tens of silver-armored guards entered in single file, and said with faces full of worry: "Princess, are you alright?"

"I'm fine, all of you can leave." Lan Xueruo said as she cast a sidelong glance.

"But..." The head guard looked at the shattered ground, as well as Yun Che and Ling Jie, who were both grasping weapons, and revealed a deeply alert expression.

“LEAVE!” Lan Xueruo’s voice suddenly became more imposing: “Without my order, no matter how great the commotion is later, you may not enter.”

“Yes!” The head guard hurriedly bowed his head, and brought his men out.

“As expected of the rumoured heavy sword that weighs one thousand nine hundred fifty kilograms, no matter its strength or imposing aura, they’re both eye-opening.” Ling Yun praised sincerely. Ling Jie’s early strike looked extremely simple and ordinary, but he was fully aware of the amount of sword force and resolve brought about by that one strike. For someone at the third



level of the True Profound Realm to block that attack, could basically be called a miracle.

“Hmph, he’s indeed a little bit stronger than I imagined him to be... But, it’s only a little.” Ling Jie turned up his nose, and his face had a look of disdain. “For that earlier strike, I simply did a casual wave of my sword. As for my next strike, you will definitely~~ definitely~~ definitely~ not be able to block it!”

While saying that, he pointed his sword to the sky with a single hand. Rays of sword force rose from the sword and charged towards the sky. The phenomenon of the accumulated sword force stirring in the air was visible to the naked eye, as it emitted out rounds and rounds

of shocking ripples.

The moment Ling Jie moved his sword, the stirring sword force above the tip of his sword suddenly erupted, instantly giving rise to tens of thousands of sword silhouettes which constantly crossed and overlapped to form a heavy sword wave. As though as a tidal wave brought about by a hurricane, it went crashing towards Yun Che. That incomparably terrifying sword force seemed as though as it was about to completely envelop heaven and earth within it.

“Heaven’s Might Sword Formation: Elegant Upheaval!”

“Junior Yun, watch out!” When Ling Jie unleashed this attack, Ling Yun

momentarily frowned, and seemed to have given the warning subconsciously. Ling Jie was currently at the age when he sought to prevail over others. When his first strike was completely blocked, and had even happened right in front of “Princess Sis”, his pride evidently suffered a blow. Ling Yun had predicted that Ling Jie would get serious during his second strike, but he did not expect that he would immediately use the Heaven’s Might Sword Formation. When using any one form of the Heaven’s Might Sword Formation, a practitioner of the same profound level would already find it hard to take it head on, let alone Yun Che who was only at the True Profound Realm.

A large amount of sword silhouettes spread across the sky and covered the earth as they overlapped one another. Yun Che felt as if he was drawn into a hell of swords and blades, and no matter which direction he moved towards, he would be instantly sucked in the hurricane of death. Thus, he simply ignored the sword silhouettes that filled the entire sky as he explosively swung the heavy sword in his hands.

“Falling... Moon... Sinking... Star!!”

As the heavy sword was swung, it brought about a destructive sword force, and directly colliding with the heavy sword wave.

Boom!!

As if a monstrous wave crashing onto a boulder which had lasted for a millennium, a deafening roar was released, causing the surrounding floor tiles within ten steps away from Yun Che and Ling Yun to instantly scatter. Instantly, as though a crumbling snowflake, the countless glaring sword silhouettes dispersed within a blinding light. After breaking through the first wave of sword silhouettes, like a hot knife through butter, the Overlord's Colossal Sword, strengthened by "Falling Moon Sinking Star", wildly pushed forward, causing the remaining sword silhouettes to shatter, and then, it collided plainly with Ling Jie's light sword.

"Wh... What!" Ling Jie and Ling Yun were simultaneously shocked; the

third form of the Heaven's Might Sword Formation, "Elegant Upheaval", was actually directly split by Yun Che's single strike!

"Falling Moon Sinking Star", being the first form of the Evil God's seven forms, was an incomparably simple profound technique.

Without any fancy or magnificent profound technique effects, or any complicated operating methods, its power came from suddenly compressing the profound energy in one's body, and bursting it outwards with ten times the usual power. It was extremely compatible with the "berserking" property of the Evil God's Secret Arts — It was simply explosive power.

After the Overlord's Colossal Sword

slashed apart the heavy sword wave, its strength had basically reached its limit as well. When it was struck against Ling Jie's sword, the strength behind the blow was nearly exhausted, but the momentum brought about by merely its weight of one thousand nine hundred fifty kilos was no small matter. Ling Jie was pushed back by seven to eight steps from the impact, and he nearly fell flat on his butt.

He stood there blankly and looked at Yun Che with widened eyes, as if he was looking at a monster.

"Unbelievable." Ling Yun muttered softly to himself. "Looks like the rumor of him obtaining victory over an opponent seven levels higher

than him was not the least bit exaggerated at all. With a difference of an entire realm, he actually really took it head-on... If he was at the same level, that strike of his would have been a complete oppression!"

For this strike, Yun Che used all of his strength, and did not hold back even a little. Although his current profound strength was not like before, where one usage of "Falling Moon Sinking Star" would basically exhaust all of his profound energy, it still consumed quite a bit of profound energy, for the energy and blood within his entire body suddenly began to churn. He used seven or eight breaths of time to suppress the churning energy and blood in his body, adjusted it to a sufficient condition, and watched



Ling Jie calmly.

“So... You were actually this amazing!” This time, Ling Jie was truly a little dumbfounded. Because in that earlier strike, not only did he use seventy percent of his profound strength, he even used the Heaven’s Might Sword Formation. He did not expect him to actually block that as well... He was even pushed back from the impact, losing in that exchange of blows.

If the opponent was the same level as him, or had a profound strength one or two levels below him at the Spirit Profound Realm, he would be able to accept it. But not only was the opponent in the True Profound Realm, he had only just entered the True Profound Realm!

This feeling was like a fierce tiger pouncing on a little cat, only to find himself unexpectedly struck away by the little cat.

“Now then, unleash your final strike. If I’m able to block this third strike as well, it will be your loss. You had best not forget that you will have to call me boss if you lose!” Yun Che steadied his body’s aura, and said with his eyes narrowed.

“Lose? I’ll lose?” With a whip of the longsword in Ling Jie’s hand, the shocked expression on his face gradually receded, replaced with the same disdainful expression from before: “I was afraid your loss would be too devastating, so I basically didn’t use any strength at

all for the last two strikes. Let's see how you'll block this strike!"

While saying that, the sword in Ling Jie's hand suddenly pointed forward; the profound energy in his entire body erupted like an open floodgate as his profound energy poured into the sword in his hand. The long sword began to tremble tremendously, and a ring of airstream suddenly swirled around the blade. Right after, this surge of sword energy actually condensed and wrapped around the sword's blade, causing the entire sword to look two times thicker than before.

The surrounding air suddenly surged, and Yun Che felt an incomparably overbearing aura charge over, causing chills all over

his body. The longsword held in Ling Jie's hands made him clearly feel as if it was already lying on his neck, and it would directly sever his throat in the next second, claiming his life.

Faintly discernible ripples of air could be seen around Ling Jie. But the most shocking thing was, the ripples in the air were not like water ripples with nonuniform lines, but perfectly straight lines, just like numerous transparent sharp swords that appeared out of thin air.

What a strong sword force... The astonishment in Yun Che's heart began to increase bit by bit. According to Jasmine's description, he had already overestimated this

fifteen-year-old youngster's achievements with the sword as much as possible. However, when he felt this astonishing surge of sword force, he realized he had still underestimated this youngster who came from the Heavenly Sword Villa.

Ling Yun's eyebrows furrowed after seeing Ling Jie's actions. Once he realized what Ling Jie was trying to do, his gaze forcefully shook, and he said with a low voice: "Little Jie! What are you doing! Quickly stay your hand; are you trying to kill him!!"

"Hey, Big Bro, I'm not as useless as you think I am. I have already practiced this move to the point where I can freely wield it. When

this move is about to take his life, I will naturally retract it.” Ling Jie laughed, and then turned his gaze towards Yun Che. “Hmph, since you dare provoke the dignity of I, Young Master Ling Jie, then I will let you thoroughly experience how formidable I am...”

“Try to receive this strike...  
Heaven’s Might Sword Formation  
— Sun Piercer!”

The sword in Ling Jie’s hands was entirely coated with an intense sword aura and appeared to be around the same size as the heavy sword in Yun Che’s hands.

He bellowed loudly and suddenly whipped the longsword outwards, bringing along the inexhaustible

sword aura and directly pierced at Yun Che's chest.

The surrounding air swirled wildly. Yun Che's hair and clothes were substantially lifted by the incoming wave of strongly blowing wind. At the place where the tip of the sword stopped at, a thin pitch-black spatial fracture momentarily flashed.

This time, there were no longer tens of thousands of sword silhouettes, but a single sword! It was a definite killing blow which gathered all of Ling Jie's sword intent.

Yun Che's body suddenly retreated and raised his heavy sword once more. The profound energy in his entire body was stirred instantly,

gathered at the heavy sword in his two hands, and yet another unreserved “Falling Moon Sinking Star” struck towards Ling Jie’s definite killing blow.

Boom!!

The Overlord’s Colossal Sword collided against Ling Jie’s light sword for the third time. However, this time, the moment they collided, Yun Che felt as if a mountain with an unsurmountable height was ruthlessly smashing onto his heavy sword.

In an instant, the Overlord’s Colossal Sword which had a thickness of four inches, bent into a shape of a waning moon under this horrifying strength.



To bend a one thousand nine hundred fifty kilo heavy sword in an instant, just how much horrifying strength was needed to do so? Yun Che's entire body and arms trembled greatly; if he had not comprehended the fundamental stage of the Prison God Sirius' Tome and had strong control over heavy swords, his Overlord's Colossal Sword would have already flown out from his hands.

Even so, the power behind Ling Jie's sword still did not diminish; bringing a terrifying sword force, it continued to push forward, causing Yun Che to be forcefully pushed back towards the palace doors.

Yun Che's pupils slightly contracted. The bend in his heavy

sword was becoming wider and wider, and gradually approached the shape of a crescent. His entire body was rapidly pushed back by the strong attacking force; his two feet formed two long gullies in the firm ground, and his body was being damaged from continuously taking the assault of sword force head on.

“Little Jie, withdraw your sword right now!” Ling Yun immediately shouted out. He was very clear of the strength the move “Sun Piercer” possessed. If Ling Jie did not pull the attack back now, Yun Che’s heavy sword being destroyed was only secondary, as Yun Che himself would definitely receive heavy injuries, and might even lose his life.

“I know!” Ling Jie’s arm had always been stretched out in front of him. Although the sword had left his grasp, he had not lost control of the sword. Seeing Yun Che, who was about to be pushed out of the palace, he laughed complacently. “Hehe, now do you know of how formidable I, Ling Jie am!? You’re still far from being able to go against me.”

Ling Jie said arrogantly, and when he was about to retrieve his sword, a deafening roar rang in his ears.

“Huuuaaaaaaaaaah!!”

Within the roar, Yun Che’s Star God’s Broken Shadow activated and he instantly took ten steps back. Without taking a breather, he

gritted his teeth as his gaze became fierce. The Overlord's Colossal Sword was instantly raised up into the air, as it then came crashing down towards the incoming "Sun Piercer".

"Sky... Wolf... Slash!"

Within Yun Che's explosive roar, a majestic aura similar to a roaring sea was released from the tip of the Overlord's Colossal Sword.

Instantly, the surrounding space frantically surged as the air was tyrannically split open. In the short moment when the heavy sword slashed downwards, an illusion of a blue wolf roaring towards the sky flashed for an instant behind Yun Che.

Boom!!!!

The heavy sword, which was brimming with Prison God Sirius' might, collided fiercely with Ling Jie's definite killing blow. A windstorm of energy suddenly erupted and soared towards the sky, instantly pulverizing the floor tiles and roof tiles of the main hall. Even the space, looked as if it had been torn apart.

# Chapter 164:

## Ranking

## Tournament

## Invitation Letter

The ground had shattered, the roof of the hall had caved in, and the rocks and sand that had been strewn about completely surrounded the area Yun Che was in, making it impossible to see anything clearly.

“Ah?” At this time, Ling Jie exclaimed in shock, because he suddenly discovered that his connection with his sword had suddenly vanished. At the same

time, within the sandstorm, a silver longsword spun out, drawing a long arc in the air, and finally landed in front of Ling Jie. The instant it landed on the ground, an ear-piercing “ding” sound suddenly rang out. The originally intact longsword suddenly shattered like fragile glass, scattering fragments all over the ground.

Ling Jie’s entire person stood in stupor while looking at the fragments of the longsword beside his feet, and didn’t recover from his shock for quite a while.

The sandstorm in the hall finally began to die down. Yun Che, dragging the heavy sword, began walking over with slow steps. His complexion was particularly

tranquil, and it was completely impossible to see any traces of his complete exertion of his strength just then.

“Little brother Ling Jie, your third strike... I have also blocked it. You... have... lost.” Yun Che stood in front of Ling Jie, and said slowly. Blocking the third strike had been extremely breathtaking, and also had some suspicions of cheating. Because he had used two strikes in succession, a Falling Moon Sinking Star and Sky Wolf Slash, to doggedly shake off Ling Jie’s single strike. But Ling Jie had been hooting about blocking his three strikes the entire time; he didn’t actually say how many strikes he could use to do so.

Ling Jie looked at Yun Che, then



looked at the shattered sword on the ground, and said sounding somewhat baffled: "I actually lost... You even received my Sun Piercer... and destroyed my sword..."

"There are many in the Villa that can face this strike head-on, but their profound strengths are all way higher than me, and they are all older than me, so being able to receive it is not very extraordinary. You're clearly in the True Profound Realm, yet you were actually able to receive it..." Speaking to here, a strange glint lit up in Ling Jie's eyes, and he looked at Yun Che with fixed eyes: "You're simply too powerful! You're this strong at the True Profound Realm; if you reach the Spirit Profound Realm, I definitely won't be fit to be your

opponent. No wonder such a beautiful Princess Sis has taken a fancy to you, you seem to match Princess Sis well.”

Yun Che twisted his mouth, and said: “Saying all this is useless. You couldn’t have forgotten what you have to do since you lost, right? Being a real grown man, you have to take responsibility for your words! Otherwise, it’s not fit to call you a man.”

“Hmph!” Ling Jie stuck his nose up, and said without any affectation: “The words that I, Ling Jie, have spoken, I obviously won’t take them back. Isn’t it just recognizing you as my boss, what’s the big deal.”

After finishing, he sincerely took a

step forward, and said with a mischievous smile: "Cough cough, I, Ling Jie, admit that I have lost the bet; from now on, I'll be your little brother. Mn, Boss, how did you become so powerful at the True Profound Realm? As my boss, you must not be stingy to your little brother; in this aspect, you definitely must give little brother a few pointers! If I can be like you, I might be able to challenge my brother right now! I won't have to be beaten till I have a bloody nose and swollen face anymore."

For Ling Jie to admit it so cleanly and nimbly, Yun Che was actually a little shocked. And judging from his appearance, he wasn't acting artificially or reluctantly; his eyes actually had a curiousity...

Worshipful gaze!

Evidently, for someone at the True Profound Realm to have withstood his trump card and shatter his sword, he had truly been shocked mentally.

Yun Che said while chuckling: “Ah, this; we’ll have to see whether you’re qualified or not. If you’re qualified, and you please this boss, I may be able to tell you.”

Ling Jie’s eyes lit brightly in a flash, and exclaimed with emotion: “For real? Waaaaaaah, if you’re actually able to tell me, don’t mention me being your little brother, I’ll even pay respect to you as my teacher!”

Ling Yun walked over, smiled lightly

at Yun Che, then said sincerely:  
“Brother Yun, when we first entered the imperial city, we heard rumors about you everywhere. At the time, we didn’t believe the rumors ourselves but now that I have personally witnessed it, I know that you have completely surpassed the rumors; I believe that Little Jie is cheerful and committed to his loss.”

After he finished speaking, Ling Yun looked at Yun Che meaningfully for a moment, then turned to Lan Xuero and said:  
“Princess, us brothers came to the imperial city this time to deliver this invitation to the noble imperial family; may Princess please accept it.”

A light golden-colored invitation

was taken out by Ling Yun and delivered to Lan Xueruo's hands. Ling Yun proceeded, and said: "In half a year, we will welcome the noble imperial family's visit to the Heavenly Sword Villa. If Princess can do me the honor of visiting personally, that would be too great. This time, Princess has this kind of shocking genius, Yun Che, by your side, so I believe that three years from now, the noble imperial family will definitely be able to shine with Yun Che... So with that, us two brothers' mission has been accomplished; we'll take our leave now."

He gave a salute towards Lan Xueruo and Yun Che. Without waiting for Lan Xueruo's response, Ling Yun dragged Ling Jie away:

“Little Jie, we should leave.”

“Ah? Leave? But I still haven’t learned how boss became so powerful at the True Profound Realm... Ahhh!”

Ling Jie was unable to finish speaking before he was brought far away by Ling Yun with a strange profound movement skill. In the next second, Ling Jie’s voice transmitted far away from the Great Hall: “Boss, if you have spare time you must visit the Heavenly Sword Villa... I want those guys to know what a true True Profound Realm genius is, a True Profound ranker who’s capable of beating them... Ahhh, Big Bro, you don’t have to pull me...”

Ling Yun took out the invitation, and directly brought Ling Jie away after speaking; the speed in which the whole ordeal was completed was so fast Lan Xueruo was caught unprepared, and she hadn't even been able to bid farewell. She looked towards the direction of the hall's entrance and said in shock: "Ling Yun's temperament is very calm and amiable, why would he suddenly leave in such a rush; could it be that some emergency has occurred?"

Just as she finished speaking, Yun Che, who was standing beside her, suddenly shook, then fell on his knees while supporting himself with the heavy sword. His face was pale, and he forcefully spat out a mouthful of blood, staining the



ground in front of him red.

“Ah! Junior brother Yun!” Lan Xueruo’s complexion paled. She hurriedly helped Yun Che up, and said anxiously: “Junior brother Yun, how are you? Are you injured? Is the injury serious?”

Yun Che rested most of his weight on the heavy sword, shook his head, then smiled with a pale face: “Don’t worry, Senior Sister, I’m fine. This Ling Jie’s sword... is incredibly overbearing. Even though I forcefully blocked it just now, I still suffered some internal injuries. The reason Ling Yun left in such a rush... was because he noticed that I was forcefully suppressing my injuries; I guess it was to allow me to save face.”

Lan Xueruo hurriedly took out a middle-grade Heaven Returning Pellet. Watching Yun Che consume it, she was finally able to let loose a sigh of relief after seeing Yun Che's expression gradually become warm: "I knew that since Junior Brother Yun dared to bet with Ling Jie, you would definitely have enough control, but I was almost worried to death just then. Even though that Ling Jie looks very young, those who hail from the Heavenly Sword Villa are all a bit abnormal. Their power definitely cannot be calculated with common sense. However, it's good that you won, and actually had him become your little brother."

The Great Way of the Buddha operated, allowing Yun Che's injuries to heal at an astonishing

rate. Listening to Lan Xueruo's words, he shook his head and said: "This is only because I saw that Ling Jie's temperament was pure and immature, so I just devised a plan at the time. Even though he agreed, there is no binding contract that can be brought up. I had only hoped that I might be able to convenience myself in the future somehow because of him; after all, he is the son of the Heavenly Sword Villa's Villa Master."

"Right, the invitation Ling Yun delivered... Could it be?"

Lan Xueruo took out the invitation: "Father's prediction was correct; it's an invitation letter for the next Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. Every invitation letter is delivered half a

year prior, so as to allow the powers of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament time to prepare.”

“So you’re saying, there is still half a year of time from now to the next Blue Wind Ranking Tournament?” Yun Che exclaimed.

“Mn.” Lan Xuero nodded: “Indeed, there is only half a year’s time remaining. However, Junior Brother Yun, you don’t have to worry, because you don’t actually have to participate in the coming Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, but the one after that.”

“The one after that? Why?” Yun Che’s eyebrows twitched. Then he thought of how Ling Yun had said right before he left, “I believe that

in three years' time, the noble imperial family will be able to shine with Yun Che"... Three years later? Could it be that what Ling Yun had pointed out, was also the next Blue Wind Ranking Tournament?

Lan Xueruo explained: "The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament is held once every three years; it is the competition that decides the ranking of the powers within the Blue Wind Empire. But those who enter the competition are not necessarily the most powerful members of the powers, because no matter which power it is, especially the enormous powers, they will definitely not reveal their own trump cards to others. So the competition between "the most powerful people" is simply not the

reality, and is actually just a competition for those of the younger generation to determine their ranking. Because the strength of those of the younger generation is sufficient to display concrete and comprehensive information about the strength of the powers; the ranking is more or less fair.”

“Every Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, there are around five hundred powers that receive invitations, and every power can have at most three young disciples participate; their ranking is decided by the disciple with the highest ranking in the tournament. The age of the disciples that participate in the tournament, range from sixteen years to twenty years. Those who are younger than sixteen or older

than twenty may not participate, and they test age through bones prior to the tournament so there is no way to cheat. So, in order to guarantee the maximum fighting power, the age of most disciples who participate is usually twenty, nineteen, or eighteen, and very few people under the age of seventeen participate. Junior Brother Yun has just turned seventeen and your starting point is low, so you're simply not fit to participate in the coming Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. But come next tournament, Junior Brother Yun will be a full twenty years old, and with the accumulation of three years' time, it would be the best opportunity to participate in the tournament."

“So that’s how it is.” Yun Che slowly nodded, stood silent for a while, then suddenly asked: “Senior Sister, how high was the profound strength of the person who ranked first in the last Blue Wind Ranking Tournament?”

Lan Xueruo didn’t need to think about this, and directly said: “The one who ranked first in the last Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, was the Ling Yun that you just met.”

“It was him?” Yun Che mumbled.

“Junior Brother Yun, what do you think about this Ling Yun... how is he?” Lan Xueruo asked.

Yun Che thought for a bit, then said



slowly: “Ling Jie’s talent is extremely shocking, and can even be regarded as freakish, but I still have the guts to clash with three of his strikes. However, the feeling Ling Yun gives me is deep and unmeasurable. Even his temperament is pure and without filth, making it so that people cannot bear ill will towards him. Overall, you can say that he’s... flawless.”

“Your evaluation is very similar to my father’s.” Lan Xueruo sighed emotionally, and said: “That year, when Father met Ling Yun for the first time he gave him a ‘flawless’ evaluation. If nothing unexpected happens, he will still participate in the coming Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.”

“Oh.” Yun answered. Subsequently, his eyebrows moved as he said in shock: “You said... He’ll participate in this one? So you’re saying, his current age isn’t even twenty yet? So for this tournament, he is only...”

“That’s right. When he claimed the first place title of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, he was only seventeen years old,” Lan Xueruo said: “At the time, his profound strength was at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm.”

Seventeen year old at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm... Yun Che drew a breath of cold air.

“Admittedly, a seventeen year old at the Spirit Profound Realm is extremely shocking, but Ling Yun’s

actual strength far surpasses the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. In the finals, his opponent was the number one disciple of the Frozen Cloud Asgard, Mu Lingxue. At the time, Mu Lingxue was a full twenty years old, and her profound strength was at the peak of the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. She was only half a step away from the Earth Profound Realm and was the disciple with the highest profound strength at the time. But under Ling Yun's hands... She was only able to withstand seven of Ling Yun's strikes... And it was also in the state where Ling Yun hadn't used his full strength."

Yun Che: "..."

"Three years have passed, so Ling

Yun's profound strength must have reached even more shocking heights. For those under the age of twenty, he is the undisputed number one in the entire Blue Wind Empire; no one will deny this fact. In the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, all sorts of sects have competed intensely for a good ranking, especially Frozen Cloud Asgard, Xiao Sect, and the Burning Heaven Clan; they have fought tooth and claw for the second place ranking, yet they have never even considered taking the first place ranking from Heavenly Sword Villa. Because the first place ranking of the Heavenly Sword Villa, is something that will never be moved; among all the disciples in all the sects, there is simply no young disciple who is fit to be Ling

Yun's opponent."

# Chapter 165:

## Reverse Kill!

The world was large. The more people one meets, the more places one visits, and the more likely one would feel how small they really are. From Floating Cloud City, to New Moon City, to Blue Wind Imperial City, and to the Heavenly Sword Villa; the concept of genius had been redefined time and time again in Yun Che's mind. Today, without any preparation, he came into contact with the real number one individual of Blue Wind Empire's younger generation. He was cultured, refined, and possessed neither arrogance nor flaw.

If such a man were to become an enemy, without a doubt, he would be much more frightening than those who were haughty and domineering.

Yun Che spent the entire afternoon tending to his injuries, and the sky had already darkened by the time he left the Imperial Palace. Because of the dreadful parasite affecting Cang Wanhe, Lan Xuero was immensely worried. Thus, Yun Che did not allow her to see him out, and he left the Imperial Palace by himself as he headed towards the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

In the late night, there were already not many pedestrians on the imperial city streets. The internal injury Yun Che had received from

Ling Jie's attack was not light, and even though he possessed the Great Way of the Buddha, it was not an injury that could heal completely in a single afternoon. Hence, he did not use his profound energy, but took his time walking instead. When he was halfway to his destination, he suddenly made a turn, and walked leisurely towards the east.

Yun Che only stopped when he arrived at an open field where there were no signs of people in the surrounding area. He stared ahead, and said lightly, "Come out."

After he said that, his immediate surroundings were dead silent. Only after a long while did he hear a cold snort behind him. Accompanying it,



were the clear sounds of footsteps.

Yun Che turned and saw a youth dressed entirely in black. He did not have a tall figure, and looked to be around the age of twenty. His eyes were hazy, and the way he was looking at Yun Che was somber, as if he was looking at a corpse.

The aura of profound energy emitted from his body was very rich, and it greatly surpassed Yun Che's... It even surpassed Murong Yi's, who was at the ninth level of the True Profound Realm!

Yun Che's face did not show any hint of fear. Arms crossed, he laughed coldly, "There's still one more of you, isn't there? Reveal yourself as well. What, you don't

even have the guts to reveal yourself here after tailing me for so long?”

“Hahahaha!” The moment Yun Che finished his sentence, crazed laughter resounded in the air. Right after, a youth dressed in white slowly walked out from behind a tree. That particular youth was Feng Baiyi.

“Yun Che, I was still having trouble earlier about finding a place to kill you without leaving any trace. I didn’t expect you would actually find such a fine grave for yourself. Should I call you an idiot, or a fool?”

“Grave?” Yun Che smiled faintly as he looked at Feng Baiyi and the black youth. “That’s right, this is

indeed a fine place for a grave. But I did not find it for myself, rather, it's for the both of you."

Feng Baiyi's expression sank, and he laughed coldly, "Death is at hand, yet you still dare to utter such boastful words. Well, so be it. There's no need to say anything more to a dead person anyway; Xuelang, kill him!"

Xuelang? When Yun Che heard this name, he recalled it instantly... It was a name listed in the Inner Palace's Heavenly Profound Ranking, and that person was ranked seventh! The profound strength he possessed was at the peak of the tenth level of the True Profound Realm.

The moment Feng Baiyi gave the instruction, a thin sword covered entirely in red appeared in Xuelang's hand as his figure shot out explosively. Under the night sky, a faint black shadow swept through the field. His red blade sliced through the night like a poisonous snake, and thrustled towards Yun Che's throat.

Xuelang's attacks were clean and crisp; his movements and the speed of his sword were extremely quick, as though it was a stream of light!

Killing intent flashed through Yun Che's eyes. With Star God's Broken Shadow activated, he pushed his body into the air, causing Xuelang's lightning-speed attack to hit the air. While in the air, Yun Che's body

stiffened, and a piercing pain arose from his chest.

When he used his profound energy, it momentarily agitated his internal injury, which had yet to heal completely.

I have to end this battle quickly... Yun Che held onto his chest for a bit. With a wave of his hands, the Overlord's Colossal Sword appeared in his hands within a fleeting flash of dark light and crimson red phoenix flames suddenly began to envelop his body as well.

The moment he realized his attack had missed, Xuelang changed direction with lightning speed. Lifting his red sword, he thrust

towards Yun Che, who was descending from the skies.

“Die... Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!”

Cold flames flashed through Yun Che’s eyes. The phoenix flames around his body soared and a pair of phoenix fiery wings appeared on his back, bringing about a frightful heat wave, as Yun Che dove towards Xuelang.

Xuelang specialized in speed, be it his movements or the speed of his sword, they were both as fast as a stream of light. But right in front of him, Yun Che, who was initially still about a dozen meters away from him, had suddenly appeared right before him. The frightening speed

he displayed was akin to that of a falling meteor. He was completely unable to react in time, and what's more, was that the impact which struck him head on, was terrifying enough to cause him to pale in fright.

In the next moment, only an explosion could be heard. A large fireball exploded between Yun Che and Xuelang, instantly dispersing the afterimage of the slashing red sword. Even his red sword broke into three pieces, as if it was scrap metal. The momentum of Yun Che's heavy sword did not decrease as it ruthlessly smashed onto Xuelang's waist.

Bang!!!

Xuelang's protective profound energy, under the combined might of the heavy sword and the energy of the phoenix flames, broke apart like a piece of scrap paper. As he screamed, his ribs and vertebrae were smashed into pieces, and his entire person flew like a broken sack. The large pool of blood and internal organs which scattered through the night sky separated into two portions, falling onto the ground in front of Feng Baiyi one after another.

“Wha... What!?”

Feng Baiyi took two step back. Looking at the broken corpse on the ground, he lost his initial prideful sneer; it was replaced by an aghast expression.



When Murong Yi lost to Yun Che, Feng Baiyi firmly believed that it was because of Murong Yi's complacency and underestimation of his enemy. He even gave Murong Yi a well-ordered analysis on the reasons for his failure. He was even more confident that, if he were to exchange blows with Yun Che, he would be able to kill him within ten moves... And as for the reason why he brought Xuelang along, it was mainly because he did not wish to do the deed himself and leave any form of evidence. At the same time, it was to provide another level of guarantee to Yun Che's death.

In today's assassination, he had thought of many possible situations, which even included Yun Che escaping by unique tricks and

means. But what he did not think of, was that Xuelang, who was a level stronger than Murong Yi, would actually be horrendously killed by Yun Che with a single blow!

“Feng Baiyi, it’s your turn!” Yun Che said coldly. With his sword pointed at Feng Baiyi, he slowly walked towards him. Earlier, when he activated the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing, his internal injury worsened slightly, and he was currently in unbearable pain.

However, his face was still as calm as ever... Even though his internal injury had worsened, it was still enough for him to kill Feng Baiyi!

“Yun Che, you think... you’re capable of killing me!?” Although

Feng Baiyi was still as arrogant as before, his face evidently paled, and his voice began to tremble.

Xuelang's rank in the Heavenly Profound Ranking was nearly thirty ranks higher than his, but he was still dismembered by Yun Che with a single blow. How could he not feel afraid?

Watching Yun Che approach him slowly, Feng Bai suddenly roared. He grabbed onto a green colored longspear with both hands, and a raging windstorm swirled around the spear as he swept it towards Yun Che's neck.

“Blue Dragon Stirring Sea!”

Like Murong Yi, Feng Baiyi also trained in the “Blue Dragon Spear

Art". Back then, when Yun Che exchanged blows with Murong Yi, Yun Che had suffered a small injury from this very same attack.

Facing this spear attack which was even stronger than Murong Yi's, Yun Che smiled coldly. Back then, the reason why he had suffered an injury from this attack, was mainly because Murong Yi had done a sneak attack, and Yun Che did not have a weapon to block it. But currently, with his heavy sword in hand, how could an attack of this level trouble him?

"Scram!"

Without even caring about Feng Baiyi's attack, without even using any profound skills, Yun Che

continued to walk towards him, as he swung his sword across. This overly simple horizontal slash of his sword brought about a powerful windstorm which was much stronger than Feng Baiyi's "Blue Dragon Stirring Sea". With a "bang", Feng Baiyi's windstorm attack brutally dispersed.

Feng Baiyi was taken aback... That moment Yun Che swung his sword, he finally, fully understood the terror that was known as Yun Che. At the same time, he understood why Murong Yi and Xuelang could suffer such miserable defeats under his heavy sword. This was because the wave of air brought about by a swing of his sword was as strong as a tidal wave, which could envelop his entirety within... It was not

because Murong Yi or Xuelang did not want to dodge his swings; rather, under the terrifying pressure of the tidal waves, their bodies were basically unable to move, let alone dodge the swings or counter-attack.

Everyone's impressions of heavy swords were always wild and tyrannical, but every swing of the sword would be heavy and slow. At the same time, it would leave large openings. But whenever Yun Che swung his heavy sword, it was as though as he was wielding a nimble light sword!

Feng Baiyi's windstorm attack was completely dispersed and a large force came assaulting from the front, ruthlessly smashing onto his longspear, causing it to instantly

bend and fly out of his hands. His entire body felt as if it was being smashed by a heavy mace as a violent force penetrated through his body, causing dozens of his meridians to rupture.

“Ah——”

Feng Baiyi screamed as his body flew a dozen feet away and heavily smashed onto the tree which he had hidden behind earlier. The tree shook for a moment, and leaves began to flutter onto the ground.

Feng Baiyi sprawled on the ground and coughed out a couple of mouthfuls of blood. Even after a long while, he could not bring himself up.

Yun Che's internal injuries worsened by another level, and his face began to pale as a thin line of blood trickled down from the corner of his mouth. He spent no more time delaying as he leaped forward and swung his Overlord's Colossal Sword towards Feng Baiyi's neck without hesitation. If this attack were to really land, it was enough to smash Feng Baiyi into smithereens.

As death loomed close, Feng Baiyi's body shrank back in panic. At the same time, he let out an extremely horrified roar, "Uncle Fang, hurry and save me!"

The moment Feng Baiyi howled, an old man's angry, ear-splitting roar suddenly came from the sky,



“Junior! Don’t you dare harm my young master!”

From the angry roar came a force with the weight of a mountain that pressed down upon Yun Che. The strength of this force was something Yun Che could not hope to block. If he had taken another step forward, he would have been ground into dust by that force.

Although Yun Che was shocked, he did not fumble as he quickly used Star God’s Broken Shadow to retreat. Using all his strength to stop his frontal charge, he escaped from the range of that pressing force, but was still affected by its widespread effects. He snorted coldly as he continuously jumped backwards for a distance of over

sixty meters; only then did he manage to rid himself of that frightening force.

Standing in front of Feng Baiyi was an old man with a grey beard who was dressed in black. His appearance allowed Feng Baiyi, who escaped from death, to heave a large sigh of relief. Then, as if crazed, he howled, "Uncle Fang, hurry and kill him. Kill him!"

Feng Baiyi's and Murong Yi's households had relationships that spanned generations, so naturally, his background was not worse off than Murong Yi's. With such a background, as the son born of the first wife, his safety was naturally of utmost importance therefore, someone powerful would always be

protecting him from the shadows. And this old man with the surname Fang, was Feng Baiyi's guardian. But, his role was to only protect him from the shadows, not listen to Feng Baiyi's commands; he would not interfere in any of Feng Baiyi's actions or decisions, but rather, appear only when Feng Baiyi was in extreme danger.

Yun Che held onto his chest, as he gasped for air. In the depths of his mind, Jasmine's voice resounded, "Third level of the Earth Profound Realm. He's not someone you can go up against."

The old man's angry eyes looked straight at Yun Che, and he said, "Junior, if you had let my young master go after severely injuring

him earlier, this old man would not have interfered. But your heart was actually so vicious that you wanted to deal the killing blow, so do not blame this old man for taking your life!”

“Heh!” Yun Che laughed coldly.

“Take my life? You alone, are not worthy!”

# Chapter 166:

## Destroyed Fantasy

“Arrogant brat!” Having received such mockery from a junior, the old man surnamed Fang flared up for a moment.

“Uncle Fang, don’t waste your words on him, just kill him immediately. If he doesn’t die today, he will definitely kill me in the future!” Feng Baiyi supported his body up with a single arm as he shouted, his face filled with a mix of hatred and fear.

With a snort, the old man surnamed Fang suddenly leaped into the air. He extended his right

hand, and reached straight for Yun Che's throat. With the power behind his grip, it would be enough to break Yun Che's neck in an instant.

Yun Che prepared to dodge, but the moment he tried to use his profound energy, an unbearable pain arose from his chest. His expression darkened as he gazed at the old man surnamed Fang's rapidly approaching life-taking claw, and growled in his heart, "Jasmine, kill him!"

It had been several months since Jasmine had suffered from the poison break-out when she killed the flame dragon, so her three-month restriction period of not using any profound energy had long

been over. Currently, Jasmine could use her profound energy for a short period of time... And with the mighty strength Jasmine possessed, she could kill an Emperor Profound Dragon in an instant, let alone someone whose strength was only at the Earth Profound Realm. Although the poison in her body would act up to a certain extent every time she took action,, he had no choice but to rely on Jasmine's strength in this situation.

“There's no need for me to act!”  
Jasmine actually rejected his request: “Someone else will naturally save you.”

“Un?” Yun Che was startled. At this time, the old man surnamed Fang was not even three meters away

from him, and it would only take a second for him to crush Yun Che's neck.

And right at this moment, the old man surnamed Fang's eyes, which were filled with killing intent, suddenly widened, and abruptly forced himself to stop his frontal charge. Within his line of vision, a hint of blue light appeared from the sky above, flew across him, and stabbed into the soft patch of grass between him and Yun Che.

This was a thin and short dagger, yet it released a fantastical icy-blue color. And this hint of blue seemed to suppress all the other colors between heaven and earth for an instant, making it seem incomparably fantastical and



dazzling.

And if one were to take a careful look at it, one would realize it was not actually a short dagger, but a piece of an... Icicle, shaped as a dagger. But after landing on the ground, the icicle did not have any sign of melting; rather, it stayed stabbed diagonally into the ground as it released an ice-cold blue glow.

The old man surnamed Fang who possessed profound strength at the Earth Profound Realm looked at the blue glow, and his eyes unexpectedly revealed a hint of horror; he even subconsciously took a step back. The blue glow in front of him was incomparably beautiful, yet, a deep feeling of fright had welled up in his heart. And that

moment the blue light had descended, he felt a soul-piercing chill penetrate through his entire body. And it was this soul-piercing chill, that had caused him to stay rooted in place, and he no longer dared to take another step forward.

Yun Che also clearly felt the frightening pressure emitted by the cold light in front of him. His heart, which had just calmed down, started to throb with excitement... Could it... Could it be...?

“This one wonders which senior is present, may you reveal yourself?” The old man surnamed Fang took a deep breath, and saluted to his surroundings; his tone carried a hint of respect. At the same time, he no longer dared to act against

Yun Che... He suspected that this person in the shadows, was most possibly the guardian of the youth in front of him. Also, that person's profound strength was stronger than his own, surpassed him by at least a great realm. And, to have a guardian of such strength, the identity of this youngster was definitely not ordinary. His background might even surpass that of his household's young master, Feng Baiyi.

The night sky was tranquil, and even a long time after he had shouted, there was not even a single reply.

"Uncle Fang." Feng Baiyi shouted from behind him, "I have already investigated this Yun Che's

background. He simply comes from a small city called New Moon City; he doesn't even have a single parent, let alone a family. It's basically impossible for him to have a guardian of any sort! But this person is very tricky and sly, that blue thing must be a sort of trick of his! Uncle Fang, don't let him intimidate you, kill him immediately! If you don't kill him now, there will be a day when I will die by his hands!"

The old man surnamed Fang hesitated when hearing Feng Baiyi's words. He looked at Yun Che's expression, and realized that after Feng Baiyi had said those words, Yun Che evidently revealed a hint of panic on his face... Although he covered it up really well, it was still

seen clearly with his old, keen eyes.

Although the blue glow on the ground was still releasing an intimidating chill, the old man surnamed Fang, who had 'figured everything out' was not the least bit afraid. His expression also immediately darkened. "Junior, you actually dared to make a fool of this old man! Die!"

After saying that, he stretched his arm out, instantly crossed over the icy blue glow on the ground, and grabbed at Yun Che once more...

Ding...

An extremely light sound faintly rang, as if a thin metal needle had dropped onto the floor. And the

moment that faint sound rang, the old man surnamed Fang's body strangely stopped on the spot. His right stretched-out hand was less than a foot away from Yun Che's neck, yet, as if they were separated by a chasm, he was unable to take even half a step forward.

The old man surnamed Fang's pair of eyes were extremely wide as his pupils seemingly shrank to a size of a needle. He opened his mouth, but was unable to make a single sound. A small icy blue glow slowly spread from the center of his body, quickly enveloping his body from his four limbs, head, hair, then to his clothes...

In only a span of two breaths' time, his entire body had been enveloped

by an icy blue glow, and transformed into an unmovable ice sculpture.

Whoosh...

A gentle night breeze blew over, passing Yun Che's ear, and lightly caressed the body of the old man surnamed Fang, who had already turned into an ice sculpture. The old man surnamed Fang's body suddenly disintegrated into icy blue dust and dispersed into the faraway sky. From head to toe, in the blink of an eye, he completely disappeared from where he had stood, while the night sky became adorned with thinning icy blue glitters of light.

Yun Che was dumbfounded, and his

throat made a difficult “gulp” sound. In his entire life, this was the first time he had seen a killing method of such elegance; it was so beautiful it could cause someone to hold their breath, yet at the same time, it was cruel to the extreme. After the old man’s death, don’t mention a corpse, not even a trace of him remained.

Feng Baiyi, who was right in front of him, slowly fell onto the ground. His entire body was trembling furiously, and his entire face paled from the intense horror. Suddenly, he began to scream. Mustering the last bit of strength from who knows where, he forcefully crawled up from the ground. While screaming in horror, he fled for his life, as if he was a crazed dog whose courage



had been broken from fear.

“Trying to flee?”

Obviously, Yun Che would not let him flee right in front of his eyes. Without moving a single step, he swung his hands wildly. Carrying the heavy howling of the wind, his Overlord’s Colossal Sword shot towards Feng Baiyi; its thick blunt tip easily broke through his body, and ruthlessly pinned the fleeing Feng Baiyi to the ground.

Yun Che did not retrieve his heavy sword immediately; rather, he looked around his surroundings, and shouted agitatedly, “Little Fairy! Little Fairy, where are you? I know it’s you! Hurry and show yourself!! Little Fairy!”

However, his shouts were answered by no one.

Back then, Little Fairy promised him that two months after the agreement, she would protect him for three months. Right now, it had been exactly two months since she left, thus, she came back due to the promise she made, and had saved him from the life-threatening situation just then.

“Little Fairy! Hurry up~ And~ Show~ Yourself~! You’ve finally returned, yet you’re playing hide-and-seek... I already know it’s you, so hurry and come out! At least let me give you a proper thank you...”

“Hey! Little Fairy!”

“ ..... ”

After Yun Che shouted continuously for a long time, Little Fairy's soft yet bone-piercing chilling voice finally came from within the night sky, "I only promised to protect you for three months; I did not promise to meet you, nor follow your orders. You do not need to waste any more of your effort."

After that, no matter how Yun Che shouted, there was no other reply.

"Phew... this Little Fairy sure is prideful. She finally returned, yet she isn't willing to show herself." Yun Che sighed, and then muttered to himself. "Since you're not coming out no matter how I call

you out, then, hehe... I will wait for you to take the initiative to appear.”

With this thought in mind, Yun Che smiled. No longer calling Little Fairy out, he started walking towards to the side of Feng Baiyi’s corpse. He pulled out the Overlord’s Colossal Sword from his body and then used his profound energy to clean off the bloodstains on the sword.

“You could have simply enjoyed your unfettered life as a young master, but you just had to court your own death.” Yun Che laughed coldly with a hint of disdain in his tone. He then retrieved Feng Baiyi’s spatial ring.

There were many and various

things within Feng Baiyi's ring: a Purple Gold Card with eight hundred Purple Profound Coins stored inside, a copy of the Blue Dragon Spear Art, a copy of his household's hereditary Profound Collapsing Dragon Art, a bunch of jewels and pellets, and a few set of his clothes, etc.

While searching through Feng Baiyi's belongings, Yun Che came to understand his identity... The son of the Western Plains Great General.

His father governed the Western Plains, while Murong Yi's father governed the city north. They were practically next to each other, and both of them held military might; it was no wonder they were old family

friends.

Yun Che released his phoenix flames, burning Feng Baiyi's and Xuelang's corpses along with the surrounding traces. Within the flames, Yun Che stored his heavy sword, and slowly left. However, he did not leave in the direction of the Blue Wind Profound Palace; rather, he headed towards the north of the city.

Feng Baiyi bringing Xuelang along to kill him, was definitely related to Murong Yi.

“Since you acted against me, I will answer in kind... I have never permitted those who wish to take my life to continue living in this world!”

Yun Che muttered softly to himself. His internal injury had yet to heal, so he had not planned to act today. However, since he had just killed Feng Baiyi, Feng Baiyi's "disappearance" would definitely be found out by tomorrow, and he was not able to predict how the situation would progress after that. In a long night with many people asleep, it would be best for people who should die, to die as soon as possible... This was one of Yun Che's beliefs in life!

Yun Che asked a random person for the whereabouts of the Northern Field General's residence, and his figure crossed through the heavy night. When he arrived at the large entrance to the Northern Field General's residence, he had already

changed into the set of clothes Feng Baiyi had stored in his ring. He'd even changed his face to look exactly like Feng Baiyi's.

The arrogant expression and demeanor, as well as his loose parts, were no different from the actual Feng Baiyi.

When the guard at the entrance saw "Feng Baiyi", he hurriedly took the initiative to welcome him and respectfully greeted him, "Young Master Feng, you're arrived. Are you here to see our Young Master?"

"Mn!" Yun Che replied with his nose in the air. Then, he extended his arm and pointed at him, "Since I'm here this late in the night, naturally, I have important things



to discuss. You, follow me inside. Don't ask any questions, and lead me to his room."

Even if he were to enter the Northern Field General's manor, he would not know which room was Murong Yi's bedroom. Hence, the only option he had was to have a guard take him there.

"Yes, yes!" The guard did not dare to disagree. "Young Master Feng, please follow me."

# Chapter 167:

## Dragon Blood Pellet

“Young Master Feng, we have arrived at my Young Master’s room. Do you have any other instructions, Young Master Feng?” After the guard brought Yun Che to the entrance of Murong Yi’s room, he bent at his waist, and said respectfully.

“I have something very important to discuss with Brother Murong. Stand guard here and stop anyone from coming in. Understand?”

After saying that, without even waiting for the guard’s reply, Yun Che had already pushed open the

door and entered the room.

Murong Yi was lying sickly on the bed. With the heavy injuries he had sustained, he should not even think about getting out of bed for at least half a month. When he heard someone enter the room, he opened his eyes. But when he was about to flare up, he realized it was Feng Baiyi. His eyes shone instantly as he struggled to sit upright. “Baiyi, you came at such a late hour... Could it be that the deed has been done?”

“With both Xue Lang and I engaging him at the same time, do you think there’s any possibility of failure?” Feng Baiyi smiled as he walked over.

“So you’re saying that Yun Che is

now dead?” For a moment, Murong Yi’s eyes flashed in excitement and delight.

“No!” Yun Che walked over to Murong Yi’s bedside as a mysterious smile appeared on his face. “He’s not dead. Not only is he not dead, he’s also still living really well. However, as for you, Murong Yi, you’re going to die really soon.”

Feng Baiyi’s words stunned Murong Yi momentarily, but before he could even utter another word, Yun Che had already extended his hand at lightning speed, and tightly gripped at his throat.

“Erk~~~~” Murong Yi’s pair of eyes instantly widened to the extreme. He grabbed onto Yun Che’s arm

with both hands as a painful and dry sound was emitted from his throat.

Yun Che knew very well about the severity of Murong Yi's injuries.

The current Murong Yi was basically not even the least bit of threat to him, not to mention that he had even made a new breakthrough with the medicinal strength of the Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet. Even the two hands that were grabbing onto his own arm, were loose and powerless.

Looking at Murong Yi, who could no longer make any other sound but a painful groan, Yun Che smiled cruelly. With his left hand, he rubbed his face, and Feng Baiyi's face instantly disappeared,

revealing Yun Che's original appearance. Seeing Yun Che, who was less than an inch away from him, Murong Yi's eyes instantly widened. His two eyes, under extreme horror and fear, bulged out greatly, and almost burst out of his eye sockets.

“Your good brother Feng Baiyi and Xue Lang, whom you guys hired, wanted to kill me. But, what a pity, they were the ones who died instead, and their corpses were not even spared either.” Yun Che looked at Murong Yi, and gave a low laugh. “As for you... Tsk tsk, after beating you to this state, it must be painful to be unable to do anything but lie in bed all day. I might as well be a good person to the very end, and end your pain. I

shall send you directly to the King of Hell; this will give you an opportunity to have an early reunion with your good brothers as well!!”

“Eh... Eh...” Murong Yi’s widened eyes were filled with fear as he pleaded for mercy.

“In your next life, you’d best not incur my wrath again!”

The moment Yun Che’s cold voice fell, he fiercely exerted force from his hand... With strength enough to swing the Overlord’s Colossal Sword as he wished, breaking Murong Yi’s neck was too easy. Along with a ‘crack’, the bones in Murong Yi’s neck shattered completely. Murong Yi’s pair of

eyes stuck out once again; his entire body suddenly stiffened and no longer moved.

“You’re really cruel and firm in your killing. And after you kill, your heart rate actually does not change at all... Before we had met, did you kill a lot of people?” Jasmine suddenly asked coldly.

“Mn, many.” Yun Che retracted his hand and answered calmly. “I may even have killed more than you.”

“Hmph. You’re too naive.” Jasmine snorted in disdain, and no longer made a sound.

“Naive? The term ‘naive’ is only used to describe kids; such as a cute little girl like you, Jasmine.” Yun



Che said very softly.

When Yun Che left the room, he had already changed the appearance of his face back to Feng Baiyi's. The guard he had ordered to keep watch outside the door had not left, and when he saw Feng Baiyi leaving the room, he quickly said with his head lowered, "Young Master Feng, are you leaving?"

"Mn." Yun Che irritably added: "Brother Murong has already fallen asleep. You people had best not enter and disturb him."

"Yes, Young Master Feng, have a safe return."

After killing off the great young master of the Northern Field Great

General's household, Yun Che was still able to openly leave the place while being sent off with respect by the household's servant. This sort of feeling, was simply incomparably pleasurable.

-----

On the second day, the news of the brutal death of the Northern Field Great General's son spread throughout the entire capital like wildfire.

And Feng Baiyi was labeled as the culprit for Murong Yi's murder!

Murong Yi's violent death had occurred last night. And yesterday night, Feng Baiyi was the only person who had entered Murong

Yi's room! But when the Murong household searched everywhere for Feng Baiyi's whereabouts, they found that it was as if Feng Baiyi had disappeared from the face of the earth and they were not able to find any trace of him, no matter what methods they used. This obviously gave rise to suspicions that Feng Baiyi might have killed Murong Yi and fled. When he was unable to locate Feng Baiyi, the Northern Field Great General was absolutely furious. He brought thousands of troops and mightily blocked the entrance to the Western Plain General's residence... The longtime brotherhood between these two military generals was thus broken there and then.

And when he, too, was not able to

find Feng Baiyi, the Western Plain General started to suspect that it was a ploy set up by the Murong household, and thus, the two great families began to fight a battle that set the heavens spinning and the earth in gloom, where only one of them would survive...

As for the true murderer, Yun Che...  
Not a single person suspected him.

There was a definite possibility that Murong Yi had been assassinated by someone other than Feng Baiyi, but what sort of place was the Northern Field General's residence? To kill Murong Yi silently without leaving any trace behind under the heavy surveillance in the Northern Field General's residence would require someone with strength at

least in the late-stages of the Earth  
Profound Realm. And thus, Yun  
Che would never be suspected for  
his death.

So while the Imperial City was in a  
state of huge turmoil, Yun Che, who  
returned to the Blue Wind Profound  
Palace, was as calm as ever.

After a single night, Yun Che's  
internal injuries were already  
roughly healed. Currently, he was  
holed in his quarters with dozens of  
different medicinal ingredients and  
treasures placed on the table in  
front of him. At the very front were  
the three pieces of Cyan Profound  
Crystals he had bought from the  
Black Moon Market two months  
ago. In the middle, on a small piece  
of green leaf, were a few dozen

drops of the Flame Dragon's dark blood.

It was time to refine the Dragon Blood Pellet!

Two months ago, he had already planned on refining the Dragon Blood Pellet, and that was why he had visited the Black Moon Merchant Guild, which had led him to his encounter with Little Fairy. But back then, his Great Way of the Buddha had yet to reach the first stage of cultivation, so the amount of the Flame Dragon's blood he could take was limited; he would have only infused three drops of the Flame Dragon's blood per pellet at most. This would waste the Cyan Profound Crystal to a certain degree, and after deliberating, he

decided to give up on refining the pellets temporarily.

And now, he retrieved twelve drops of Flame Dragon's blood from the Flame Dragon's corpse... That's twelve drops of blood from an Emperor Profound Dragon! In other words, in the three Dragon Blood Pellets he was going to cultivate, there would be four drops of dragon blood in each pellet!

To endure four drops of an Emperor Profound Dragon's blood at once with a body at the True Profound Realm, if someone else were to attempt it, it will definitely be a suicidal act. However, Yun Che had cultivated in the Great Way of the Buddha so the resilience of his body could not be compared to that of

regular people. He was confident that his body would be completely capable of enduring the four drops of dragon blood.

Yun Che arranged the medicinal ingredients in order and placed both his hands on the ingredients. He closed his eyes, and a short while later, the purification ability of the Sky Poison Pearl activated. A green glow enveloped the Flame Dragon's blood and the other ingredients... After a long while, when Yun Che took his two hands off the table, different colored slags filled the entire table and three red, shining sphere beads appeared at the center. They were sparkling and clear, like three scarlet pearls. A mysterious medicinal scent also slowly dispersed in the



surroundings.

“One hundred percent pure, perfect.”

Yun Che picked up the three medicinal pellets and said to himself in satisfaction.

The Xiao Branch Sect's few hundred years of heritage was clearly not a joke. Refining a single Dragon Blood Pellet requires many medicinal ingredients, and most of them were extremely valuable.

Aside from the core ingredients, dragon blood and Cyan Profound Crystal, the other fourteen ingredients were obtained from the Xiao Branch Sect's Treasury, and the amount was more than enough to cultivate three pellets. Otherwise,

if Yun Che had to gather these ingredients by himself, not to mention spending a large amount of Purple Profound Coins, he would also need to spend at least two to three months worth of time to successfully obtain them.

Absorbing one Dragon Blood Pellet would require at least two days, and as for three pellets, six days would be enough to completely absorb them. By then, his profound strength would be raised by two levels at least... And this increase in profound strength was only secondary; an Emperor Profound Dragon's blood... would bring about unmeasurable benefits to his blood, body, profound veins, and bones.

“What’s this medicinal pellet?”

Just when Yun Che was about to taste the medicinal pellet he had cultivated with the use of his Sky Poison Pearl, a cold and soft voice came from his back.

Yun Che's lips broke into a smile, and then, he turned around with a face filled with astonishment.

Within his vision, dressed entirely in white, with skin white as snow, a girl of peerless beauty with extraordinary disposition was standing there. Her pair of jewel-like beautiful eyes stared at the medicinal pellet he was holding in his hand. Her eyes were simply too beautiful; though they emanated a bone-piercing chill, they were still able to move one's heart.

“Little Fairy, you're finally willing to

meet me. Back then, you suddenly went away...”

“I’m asking you, what’s this medicinal pellet in your hand?” Little Fairy ignored his words, and said coldly: “Why do I feel an Emperor Profound Realm aura being emitted from these pellets!”

Why would she appear of her own accord with just the aura from regular medicinal pellets?

Yun Che’s expression grew solemn, and he could only explain as he was told to. “This is called the Dragon Blood Pellet, and it is a medicinal pellet which was refined from dragon’s blood. After taking it, not only will it raise your profound strength, it will also strengthen your

body and increase your resistance to thousands of illnesses. As for why it's emitting an Emperor Profound Realm's aura..." Yun Che pondered this for a moment, before truthfully saying "That's because the dragon blood that was used to cultivate this pellet came from an Emperor Profound Dragon."

Little Fairy's eyes twitched slightly as a faint feeling of astonishment flashed by. She took a step forward and once again, took a look at the pellet in Yun Che's hand. Her lips parted, "You're actually able to cultivate pellets as well? And you're even capable of refining medicinal pellets with such high-grade aura. Even within this entire Blue Wind Profound Palace, it's impossible to find a medicinal pellet that's better

than the one in your hand, and I have never actually heard of, nor seen the method you used to cultivate your medicinal pellets!”

Earlier, she had seen Yun Che’s medicinal pellet refining process very clearly. There was no usage of furnaces, no usage of flames, no mixing or gathering of profound energy... With nothing but his hands, in just ten breaths, a pile of ingredients transformed into three medicinal pellets. If she had not seen it with her own eyes, she would not have believed that it had happened. And from what she knew, people who were capable of refining medicinal pellets which emit such high grade auras, in this entire Blue Wind Empire, number less than ten, and their refining

processes were long and difficult. Earlier, Yun Che did not even look like he was refining medicinal pellets, he simply looked as if he was performing a magic trick.

# Chapter 168:

## Decision

“Have you heard of Pellet Formations?” Yun Che asked with a mysterious expression.

“Pellet Formations?”

“Pellet Formations are a type of formless formation, a type of special formation used to refine pellets. My Master once said that using furnaces and flames is the most common method, but is also the most basic method to refine medicine; because this method will cause a large percentage of the medicinal effects to be lost and also has the highest failure rate. But by



deploying the Pellet Formation, you will achieve different effects. By using a formation to directly extract and fuse the ingredients, basically none of the medicinal effects will be lost during the process; the failure rate is low, and the time used is much shorter as well. What I used earlier, was the Pellet Formation I spoke of.”

Yun Che finished his explanation without any change to his facial expression and heart-rate... But, what he had said was not entirely a bluff. In this world, there indeed exists this kind of thing called the Pellet Formation. His master in the Azure Cloud Continent knew how to use it, and in this Sky Profound Continent, extraordinary people who knows how to deploy Pellet

Formations might exist as well. But no matter how experienced or skilled one was with Pellet Formations and purification abilities, it was impossible to compare with the heavenly profound treasure, the Sky Poison Pearl.

Little Fairy's eyebrows slightly curved... The words 'Pellet Formations' were not entirely unfamiliar to her; rather, she seemed to have a slight impression of it. And as her impression of it was this blurry, it proved that Pellet Formations appear very rarely, which also proved that people who were capable of deploying Pellet Formations were even rarer. At the very least, the number one genius doctor of Blue Wind Empire, Gu

Qihong, did not know how to use it, and similarly, the main pharmacist in her sect also did not know how to use it... nor had she ever mentioned it before.

But the youngster before her, by just covering the ingredients with his hands, was able to turn a pile of ingredients into three pellets which emitted an Emperor Profound aura... The “Pellet Formation” he spoke of, though it did shock her, was not completely unbelievable.

“Mind if I have a look at that pellet of yours?”

Little Fairy stretched out a snow-white hand towards Yun Che.

Without even waiting for Yun Che’s consent, a chilling wind blew, and a

Dragon Blood Pellet flew to her hand.

Holding up the Dragon Blood Pellet with her fingers and sensing the aura contained within, Little Fairy's eyes lit up slightly once again. What was hidden in this Dragon Blood Pellet was undoubtedly the aura of a dragon, and it had the aura of the Emperor Profound dragon.

Dragons were revered as the king of beasts. No matter the type of dragon, be it common dragons or a subspecies, dragons were still highly respected amongst the divine beasts in ancient legend, ranking above phoenixes, sky wolves, golden crows, and other similar divine beasts. The tyrannical strength of a dragon's body can not be compared

to any other living being in the world. Even its blood, bones, scales, heart, and meat... Not a single one of them were not worldly treasures. But, because of their extreme tyranny, without going through a complicated refining process, they could not be just simply used on a human's body; otherwise, not only would that human not gain any benefits, it would cause harm to the body instead.

Something that came from an Emperor Profound Dragon was even more so.

But the dragon aura within this pellet was actually very gentle, and with the assimilation of the various other medicinal ingredients, it became even more attuned to the

mechanisms of a human body.

Although it possessed the aura of an Emperor Profound Dragon, even a practitioner at the Spirit Profound Realm might be able to cultivate it within his body.

Evidently, in her eyes, this pellet was definitely not a small matter.

With a single movement of Little Fairy's fingers, the Dragon Blood Pellet flew back onto Yun Che's hands. Her beautiful eyes looked towards Yun Che, and she calmly said, "I want to ask you a question. You claim to be a genius doctor, and your medical abilities are indeed astonishingly impressive. You were even able to detoxify the Origin Poison in my body with just a wave of your hand, and easily find

out about the parasite the Medical Saint, Gu Qihong, planted into the Blue Wind Emperor's body. You even know about 'Pellet Formations' and you're able to casually refine such high-grade pellets... With abilities like these, any one of them is sufficient to shock the entire world. As long as you wish to join a sect, I believe every sect in the Blue Wind Empire would extend their invitations for your entry, allowing you to obtain an extremely high status and endless glory. So, why would you keep yourself within this small Blue Wind Profound Palace, and be a regular Inner Palace disciple?"

"The moment one enters a sect, one is not allowed to leave it for his entire life, and his entire life will be

dedicated solely to that one sect; otherwise, he will be treated as a renegade. To me, that's basically no different from entering a prison cell. What I strive for, is absolute freedom..."

Yun Che did not speak out the latter half of the sentence, which was... Absolute control. And regardless if it was the former or the latter, the first and ultimate condition for him to achieve his goals was to possess formidable strength. This was not because he loved authority or looking down on others, it was because he had lost too much, and now that he had reincarnated, he no longer wished to lose anymore.

Little Fairy's expression did not



change, and she did not even make a slight reaction to his arrogant words. She asked again, "Since you strive for freedom, why did you let me know of these abilities you possess? Aren't you afraid that I'll spread the news? If those sects are to know of the incredible medical techniques and refining ability you possess, and since you do not have the strength to protect yourself or retaliate, by then, you will not even be able to think of being free and safe from harm. You will either submit, or be forced to submit."

"That's because I believe in you." Yun Che smiled. "For someone like me, given your level of strength, there is simply no need for you to spare an extra glance at me. But even for such an insignificant being

like me, back when I suffered a heavy injury, you did not leave right then and there; rather, you watched over me for several days, and even used your profound arts to heal me... And, you even came back after two months because of the promise we made, and saved my life when I was in danger last night. From all this, I can deduce that even though you look ice-cold on the surface, you're actually kind at heart. And, for such a beautiful person like Little Fairy, even if someone were to call you an actual fairy, I would definitely believe it as well. No matter how I look at you, I can't picture you as an evil person."

"... Hmph, glib-tongued." Little Fairy's beautiful eyes shifted to the side. Although she did not sound

bothered by his words, her gaze inadvertently softened by a little.

“Little Fairy, may I ask you a question?” Yun Che suddenly said.

“??”

“You should be... someone from the Frozen Cloud Asgard, right?” Yun Che probed.

Little Fairy did not answer. She did not admit it, nor did she deny it.

“If you don’t say anything, I will take your silence as a yes.” Yun Che laughed, and then, after a moment of hesitation, he asked, “Then, do you know of a person called Xia Qingyue? She should be a disciple of your Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

Little Fairy suddenly set her eyes on Yun Che, “You know of Xia Qingyue?”

Yun Che was shocked by Little Fairy’s reaction to the name “Xia Qingyue”. He nodded and said, “Mn, I know her. I have known her since I was young. Because, like her, I was also born in Floating Cloud City. However, I heard that she had married someone, and not long after her marriage, left Floating Cloud City and headed to Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“That’s right. Qingyue is indeed a disciple of our Asgard. But, you don’t have to inquire about things regarding her any further.” After pausing for a moment, she gave Yun Che a glance, and said, “If you

were to represent the Imperial Palace in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament this year, you might be able to see her.”

“She will be participating in this year’s Blue Wind Ranking Tournament?” Yun Che said in surprise. “But, she’s the same age as me. She just turned seventeen recently, isn’t it too forceful for her to participate?”

Back when he had separated from Xia Qingyue, Xia Qinyue’s profound strength had been at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm... Even if she had hidden her true strength, at the very most, it would have only been at the Nascent Profound Realm. With the Nascent Profound Realm as her

starting point, participating in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament in just a year and a half's time, is more than just "forceful".

"Hmph, it's naturally impossible for others, but it's possible for Qingyue! In the previous tournament, Ling Yun was able to take the top place at the age of seventeen; our Frozen Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue is capable of doing it as well!

Qingyue's talent and comprehension ability are never-before-seen since ancient times, and can be said to be unparalleled. Even Ling Yun definitely cannot be compared to her. In the upcoming Blue Wind Ranking Competition, Qingyue only has one opponent, and that's Ling Yun! If Qingyue had participated in the previous

Ranking Tournament, our Frozen Cloud Asgard would definitely have come up on top! And even if she were to face the current Ling Yun, Qingyue will definitely not lose either.”

As she talked about Xia Qingyue, Little Fairy’s demeanor was completely different from usual. Her indifferent tone carried a deep sense of pride and expectation, and of course, a deep sense of confidence.

Yun Che was speechless for a long while... Lan Xueruo had once described to him the terrifying strength that Ling Yun possessed. And currently, from Little Fairy’s words, she actually had a lot of confidence that Xia Qingyue would

be able to defeat Ling Yun, who had already turned twenty years old. He had bestowed the Heavenly God's Spiritual Veins upon Xia Qinyue, but talent did not solely consist of gifts brought about by the profound veins, but also understanding of the profound laws, the ability to control them, comprehension, etc...

The year Ling Yun acquired the top seat in the Ranking Tournament, Xia Qingyue was only fourteen years old, and had only entered the Nascent Profound Realm, while Ling Yun was already at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Currently, Ling Yun must already have broken through the Spirit Profound Realm, and stepped into the Earth Profound Realm. To be able to enter the Earth Profound



Realm below the age of twenty, in the younger generation of the entire Blue Wind Empire, Ling Yun was most probably the only one. It's impossible for Frozen Cloud Asgard to not know of this large difference in strength, but they still possessed such confidence that she would be able to compete against Ling Yun...

Yun Che's heart started to convulse uncontrollably... If what she said was true, then the talent his wife Qingyue possessed, was truly a little terrifying.

"I know you will not believe it, and you don't have to believe it either. You have already met Ling Yun yesterday, and even praised him to be 'devoid of flaws'. But it's a pity this upcoming Blue Wind Ranking

Tournament will become the cause of his fall in fame.”

Yun Che nodded slowly, and said softly, “So she had already become this formidable... Kuh, Little Fairy, do you happen to know of this extremely lucky man who could actually marry such a formidable girl and have her as his wife?”

“The reason she married was to cut away her remaining worldly bonds, and so that her family would not carry the weight of a name as one that goes against promises. When Palace Master had a fateful encounter with her talent, she felt her sincerity, so she was not the least bit worried... Adding on to that, the person she married was someone with crippled profound

veins since birth, and he could only be a cripple for his entire life.

Qinyue also swore that she would never develop any feelings towards him; hence, an exception was made and she became our Asgard's first married disciple. After her marriage, she immediately returned to our Frozen Cloud Asgard. In the future, she will never meet the person she married again."

Yun Che: "..."

"Just as you said, he's indeed a very lucky man. Even if there's tens of thousands of him, he would never be worthy of Qingyue. But, since him and Qinyue are officially married, it can be considered a great favor granted to him by the heavens." Little Fairy glanced at

Yun Che, and continued,  
“Regarding Qingyue, this is all that I  
can tell you. Since you revealed  
many of your secrets in front of me,  
these words can be considered my  
repayment.”

Thump, thump.

A light knock on the door sounded,  
and Lan Xueruo's voice came from  
the other side of the door. “Junior  
brother Yun, are you inside?”

At the same time as the knock on  
the door, an ice aurora fluttered  
before Yun Che's eyes, and like a  
scattering dream, Little Fairy  
disappeared from the room.

Yun Che walked over to open the  
door, and before Lan Xueruo could

say anything, he said firmly, “Senior sister, I have decided. I want to participate in this upcoming Blue Wind Ranking Tournament!”

# Chapter 169:

## Decisive Departure

“Ah?” Yun Che’s abrupt words startled Lan Xueruo for a good while. Then, she immediately nodded. “If you’re willing, then of course you can. After all, no matter the outcome, participating in the Ranking Tournament is a good experience, and you will create a good foundation for your participation three years later. It’s just that, the Imperial Palace is only allowed to send three people to participate. These three people will have to be selected from a fair competition, and I do not possess the absolute right to make the

decisions either. So, if Junior brother Yun really wishes to participate in this upcoming Blue Wind Tournament, within half a year, you have to enter the top three placings of the Inner Palace Heavenly Profound Ranking.”

Currently, Yun Che had taken over Murong Yi’s position in the Heavenly Profound Ranking, and was ranked seventy-third. To step into the top three places from the seventy-third place in half a year, no one would believe it would actually happen if they were to hear of it... nor would they believe that the seventh place, Xuelang, or the thirty-sixth place, Feng Baiyi, of the Heavenly Profound Ranking had already died at Yun Che’s hands.

In other words, with the strength Yun Che currently possessed, he was at least at the seventh placing or above.

“I know.” Yun Che nodded. His gentle yet firm gaze looked towards Lan Xueruo. “I will strive to obtain the qualifications to participate in the Ranking Tournament, and in this tournament, I will not be going there for the sake of experience; rather, I will be participating in it seriously... So, Senior sister, after this, I will be leaving for a period of time.”

“Leave?” The light in Lan Xueruo’s eyes stirred, and she hurriedly grabbed onto Yun Che’s hand. “Where are you going? Why do you have to leave?”



Yun Che took Lan Xueruo's small hand and held it, and said gently, "Senior sister, do you remember the things I told you that night? I said that I would give you a shoulder that you can lean on and rely on, and that I would take on that unimaginable heavy burden in your stead... It's just that, even if I have the resolution to do so, with the way I am now, I am still too weak; I basically do not possess that sort of shoulder. The things you're bearing, I don't even have the strength to get involved in them. If I were to step into these matters with the way I am now, not only will I not be able to take them on for you, I will also become your burden and a source of your worries. I might even become your weakness."

“Back when I received invitations from the Crown Prince and the Third Prince at the same time, Instructor Qin had advised me to take the initiative to distance myself from you, because only doing that will be best for you, and it will be a sort of protection for myself as well. But something like that, is something I will never ever do. As to how to deal with the invitations from the Crown Prince and Third Prince, I have pondered about it these few days. In the end, after taking into consideration the things I currently possess, no matter how resolved I am, no matter how arrogant I am, I cannot deny that the current me, does not have the ability nor the qualifications to get involved in the turbulence within the Imperial Palace, and neither am

I able to carry even a portion of your burden. At least, if the Crown Prince and Third Prince were to wish for my death, it is something that can be easily fulfilled for either of them.”

“So, regarding their invitations, I am unable to choose. Since I can neither decide on either, nor can I choose both or decline both at the same time, the only thing I can do, is to choose neither, and silently leave.”

This was the choice Yun Che made after ruminating on it for the last few days.

As the Crown Prince and Prince of an Empire, they have many subordinates, and the number of

experts within this number was not something a regular person could imagine. After leaving Floating Cloud City, he had been spending his time mingling with the younger generation, so he was still able to excel to a certain degree. However, the battle within the Imperial Palace simply could not compare to battles within the younger generation circle. Just by the number of practitioners, among the Crown Prince and Third Prince's subordinates, experts in the Earth Profound Realm number not less than a hundred, and experts at the Sky Profound Realm definitely existed as well. There might even be numerous Sky Profound Realm practitioners who were close to the Emperor Profound Realm serving under them. No matter who Yun

Che chose, he would be dragged into this circle. With such weak profound strength within that circle, he would not even be able to influence the entire situation in the slightest. The only thing he had was influence over the younger generation. If he were to step into the turbulent situation within the Imperial Palace the way he was now, other than increasing Lan Xueruo's worries and concerns, what wave of changes could he bring about?

And regarding all these, as an Imperial Princess, Lan Xueruo was even clearer on these issues than Yun Che.

Her lips had moved quite a few times, but she could not bring

herself to say anything. In the last few days, she had been worried that Yun Che would be dragged into her affairs, and him leaving, was definitely the safest option available to him. However, she simply could not bear to have Yun Che leave, because she could no longer imagine a day without him. She did not know when it started, but Yun Che had already become the supporting pillar in her heart, as well as her sustenance. If he were to leave now, she would be at a loss of what to do.

Finally, she chose to nod and softly said. "Leaving is good as well... No, it's for the best. If you were just a regular Inner Palace disciple, they would still try to win you over, but it wouldn't be that urgent and fierce.

However, your current influence over the Imperial City is too strong. Your choice will definitely sway the inclinations of the younger practitioners to a very large degree. So, no matter who you choose, it will definitely plunge you deep within. At the same time, you will suffer the hatred of the other party... and you might even be assassinated.”

“These few days, I had wanted to advise you to temporarily leave the Imperial City as well... Yet, I couldn’t bear to part with you. In this Imperial City, my heart has never been able to calm down. If you were to leave my side as well, I... I...” Lan Xueruo bit her lip, and tightly held onto Yun Che’s hand.

Yun Che shook his head, and said, "Senior sister, you don't have to worry. I will only be leaving temporarily, and I won't be away for a long time either. Actually, escaping the invitations of the Crown Prince and Third Prince is merely one of the two reasons why I wish to leave the Imperial City. The other reason is that I wish to head out to train. The Blue Wind Profound Palace is indeed a place where countless of practitioners wish to train in, but this place is too comfortable. There is pressure, but it isn't forceful. You will receive injuries, but they won't be life-threatening. I require a place that can push me even further, so as to provide you a shoulder that you can lean on as soon as possible. Half a year... Senior sister, give me half a



year's time. After half a year, I will definitely come back much stronger than before."

Half a year's time, was indeed really short as a practitioner's training duration. As to why Yun Che would shorten the time imposed on himself to such an extent, was firstly because the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament would take place in half a year. However, the most important reason was that he was afraid some sort of huge change would occur in the Imperial Palace when he wasn't by Lan Xueruo's side if the duration was too long.

"Then... Where will you be going to for the next half a year? Have you decided?" Lan Xueruo asked

worriedly.

“Not yet. But I believe that I will be able to find a place immediately after leaving the Imperial City.”

Yun Che said with a relaxed expression.

With great effort, Lan Xueruo suppressed the unwillingness that was surging in her heart, and said gently, “Half a year isn’t that long either. Since you have already decided, I... I will stay in the Imperial City, and calmly wait for your return. But, no matter what, do not give yourself too much pressure, and even more so, do not expose yourself to danger... The reason why I am still staying in the Imperial Palace, is because I simply cannot leave my father behind.

Yesterday, I personally visited the Black Moon Merchant Guild... But, even the Black Moon Merchant Guild has never come to possess a Burning Soul Flower before. If this is my father's fate, then, when father passes away, I will give up my identity as a Princess, and go wherever you go... Both the struggle within the Imperial Palace, as well as my hatred towards the person who killed my father will no longer be important. I only wish to have you in my entire life, and that alone will be enough. That's why, you must definitely not force yourself too much, alright?"

Yun Che's heart shook violently from these words. He stretched out his arms, and hugged Lan Xueruo tight... These words alone, were

enough for Yun Che to never turn his back on her for his entire life.

However, to Lan Xueruo, and to Yun Che, their greatest pressure was never the struggle within the Imperial Palace, but rather, Fen Juecheng from the Burning Heaven Clan!

“Junior brother Yun, when are you planning to leave?”

“... Now.”

“Ah?”

“I will not give up my identity as a Blue Wind Profound Palace disciple. As for Palace Chief Qin and Yuanba, Senior sister, please help me relay my decision to them... Half a year later, I will return... I will

definitely return!”

.....

Bringing all his belongings and with Lan Xueruo sending him off with teary eyes, Yun Che quietly left the Blue Wind Profound Palace, as well as the Blue Wind Imperial City.

“Why did you make such a sudden decision?” Behind him, Little Fairy’s fleeting, cold and tranquil voice resounded.

Little Fairy once again took the initiative to converse with him, causing Yun Che’s heart to feel at ease. “It’s not really a sudden decision. The thought of leaving came up quite a few times in my mind the past two days.”

Although he had thoughts of leaving, he had been extremely hesitant. He definitely would not tell Little Fairy that the reason why he would suddenly make such a decisive situation... was due to the declaration she had made about Xia Qinyue, which had roused him greatly.

“Then, where have you decided to go?”

Yun Che gazed towards the northeast, and slowly said, “The place where rampant profound beasts live... The Wasteland of Death which spans nine hundred and fifty kilometers!”

“What?”

The name “Wasteland of Death”, was actually able to cause even Little Fairy, whose strength was half a step away from the Emperor Profound Realm, to hold hints of shock in her voice. “You’re actually going there to train? That place has been termed as the heaven for profound beasts, and the hell for practitioners. Countless of practitioners die in there every year.”

“I know, I have heard of it from my grandfather when I was really young. But I did not expect that there would come a day when I would have to step into it. I believe that within the entire Blue Wind Empire, there is no better place to train.” Yun Che said calmly.

“Since you have already decided on a destination, why did you not tell her?”

Yun Che faintly sighed. “The Wasteland of Death is one of the three most dangerous places in the Blue Wind Empire. The number of profound beasts that reside within it is at least a hundred times more than the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range. If I were to tell her this, she would definitely worry about my safety every day and night, and cause her sleepless nights and a loss of appetite.”

Little Fairy no longer said anything.

Yun Che carried the heavy sword on his back, took out the map he had bought earlier and glanced at it.



As if he was flying, he sprinted towards the north and quickly disappeared at the end of the road, leaving Blue Wind Imperial City, which was swarming with movements from the shadows, far behind.

He was arrogant, but definitely not blind.

A temporary retreat, all for the sake of returning stronger than ever before!

---

Ten days later.

The Wasteland of Death was one of the areas within Blue Wind Empire which had an impeccable reputation of being dangerous and

brutal. Spanning nine hundred and fifty kilometers long and eight hundred kilometers wide, countless of profound beasts roam the wasteland, and these profound beasts were mostly wild and ferocious. Along with its reputation, its dense population of profound beasts attract large numbers of practitioners and treasure hunters. However, every year, deaths of practitioners within the area number more than a hundred thousand. Hence, from this, the place was named “Wasteland of Death”.

The bright moon hung high up in the clear night sky, enveloping the city nearest to the Wasteland of Death with a sublime atmosphere. From afar, the drawn-out roars of

profound beasts could be constantly heard, one after another.

Each of the countless inns situated in the city was filled with practitioners from all around. The Wasteland of Death was just fifteen kilometers away from the city, and all the guests in the inns were people who wished to challenge the Wasteland of Death.

Under the night sky, being drawn in by the sublime atmosphere, a calm-looking youth carrying a heavy sword on his back slowly walked over.

“I’m finally here.”

Looking at the light shining from the inns’ windows and hearing the

profound beasts' intimidating roars  
coming from afar, the youth  
stopped and looked towards the  
distance as he muttered to himself.

# Chapter 170:

## Wasteland of Death

Yun Che randomly picked a guest house to stay in, but he did not go to sleep. Rather, he sat on the bed and placed the last Dragon Blood Pellet into his mouth.

During his travel from Blue Wind Imperial City to here, he had already ingested two Dragon Blood Pellets. The refinement and absorption of each pellet took around a day or two, but with Little Fairy's protection from the shadows, he had nothing to worry about.

The moment the Dragon Blood

Pellet entered his body, it was as if a ball of fire had suddenly exploded in his body. Yun Che's face flushed red, and his body began to shudder. But under the operation of the Great Way of the Buddha, this reaction did not even last for half a quarter of an hour before his expression recovered and his disposition stabilized.

Of course, four drops of blood from the Emperor Profound Flame Dragon could not possibly match up to the blood of the mythical Phoenix. However, when the Flame Dragon's blood enters the body, it was much more dangerous than the Phoenix's blood. This was because the Phoenix's blood would only blend into a person's blood vessels, and become a part of the blood

vessels within the body, instead of being eliminated..... With Yun Che's capabilities, it would be absolutely impossible to completely destroy the Phoenix's blood. But with the Flame Dragon's blood, the situation was different. It had to be refined, and the power harnessed within it had to be transformed into Yun Che's own. After refining, it would disappear forever. This process was much more difficult and dangerous than the fusion of the Phoenix's blood. Therefore, Yun Che must first integrate it into a medicinal pellet, making it more gentle, before daring to refine it.

A wave of ice auroras drifted, and Little Fairy silently appeared in front of Yun Che. Watching his calm expression, a complicated

expression flashed in her eyes. She had personally examined the Dragon Blood Pellet before; it contained pure Emperor Profound Dragon blood, and at least four drops of it. Even though it had been assimilated into a medicinal pellet, and the energy contained within the dragon's blood became much gentler, one must at least have profound strength at the Spirit Profound Realm in order to refine it; if someone at the True Profound Realm tried to forcefully consume it, it would be accompanied by great danger.

However, Yun Che had taken three Dragon Blood Pellets consecutively, and every refinement had been incomparably successful. Among these, not a single occasion had



been with too much pain or struggle, and the entire process was calm and followed with success; this caused amazement to strike her heart.

By the time Yun Che was finished, it was already the morning of the third day. However, after opening his eyes, instead of feeling hungry, he only felt light and refreshed. After the refinement of three Dragon Blood Pellets, his profound strength had already risen to the peak of the fourth level of the True Profound Realm, and he was only half a step away from breaking into the fifth level. The benefits these three Dragon Blood Pellets brought him wasn't only an increase in profound strength, but also a substantial strengthening of his

body and meridians.

With the help of a Goldscale Dragon Transforming Pellet and three Dragon Blood Pellets, Yun Che's profound energy had risen by two levels continuously within the span of half a month. However, while drawing support from medicinal pellets was the fastest method, it was also a large malpractice, because it made his profound strength unsteady. After all, this sudden rise of two whole levels in profound strength was not due to regular practice. To achieve stability, a large amount of combat was required.

Yun Che exited the guest room and purchased sufficient rations. When the shopkeeper saw the purple

spatial ring on his finger, he hesitated for quite a while, but gathered enough courage to ask quietly, “Young man, are you also a practitioner who is going to train in the Wasteland of Death?”

“Yes,” Yun Che saw that the shopkeeper’s eyes beheld kindness, “Not sure if Shopkeeper has any advice for me?”

“Hehe,” The shopkeeper sized him up, and praised, “Already possessing the profound strength of the True Profound Realm at such a young age, it’s truly impressive. Let me guess, you must be from some large clan, or perhaps the genius disciple of a large sect? And from your attire, as well as the purple spatial ring on your finger, you’re

not someone who lacks for money either, so you certainly aren't here to seek out treasure for money."

Yun Che shot a glance at the purple spatial ring on his finger, but did not say a word. With the Sky Poison Pearl within his body, he had absolutely no need for spatial rings. He had only put on this purple spatial ring he had taken from Feng Baiyi's hand to pull the wool over the others' eyes.

"But...." The shopkeeper took a look at the surrounding people, and lowered his voice, saying, "Among those who come to the Wasteland of Death, there are crooks mixed in with the honest folk. Some of them come for training, and others come for the money. Not only do they kill

profound beasts for their own benefit, they also kill practitioners who enter the Wasteland of Death. The purple spatial ring on your finger is too eye-catching, you'll easily attract others' attention. In addition to that, you are young and traveling alone, so it's simply too dangerous. I suggest you take off that ring, carry a tattered bag, and dress more normally. At least this way, you won't catch the attention of those who are greedy."

The shopkeeper's words caused Yun Che to nod his head and say gratefully, "Got it, thank you for the reminder."

"Also, although your profound strength is not weak, the strength and numbers of the profound

beasts in the Wasteland of Death far exceed your imagination. In the surrounding fifty kilometers, it is all Nascent Profound Beasts and True Profound Beasts. Beyond the fifty kilometers, Spirit Profound Beasts will also appear frequently. The further you travel, the higher the strength of the profound beast. Although this distribution of profound beasts is distinct, it is definitely not absolute; within fifty kilometers, Spirit Profound beasts will often appear as well. Therefore, my advice for you is to not go beyond twenty five kilometers. Training is meant for you to improve yourself, so you must not throw your life into the equation. Sigh, there are so many practitioners who overestimated their capabilities and have never

returned from the Wasteland of Death.”

“Rest assured, I’ll try my best.”

Yun Che thanked the shopkeeper, left the guest house, and walked towards the Wasteland. All the way, he attracted many looks from others — because of the colossal sword strapped to his back. As the emperor amongst thousands of weapons, swords were used by a large number of practitioners, and those who traveled with their swords strapped to their backs were not few either. However, there truly were not many who carried such a large sword.

Half an hour later, Yun Che officially entered the area of the

## Wasteland of Death.

Wasteland, a land that was left to grow wild. Here, the desolate sound of the wind held sinister, eerie hints. The continuous howls that came from profound beasts in the distance made one's heart palpitate. From afar, the entire wasteland was overrun with dry withered grass; rocks lined the rugged terrain, and the boundary could not be seen with just a look. The silhouettes of practitioners gathering into groups could be faintly seen. There were very few who came alone like Yun Che; at least, in the area within his line of sight, there was only him alone.

In front of him, a wave of ice auroras floated and Little Fairy's



immortal-like body floated down from above to land in front of Yun Che, and she asked coldly, “You want to remain here for the next half a year?”

“Right!” Yun Che nodded: “There is no training place better than this. I also want to know how deep I can venture into this place of death that causes everyone’s expressions to change the moment it is mentioned.”

He looked at Little Fairy and suddenly said: “Little Fairy, are you not willing to follow me in?”

“Indeed, I don’t wish to set foot into this sort of place. But since I’ve agreed to protect you for three months, I’ll definitely do it. I won’t

go so far as to let you, a junior, lose faith in me.”

Her soft, clear and cold voice fell, and Little Fairy was already afloat. In the blink of an eye, she had disappeared from Yun Che’s line of sight.

“Junior.....” Yun Che rubbed the corner of his mouth, speechless.

“This young brother, are you alone?”

Behind Yun Che, a somewhat apprehensive voice came. Yun Che turned around and saw a small group of a dozen or so people looking at him. The one who spoke was precisely the one who was leading them. These ten or so

people were very young; the oldest was only twenty four or five years old. Their profound strength ranged from the late stages of the Nascent Profound Realm to the initial stages of the True Profound Realm. Their faces revealed simultaneous expressions of excitement and nervousness. It was obvious this was their first time entering the Wasteland of Death.

Seeing Yun Che turn around, the person who had shouted said: "If you're on your own, why not join us? When there are many together, be it facing profound beasts or evil men, we can rely on each other. It will be much safer. If we get any precious drops, it will also be split equally with absolutely no bias."

The reason they were inviting Yun Che so extensively was obviously because Yun Che's profound strength was at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm. Yun Che turned back around and said indifferently, "There's no need."

At that, he began to walk forward on his own, moving towards the depths of the wasteland.

"Tch, he actually dares to enter the Wasteland of Death all by himself, no wonder so many die in there every year." Within the group, a youth with a longsword strapped to his back spoke lowly.

"He looks to be at most seventeen or eighteen years old, but has actually attained the fourth level of

the True Profound Realm. He should be someone from some large sect, eh?”

“So what if he’s from a large sect! In this Wasteland of Death, will the profound beasts and evil men who will kill him care about where he was born? The more he’s born to a large family in some large sect, the more likely he’ll be carrying large quantities of profound coins, medicine, precious weapons and the like, so the more likely he’ll catch the attention of those evil men..... I bet he won’t last till sunset.”

“Alright, there’s no need to mind others’ business. We’ve already made all the necessary preparations; after we gather

twenty people, we'll set out."

As Yun Che progressed forward, he met three groups in succession that wanted to invite him into their adventuring groups; one of which was even a small-scale mercenary troop, yet he rejected them all.

Moving ahead one and a half kilometers, everything was still at a dead calm. After one and a half kilometers, Yun Che, who was still walking, suddenly stopped in his tracks as his gaze shifted to the right. At this time, behind the black boulder on his right, which was as tall as two people in height, a grey shadow rushed out, accompanied by a brutal howl. It threw itself at him, as its ghastly sharp claws emitted a cold light.

Astonishingly, it was only a low-leveled profound beast – Wild Wolf.

“You’re seeking death!”

Yun Che stood unmoving in his original spot. As the Wild Wolf came pouncing at him, he stretched out his right arm abruptly, sweeping the palm of his hand at the Wild Wolf’s head. With only the sound of a single “snap”, the Wild Wolf’s neck was crushed instantly. After being sent flying far with a slap in the midst of blood-curdling shrieks, its entire body twitched violently, and then stilled.

Behind the black boulder, another Wild Wolf that was about to hurl towards him seemed to be

intimidated as it took a step back in fear and all the hairs on its body stood up like needles. Immediately, it raised its head high in wolf song, craning its neck in a prolonged howl. Instantly, howls came from all around and not long after, around ten Wild Wolves came rushing from all directions, pouncing straight at Yun Che.

Yun Che's expression did not change. Rather, he allowed these Wild Wolves to come hurtling towards him. After which, his limbs swung out simultaneously as phoenix fire danced in the breeze. Whenever these Wild Wolves came into contact with his fist, foot or Phoenix Flame, they all perished in an instant. For a moment, wolf carcasses flew in all directions, and



waves of bitter cries resounded continuously. Within a few breaths of time, a dozen or so wolves fell disorderly around Yun Che, becoming all sorts of warped, shattered wolf carcasses.

“Too weak, it’s impossible to get any experience from this sort of place. I’m only wasting my time.”

Yun Che clapped the back of his hand. Staring at the shady forest ahead, he quickened his steps and rushed into the depths of the Wasteland of Death.

# Chapter 171:

## Ironback Blue Wolf

In the surrounding fifteen kilometers, there were basically only Nascent Profound Beasts. After Yun Che ventured fifteen kilometers in, scattered or grouped up True Profound Beasts began appearing in his line of sight. The terrain also grew uneven as all sorts of dead trees and low mounds became increasingly dense.

Just as the rumors said, the profound beasts here were extremely frenzied in nature. If they saw a human, they would pounce and assault that person as if they were enemies who could never co-

exist under the same sky. All those that he met initially were low-level True Profound Beasts, and they were not Yun Che's targets, so during his travel, he avoided those he could avoid, and disposed of those he could not avoid. In this way, he progressed forward without much danger and surprise. As he was passing through a small expanse of a withered dark wood forest, sounds of fighting and human voices suddenly came from ahead, accompanied by the enraged howls of profound beasts.

“Junior Brother Ding, quickly block off its escape route, don't let it escape!”

“It won't hold up for much longer! Don't start taking it easy!”

“Junior Sister Mu, quickly retreat. It’s about to go berserk, and it’ll hurt you!”

Yun Che walked out of the black forest, and not far away, four people were currently besieging a profound beast. The profound beast’s build was comparatively large, and its entire body was covered in armored scales. A single sharp horn protruded from its head, and judging by its imposing air, it should be a high-level True Profound Beast.

The four people who were jointly attacking it were all very young. There were three males and one female; the oldest appeared to be around twenty three years old and around the ninth level of the True

Profound Realm. The other two males also appeared to be a little older than twenty years old and their profound strengths were both at the fifth level of the True Profound Realm. The young lady who was referred to as “Junior Sister Mu” was of a similar age to Yun Che and appeared to be only seventeen or eighteen years old. Her profound strength was also the weakest, having just entered the True Profound Realm.

From how they addressed one another, they should be from the same sect. Their age also matched their cultivation of profound strength. The sect they belong to must also be quite powerful; it should at least be famous in a particular region, else they wouldn't

dare to rush into such a deep place with just four people.

As that young lady's profound strength was the weakest, she was protected by the other three, stood in the back, and would only join the attack occasionally under the safest circumstances. The surrounded single-horned beast had thick flesh, coarse skin, and the protection of armored scales. Even so, it couldn't endure against the combined attack of four profound practitioners of the True Profound Realm, not to mention that one of them was a strong being of the True Profound Realm's ninth level. Its body was already covered in blood and scars, and its counterattacks were growing weaker. Finally, it directly gave up retaliating and struggled in an

attempt to escape.

“Hmph, trying to run!? Take my Wind Cloud Sword Strike!”

With an explosive roar, the eldest young man shouted and vaulted into the air; the long sword in his hands released a ferocious wave of sword force, and sent the single-horned beast which was trying to escape flopping onto the ground with its limbs facing upwards. After he landed, he rushed forward again as if an arrow released from its bowstring; his longsword ruthlessly pierced forward, and pierced through the single-horned beast's throat in a straight line.

The single-horned beast gave a sorrowful roar; after its body

spasmed for a while, there were no longer any signs of movement.

“Wow! Senior Brother Sun, you’re too amazing! Even such a ferocious beast was defeated by just two or three of your attacks.” The name of the young lady who was referred to as “Junior Sister Mu” was Mu Xiaoling. As she looked at the fallen single-horned beast, her eyes sparkled and her face was filled with admiration.

The one who had stabbed the single-horned beast to death was named Sun Zhou. He was the oldest among the four, and was also the one with the highest cultivation. Upon hearing Mu Xiaoling’s words, he laughed and said, “Junior Sister is over-praising me. It’s not that I’m



strong, it's that this profound beast was too weak. Junior Sister's talent is much greater than mine. When you're my age, you'll definitely be able to vanquish this single-horned beast much faster than I did."

His words sounded modest, but hints of smugness flashed through his eyes. He instructed the other two: "Junior Brother Ding, Junior Brother Han, extract its profound core."

Junior Brother Ding and Junior Brother Han quickly moved forward and cut open the carcass of the single-horned beast. Not long after, they extracted the profound core with much experience.

"Mn, including this profound core,

our mission this time will be completed with another thirteen True Profound Beast's profound cores. I believe this time, we're bound to be the first group to finish this mission. Master will definitely praise us greatly." Taking the profound core, Sun Zhou spoke with a face filled with pride.

The two junior brothers immediately went up and cajoled, "This was all because Senior Brother Sun is brave and powerful. Otherwise, even with three more days of time, we wouldn't be able to finish the task. We're really too lucky to be grouped with Senior Brother Sun."

Senior Brother Sun nodded, and said with an expression full of

pride, “Not at all, not at all, this was the fruit of our combined efforts. Both junior brothers are still young; your future accomplishments definitely won’t pale in comparison to mine....Oh?”

At this moment, Sun Zhou suddenly saw Yun Che, who was walking out of the withered dark wood forest towards them. He originally only saw a single silhouette that had even come forth alone, so his heart immediately grew vigilant..... because whoever dared to come here alone, was either an expert or an idiot. But after realizing Yun Che’s age and scouting out his profound strength, he laughed disdainfully, and said in a low voice, “It is yet another reckless fool.”

Just after his low sneer, Junior Brother Ding suddenly gave a low gasp from beside him, pointed at Yun Che, and said agitatedly, “Senior Brother Sun, quick..... Quick, look at his right hand! It’s a purple..... A purple spatial ring!”

In the midst of his cry, Sun Zhou’s gaze fell on Yun Che’s right hand, then stared unwaveringly at the purple spot of light on his finger; he was unable to tear his eyes off of it for a long while as his gaze revealed a deep sense of greed.

“Purple spatial ring? Is that better than our spatial ring?” Mu Xiaoling lifted the yellow spatial ring on her hand, and asked in puzzlement.

“Of course it’s better, and it’s much

better!” Junior Brother Han said in a low agitated voice, “Our spatial ring only has a few cubic meters of storage space, whereas the purple spatial ring is said to have many hundreds of cubic meters of storage space, and its price exceeds fifty million yellow profound coins! It’s absolutely not something our yellow spatial ring can hold a torch to. In my entire life, I’ve barely seen any purple spatial rings. This fellow must be some disciple of some large clan. Who knows how much good stuff is in his purple spatial ring.”

Senior Brother, should we....” Junior Brother Han said while his hand imitated a cutting motion.

Sun Zhou had long had this same

idea the moment he saw the purple spatial ring. The person wearing the purple spatial ring was not only merely at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm, he was also travelling alone. It was practically as if the heavens had dropped a large fat sheep at their feet. If it was outside, he would cease to dare to have any weird thoughts, as the owner of a purple spatial ring would definitely have very large influence. However, in this Wasteland of Death, the number of people who died here every year due to plundering and pillaging were too many to count. Therefore, it could be said that killing him here did not put them at any risk at all.

That Sun Zhou was about to nod

when Mu Xiaoling moved closer and said, fuming, “Junior Brother Han, how could you have such thoughts! We come from a prestigious sect, and we came to train, not to kill and pillage like bandits replete with vice! If you really dare to do this, I’ll definitely tell Master! If Master knows of this, he’ll definitely punish you ruthlessly. Who knows, he might even chase you out of the sect!”

Sun Zhou’s expression changed as he immediately nodded earnestly and said “What Junior Sister said is right; Junior Brother Han, how could you have such despicable thoughts! Of this matter, Junior Sister won’t agree to it and neither will I. If you really dare to conspire against him, I’ll be the first one to

block you.”

“Senior Brother Sun is still the most upstanding.” Mu Xiaoling said in adoration.

Junior Brother Han shrank back, and said in embarrassment, “Senior Brother, Junior Sister, don’t get angry, I..... I was only joking offhandedly, only joking.”

Upon receiving Mu Xiaoling’s praise, Sun Zhou’s back became a little more upright, and he snorted coldly, “We come from North River’s number one sect, the Profound Sword Faction, and upholding our sect’s reputation should be our foremost priority in doing anything. When we are journeying, not only should we not



oppress the weak or be wicked, when we encounter the weak, we should also take the initiative to help. This young brother's profound energy is only at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm, yet he came here all alone. It's simply too dangerous. At this moment, we should step forward and help him instead."

While they were speaking, Yun Che had already walked into their vicinity. Sun Zhou took two steps forward, and said with righteousness, "This young brother, this should be your first time in the Wasteland of Death, eh? Coming to this place alone is simply too dangerous, so why not join us? We're all young, so we can communicate easily and take care

of each other too.”

Yun Che shot a glance at him; seeing the greed hidden in the depths of his eyes, he then laughed coldly to himself as he laid down two words indifferently, “No need”. Then, without turning back, he continued forward.

“Tch, Senior Brother Sun only righteously reached out in consideration for his life, yet this fellow actually doesn’t know what’s good for him. Just wait for your death!” Upon seeing that Yun Che actually refused, Junior Brother Ding said in disdain.

Sun Zhou didn’t say anything. The muscles on his face twitched a little and he stared at Yun Che’s back,

unwilling to give up..... With Mu Xiaoling here, he immediately gave up the thought of killing Yun Che and robbing him. He had prepared to pull Yun Che into the fray, then find a chance to pull Yun Che into traveling alone with him. After killing him, he would cover it up as a death caused by profound beasts, and he would successfully obtain the purple spatial ring. Little did he expect that this person would still reject him even though he had purposely revealed his profound strength, which was of the ninth level of the True Profound Realm, while he was speaking just now.

“Fourth level of the True Profound Realm? He looks to be about the same age as me, but his profound strength is actually so high!”

Thinking of Sun Zhou's words just now, Mu Xiaoling said in surprise, "He also uses such a precious spatial ring, so he should definitely be from some large sect or clan."

Sun Zhou turned around and said in scorn, "Should be. But the people I look down the most on are these disciples from large sects and clans. It's because their profound strengths are all forcefully brought about by all sorts of medicines, and is not at all firm, unlike us who cultivate it step by step. Although his profound energy is at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm, if he fights, he might not even be able to beat junior sister."

"A~~WOO~~~"

Just as Sun Zhou was speaking, an anguished wolf howl suddenly came from the black forest behind him. Subsequently, an enormous blue silhouette abruptly scuttled out from the black forest, rushing straight at the group of four.

This blue silhouette was over three meters tall; its eyes were red, and its claws were like steel hooks. Its back was thick grey and its entire body gave off an extremely berserk aura. The four had just raised their weapons and prepared to go into battle, but when they saw the light blue silhouette's complete appearance, their faces instantly revealed extreme expressions of fright.

“Iron..... Ironback Blue Wolf!”

“This.... Isn’t this the area for True Profound Beasts? How can a Spirit Profound Beast appear..... Senior Brother, wh..... what should we do?”

“What are you still standing here for! Hurry, flee!” Sun Zhou roared loudly and pulled at Mu Xiaoling while fleeing at the quickest speed possible. Ironback Blue Wolves were actually low-level Spirit Profound Beasts, and was absolutely not something the four of them could handle. Its claws and teeth, which were sharper than fine steel, could easily tear apart their profound defense and bodies.

At Sun Zhou’s loud roar, it was as if Ding and Han awoke from their dreams. They let out strange sounds as they desperately ran backwards.

But how could their speed match up to the Ironback Blue Wolf? In the blink of an eye, the Ironback Blue Wolf had caught up to Junior Brothers Ding and Han. With a snarl, the Ironback Blue Wolf's enormous body sent both of them hurtling onto the floor. With a clap, the wolf's claws pierced into both their bodies as if they were tofu.

Both men let out shrieks that were terrified to the extreme and lost consciousness as the whites of their eyes showed. It was unknown whether this was due to extremely severe injuries or if they had directly fainted.

“Ah!! Senior Brother Ding, Senior Brother Han!!” The blood-curdling screeches from both of them caused

Mu Xiaoling to shriek in fright. Her voice also caused the Ironback Blue Wolf's eyes to fixate on her and Sun Zhou. With a low growl, he bounded at them manically like a streak of blue lightning, and closed the distance between them within the blink of an eye.

“Senior.....Senior brother! What should we..... what should we do....” Mu Xiaoling ran with all her might, but behind her, the menacing aura of death continued to loom closer.

Sun Zhou looked back and realized that the distance between them and the Ironback Blue Wolf was already not more than ten steps. He broke out in cold sweat, clenched his teeth, and then shouted loudly, “Junior sister, stall him first..... I'll



immediately send someone to save you!”

Saying this, he violently pushed Mu Xiaoling backwards, towards the Ironback Blue Wolf, as he ran forward desperately.

“Senior brother.... you!!” Never in her wildest dreams did Mu Xiaoling imagine that just to protect himself, Sun Zhou would push her towards the Ironback Blue Wolf. She fell on the floor and closed her eyes in despair.

Bang!

Roar!!

The feeling of being torn apart by the Ironback Blue Wolf never came. After her despair, she heard a

deafening sound and a series of miserable shrieks. She slowly opened both eyes and saw that in front of her was the back view of a luxuriously clothed youth who carried a colossal iron sword on his back.

And the Ironback Blue Wolf was already beyond ten meters away, rolling around haggardly on the ground.

It was him.... Looking at his back, she remembered that he was the youth who had just been walking away.

The Sun Zhou who was running away turned his head back and saw this scene. For a moment, he sent a wave of barraging insults, "This

fellow, he's really seeking death....  
At least it allowed daddy here some  
time to escape! It seems like even  
the heavens don't wish to see me  
die."

The Ironback Blue Wolf which was  
knocked away climbed back up  
quickly, its bloodshot eyes staring  
straight at Yun Che. It exploded in  
an even more manic aura and with  
a roar, its aura stifling, it came  
pouncing over, high in the sky from  
twenty meters away.

Furrowing his eyebrows, Yun Che  
suddenly jumped up when it came  
close and leapt above the Ironback  
Blue Wolf. Pulling the colossal  
sword from his back, he went  
hurtling down with a loud bang...

SNAP!

The reason the Ironback Blue Wolf was named thus was because its back was as tough as iron, and was also the strongest defensive area on its body. But under the attack from Yun Che's heavy sword, its steel-like backbone was smashed in an instant with a sharp, clear, ear-splitting sound.

# Chapter 172: Black Dragon Bandit Group

With an anguished wail, the Ironback Blue Wolf fell heavily towards the ground and rolled far away like a rubber ball. After which, it stayed paralyzed there, and there were no longer any signs of movement. Underneath its body, a large pool of blood slowly began to spread.

Even though it was a Spirit Profound Beast, it still perished immediately upon a single hit with all his strength. This was enough to show how strong and terrifying the

heavy sword was. Yun Che strapped the heavy sword back to his back and shot a glance at the quivering Mu Xiaoling. He did not even look at the Ironback Blue Wolf's carcass as he walked straight ahead onto his original path.

After quite a while, Mu Xiaoling finally recovered from the enormous shock and fright. As she watched Yun Che's figure walk further and further away, her voice trembled as she said, "Thank... thank you."

In another direction, the Sun Zhou who had already escaped a considerable distance stopped where he was, stunned by the scene he had just witness. No matter what, he just couldn't believe that

the terrifying Ironback Blue Wolf was actually purged by just a single attack from the youth at only the fourth level of the True Profound Realm.

Unless that wasn't really a Ironback Blue Wolf, and was actually a True Profound Beast that looked extremely similar? If not, how would it appear in the threshold of the True Profound beasts, and actually get thrashed by someone of only the fourth level of the True Profound Realm..... Thinking to here, Sun Zhou felt a sudden wave of regret. Watching Mu Xiaoling, who was getting up from the floor, he gritted his teeth and quickly ran back. He shouted in a loud voice from far away: "Junior Sister Mu, are you alright? Did you get

injured?”

Seeing Sun Zhou run over, all the admiration in Mu Xiaoling's eyes disappeared; all that was left was deep disappointment. She pushed Sun Zhou's outstretched hand away violently and angrily said, "Senior Brother Sun, you've made me too disappointed in you. It's fine if you don't bring me with you while escaping, but you actually pushed me towards the Ironback Blue Wolf. You..... you're practically not a human being. I've been wrong about you all these years!"

"Junior sister, you're mistaken. You've completely misunderstood me!" Sun Zhou said with a wronged expression on his face, "We've been in the same sect all these years, do



you still not understand what sort of person I am? Even if I die, I still wouldn't let a single hair on Junior sister come to harm. When I pushed Junior sister just now, it was to push you away, and then attract the Ironback Blue Wolf into chasing me alone! I was prepared to use my own life to save Junior sister's, yet Junior sister actually misunderstood me this way...."

Mu Xiaoling laughed coldly, "Do you take me for a three year old child? You'd find better luck tricking a ghost!"

Sun Zhou instantly lifted two fingers and furrowed his eyebrows, and said very solemnly, "I swear to my Sun family ancestors, if any of what I'd said just now was a lie, let

I, Sun Zhou, get hit by lightning,  
and die a painful death!”

Hearing Sun Zhou lay down his  
toxic oath, Mu Xiaoling’s heart  
swayed for a moment. Thinking of  
Sun Zhou’s past actions, as well as  
the words he had spoken, it didn’t  
seem like a definite impossibility.

Thinking of this, even though she  
didn’t believe him completely, her  
heart was still somewhat  
comforted. Additionally, her other  
senior brothers were fainted on the  
ground and it was unknown if they  
were alive, so the only person she  
could depend on now was Sun  
Zhou. At once, her expression  
softened a little as she said,  
“Alright, I’ll believe you for now.  
Let’s go check up on senior

brothers Ding and Han for now....”

She had just finished speaking when a series of nearing footsteps suddenly came from the black wood forest area behind them.

“Mn, it’s definitely the cry of the Ironback Blue Wolf, it should be in front.”

“It’s too scary to enter the Spirit Profound Beast’s area. Picking off the Spirit Profound Beasts which have run into the True Profound Beast’s area is so easy and refreshing, hahahaha.”

“Eh? Why is the sound of the Ironback Blue Wolf gone? Could it be that it escaped far far away?”

As the sound grew close, a twelve

person group also appeared in their line of sight. The first person looked to be about forty years old and held a broadsword. The aura he had no intention of concealing was that of the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm. The person behind him was around the same age and wore animal hide. His profound energy was similarly of the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm. The ten people behind had profound strengths that were concentrated between the fifth to tenth level of the True Profound Realm. The picture of a Black Dragon was emblazoned on the shoulders of all twelve men.

Within the outer ring of the Wasteland of Death, this was a rather strong group.

Within the Wasteland of Death, anyone who met any stranger must be on high alert. Mu Xiaoling and Sun Zhou, who had just calmed down, suddenly stood and raised their guard. And after they saw the pattern on their shoulder, their faces simultaneously revealed expressions of terror..... A terror that surpassed even the time they'd met the Ironback Blue Wolf.

“Black.... Black Dragon Bandit Group!”

“Quick.... Let's escape quick!”

Just when Sun Zhou and Mu Xiaoling were preparing to escape at top speed, a shout come from the shady forests behind them, “You two, daddy here commands you to

stop.”

Upon hearing this voice, both their bodies stiffened, but they did not stop. Rather, they picked up their speed and continued running forward. They had not come to the Wasteland of Death many times before, but the bad reputation of the Black Dragon Bandit Group preceded them. This bandit group did not have many members, but each of them were experts, and their methods were extremely vicious. Every time they robbed, the victims were always killed too; never had they let a single one live.

“Dammit, these two whelps are still trying to escape!!”

The mouth of the middle aged man

in the lead parted as he stepped on the ground. Profound energy exploded as his entire person lunged out like a large bird and suddenly lept over the heads of both Sun Zhou and Mu Xiaoling, landing in front of them. After turning around, he turned back to slash upwards.

“Senior brother, let’s fight it out to the death with them!!!”

Mu Xiaoling lifted her sword, clenched her teeth, and rushed towards the bandit leader’s long sword. However, a first level in the True Profound Realm truly had no chance against another who was in the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Just by going face-to-face with him, the vibration was enough

to send her tumbling back, falling on the floor and unable to get up for a long while. Sun Zhou also parried a few hits with all he had, but was also sent quaking on the ground with a hit as his longsword flew far far away.

“Oh! Ninth level in the True Profound Realm, not bad, you must be considered a genius. What a pity, hehe....” The bandit’s leader approached with a knife as he began to laugh maniacally.

“Leader Black Dragon is mighty, Leader Black Dragon is mighty.” The goons at the back began to holler in succession.

“Hoh, there’s actually a spatial ring on him. Looks like it didn’t waste



half a day's worth of energy from your great lord. Hand over all your spatial rings, as well as anything valuable you have on you. Daddy here might just consider leaving your corpses whole. If not, hehe, daddy here has countless of ways of making you regret being born in this world."

Even though they had just nearly escaped the Ironback Blue Wolf's sharp claws, they now encountered the even more terrifying Black Dragon Bandit Group. Mu Xiaoling's heart was already devoid of hope. Sun Zhou, who was beside her, struggled to get up. Initially, she thought Sun Zhou was going to protest and fight for his life, yet she saw him kneel in front of Black Dragon with a 'plop' and place his

rings by Black Dragon's feet in excessive panic as he kowtowed while desperately begging for his life, "Great.... Great Lord Black Dragon, your honorable name has been known to me for a long time, your reputation is well-known to all. I.... I've placed all the items on me here. Altogether, there's six thousand yellow profound coins as well as nineteen Profound Recovering Pellets and thirty eight True Profound Beast's profound cores. I present all of these to Great Lord to show my piety for Great Lord. May Great Lord spare my life. I don't want to die, don't want to die!!"

"HAHAHAHA.... What a despicable wretch." Vice-leader White Dragon and the ten other group members

behind them all started to laugh maniacally in scorn.

Senior brother Sun, you..... you.....”  
Mu Xiaoling’s little face paled as she lost all faith, and her heart turned cold towards this senior brother she had usually admired.

Hearing Mu Xiaoling’s voice, it was as if Sun Zhou had just woken from a dream. He pulled one of her arms and said impatiently, “Right..... right! Great Lord, this is my junior sister, she’s called Mu Xiaoling. She has quite a fresh appearance, and is still a virgin up til today. I offer her to Great Lord, may Great Lord enjoy her as much as you please..... May Great Lord spare my lowly life on account of my piety. From now on, I’ll be deeply grateful, and I won’t

ever forget your grace.”

“You..... you..... you’re a beast, a bastard! You’re not even human..... you.....” Mu Xiaoling shook all over. The her who was deficient vocabulary-wise already could not find any words to insult this nasty person who had shown his true nature. Her face was ashen and her heart was filled with grief.

“HAHAHAHA!” Black Dragon laughed manically, “I’ve seen many miserable wretches, but one as contemptible as you..... Tsk tsk, there are really few. However, your piety is really insincere. This lass is someone I, your great lord, seized myself. After a while, your great lord will naturally enjoy it; it’s not something you delivered. Taking

this daddy's spoils of war to present it to daddy here to show piety, do you take your daddy here to be a fool? Such a useless thing, why would I still keep your life for? Go beg for forgiveness from the king of hell!"

Saying that, Black Dragon took a step forward and was about to chop towards Sun Zhou's neck.

"Great Lord! W... Wait! Wait!"  
Seeing the raised chopper, Sun Zhou nearly pissed his pants in fright. He kowtowed repeatedly to beg for his life, "I have a big bargain! It's absolutely worth it; if these few honorable lords kill this man, it'll definitely bring you more than a year.... No, three years' worth of profit. If great lord would just

agree to spare my life, I will immediately tell these few honorable lords about this large bargain.”

“Oh?” Black Dragon withdrew his broadsword and looked at him with narrowed eyes, “A large transaction? Let’s hear about it, if it’s really big enough, hehe, I might just spare your doggy life. After all, taking your cheap life would dirty this daddy’s hands.”

“Thank.... Thank you, great lord.” Although he was facing Black Dragon’s extremely humiliating words, Sun Zhou heaved a large sigh of relief instead and reached his hand out to point north, “There, that person! Just now, I clearly saw a purple spatial ring on that

person's hand. It's purple, definitely. My fellow apprentices and I saw it very clearly, and not only is that person traveling alone, his profound strength is also only at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm."

This area was more spacious and Yun Che did not walk quickly. Following in the direction Sun Zhou had pointed in, they could clearly see Yun Che's distant silhouette.

Looking at Sun Zhou's despicable face, he definitely did not have the guts to lie to them. Black Dragon's eyes moved, and he suddenly waved, "Bring these two along, go!!"

Yun Che walked slowly, thinking about how he should perfectly

execute his training journey. In his contemplation, Jasmine's sadistic voice sounded in his heart, "Looks like a group of people are specially coming to seek death."

Yun Che paused in his steps and he disgruntledly lamented in his heart..... Sigh, I came from so far away just to train, yet I have to be waylaid by these trash.

Just when he was sighing in his heart, the sound of chaotic footsteps came from behind him. Very quickly, he was surrounded by a dozen or so people. Behind them, he also saw the restrained Sun Zhou and Mu Xiaoling.

"You're right, it's him! It's exactly him!" Sun Zhou pointed at him and



roared in excitement, as if he had just found a new lease of life.

“Sor... Sorry.” Mu Xiaoling’s face was already stained with tears and she lowered her head, not daring to look at Yun Che. She had just been saved by him, yet here she was again, giving him trouble by causing him to fall into the hands of the Black Dragon Bandit Group...

“Leader, look at his left hand! It’s really a purple spatial ring!”

“Rich! We’ve struck gold! Once we kill him, we’ll have enough to live free and unfettered lives for the better half of the year!  
HAHAHAHA!”

Looking at the purple light on Yun

Che's left hand, everyone in the Black Dragon Bandit Group grew extremely excited. One of them, who carried a large sword on his shoulder and wore a black eye-patch walked out, and said to Black Dragon, "Leader, this fellow's young, and his profound strength is only at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm. There's no need for you to take action, just watch your subordinate take him down!"

"One Eyed Dragon, I think you've taken a fancy to that sword on his back." Black Dragon grinned.

One Eyed Dragon chuckled, "This fellow's sword is actually bigger than mine, and he still carries it so arrogantly on his back. Tsk tsk, as someone who uses a purple spatial

ring, the sword on him must be quite extraordinary. I've been using this sword for a good many years, and I've killed many with it. It's long been blunt and should be substituted already, heh heh.... If I don't get him to obediently kneel down and shout 'Grandfather!', and hand over even his undergarments, I, your father, will walk on my hands in future."

In between hoots of laughter, One Eyed Dragon strode towards Yun Che. Brandishing the large sword on his shoulder, he stuck it deep into the ground in front of him, laughing sinisterly, "Kid, you could have gone anywhere to play, yet you actually dared to come into your grandfathers' territory. Would you like your grandfather to be a bit

more courteous towards you, or less?”

Yun Che tapped his chin, and asked worriedly, “What will make you courteous, and what will not?”

“It’s extremely simple. As long as you listen obediently, us grandfathers will naturally be courteous. However, if you’re disobedient, hehe.....” His gaze fell on the heavy sword behind Yun Che, “If you want grandfather to be more courteous towards you, then you should first throw your sword over for grandfather to play with. If grandfather’s happy, he might just leave you a pair of underwear, hahahaha!”

A wave of laughter rumbled

throughout the Black Dragon Bandit Group.

“This One Eyed Dragon has really taken a fancy to that sword.”

“Tsk tsk, that sword’s so huge, it has to be at least one hundred or one fifty kilograms.”

“One hundred or one fifty kilograms? Cut the crap. This youngster’s so smooth-skinned, and his profound strength is only at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm. If it were really one hundred or one fifty kilos, how would he be able to keep carrying it on his back? I think it’s only the sword’s appearance that’s big, and it’s merely an empty husk. It’s at most fifty or so kilos, maybe it isn’t even

fifty kilograms. He probably only carries it on his back to scare others.”

“You want to play with my sword?” Upon hearing One Eyed Dragon’s words, Yun Che starting to laugh strangely. He stretched his hand out to take the Overlord’s Colossal Sword from his back. It wasn’t too large an action either. With a passing throw, he threw it towards One Eyed Dragon, “Since you want to play, then I’ll let you play. Catch~ it~ well~”

Yun Che’s act of throwing the sword was nimble, it was flippant and simple, as if he was conveniently throwing pebbles. With this throw, the Overlord’s Colossal Sword also “nimblely” flew

towards One Eyed Dragon.

“I’ll consider you smart!” One Eyed Dragon laughed loudly. He stepped forward as if he couldn’t wait any longer, and reached his hand out to catch the heavy sword that was thrown at him...

# Chapter 173: Group Extermination!

One Eyed Dragon's hand accurately grabbed onto the wide hilt of the heavy sword. However, before he even had the chance to laugh out any sound, he already felt the heavy pressure of a weight around one thousand five hundred kilograms suddenly come from his arm.

Crack!

The weight of one thousand nine hundred and fifty kilograms, coupled with it falling, instantly fractured and crushed One Eyed Dragon's arm. The momentum of the heavy sword did not falter, and



landed directly on his chest with a “bang” sound. One Eyed Dragon was violently smashed onto the ground while screaming out in agony. Under the heavy pressure of the heavy sword, as much as half of his body had even sunk down into the earth beneath him with a dull rumble. More than ten bones in his chest broke at the same time as he sprayed out a mouthful of blood with great intensity.

Actually, if One Eyed Dragon had raised all of his profound strength, prepared his profound energy for defense, and adopted a proper posture, even if he didn’t end up receiving the sword, he wouldn’t have been smashed half to death. However, when receiving a sword thrown so casually by a youth, who

would raise all their profound strength to receive it.

The group of Black Dragon Bandits, currently in the midst of laughter, were all struck dumb, and their eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets. Yun Che crossed his chest and laughed coldly: “Is my sword fun?”

“You..... You.....” The heavy sword still laid heavily on his chest, resulting in a concavity in One Eyed Dragon’s chest. He was completely suffocated, unable of taking even a breath. As his eyes widened, he uttered the two words with much difficulty before his eyes rolled white and he lost consciousness.

The sword that laid on One Eyed

Dragon's chest seemed more like a small heavy hill than a sword.

Everyone could not comprehend the scene in front of their eyes as they stared for a long while without coming back to senses. Black Dragon stared widely, as he started to feel extremely cautious towards this youth who should have been a big fat prey..... The fact that the sword could smash One Eyed Dragon, who had a profound strength at the fifth level of the True Profound Realm, meant that it must be at least a thousand five hundred kilograms.

This kind of weight made Black Dragon question himself as to whether he could swing the sword with ease. Clearly the youth was

only of the fourth level of the True Profound Realm; however, he could throw the sword without even flinching..... It meant that he had an amazing arm strength.

“Everyone..... Kill him!”

Black Dragon who had survived for ten years in the Wasteland of Death that was constantly shrouded with death. Naturally, he was not a rash and foolish person. Even though Yun Che’s profound strength appeared to be lower than his, that did not make him lower his guard. His cautiousness caused him to give out the command for the entire group to attack.

The Black Dragon Bandits that were surrounding Yun Che suddenly

came to their senses. They shouted out loud, picked up their weapons and began to attack. Mu Xiaoling, who was placed on the ground, screamed out loud and shut her eyes, unwilling to see the miserable scene of Yun Che being chopped into pieces.

This profound strength of these bandits were at least at the fifth level of the True Profound Realm. The stronger ones were up to the tenth level. In the outer region of the Wasteland of Death, they were a considerably frightening group of bandits. Yun Che's face darkened as he attacked with his right hand. His profound energy surged and he retrieved the Overlord's Colossal Sword. Holding it horizontally in his hand, he spun on the ground with

it.....

Whoosh!!

The simple spinning of the heavy sword created a massive tornado, causing sand to fly all around. The Black Dragon Bandits could not close in on him and they all felt an unavoidable storm approaching. The strong winds blew them all into the air and flipped them several times in the air before heavily tossing them to the ground. None managed to avoid the storm and several had been disarmed as their weapons were swept far away.

“Wh..... What!!” Black Dragon and his vice leader White Dragon retreated several steps. They were visibly shocked. That was such a

frightening and tyrannical swing. It did not hit anyone nor had any profound strength been used. Merely waving the sword caused everyone to be flipped onto the ground!

The next scene made Black Dragon and White Dragon so afraid that they nearly lost their nerve.

Yun Che simply did not even want to waste another second on these people, so he smashed his great sword onto the ground; the body of the sword ignited into flames, and on Yun Che's forehead, the imprint of the golden phoenix let off a golden radiance.

“Star... Scorching... Demon... Lotus!!!”

As Yun Che muttered under his breath, his body became surrounded with the flames of the phoenix which instantly grew several meters in height before scattering from his body and forming a Demonically Beautiful Lotus. The Lotus instantly engulfed a twenty meter radius with Yun Che at its center, mercilessly burning all the fallen Black Dragon Bandits trapped within with the fatal Phoenix Flame.

Many horrible shrieks could be heard from within the gigantic Flame Lotus. The shrieks sounded ghastly, as though it were cries that came from the depths of hell. However, the Star Scorching Demon Lotus did not weaken; instead, it continued burning mercilessly at



full force. The layers of fire soon grew larger and larger before turning into another gigantic Flame Lotus. It trapped each and every person who was tossing and turning around in pain and despair, before eventually turning them into ashes...

This was the second time Yun Che had used the Star Scorching Demon Lotus. However, the strength of the Lotus this time was several times stronger than the first time.

Black Dragon and White Dragon had robbed and killed numerous people over the past ten years. The word “coward” could not be linked to them at all. However, as they saw their lackeys being burnt into slag in front of their eyes, their faces

turned as white as sheet. Their teeth chattered and their legs trembled as all the muscles on their body also spasmed.

“Big..... Big Bro.....” White Dragon stood in front of Black Dragon, and said in a trembling voice.

“Leave..... Let’s leave quickly!!!”

Black Dragon retreated a few steps, before turning around abruptly and escaping. White Dragon was stunned for a moment before escaping himself..... Two middle-aged profound practitioners with profound strengths of at least the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm, whose blade tasted blood every single day, were actually scared out of their wits by a youth

who was only at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm and had to flee from him.

Before they were even able to run very far, a figure had shot flying out from within the Flame Lotus and instantly appeared above of them. Carrying a heavy pressure and force, the colossal heavy sword smashed down from above their heads.

Black Dragon and White Dragon turned around and shouted out loud. Both their long swords were infused with all their profound strength to block the hit.

One who was only at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm against two others who were at the

first level of the Spirit Profound Realm..... This was something capable of only people who were either crazy or no longer valued their lives. Facing the two who were receiving his attack at full strength, Yun Che merely shifted his gaze slightly; he had no intention to dodge. He attacked directly with full strength, and his sword's momentum increased tens of times instantaneously.....

If he was holding any other type of weapon, even with the Great Way of the Buddha, he wouldn't dare face them head on.

But he was wielding a heavy sword.

In a direct confrontation, what other weapon could possibly

compare to the heavy sword!!

Three Dragon Blood Pellets brought about great improvement to his body and raised his profound strength. Furthermore, he strongly believed that he was now able to receive Ling Jie's Heaven's Might Sword Formation which had previously injured him badly with ease, so how could two people in the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm even be of any trouble.

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!!”

Clang!!!!

With an incomparably ear-piercing deafening sound, Black Dragon's and White Dragon's long swords both broke into several pieces.

Under the huge impact, both of them were like leather balls as they rolled into the distance. When they eventually stopped, both of them clutched their right wrists while screaming in pain..... Their right hands had been shattered from the flesh, to their tendons, to their bones. Blood was flowing continuously and they were nearly crippled. Their bodies were so numb that they could not stand up for a long while. Their entire body's bone structure nearly broke apart under the impact of the collision.

Yun Che somersaulted backwards before landing and retreated a few steps, which reduced all the pressure on him instantly.

Spirit Profound Realm. When he

first entered Blue Wind Profound Palace, it was such a high level at that time. The entire Blue Wind Profound Palace only had three disciples who had attained that level. It could be said that he did not even have an opportunity to challenge. But now, with one Falling Moon Sinking Star from his heavy sword, he easily defeated two people of the Spirit Profound Level.

Under the “Evil God’s Secret Arts”, his profound strength rose tremendously with the berserk attribute. The “Great Way of The Buddha” provided him with a body that could go against heavens. The “World Ode of the Phoenix” provided him with the ability to destroy. “Prison God Sirius’ Tome” gave his heavy sword divine

might.....

Of Yun Che's four types of energy, the first two originated from True Gods of the Primordial Era — The Evil God and the Rage God. And the other two originated from divine beasts of the Primordial Era — The Phoenix and Sirius, the Sky Wolf. With these four great strengths gathering on one mortal body, it provided Yun Che with the power to challenge someone who was an entire realm above him.

It also destined that he would definitely be a shocking talent of this era.

To the current Yun Che, don't even mention two people at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm,



even if it were a normal person in the fourth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, he still had a chance of victory.

Without giving Black Dragon and White Dragon the chance to breathe, Yun Che stepped forward, lifting the heavy sword, and smashed it towards the temporarily paralyzed Black Dragon and White Dragon.

“Hold..... Hold on.....”

Black Dragon’s pupils contracted. Before he had finished what he wanted to say, Yun Che’s heavy sword had already struck onto his and White Dragon’s body.

Bang!!!

At the loud noise, both their bodies were simultaneously severed as blood splattered all around. They died without a whole corpse.

Yun Che's face did not change as he withdrew his heavy sword. Without looking at the corpses, he slowly walked towards Sun Zhou and Mu Xiaoling. He stopped just before the two apprentices and looked at them expressionlessly.

“Thank..... Thank you, great benefactor, for saving my life yet again.”

The scary Black Dragon Bandit Group had turned into ashes in the blink of an eye under the hands of this youth in front of them. Even their leader had lost his life almost

instantaneously. The scene was a huge blow to the young girl, and made her stammer in front of Yun Che. She looked at Yun Che with half admiration and gratitude, and half fear.

“Thank you..... Thank you for your great kindness, oh Great Benefactor!” Sun Zhou hurriedly shouted as well with a quiver.

Yun Che closed his eyes and said mildly: “It was you who lured them to me right?”

This sentence made Sun Zhou sweat bullets as he shook his head frantically: “NONONONO!!! Benefactor..... Oh please hear me out! Just now, me and my junior fell into the hands of these evil people.

I was afraid they would harm me and my junior. I had no choice but to do it. Luckily, benefactor was incredible and exterminated these evil people. Oh great benefactor, please forgive this foolish one for his mistakes. Please let us go. Me and my junior sister would definitely remember this kindness for all of our lives.”

“Oh? Really?” Yun Che laughed coldly as he eyed Mu Xiaoling. The corners of his mouth slightly lifted and he suddenly looked exceptionally lecherous: “Your junior sister, she doesn’t look that bad. She’s probably a virgin, right?”

With Yun Che’s words coupled with his expression, how could Sun Zhou not understand it. He replied

enthusiastically without thinking:  
“Yes! Yes! My junior sister is still a virgin to date..... If benefactor is happy, you can enjoy her all you like. I believe she would be willing as well.”

Hearing Sun Zhou words, Mu Xiaoling was no longer disappointed; she merely felt sad and smiled coldly.

Yun Che’s lecherous gaze vanished immediately. It was replaced with a field of ice as he suddenly went forward to kick Sun Zhou onto the ground before stepping on his neck.

“Benefactor, you.....” Sun Zhou opened his eyes wide and just as he started speaking, Yun Che used some strength and stepped

downwards, causing his eye to flip white and made him incapable of saying the words after.

“Leaving trash like you alive in this world really pollutes our atmosphere. I’ll just send to you meet the King of Hell!”

As he finished speaking, a “snap” sound came from below his feet. Both Sun Zhou’s eyes bulged outwards and he died immediately.

“AHHHH— “ Mu Xiaoling shrieked out loud with a face full of fear: “You..... You..... Why did you kill him! Even though he’s a despicable and shameless person, he had never killed anyone before..... Surely he does not deserve death..... Why did you kill him?”

Yun Che glanced at her and replied: “This senior of yours, normally at your sect, he’s a person with great personal qualities and liked by others right? However, in the face of death today, he revealed his true nature. Do you think that if I were to let him live, he would allow all these shameless deeds to be known by others? And your other two seniors who came out with you are already dead. The only one remaining who knows the truth is you.”

Hearing to here, Mu Xiaoling’s face had already turned very pale.

“He looked as though he was still lusting after you. Therefore, he definitely would first rape you and then kill you. After that, he would

return to the sect and said that you all were killed by either evil people or profound beasts at the Wasteland of Death..... His deeds would not be exposed and he would still be the admirable Senior in your sect. However, you would be disgraced and killed..... Do you still want to ask me why I want to kill him?”

After finished speaking, Yun Che decided to move on and left northwards.

Mu Xiaoling stayed stunned for quite some time before she slowly crumpled to the ground. She uttered softly: “Thank you.....”



# Chapter 174: Fierce Storm Hawk

“Not only do you not hesitate in killing, your expression did not change either.... Have you killed many in the past?”

Little Fairy’s voice came from somewhere unknown, but it rang near Yun Che’s ears. Yun Che’s footsteps faltered slightly, and he replied, “Indeed, I’ve killed many.... You won’t feel repulsed by me just because of this, will you?”

“You’ve only killed those who are evil, and you even help those who aren’t of your own accord. I won’t feel disgusted by this. However, the

ones who disgust me are those who are irresolute, those who pardon evil on the basis of kindness and benevolence.”

Thinking of Little Fairy’s killing methods that night, Yun Che couldn’t help but shiver. Setting fire with the flame of the phoenix could at least leave some charred debris, but the elderly who died at Little Fairy’s hands that night, died without any remains left behind.....

Yun Che sped up and continued towards the depths of the Wasteland of Death.

The deeper he went, the less people he met. As he neared the fringe of the Spirit Profound Beast’s territory, there were already no practitioners

in sight. At the same time, with each step deeper in, the profound beasts Yun Che met grew increasingly high leveled. Their numbers also grew denser and it gradually began to feel like a strain on him.

BANG BANG BANG BANG.....

A series of explosions and a dozen Armored Lizards were sent flying with a swoop of Yun Che's sword. The defensive armor on their bodies were all smashed to pieces. Yun Che had just withdrawn his sword when yet another dozen or so Armored Lizards appeared from the surroundings. With a frightening sound, they closed in on him.

The strength of each of these

Armored Lizards were equivalent to a profound practitioner at the eighth level of the True Profound Realm.

A sweep of these Armored Lizards' gigantic tails was like that of a mace. Yun Che jumped up, and before he reached the tallest height, he suddenly used "Star God's Broken Shadow", and rushed down in defiance of any physical limitations. Phoenix flame shot out like arrows and instantly knocked over the nearest Armored Lizard.

These Armored Lizards seemed to be ill-fated with the blaze and the lizard that was hit by phoenix fire let out a long, pain-filled screech as its life force quickly diminished. Yun Che's gaze concentrated. Then,

he rushed into the midst of the Armored Lizards like lightning. His body was aflame with phoenix fire and the large sword in his hands became a rising, surging crimson flame dragon. With every fall of his colossal sword, flames shot out in all directions, gradually lighting a large area aflame and quickly melting the defensive armor of each and every Armored Lizard...

In the time it took for a few dozen breaths, Yun Che had made two round trips amidst the Armored Lizards and annihilated all the Armored Lizards which had just swarmed up.

“Phew....”

Yun Che stood his sword on the

ground and exhaled a long breath. After resting for a bit, he resolutely moved onwards and set foot into the Spirit Profound Beast's territory.

Climbing over a low mound, seven Ironback Blue Wolves with ruthless auras appeared in his line of sight. These Ironback Blue Wolves' sense of smell were especially sensitive. The moment they smelled a stranger's scent, seven pairs of blue eyes basically fixated on Yun Che's location at the exact same time. Then, one by one, they howled and rushed up manically.

Seven Ironback Blue Wolves with the strength of a profound practitioner at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm.... This was undoubtedly the greatest line-up

Yun Che had faced up until now.

Yun Che didn't have the slightest intention of backing down. He drew the heavy sword from his back and was about to forge ahead when suddenly, he heard waves of wolf howls that seemed to be in response. Following which, a few dozen light blue shadows appeared from every direction and rushed towards this location.

They were all were Ironback Blue Wolves.

“Fuck.....” For a moment, Yun Che's hands, which were gripping the heavy sword trembled, and cold sweat flowed out. Almost without thinking, he turned tail and fled.... What a joke. He could finish off one

with ease, seven would still be manageable with some effort, and he might even get injured a little. But he shouldn't hope to handle more than ten, and with so many.... the only action for him to take was to flee.

Straight away stepping out of the Spirit Profound Beasts' territory range, the wolf howls behind him slowly died down. Leaning on a rough, dried up tree, Yun Che wiped the cold sweat from his forehead.

"Why are the profound beasts in the Wasteland of Death so concentrated?" Jasmine suddenly asked.

"I've heard that a long, long time ago, this was the Profound Beasts'



territory. Otherwise, this wouldn't have been termed a heaven for profound beasts." Yun Che answered.

"Profound beasts crowd together, crowd out foreigners and stay for a long time without dispersing. This is definitely not without reason. There is an extremely large number of profound beasts in the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range and they are extremely xenophobic. The reason for this is obvious; it is because the aura of the phoenix exists in the heart of this mountain range. As profound beasts, they would naturally fear and revere this sort of aura from a divine beast. The aura of the phoenix will become an existence like a firm conviction in their hearts, and thus,

tens of thousands of beasts will gather and if any human sets foot on their holy ground. They will naturally do their utmost to attack.”

“Yet the profound beasts here actually number more than the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range, and are manically anti-foreigner. Could it be that within the heart of this Wasteland of Death, the godly aura of beasts similar to the phoenix exists?”

Yun Che did not take Jasmine’s words too seriously. He regained his calm, and after making adequate mental preparations, immediately dragged his sword and rushed back right into the Spirit Profound Beasts’ territory.

By then, the Ironback Blue Wolves had already dispersed. This time, without waiting for the Ironback Blue Wolves to start their howls, he rushed up in the blink of an eye.

“Sky Wolf Slash!”

Within Yun Che’s arsenal of profound techniques, the Sky Wolf Slash consumed the most and had the most power, so it had been a carefully kept secret. It was a hidden trump that he had only demonstrated in front of Ling Jie before. With this attack of his sword, it could be said that the momentum was enough to cause the heavens to fall and the earth to rend. In a moment, a long gorge of nearly sixty six meters appeared from flat solid ground. Where the

gorge passed through, the impact caused six stiff Ironback Blue Wolves' bodies to split into twelve sections.

In one move, nearly a third of Yun Che's profound energy was consumed, but he did not retreat. Rather, he rushed into the midst of the Ironback Blue Wolves which were quickly gathering. He brandished the heavy sword extremely berserkly, and along with waves of wolf howls, the entire sky was filled with splattering bloody stars...

After an hour, Yun Che was already two and a half kilometers away from his original position. He sat on the floor and carefully sprinkled the medicinal powder on the big and

small wounds on his body. The longest extended from his left chest all the way to his right rib, that was deep enough to see bone.

And behind him, a few dozen Ironback Blue Wolves' carcasses were strewn evenly within the two and a half kilometers; every wolf carcass was utterly crushed.

After sprinkling the medicinal powder, Yun Che sat on the floor and closed his eyes. The Great Way of The Buddha operated and to the naked eye, the injuries on his body healed up extremely quickly.

He knew clearly in his heart that the area he was currently in, was already the greatest extent he could reach. If he continued forward and

came across a pack of profound beasts whose strength were above the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm, the only thing he could do was run.

After his injuries took a turn for the better, more wolf howls sounded in Yun Che's vicinity. Yun Che opened his eyes, and without even changing his clothes, immediately pulled at the tattered clothes on his body, grabbed his heavy sword, and stared coldly at the dozen or so Ironback Blue Wolves which had yet again appeared out of the blue.

A single Ironback Blue Wolf was not scary; what was scary was a pack of them attacking or a never-ending stream of them.

Two days and two nights passed and Yun Che had fought here in close quarters for two days and nights. Countless Ironback Blue Wolves had died under his sword, but it was almost as if the number of Ironback Blue Wolves here was endless. Everytime he finished killing all the blue wolves and sat down to treat his injuries, another large pack of Ironback Blue Wolves would appear in front of him within a quarter of an hour.

Within these two days and two nights, under the constant thrill of fighting hand-to-hand, and under the pressure of medication, Yun Che's profound strength grew increasingly stable.

Just when Yun Che was about to

consider going further in, a resonant hawk's cry came from above the skies.

Yun Che subconsciously lifted his head. Above the skies to the east, a large, pitch-black hawk was flying at a low altitude. Even with such a large distance between them, Yun Che could clearly see its extremely sharp hawk eyes as well as the cold wintery light reflected on its talons.

But this large hawk, was not a new sight to Yun Che, who shouted its name.....

“Fierce Storm Hawk!”

Because New Moon City's Xiao Branch Sect had been rearing a Fierce Storm Hawk. It was when



Xiao Zaihe mounted that Fierce Storm Hawk that day to give chase to Lan Xueruo and him who were atop the Giant Snow Eagle which ultimately forced them to fall into the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range.

Amongst profound beasts, the Fierce Storm Hawk's strength was akin to that of a practitioner at the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm. However, its strongest aspect wasn't its aggressive nature but rather its air dominating abilities. Whether its flight speed or altitude, no other creature could best it even in the Spirit Profound domain, or even the Earth Profound and Sky Profound domains.

When Yun Che had discovered the

Fierce Storm Hawk, it was gliding, and it was gliding slowly. However, just when it was flying above Yun Che, its gigantic frame suddenly slanted and it fell abruptly as two frightening talons came clawing straight over.

Yun Che didn't think it would actually suddenly attack him, and responded in a flash. He raised the heavy sword and sent a ferocious wave of sword energy rushing towards it.....

However, just when he was swinging his sword, he suddenly realized that these two talons that belonged to the Fierce Storm Hawk seemed to not be heading for him, but rather, for the area to his left. His gaze tilted to the left and he

saw the carcass of an Ironback Blue Wolf that dripped with fresh blood. Immediately, he understood. What it meant to grab was the carcass of the Ironback Blue Wolf!

But Yun Che's heavy sword was already raised in midair and he was unable to withdraw it. It fell ruthlessly on the Fierce Storm Hawk's body and made flip in the air for a few somersaults... while also immediately and thoroughly attracting its hostility.

The Fierce Storm Hawk gave a long cry that was brimming with outrage as it locked its hawk eyes onto Yun Che. The flapping of both of its wings gave rise to a whirlwind that completely enveloped Yun Che as it also personally swooped down like

lightning with its talons aimed at his chest.

The blades of wind that came straight at him slashed many gashes in Yun Che's clothes, but were unable to harm his body. Yun Che neither dodged nor tried to avoid it and welcomed the whirlwind with an explosive strike of his sword.... However, like before, he underestimated the Fierce Storm Hawk's speed, and this was in addition to the stifling of the storm. When this blow exploded, the Fierce Storm Hawk's talons were already close to his chest. The glittering talons were even already pierced into his clothes.....

Bang!!!

The Overlord's Colossal Sword heavily smashed onto the Fierce Storm Hawk's large body; the smash caused it to cry out in agony. It was sent flying while tumbling in midair with immense speed, and it was only after tumbling out for a few tens of loops and almost hitting the ground did it barely manage to stabilize its body in levitation.

This one vicious blow was enough to strike fear into the Fierce Storm Hawk's heart. After swaying in midair for a long while, it finally regained its balance and flew off into the distance, not daring to attack Yun Che again.

"Hmph, I guess you're smart, else I'd be forced to let you taste some fire." Yun Che pulled at the clothes

at his chest. Looking at the four hawk claw marks that had pierced holes, he exclaimed in his heart about how dangerous it had been.

The clothes on him were already extremely tattered, and also splattered with too much wolf blood. The smell also stung his nose a little, and he was simply unable to continue wearing them. Therefore, he quickly tore off the tattered clothes on his body and changed into new clothes...

The moment he finished changing his clothes, his expression changed slightly. As fast as lightning, he reached his hand out to check at his own neck, and all at once, his expression grew much worse.

This was because the pendant that he had always been wearing since young, had actually disappeared.

# Chapter 175: Male and Female Flood Dragons

Yun Che's frame shook and his gaze swept through his surroundings. The pendant's case was made of metal and would reflect at least some light. Its color also had obvious differences with that of the ground. If it were to fall on the dry yellow ground in the surroundings, it should be easily seen. Yet after searching quite a while, Yun Che still couldn't find a single trace of it.

And Yun Che clearly remembered, while he had sat and tended to his



injuries, his hand had brushed the pendant as he pulled at his damaged collar. His pendant had still been on him, then.

Unless.....

Yun Che raised his head abruptly, and looked towards the sky.....

When he was shaking off the Fierce Storm Hawk just now, he clearly felt something run itself over his neck.

Then, he had thought it was because his own actions had been too large, and he had been constrained by his clothes, so he didn't take it to heart. Now that he thought of it.....

It was obviously because his pendant was being swiped off his neck!

Not only were hawks' talons incomparably sharp, they were also curved into hooks. If they had come into contact with the pendant's thread, it was very possible that they had firmly hooked onto the pendant, and then pulled it out!!

The Fierce Storm Hawk's speed was extremely fast. By then, it was already high up in the sky, and only a blurry black speck could be seen. Yun Che was extremely worried as he spared no effort in furiously rushing up to it. But after running only a few steps, he stopped and hollered above him, "Little Fairy!! Help me chase up to that Fierce Storm Hawk! It snatched my pendant away!"

"....." After a long while, Little

Fairy's serene voice came from above, "I only keep the promise to protect you for three months, not to go along with your wishes. I also have no obligation to obey a man's order."

"That pendant is extremely important to me! It concerns my life and it's the only proof that can reunite me with my biological parents! I absolutely can not lose it....."

"How does that concern me?"

Yun Che's gaze stayed unwaveringly on the fuzzy black spot high up in the sky. Taking a deep breath, he roared anxiously, "If you can chase up to the Fierce Storm Hawk, and bring me with

you, I'll open up three... No! Five....  
Five closed Profound Entrances! I do  
what I say, and I absolutely won't  
promise what I can't uphold! If I  
can't do it, you can kill me with a  
single slap however you wish!

Not only would Yun Che's words  
resound like thunder in any  
practitioner's ears, it was also a  
gargantuan lure any practitioner  
would not be able to resist.... Little  
Fairy also could not. After two  
breaths of time, her figure appeared  
in a sheet of ice auroras before Yun  
Che, "Alright, then I'll help you!"

Her clear, cold voice fell and Yun  
Che felt a large wave of  
unopposable strength barreling  
towards him. His body was lifted  
and sent shooting into the sky like

an arrow which had left its bow,  
straight towards the Fierce Storm  
Hawk that was far away!

Surging airflow swept at his face,  
causing Yun Che to be unable to  
not close his eyes for a short period  
of time. Wind whistled by his ears  
and it was comparable to the wind  
when he had sat on the Giant Snow  
Eagle. After he was accustomed to  
the surging airflow, he opened his  
eyes. Little Fairy was right beside  
him. Her flight posture was very  
beautiful, it was as if Xuan Nu was  
floating and dancing on the clouds.  
Her long, snow white skirt fluttered  
up, and as her veil swished; a  
perfectly beautiful, snow-white face  
was revealed indistinctively, and it  
was faintly discernible.

That black speck within his line of sight grew larger and larger.

“Just a little faster, we must definitely chase up to it!” Yun Che urged hurriedly. Now, he couldn’t help but pray that the pendant was hung more tightly to the hawk’s talons. It definitely could not drop; otherwise, in the boundless Wasteland of Death, looking for it will truly be like searching for a needle within a haystack.

Little Fairy glanced at him indifferently, “Practitioners who have reached the Sky Profound Realm are able to travel aerially, but the Fierce Storm Hawk is still king of the skies. Even if I do my best, the most I can do is merely to give chase. Right now, I’m almost at my

limit.”

While speaking, the black speck in front of them grew nearer and they had closed the distance to approximately one and a half kilometers or so. Just then, the Fierce Storm Hawk in front seemed to realize they were chasing it and a loud, clear and angry squawk came from far away. Following which, it sped up and in their line of sight, it grew further and further away.

“Darn! Did it discover us? Little Fairy, go a little faster, we must catch up to it! Definitely!!” Yun Che said with clenched teeth.

Little Fairy looked at Yun Che again, and then sighed lightly. A sheen of light blue light appeared

on her entire body, causing the surrounding temperature to suddenly drop.

The cold air that suddenly shrouded him made Yun Che unconsciously tremble. Only by rapidly working his profound energy did he withstand this almost bone-chillingly cold chill. At the same time, he felt the force that was moving him along suddenly increase exponentially, propelling him into the sky at a greater speed....

Finally, the Fierce Storm Hawk within his line of sight was no longer growing further away. But even after a while, they still did not get closer. The threatening aura from behind made the Fierce Storm



Hawk go at full throttle. Even though it was only a Spirit Profound Beast, it was a genuine aerial master, so even if it was the Little Fairy, who was at the pinnacle of the Sky Profound Realm, she could only match its speed. It would not be able to shake her off, but she would be unable to pull nearer either.

“Little Fairy, can’t you pull a little closer?” Their current speed was already as fast as lightning, and the wind’s screaming in his ears was already pushing him to the verge of going deaf, but he still fretfully wished to go faster. It was because to him, that pendant was simply too important. In his lifetime in Azure Cloud Continent, he had worn it from birth ‘til death and was never

apart from it. In this lifetime on the Sky Profound Continent, he had similarly worn it on his neck since birth.... it was like an imprint of his life.

Both lifetimes, they had no parents, and they also did not know who their parents were. In this lifetime, he finally had some information regarding his biological parents, and this pendant which was on his neck, had become his only hope of finding his identity and his biological parents..... If it was lost, he would have to give up all hope of finding out his own lot in life.

“This time, it’s already really my limit.” Little Fairy replied. Feeling Yun Che’s inner anxiety, she spoke soothingly, “You shouldn’t worry so

much, we're bound to catch up."

"You're confident about this?"

"After all, it's only a Spirit Profound Beast, so when it comes to stamina, it can never hope to compete with mine. If we continue chasing this way, it will definitely tire before I do. As long as we do not lose it throughout the whole process, it will be unable to escape."

Little Fairy's words made Yun Che feel a little less worried. Thinking of the last time he had flown in the skies, he couldn't help but laugh a little..... Previously, he and Lan Xueruo had been wildly chased after by a Fierce Storm Hawk until the Giant Snow Eagle could no longer continue..... But this time

around, the situation was completely reversed. Little Fairy and he had now taken to the skies together, chasing after the Fierce Storm Hawk, and what they were waiting for, was also for it to lose stamina.

The Fierce Storm Hawk's gigantic frame cast long shadows in the sky as it flew straight towards the north..... Which was the direction further into the Wasteland of Death.

Little Fairy and Yun Che still did not give up their pursuit, and below, vast plots of land flashed past their line of sight. After four hours, they had gone past more than several hundred kilometers of wasteland. They had completely passed the

Spirit Profound Beasts' territory and were now above the Sky Profound Beasts' territory..... If Yun Che were to land right then, he would be in mortal peril no matter which profound beast he chanced upon.

And this area, even if it was high up in the skies, was a place the Fierce Storm Hawk would have never dared to enter. But with Yun Che and Little Fairy in hot pursuit, it had no choice but to fly with all its might..... and continue northwards.

Another two hours passed, and the sky gradually darkened. Without them noticing, they had already flown past a distance of hundreds of kilometers. The place they were above was already close to the centre of the Wasteland of Death....

A place Yun Che could never possibly have reached with his own capabilities.

Flying like this for a long time with all its might, the Fierce Storm Hawk finally began to show signs of tiring. Its flight speed began to fall, and the squawks that came from a distance was no longer filled with energy, but grew increasingly feeble and tired.

The profound strength which was half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm was so thick that it could bring people into flight at full might for six entire hours, yet Little Fairy didn't seem to be exhausted at all. Seeing the black speck in front get closer, and when they could gradually see the Fierce Storm

Hawk's blurry silhouette, she said softly, "It's already close to its limit, prepare to capture it."

While they were speaking, their flight speed also grew slightly faster as their distance from the Fierce Storm Hawk grew closer. After half a quarter of an hour, they had already closed in to be within a kilometer's distance away. And just then, the Fierce Storm Hawk's wing suddenly jerked as it let out a weak cry; its body plummeted to a low mountain below without any strength.

Little Fairy also brought Yun Che into a descent, and the distance from the ground grew closer and closer...

It was at this that a startled cry came from Jasmine in Yun Che's mind, "Get out of the way, quick!! Danger!!"

Yun Che's heart suddenly shook in fear, and the moment Jasmine's voice fell, an enormous silver shadow emerged from the low hill below. The silver shadow rushed towards them like lightning and a single one of them was the size of a house. The beast's ferocious mouth which was set with frightening teeth opened wide and rushed at them.

Yun Che and Little Fairy turned pale in fright at the same time. Little Fairy grabbed hold onto Yun Che's arm with one hand and pushed him back with all her



might, managing to dodge the extreme danger. But the crisis wasn't averted just like that. From behind them, a wave of the same dangerous aura came barreling towards them..... And another ferociously wide mouth which looked practically the same came snapping from their backs....

“Scram!”

Little Fairy's elegant brows knitted as she stretched her right hand out, and constructed an ice barrier of about thirty three meters wide. Their ferocious mouths that were wide open crashed into the ice barrier, and were thrown far away. Large cracks also formed atop the protective barrier.

Seeing the cracks atop the ice barrier, Little Fairy's eyebrows tightly wrinkled.

While Yun Che's eyes were already filled with astonishment.

Because he saw dragons....

Silver colored dragons....

And it was two silver colored dragons!!

Both gigantic silver dragons that rose in the air were over a hundred meters long. With one in front and the other in the back, they circled around him and Little Fairy on both sides. A field of dragon scales reflected a cold silvery light, as if there were currently a numerous number of silver-colored snakes in

motion; the two matchlessly vast spirals' terrifying imposing manner locked them firmly in place.

“These aren't true dragons, but rather, two variations that have become Flood Dragons! Their bodies permeate a thick, toxic aura into the atmosphere.... Quality-wise, they are high-leveled Sky Profound Beasts! Their strengths are at the pinnacle of the Sky Profound Realm and in ten more years of fighting against experts of the tenth level of the Sky Profound Realm, they will be able to step half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm. If there were only one, then she could handle it with her strength that's half a step away from the Emperor Profound Realm. But two... she could only hope to perish with

them!”

Jasmine’s voice was extremely cautious, “Today, you better make your choice, which is to let her stall these two Flood Dragons and take the chance to leave immediately. Or else, each one of your paths will lead to death! It’s because escaping together is completely impossible..... A dragon’s aerial ability far surpasses that of the hawks’!”

At this, the Flood Dragon in front opened its mouth wide, and spat out human words, “It’s another foolish human’s futile attempt to pollute the Dragon God’s treasure..... Die!!”

The voice was solemn and ear-

splitting, and when it fell, two Flood Dragons surged into the sky simultaneously, and two waves of berserk auras rushed at Yun Che and Little Fairy one after the other.

# Chapter 176: A Vicious Battle

The male dragon's voice carried deep hatred and murderous intent within it, as though humans were hated enemies that it was not willing to share the world with. Clearly, to negotiate with them and then depart was completely impossible.

“Hurry up and leave...the farther you go, the better!”

The powerful aura that emanated from those two Flood Dragons caused Little Fairy to feel tremendous danger. She suddenly pushed out her hand, bringing forth

a surging, icy current of energy, and shoved Yun Che far away. At the same time, her entire body floated forward icily as she attacked the male and female pair of dragons.

“Little Fairy——”

Little Fairy’s pushing power was something which Yun Che cannot resist at all. Amidst his shouting, he was pushed more than five kilometers away by that surge of air current before finally falling onto the ground, escaping the attack range of the two Flood Dragons at the same time. From the location he was previously at, a series of utterly world-shaking rumbles could be heard.

The two enormous Flood Dragons

coiled there, high in the air, their bellows shaking the world.

Compared to their enormous bodies, all that could be seen of Little Fairy was her adorable, tiny, snowy figure. Like a snowy butterfly, she darted about amidst them.

The two Flood Dragons were roughly the same size. They looked similar from the outside, but one was female while the other was male; they appeared to be husband and wife. They simultaneously opened their enormous mouths, belching forth a wave of storming tornados. The storming tornados were originally only a several meters wide, but in the process of spinning, they quickly grew larger. In the blink of an eye, they had



already reached the size of several hundreds of meters. The two vortexes of enormous tornados, one in front, the other behind, carried an incomparably terrifying ripping power as they swept towards Little Fairy.

As Yun Che raised his head, this was the scene he saw. His eyes instantly widened, and even his heart felt as though it stopped... Within these two tornados that all but covered the entire sky, by comparison, Little Fairy's delicate frame seemed as insignificant as a tiny, thin leaf.

Little Fairy ascended upwards slightly, and then her body began to swivel. Her rotating speed was very slow, as if elegantly dancing like a

lithe, graceful butterfly. But that beautiful, illusory swirling, brought up an enormous tornado that was not one whit weaker than those created by the Flood Dragons in the area around her...and what's more, it was a bone-freezing storm of frost.

BOOM!!!

A thundering sound that seemed to shake the world exploded forth in the skies.

These three storms collided in midair, and space immediately began to violently shudder. In an blink of the eye, the hills below them were whittled apart by the tornados, converting the ground into flat ground. Some ancient trees

that had been rooted there for centuries and millennia were lifted high up into the air, then thrown out to an incomprehensible distance. Yellow dirt was more so thrown about in large amounts, covering the entire sky and blocking out the sun. Even Yun Che, who was more than five kilometers away, was knocked to the ground by a sudden surge of air current that was blasted in this direction. Only after he clutched hard at the corner of a boulder, did he manage to avoid being blown far away.

The collision between the tornados had created a terrifying stream of chaotic energy that remained unabated for a long period of time without vanishing. Yun Che who was at the outermost of the margins

of this storm, was already finding it completely impossible to breathe. Yet Little Fairy, was at the very center of this tempest...Yun Che raised his head with difficulty as he resisted the power of the storm and he looked at Little Fairy who was in midair. Her lithe figure was still slowly swiveling, her position not budging in the slightest. Those two storms generated by the Flood Dragons were kept at a firm distance of more than sixty meters by her storm of profound energy, and they weren't able to touch her body at all. Instead, they were slowly being pushed farther and farther away by her.

In other words, even facing a pair of Flood Dragons at the pinnacle of Sky Profound Realm, she actually

wasn't at the slightest disadvantage!

Yun Che was greatly relieved. At this time, he suddenly saw that directly above him, a black blur had been sent flying over with a high speed by the chaotic air streams. That black figure caused Yun Che's pupils to slightly contract...

Fierce Storm Hawk!!!

The Fierce Storm Hawk, which had been flying at full speed for three hours had already used up all of its energy. Now that it also suffered from the power of this storm, it had already fallen unconscious. Yun Che didn't even think about it; he vaulted high into the air and grabbed onto one of the hawk-talons of the Fierce Storm Hawk,

then relaxed his profound energy and relied on the weight of the heavy sword on his back to descend at high speed. He landed behind a giant boulder that was large enough to block the chaotic streams of air.

It was uncertain as to whether the Fierce Storm Hawk was already dead or just unconscious. Upon being brought down by Yun Che, it still remained completely motionless. Yun Che flipped it over with a kick, and then at a glance, saw the object flashing with a faint copper light within its right talon.

“So it really was carrying it!”

Yun Che was instantly overjoyed, and quickly untied it from the hawk’s talons. Although it had

undergone such major twists and turns, the pendant was still completely undamaged. Its string was made of an unknown material; it was as soft and gentle as cotton silk, and yet it, too, was completely undamaged.

Yun Che carefully opened the pendant and stared at the small lens within it. Only after verifying that the small lens was also completely intact, was he finally, completely relieved. And then, he once more returned the pendant to his neck.

“You’ve already found what you came for. Why don’t you hurry up and leave? Are you going to stay here and wait for death?” Jasmine said quite frantically.

“I can’t! Little Fairy is still in a vicious battle with those two Flood Dragons. How can I leave!” Yun Che stuck his head out, peeping over the giant boulder towards Little Fairy’s direction as he spoke in a resolute voice.

“Idiocy! A battle at this level is something you aren’t able to interfere in at all! In the end, regardless of whether she wins or loses, or whether she lives or dies, this battle isn’t something you can intervene in! Aside from putting yourself in danger, how can you possibly help her?”

Yun Che gritted his teeth and said, “I know that I won’t be able to help her, but, she’s only being attacked by these two Flood Dragons



because of me. If I were to let her fall into danger and then leave myself, I would look down on myself for the rest of my life. Moreover, this is also the very center of the Wasteland of Death. The surrounding area is filled by Profound Beasts of the Earth Profound or even Sky Profound Realms. Any beast that I encounter will result in a near-fatal encounter for me. Where can I escape to?"

Jasmine was unable to refute Yun Che's words.

The storms persisted for seven full minutes, then finally dissipated. The male dragon's voice rang out from high in the air. "So it is actually a human who has stepped halfway into the Emperor Profound

Realm. No wonder you dare to come and attempt to encroach upon the treasures of the Dragon God in vain. But since you have come, you can forget about ever leaving again!”

Little Fairy said in an icy voice, “I only passed by here on accident. I have no idea the treasures of the Dragon God, nor did I think of offending you two.”

The female dragon’s voice rang out with explosive rage. “Silence! You humans are all despicable, vile creatures! In the past, it was because the two of us, husband and wife, were slightly merciful and spared a human that intruded, three months later, he returned here with several dozens of people...and even

killed our one and only child! We definitely won't make the same mistake ever again... Human, die!"

The power of both Flood Dragons was of the wind attribute. As they released their power, the wind and the clouds in the surrounding area began to surge. Sand and stones flew everywhere, and the awe-inspiring momentum caused the entire core region of the Wasteland of Death to faintly tremble. The Profound Beasts close to the core region that were slumbering or resting in silence were all startled awake, and fled away in terror. Even after reaching a location they felt was safe, they still didn't dare to howl out. They didn't even dare to breathe loudly. Trembling nonstop, they looked into the distant skies,

where they saw those enormous draconic shadows.

“Frozen Cloud Domain!”

Along with the Little Fairy’s graceful shout, the space suddenly transformed into a field of ice-blue color within a thousand meters around her. Within this enormous ice-blue field, countless flakes of snow and frost silently fell, and the water element in the air condensed into countless crystals of ice. The world was covered with a layer of white snow, and an increasingly thick layer of ice began to slowly cover the bodies of the two Flood Dragons. Their movements grew sluggish, and even their tornados seemed to slowly become frozen as the howling were no longer as

sharp as before.

“A Domain...it’s actually a Domain!”

Yun Che cried out involuntarily.

Domain Arts, according to legend, required a person to at least be at the Emperor Profound Realm before being able to just barely execute such a powerful Profound Art. Once a Domain was formed, within the Domain, everything would transform into an element that was beneficial to one’s self, to the point of even becoming completely under one’s control.

There were many different types of Domains; there were attack-type Domains, defense-type Domains, amplification-type Domains, restriction-type Domains, intimidation-type Domains, etc...

As for Little Fairy, although she had yet to completely enter the Emperor Profound Realm, she was actually already able to use Domain Arts!

Within the Frozen Cloud Domain. The freezing cold, the flying snow, the frost...all slightly augmented Little Fairy's powers, while simultaneously weakening the movements of the two dragons as well as the strength of their attacks. Little Fairy was now holding a translucent longsword that seemed to be formed from ice crystals. Her body moved, and it was like a blue light flashed by as she pierced straight towards the male dragon.

Clang!!!

That enormous collision sound was

clearly heard by Yun Che who was more than five kilometers away. Although Flood Dragons weren't like Flame Dragons, which were of true, pure dragon bloodline, and instead were merely lesser dragons with a seventy or eighty percent pure lineage, they were still dragons. Their bodies had the toughness similar to those of true dragons. Under this Little Fairy's sword slash, only a single silver scale of the male dragon was slashed apart.

But the injury to his scales was more than enough to further enrage the male dragon. Its counter-attack came as well. As the wind howled fiercely, the ice on it's body broke off in enormous chunks as it smashed down towards Little Fairy

with its enormous dragon claw. Following the path of the dragon claw, screeches of the space being torn apart were generated.

Bang!!!

The enormous dragon claw landed upon Little Fairy's shield of ice. The dragon claw was bounced away, while numerous cracks also appeared on the shield of ice. And then, in the next instant, the enormous draconic tail of the female dragon, carrying the force of a small mountain, crashed down as well upon the shield of ice that the draconic claw had just cracked. With a 'crunch' sound, Little Fairy's shield of ice completely shattered, blasting apart and sending shards flying everywhere.



The dragon's tail swept through, struck onto Little Fairy's after image. Little Fairy's figure suddenly appeared in midair, and her features became all the more solemn. Seizing this period of time when the Domain had yet to vanish, her body suddenly descended at high speed with her icy sword pointed directly at the male dragon. Each time the sword struck against the body of the male dragon, flashes of light that seemed like blue-colored lightning flickered. Within the blue light, the scales of the male dragon were also being shattered one by one.

The only option she could choose right now, was to focus her attacks on one of the Flood Dragons.

If these were simply two peak  
Profound Sky Realm beasts of any  
other kind, such as wolves, lions,  
falcons...she would have had a high  
chance of success even if she  
fought two at the same time.  
Unfortunately, these two just so  
happened to be Flood Dragons! In  
terms of physical bodies, bloodlines,  
stamina, spiritual power, aura...  
there were no beasts that could  
compare to dragons.

After having battled for fifteen  
minutes, Little Fairy already knew  
quite clearly that this would be an  
incomparably hard battle,  
regardless of whether the goal was  
to win or to retreat safely.

The skies grew darker and darker;  
the night sky had already begun to

silently descend, causing the constantly flashing blue lights in the skies to appear all the more glaring.

After having persisted for a bit less than an hour, Little Fairy's Frozen Cloud Domain finally, completely vanished.

The frigid cold quickly dissipated from the air, and the movements of the male and female Flood Dragons instantly became swifter. However, Little Fairy's power began to weaken. As she slashed down against the body of the male flood dragon with her icy sword, the collision sounds were clearly not as ear-shaking as before.

The inside of Yun Che's heart was

also no longer able to stay calm any further. He said frantically, “Jasmine, how much strength are you currently able to use?”

“Forget about it. I won’t help her.” Jasmine had predicted long ago that this moment would come, and she refused decisively. “Exterminating these two Flood Dragons, to me, is something as easy as flipping my hand over. But if I were to use that amount of energy, the poison that I’ve finally managed to suppress will definitely recur again, causing all my efforts to be for naught! I’m not so benevolent as to waste a year’s worth of effort within the Sky Poison Pearl, all for the sake of a woman who has nothing to do with me!”

# Chapter 177: Dual Dragon Extermination

Yun Che was very clear about what the consequences of Jasmine attacking would be. He also clearly remembered the scene at the time, where Jasmine's soul had almost scattered after she attacked the Flame Dragon. But these two Flood Dragons absolutely could not compare to the Flame Dragon, and with the purification of the Sky Poison Pearl over this period of time, Jasmine's current state was much better than before; striking out and killing these two Flood Dragons may cause the purification

from this period of time to be wasted, but at least there wouldn't be the danger of her soul scattering.

And if she doesn't strike out, Little Fairy's life will be in danger. After the Frozen Cloud Domain faded, she had already clearly found herself in a disadvantaged position.

Yun Che was just about to continue persuading Jasmine, when the voice of the male Flood Dragon suddenly sounded from the distant skies:

“Human, your strength is weakening. It appears you reached your limit just now; a half-step from the Emperor Profound Realm, is merely so.”

The female Flood Dragon's voice also sounded haughtily:

“Insignificant human, you’re not fit to contend with our dragon race. Your futile attempt to obtain a share of the Dragon God’s treasure will only end in your destruction! DIE!”

Although the level of Little Fairy’s profound strength was half a realm greater than these two Flood Dragons, in regards to endurance, how could she compare to Flood Dragons! Previously, she had flown non-stop at maximum speed for six hours, and now she had gone through such a lengthy fierce battle; her strength was already starting to show clear signs of fatigue. On the other hand, although several hundreds of the male Flood Dragon’s scales had broken and shattered, and blood oozed

unceasingly beneath some of its scales, its vigor did not decrease at all. All these injuries combined equated to only a light injury for it; the female Flood Dragon wasn't even worth mentioning. The strength contained in their enormous bodies seemed almost boundless.

Under the berserk power of the dual Flood Dragons, Little Fairy's counterattacks grew weaker and weaker. At the very end, she could only dedicate all her strength to defending, with absolutely no energy to counterattack. Her petite body swayed like duckweed in the storm generated by the two Flood Dragons, with a chance of being crushed at any time...



Arriving at this sort of circumstance, a deepening feeling of anger began to aggregate within Little Fairy's beautiful eyes.

"We have no prior grievances, yet not only do you attack with no reason, you also want to force me to make my last stand..."

Little Fairy's voice was slow and tranquil, and a deep feeling of anger was concealed under the tranquility: "Since I am fated to die in this place, you must also... pay dearly!"

From Little Fairy's voice, Yun Che could hear deep resentment and a bone-chilling coldness... There was even a hint of a decisive consignment for death. The

moment the last note ended, a deep blue glow suddenly emitted from Little Fairy's body and charged towards the sky, shooting straight at the heavens... And at the same time, the surrounding temperature plummeted at an incomparably terrifying rate. The temperature practically dropped below zero in an instant, then continued dropping sharply, and a thickening layer of ice began coating all the objects beneath her.

Yun Che, who was five kilometers away, felt a gust of bone-chilling icy air billow over, causing his entire body to shiver. Watching the streak of blue light charging at the skies, he said in a low voice: "What... is that?:

Jasmine: “...”

“Human, is this your last stand? It’s a pity; with your current strength, you simply cannot damage the bodies of us Flood Dragons! Only complete extermination awaits you!”

Under the blue light, Little Fairy’s face was completely tranquil. She slowly raised the ice sword in her hand, yet she didn’t point at the male Flood Dragon, who was already riddled with scars; rather, she pointed at the female Flood Dragon that had just spoken. Her snowy lips moved slightly, and each and every one of her words were like ice: “Before I die... I’ll let you... die first!!”

“Frozen Cloud Forbidden  
Technique — Zeroth Aurora!!”

Ding...

Little Fairy flashed in midair, and shot towards the female Flood Dragon like a streak of blue lightning. The speed she displayed in this instant exceeded the extreme limit of her speed by two times, and the ice sword, which was coated in blue light, pierced straight at the female Flood Dragon, then... amidst an ear-piercing splitting sound, penetrated through its scales, stabbing deep into its body.

If this sword had completely stabbed into a human's body like this, it would indeed be sufficient to claim the person's life. But this five

foot long ice sword, was simply too miniscule in the face of the Flood Dragon's enormous body. Facing the Flood Dragon, this sword had pierced its body like a single needle pierces a human's body.

This scene didn't actually cause the male dragon to feel any panic; rather, it sneered and said: "What an immense aura of strength, to have actually prevented me from moving for an instant. But do you really believe you'll be able to injure the body of us Flood Dragons like this? To us, this kind of injury isn't even worth mentioning..."

The sound of the male Flood Dragon's voice hadn't dissipated yet when it suddenly heard the female Flood Dragon emit a mournful

howl, and its body began to struggle violently... But the only parts of its body that struggled were the head and tail areas; the area that had been pierced by Little Fairy's sword seemed frozen in place, completely unable to move.

Crack crack crack crack crack crack crack...

A chain of ice crystals condensed with a deafening sound, centering around Little Fairy's ice sword. The thick crystals condensed on the female Flood Dragon at an insane rate, and extended from the center of the Flood Dragon's body to its head and tail.

The female Flood Dragon's mournful howls become more and

more painful, lasting until they became hoarse cries of despair; but its struggles actually weakened gradually, because the ice crystals began covering more and more of its body... Finally, its struggles and screams completely ceased, because even its head and tail areas had completely turned into ice crystals.

This entire process barely lasted for five breaths' time... In only five breaths' time, the Flood Dragon, which was several tens of meters long, turned into an ice sculpture from head to tail. Everything happened so fast that the male Flood Dragon didn't even have time to react.

The enormous dragon-shaped ice sculpture stagnated in midair for an

instant, and then began dropping due to the heaviness of Little Fairy's ice sword. It smashed heavily against the ice-cold ground, which had been leveled by the storm, and such a heavy fall caused numerous fine cracks to appear on the ice sculpture.

The blue light on Little Fairy's body faded; even her strength and aura nearly dissipated completely. Her face turned pale as snow as she closed her eyes with incomparable tranquility.

“Wh ... What did you do!!”

The male Flood Dragon's voice became incomparably angry and frantic, and its aura of strength became particularly chaotic. This



was because the ice on the female Flood Dragon's body was not just a simple ice formation. It was not only her exterior; its body, its blood, its organs, its life, its strength, its soul... had been completely sealed by ice! This made it so that it simply couldn't even detect an aura of life at all...

It had died! Under this incomparably frightening thorough ice formation, the female Flood Dragon had thoroughly died. In its entire body, not even a single cell had a trace of vitality remaining.

“AWOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!”

The male Flood Dragon's angry roars resounded throughout the heavens and earth and resonated

throughout most of the Wasteland of Death, agitating countless Profound Beasts. For some time, thousands of the beasts in the central section of the Wasteland of Death were alarmed, fleeing everywhere and created a field of chaos.

“You actually killed my wife, you actually killed my wife!!!”

Fierce winds rolled; even the clouds in the skies were dispersed by its angry roars. Little Fairy slowly raised her head, and her pale face revealed a cold smile: “I’m only a passerby, yet you forced me into a corner... Death cannot wipe out your sins!”

“ROAR!! Evil human, I want you to

die! I want you to die from the pain of toxic poison devouring your body!!”

Five kilometers away, Yun Che stood frozen in stupor. He said in shock: “That Flood Dragon, died?”

“Yes, it died.” Jasmine said very calmly: “As for that woman, she’s about to die too.”

“What’d you say?” Yun Che’s heart skipped a beat.

“Hmph! The last bit of her energy has been blown away, and it was clearly a forbidden technique. And this forbidden technique, can only be cast with the price of destroying one’s own profound veins. Now that her profound veins have been

destroyed, and her meridians have snapped, she's already a cripple! Certain death awaits her! She herself knew that it would be impossible to escape from the assault of these two Flood Dragons, so this can be considered the most worthwhile decision... at least she dragged another down with her."

"Wh... What!?"

Yun Che's body stood up abruptly; releasing all his profound energy, he charged towards Little Fairy as if he was insane.

"What're you trying to do? Have you gone mad!!" His actions caused Jasmine to turn pale with fright.

"I haven't gone mad!" Yun Che

clenched his teeth, and roared: “I can’t let her die! She met with this disaster while trying to protect me! I definitely... I definitely won’t let her die! Jasmine, quickly kill that male Flood Dragon... Consider it me begging you; quickly kill that male Flood Dragon! If Little Fairy really dies by that male Flood Dragon’s hand, I won’t be at peace for the rest of my life!! JASMINE!!”

Jasmine: “...”

“If you still won’t attack, even if Little Fairy dies, I won’t stop running; I would rather die by the Flood Dragon’s claw with her... I’ll definitely accomplish what I’ve promised you! I’m begging you, just this one time, please help me!”

As he spoke, Yun Che's speed increased... completely surpassing the maximum speed he could reach before.

Little Fairy, who had lost all her strength, began falling from the air. She closed her eyes; her expression was incomparably tranquil, because she was very clear about how everything would end... Her profound veins had shattered, her meridians had snapped; she was already a cripple, and no longer possessed any will to continue living.

Only, in the corner of her eye, a single sparkling tear quietly rolled down her face.

“DIE... DIIEEEEEEE!!!”

The male Flood Dragon opened its mouth wide, and a lump of highly toxic whirlwind billowed towards Little Fairy.

“JASMINE!!” The male Flood Dragon’s actions caused Yun Che to turn pale with fright.

The Flood Dragon’s twister was extremely frightening, and at this time, Little Fairy’s body was completely devoid of profound energy to defend herself. If the storm touched her, she would be torn to shreds instantly.

Just when the frightening whirlwind was three feet away from Little Fairy, a petite, crimson silhouette suddenly appeared in front of the storm. With a sweep of

its small hand... Only a smothered sound could be heard. Then, this storm was actually directly smashed back and rolled back at the Flood Dragon at an even faster speed.

The male Flood Dragon surged after the violent storm suddenly turned back. Looking at the tiny red silhouette which had suddenly appeared in front of it, an expression of fear flashed in its eyes: “Wh... Who are you!”

Just a casual palm, without any fluctuations of energy, had repelled its toxic storm. Just this point was enough to prove that the strength of this petite human girl in front of it surpassed it by at least three great realms! And what really frightened it was the formless pressure she



exerted. For its entire life, it had never experienced such a frightening pressure; in the face of this pressure, it felt as if it was an insignificant speck of dust in front of a vast sea.

Jasmine didn't respond, and her crystalline gaze was filled with killing intent and anger. She extended a white, delicate finger and pointed at the Flood Dragon. A somewhat dim red glow lit at the tip of her finger: "This is seriously annoying... Such an insignificant low-level Flood Dragon actually forced this princess to waste one year of her efforts; if I wasn't infected by this toxic poison, I would definitely tear you into thousands of pieces... DIE!!"

Just as her voice fell, Jasmine extended a finger and lightly drew an arc in the air...

RIP...

At the same time, a slender streak of crimson light suddenly appeared atop the Flood Dragon's body, and the Flood Dragon's body tidily split along this thread-like streak of red light. The dragon's eyes widened, never to move again...

Without a sound, without any vicious battle, without even a dying cry, the male Flood Dragon was completely exterminated.

# Chapter 178:

## Primordial Azure Dragon (1)

After killing the male Flood Dragon, Jasmine's little face instantly turned an ashen white color. She glanced backwards towards Yun Che's location; her red dress fluttered, and then her body transformed into a streak of red light, returning to the Sky Poison Pearl.

Yun Che, seeing that the male Flood Dragon had perished, was greatly relieved. While running forward, he also called out frantically, "Jasmine, are you alright?"

A long while later, Jasmine finally spoke in a hate-filled voice. “Hmph! I must have owed you a debt in a past life!”

Jasmine’s voice was clearly rather weak, but it wasn’t trembling. This made Yun Che feel relieved, and he said, rather apologetically, “I harmed you yet again.”

“...no need to say pointless things. If you want to save that woman, move a bit faster. I’m unable to guarantee that she wasn’t poisoned by that male Flood Dragon’s venom. In addition, for the next three months, don’t even think about having me intervene again.”

After saying these things, Jasmine said nothing else. There, within the

Sky Poison Pearl, she began to quietly suppress the poison that was once more flaring throughout her body. Although her soul wasn't as badly injured as it was last time, after she slew the Flame Dragon, she definitely didn't feel very well at all right now.

This exciting battle that involved two peak Sky Profound Realm Flood Dragons and an expert who had taken half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm had caused this region to suffer a significant calamity. The ground itself was now nearly three feet lower than previously, and not an inch of grass was alive, as far as one could see. After finally reaching this region, Yun Che immediately saw Little Fairy's figure. She was lying there

quietly on the ground, like a striking lotus flower that was lying on the sallow yellow earth.

“Little Fairy!”

Yun Che’s heart lurched. He hurriedly charged forward, and when he arrived by her side, he suddenly came to an astonished halt.

The clothes on her body were unbearably tattered now, but the veil that had always covered her face remained undamaged, thanks to the protection of the remnant frost. At some unknown point, however, it had drifted away, allowing Yun Che to completely see, quite clearly, her snowy complexion.

It was just as Yun Che had imagined. This was a very, very beautiful face. Her features were all absolutely exquisite. Her eyebrows were clear and slender, her skin was pearly, and although her lips and face were as white as paper, this was unable to cover up the cold, arrogant nobility which was bone-deep. This cold nobility seemed to make her transcend the dust of the world and made it so that anyone who faced her wouldn't dare to profane her in the slightest, only feel ashamed of their own inferiority.

Yun Che's dazed state lasted just a moment, and then he hurriedly bent down and stretched his hand out, pressing down against her snowy neck. In the instant his

finger touched her skin, it trembled lightly, because her body temperature was frighteningly low, as though she had just bathed in a pool of icy water.

“Don’t...touch me...” Little Fairy, upon feeling Yun Che touch her neck, resisted feebly. Her voice was very faint and weak, but incomparably firm. Although she was badly injured and at the point of death, preventing men from touching her body was a bone-deep habit, and she reacted almost by instinct. On her pale face, the coldness that seemed to keep others at a distance of a thousand kilometers didn’t lessen at all.

“Fine, I won’t touch you...I won’t touch you.” Yun Che hurriedly took



his hand back, but his heart sank.

Just now, when he had investigated her, he grew mentally panicked.

Jasmine's words weren't an exaggeration...no, rather, the situation was even more serious than how Jasmine described it. Her profound veins had been completely destroyed. They were shattered to pieces, like broken ice crystals. The damage done to them was so severe that they were in even worse shape than Yun Che's had been in the past. There was no way to repair them at all. If one insisted that there was a way, then the only possibility was for her to do what he had done; build new profound veins. But a chance like this...Yun Che was the first person in history of the Profound Sky Continent to do

this. This sort of chance was something one could only hope for but not rely on. In addition, even if she really did have this chance, she would have to rebuild her profound energy from scratch, starting from the Elementary Profound Realm.

Not only had her profound veins been completely destroyed, her meridians were completely shattered as well. At this point in time, aside from still possessing slight consciousness, Little Fairy's entire body was completely paralyzed and crippled. Aside from her right arm and her right hand, where only half of the meridians were smashed, and which she could thus somewhat move, every other part of her entire body was now completely immobile.

What terrifying power must be required to completely freeze a peak Sky Profound Realm Flood Dragon into a lifeless statue of ice. But the price one would have to pay for using such an amount of power was also incomparably cruel.

Faced with an injury like this, even Yun Che, who often proclaimed himself to be a genius doctor, only felt a deep sense of powerlessness. He was confident in being able to keep her alive, but there was no way he would be able to repair her profound veins, much less restore her to her former power.

In addition, aside from this, Yun Che also sensed a heavy, deathly aura emanating from her body.

“Forget about her. She won’t be able to survive.” Jasmine said coldly.

“No! She’ll survive. I’m here, and I definitely won’t let her die!” Yun Che gritted his teeth. With his two hands, he pressed towards the air above Little Fairy’s chest, and used his own profound energy to frantically preserve her heart veins.

“Hmph. No need to lie to yourself. Can it be that you can’t sense that her heart is already filled with the desire to die? To instantly go from being a proud, world-roaming quasi-Emperor Profound Realm expert to a cripple who can’t even stand up...if I were her, I wouldn’t want to keep living. Even if you are able to keep her alive, in the future, she will only be able to lie in bed.

To her, this is thousands of times more tormenting than a quick death. If you save her, that will be the same as torturing her. In addition, even if your medical skills were a hundred times higher, you still wouldn't be able to save her if she wants to die!"

Jasmine's words were like a bucket of cold water being poured over Yun Che's head. His entire body went stiff, and he didn't move at all. A long moment later, he lowered his head. He looked at Little Fairy's completely bloodless face, then said in a low, gloomy voice, "Master's words were correct. The myriad things of the world support and subdue each other. Life and death is a cycle, and karma and fate move in a circle, endless and eternal. There

is an opposite side and an opposing side to everything; any illness that can appear can also be cured. In this world, there is no such thing as an incurable ailment; even if there is, that's just because we haven't found the cure yet. Since profound veins can fracture, there is definitely a method to repair them... definitely! Definitely!"

What caused Yun Che the most worry wasn't just the fact that she had suffered a terrifying injury; it was that she wanted to die.

Jasmine's words were correct; if her heart was dead and she only wanted to die, not even Yun Che's master, were he still alive, would be able to save her, much less Yun Che. When he thought of this, he no longer cared about Little Fairy's revulsion

towards men. He grabbed her by the shoulders with his hands, then roared loudly, “Little Fairy, listen up...listen to me! With me here, you won’t be able to die. No matter how serious your wounds are, you won’t be able to die. As for your shattered meridians, give me three years. I will definitely be able to completely repair them. Your profound veins... there is definitely a way to repair your profound veins as well. Open your eyes and look at me. Don’t die...don’t let yourself die!”

Little Fairy’s eyes were closed. Only her lips moved slightly, and a weak voice escaped them. “Profound veins shattered...situation hopeless...I don’t blame you, you... can...leave...”

Little Fairy's weak voice also contained that desire for death. Her words, 'I don't blame you', didn't contain the slightest hint of blame, nor the slightest hint of emotion. They didn't even contain a hint of unhappiness or unwillingness to accept the situation. Her heart was truly, truly dead.

"You don't need to try and persuade her. Even if you really had a way to repair her profound veins to the point of making them perfect and whole, her will to die wouldn't listen." Jasmine said mercilessly. "Tens of years of bitter training, ruined in one morning. You simply don't understand how it feels for one to fall from being half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm to being a cripple. You don't



understand what an unendurably large difference this is. Hmph, forget about her; let's talk about you...if you were to lose all of the strength you had gained in this past year, if you were to lose all of your Divine Arts, can it be that you wouldn't despair? As for her, she spent tens of years of hard work, so as to train to nearly the Emperor Profound Realm!"

"No! I wouldn't!" Yun Che's gaze was resolute. "No matter what I lose, as long as I don't lose my life, as long as I am still alive, then there is hope for getting it all back. Life is the greatest hope of all. When you are alive, anything is possible!"

"A... woo..."

From afar, the faint sounds of profound beasts growling could be heard. In addition, the scattered growls were moving closer and closer. Clearly, after the frantic battle had come to a halt, and after the auras of the two dragons had vanished, some of the fairly intelligent profound beasts felt that something was amiss, and began to investigate and draw closer. Yun Che was not capable of opposing any of the profound beasts that lived within the core region of the Wasteland.

Yun Che look in every direction, then suddenly saw that to the north, less than five hundred meters away, there was a lonely little dwarf mountain. Beneath the dwarf mountain was a pitch-black cave

entrance. The reason why this mountain was all alone was because during the earlier battle between Little Fairy and the two Flood Dragons, the surrounding area had been completely flattened, leaving only this dwarf mountain behind. For some unknown reason, it still existed there, and didn't even seem to be damaged.

If they were to be discovered by a profound beast, then even Yun Che would perish here, to say nothing of Little Fairy. He immediately, decisively took Little Fairy's cold, soft body into his arms, then charged towards the dwarf mountain while growling, "Little Fairy, I know that you have a pristine, untouched body, and that you even feel revulsion towards

men. But I have to hold you now...if you want to punish me, if you want to kill me, then stay alive! If you dare die here, I...I...I'll immediately tear all your clothes off!

Little Fairy had never heard such a shameless threat in her life. She felt her body be firmly embraced, and her eyelashes trembled slightly. A hint of rage and humiliation began to build within her heart, where before there had only been a desire to die. There was also something else building; something indescribable. But then, these things were all completely engulfed by her desire to die...

Yun Che hurriedly yet carefully marched to the entrance of the cave. This entire time, he

continuously, unceasingly sent his profound energy into Little Fairy's body, protecting her life veins.

This cave was even darker than he had expected, but it wasn't cold. Yun Che walked all the way in, into the deepest parts of the cave, then gently put down Little Fairy.

This place was very dark and very quiet. Not even the sound of the wind could be heard at all. Sensing Little Fairy's weak, threadbare aura of life, Yun Che felt incomparably guilty. "I'm sorry. If it wasn't because you wanted to protect me, if it wasn't because I had to go chase after that Fierce Storm Hawk, you wouldn't have suffered something like this...if I could've predicted these things in advance, I

definitely wouldn't have made the same choices. How can my life experiences be more important than your actual life..."

When Yun Che had originally asked Little Fairy to protect him for three months, he had never imagined that within this period of time, he would actually suffer an attack from two Flood Dragons of the peak Sky Profound Realm. This Little Fairy, whose strength was more than enough to rank her in the top ten of the entire Blue Wind Empire, had kept her word. After leaving for two months, she had returned, then followed him from Blue Wind Imperial City all the way to this Wasteland of Death, not leaving him one inch and always protecting him. And now...it seemed as though

she had paid the ultimate price.

Yun Che never wished to owe others. The protection Little Fairy provided him was originally just a type of 'trade', and so he never felt guilty about it. But after today's events, how could he continue to feel the same way?

Yun Che stretched his hand out, once more checking Little Fairy's pulse. He sensed that her body temperature hadn't grown colder; instead, she had grown slightly warmer. After being momentarily startled, he immediately understood; the reason her body was previously so cold was because of the type of profound energy she trained in. Now that her profound veins were shattered, her ice-

attribute profound energy had completely dissipated, and her body temperature was beginning to approach that of a normal person's...

When he thought of this, Yun Che suddenly rose to his feet. In the air between himself and Little Fairy, a sphere of Phoenix flame suddenly formed, bringing a surge of heat into the dark cave.

At this moment, suddenly, an ancient voice slowly rang out from the air above him.

“The fire of the Phoenix...so that's how it is. It seems I wasn't mistaken; your body truly does have a bit of the blood of the Phoenix within it.”



This voice caused Yun Che to suddenly jump up lightning-fast from the floor. “Who...who said that!!”

# Chapter 179:

## Primordial Azure Dragon (2)

“Young human, you do not need to be worried. I am a mere wisp of a residual soul left behind by the Primordial Azure Dragon that watches over this trial ground. I won’t harm you.” The ancient voice sounded once more; an honorable dignity was expressed through this voice, yet it was also as gentle as the wind.

“Primordial... Azure Dragon?” Yun Che lifted his head and looked upwards as he bewilderedly pondered this name repeatedly.

And in the deepest part of his mind, actually came a completely shocked Jasmine's voice. "What? Primordial Azure Dragon? Head of the various Divine Beasts in the Primordial Era, the Dragon God — Primordial Azure Dragon!?"

A pair of mysterious eyes suddenly opened in the pitch-black space overhead. These two eyes were huge, yet long and narrow; they were about the same shape as a human's eyes... This scene resembled the phoenix eyes Yun Che had seen in the phoenix trial grounds. What was different was that the phoenix eyes were gold while these eyes were an azure blue color that was deeper than the skies.

At the same time, as if the sky had capsized, an endless expanse of aura descended. In front of this field of aura, Yun Che suddenly felt as if he were as minuscule as a single grain of sand in front of this mountain.

This aura's depth, far surpassed the phoenix aura he had experienced that day!

Enveloped beneath this soul's aura, Yun Che was completely incapable of suspecting any hint of untruth behind what the voice had previously said. This was a kind of absolute power that suppressed the interference of the mind. And at the same time, this soul's aura was simply that terrifying; how could it even be possible for that voice to

tell an untruth?

“Primordial Azure Dragon’s residual soul... Trial grounds... Don’t tell me that this place is the same as the phoenix secret grounds; is a place that you had temporarily stopped at one time and is a place where you left behind a power to pass on to future generations?” Yun Che lifted his head to look at the pair of azure blue eyes as he asked unhurriedly.

“Correct. The Divine Era had long since ended, and True Gods had also completely vanished. But we were not willing to completely disappear from the world, and would attempt to use various sorts of methods to leave behind a vestige of our strength to pass onto

those of the future generation we had an affinity with, who would then pass on what used to be our strength to their future generation for an eternity... After waiting all these years, I have finally found a fated one. And within this millennia, you are the first.”

“Me? The first?”

“Right, the first after a thousand years.” The Primordial Azure Dragon’s voice echoed: “A thousand years ago, there were a hundred twenty nine challengers who had arrived at this place. But after that, two Flood Dragons came here while following my aura and never left. Furthermore, they rapidly matured under the nourishment of the Dragon God aura and reached the

pinnacle of the Sky Profound Realm. The level of strength in this land is extremely low; therefore, the existence of these two Flood Dragons made it fundamentally impossible for humans to approach this place. Added to the fact that this area had long since become a profound beast gathering's Wasteland of Death, whose bad reputation had been spread far and wide, those who have the courage and ability to approach this place have grown less and less; sometimes it has even been difficult to even see one person once every hundred years."

"No wonder there's actually this many profound beasts gathered here, so it's because of the Dragon God aura's existence." Jasmine

softly said: “The gathering of so many profound beasts in the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range is because of the Phoenix’s aura, and the reason behind this region’s, is because of the Dragon God’s aura! Out of all the Primordial Divine Beasts, the Dragon God is at the top of the list; its level, far surpasses that of the Phoenix! After the fall of numerous gods, there were so many who wished to find any vestiges of the Dragon God even in their dreams; with the extravagant hopes of obtaining any power the Dragon God had left behind. Never would they have expected that it had actually left behind its legacy in this little Profound Sky Continent.”

“Although you being able to reach here was not based on your own



power, it was still destined by fate. You are qualified to undergo the trial I had left behind... If you are able to pass through the trial I had left behind, I can grant you three drops of Azure Dragon blood and let you possess Dragon God's bloodline. Are, you willing?"

Yun Che actually did not immediately reply because at the moment, his current thoughts were fundamentally not thinking about some trial or not trial. After the initial mindblowing shock from the sudden appearance of the "Primordial Azure Dragon", his state of mind cooled down once more as he hurriedly said: "Primordial Azure Dragon, you are the Primordial Era's strongest Dragon God. Then... then you must

have a way to save this person beside me! I'm begging you, please save her... save her life, and also help her regain her original strength... If you can do this, I'm willing to give you anything in exchange, willing to pay whatever the cost."

Little Fairy's long eyelashes faintly trembled for a moment.

The azure blue colored eyes faintly flashed. Then, an ancient voice sounded: "Her internal injuries are extremely severe; all five viscera have collapsed; the profound veins and meridians, have been shattered. Furthermore, her heart overflows with the will to die. I am but a mere wisp of a residual soul that simply does not have the ability to save

her... But I know a way to save her. As you wished, it could save her life, and also completely restore her previous strength... No, it could even help her make a breakthrough and genuinely step into the Emperor Profound Realm.”

The first half of the Primordial Azure Dragon’s speech shattered Yun Che’s hopes, but the latter half made him suddenly raise his head. With an odd radiance in his eyes, his voice also emotionally trembled aloud: “Wh... What did you say? Is... Is what you said true? Quickly, tell me, what is this method... Hurry up and tell me!”

After finished speaking, he excitedly lowered his body and said to Little Fairy: “Little Fairy, did you

hear that? Not only is there a method to save your life, it could also restore your profound veins and meridians. It could also help you regain your previous strength and also possibly allow you to breakthrough the bottleneck that you were unable to break through previously... Did you hear that? These words personally came from a Primordial Divine Beast's own mouth, so it is definitely not a lie... Did you hear that!"

Little Fairy's desire to die came from the despair of losing all of her power and becoming a cripple. The only thing that could possibly remove her desire to die was the hope of regaining back her power. As expected, after hearing the Primordial Azure Dragon's voice

and under Yun Che's excited cries, Little Fairy's eyes, that had always been closed in despair, slowly opened to a crescent moon's crack. What was reflected within were no longer two completely dim eyes, but rather a light brimming with desire.

“Primordial Azure Dragon, please tell me what this method is... No matter what kind of method, no matter how difficult it is, I will definitely accomplish it. Please tell me!” Yun Che lifted his head towards the pair of azure blue eyes and loudly exclaimed.

The Primordial Azure Dragon's reply was calm and emotionless: “Even though I know of this method, you and I are not related to one another in any way, nor are

there any debts or grievances between us. There is absolutely no reason for me to tell you about it. Unless...”

“Unless what?”

“Unless you can pass through the trial I had left behind, and obtain my bloodline and my legacy! Then, the method to save her, I’ll tell you in the entirety. Otherwise, I don’t have any obligations to tell you. You, can choose as you wish.”

“Okay!”

Immediately after Primordial Azure Dragon finished speaking, Yun Che nodded right away without even hesitating in the slightest: “I accept your trial!”

As long as he passed the Dragon God's trial, he would be able to obtain the Dragon God's bloodline, and would also acquire the method to save Little Fairy; what reason did he have to not agree.

“Haha, very good.” The aged voice began to laugh: “However, before I finish my words, there's no need for you to agree to quickly. The trial I left behind does not test the challenger's strength, but test their innate talent, willpower, and determination. The trial's difficulty, will vary based on the challenger's strength. Once one enters the trial grounds, there will only be two outcomes. One, is to pass the trial and obtain the Dragon God's bloodline; the other outcome....”

“Is death!”

“There are no failures, there is only passage or death!”

“...Then amongst those one hundred and twenty nine challengers, how many had passed?” Yun Che gasped lightly.

“In this continent, I believe you have never heard of the existence of anyone who possessed the Dragon God’s bloodline. Because, amongst the one hundred and twenty nine challengers before you, none had passed. They all remained in the trial grounds, and became dried skeletons. Moreover, amongst these one hundred and twenty nine challengers, even the ones with the lowest strength was of the Sky



Profound Realm!”

Yun Che: “...”

“Even so, do you still insist entering the trial grounds?” Primordial Azure Dragon asked slowly.

Yun Che glanced at Little Fairy, and nodded strongly. Even after hearing Primordial Azure Dragon’s words, his voice was still incomparably resolute: “Of~~course!”

“Your answer is not reluctant. Your courage is quite remarkable; moreover, I sense that a very large part of your determination comes from your wish to save this person beside you. Since it’s like this, I’ll grant your wish, and open the gate to the trial grounds for you... Before

you enter the gate of the trial ground, you have enough time to prepare for everything; especially mental preparations. You have the blood of the Phoenix flowing within you, which proves that you had successfully completed the trial left behind by the Phoenix before. However, you mustn't try to gauge the difficulty of the Dragon God's trial with the difficulty of the Phoenix's trial."

"The Phoenix's nature is benevolent and conservative. Even if the trial it left behind is tough, it would not be difficult to the extent of driving one into despair, and it is even more unlikely to be fatal. But the Dragon God being the sovereign of all beasts, looks down upon the world with pride. The Dragon God's

bloodline, absolutely would never be granted to any ordinary person. Only a supreme being who possesses enough talent and willpower to become the ruler of heaven and earth, can be qualified to bear the Dragon God's bloodline!"

"If you believe you have this kind of qualification and courage, then step into this trial ground gate! If you stand still, you live, she dies. If you step into it, whether you and her will live and die will not be certain. Make the last decision."

As the Primordial Azure Dragon's voice fell, a blue light suddenly flickered on the rock wall in front of Yun Che. After that, a blue colored teleportation formation that was

over two men in height emerged from it.

The teleportation formation leading toward the trial grounds.

Yet, Yun Che didn't immediately step forward and instead asked: "Primordial Azure Dragon, if I were to pass this trial, roughly how long would it take?"

"The time will depend on you.... Perhaps a few days, or perhaps a few month, or perhaps a few years." This was the Primordial Azure Dragon's answer.

Looking at the Little Fairy on the ground whose breath was faint, his brows twitched, and then said resolutely: "Then, may I take her

along into the trial grounds with me ?”

“You may, but I do not recommend it.” The Primordial Azure Dragon said with a solemn voice: “The Dragon God’s trial, could be taken by many at once from the start. But the trial’s difficulty one faces against, will also increase along with the number of people. Moreover, the difficulty is increased with the strongest person as basis. Which is to say, if you bring her in with you, the trial’s difficulty will be increased by one-fold with your strength as the basis! You will encounter a trial that is twice as difficult as compared to when entering alone!”

“Alright, I understand.” Yun Che

slowly nodded; the resolution in his eyes did not falter or waver in the slightest: "Then I choose to bring her along with me and enter."

Once he entered the trial grounds, it would be unknown as to when he would come back out. With Little Fairy's current condition, the only way she would last was for her heart vessels to be protected by Yun Che's profound energy. If he left her alone here, and enter the trial ground by himself, she might just suddenly pass away at anytime.

"If this is your decision, then I have no right to interfere. But you need to know, after bringing her to enter with you, not only will the trial's difficulty increase by one-fold, you will also need to constantly protect

her. Not only would it be distracting to the mind, you will have to split a part of your profound energy to protect her life veins as well... This is an extremely unwise decision.”

“Don’t... mind... me... Don’t take... me...” Little Fairy’s eyelashes slightly trembled, and her voice that was as feeble as a gentle breeze exited from the gap between her lips.

Yun Che crouched down, looked at the expressions in her eyes and spoke gently: “You turned out like this for me. I am a man; as a man, how can I just leave you behind like this?”

“Man? ... I... don’t need... a man’s... protection...” Little Fairy’s lips were

ghastly, and every single word she spoke greatly exhausted her strength.

“You have no say in this matter!” As Little Fairy let out a soft moan, Yun Che lifted her up in one go and walked toward the gate of the trial ground: “You have your reasons of rejecting and deeming men as unnecessary, but I, as a man know more about what actions men ought to take. The current you, does not need to think about nor speak anything. I only want you to live no matter what may come along...

When I pass the trial and restore the strength that belongs to you, at that time, whether you want to condemn me, hit me, or say that I hugged you and desecrated you without your permission, anything



is fine... But now, before your strength is restored, your everything... will be decided by me!”

After he finished speaking, without giving Little Fairy any more chance to speak up and refuse, he carried Little Fairy and dashed into the trial ground’s teleportation formation with a fleeting pace.

The moment Yun Che stepped in while carrying Little Fairy, the teleportation formation vanished. After a short moment, the drawn-out voice of Primordial Azure Dragon resounded in the dim mountain cave: “Haha, what a good youngster. Even though an astonishing aura of blood and death permeates within his soul, this stage of measuring character and

courage, he completely passed.”

# Chapter 180:

## Dragon God's Trial

This was a dry and barren highland. Gazing outwards, the surroundings were full of steep-sloped mountains which pierced into the sea of clouds. The encircling mountain range surrounded the area, turning this place into an inescapable and isolated land, where even half of the emitted light-rays were blocked.

Yun Che, who passed through the 'Gate' of Trial and entered this place, looked at the surroundings, and frowned. The platform he was standing on was very small. It was so small that he was even able to see the extreme ends of the

platform in his current position. The length of the platform was not more than a quarter of a kilometer, and its width was barely a hundred meters. The surroundings were all mountains, so there were basically no roads to walk on. And, all the mountain peaks were seemingly hidden within the clouds; even if one were to think of climbing to the top of one of them, it was absolutely impossible to do so.

“Release... me...”

Little Fairy, who was in his embrace, emitted out a frail voice, and even her right arm, the only limb she could freely move, was making a slight struggle. Yun Che knew she was not used to it, or, to be exact, she absolutely hated

contact with men. He knelt down, took out a light pink-colored blanket and laid it on the floor. After that, he placed Little Fairy onto it, and said gently, “You don’t have to worry. Unless it is absolutely necessary, I will not casually touch you. Currently, we have already entered the Dragon God’s trial grounds. No matter if you’re willing or not, our current destinies, are already completely connected. If we were to successfully pass this trial, both of us will be able to live, and even obtain tremendous benefits. If we were to fail... then both of us will die.”

“But, before our failure, you must definitely not possess the thought of dying, and work hard to keep

yourself alive, alright? Because this is not a trial of mine alone, rather, it's a trial belonging to the both of us, and it relates to both of our destinies. I hope that you can give me strength and give yourself hope... Hope of not just being able to live on, but having a complete recovery of your profound veins and meridians, and even directly breaking into Emperor Profound Realm!"

Since young, Little Fairy had the qualifications to reach the absolute top, and no one of the same age was able to stand against her. She had not yet become middle-aged, but was already a half-step away from the Emperor Profound Realm. She basically spent most of her life being admired and looked up to.

She was used to standing on heights where no one would even dream of, and mightily, pridefully, look down on others... But now, like a little girl being coaxed, she was being comforted by Yun Che. She was neither used to it, nor was she able to explain the sort of feeling she currently felt. She closed her eyes, and did not give any other reply, but the thought of death in her heart, had already silently disappeared a long while ago.

“You actually took my blanket and gave it to another girl. Aren’t you afraid that I will get angry?”  
Jasmine said a little grumpily.

“Jasmine, you have such a big heart, so you will definitely not fuss over such a small matter. Once I return

to Blue Wind Imperial City, I will definitely buy you a better one.”

Jasmine snorted coldly. “Hmph! We can talk about that again once you’re able to return to the Blue Wind Imperial City with your life intact. You actually insisted on bringing this woman into the trial grounds. I really don’t know what you’re thinking! Not only will the difficulty increase, you will definitely be distracted because of her... This is the Dragon God’s trial! Its level of difficulty, is something impossible for you to imagine! In my current state, I can’t use even an ounce of my strength, you’re on your own.”

Jasmine’s voice was filled with bitterness. In her eyes, Yun Che’s



decision of bringing Little Fairy into the trial grounds was undoubtedly a death-seeking move. But with her understanding of Yun Che's personality in the one year she had been with him, this move of his, was not the least bit unexpected to her.

In the skies above, the Primordial Azure Dragon's voice suddenly resounded:

“Welcome to the Dragon God's trial grounds, two young humans. In this trial, there will be a total of three stages. Where you two are now, is where the first stage will be held. In front of you, is the only entrance to where the second stage will be held. Defeat all the Stone Dragon Warriors in this place, and the

entrance will naturally open... I wish you two best of luck.”

As the Primordial Azure Dragon’s voice disappeared, in front of Yun Che, two balls of dirt-yellow light suddenly started to flash... Yun Che quickly took a step forward, and with his two hands, he wielded the Overlord’s Colossal Sword horizontally in front of him.

The yellow light scattered, and two figures appeared before Yun Che’s eyes. Their bodies were no different from an average person, but they seemed to be carved from stone, and looked unbelievably firm. Their heads looked half-human, and half-dragon. They were holding onto a stone spear on one hand and a stone shield on the other, as their

pairs of expressionless eyes firmly locked onto Yun Che.

Are these the Stone Dragon Warriors the Primordial Azure Dragon spoke of? Yun Che's alertness in his heart rose, but immediately after, his heart calmed. Because, he did not feel any trace of intimidation from the aura of strength emitted out from the two Stone Dragon Warriors.

"Their strength is probably at the Fourth Level of the True Profound Realm, same as you." Jasmine said.

The two Stone Dragon Warriors had already begun to move as charged straight towards Yun Che. Their bodies were seemingly heavy, as their running steps were

exceptionally deafening.

Facing enemies of the same level at the same time, to an average practitioner, was indeed very difficult. However, to Yun Che, it was fundamentally not the least bit intimidating. Because he, who possessed four great divine abilities in a single body, could completely eliminate opponents of the same level in an instant.

Yun Che waited for the two Stone Dragon Warriors to approach, and swept his sword... which, was even longer than the spears the Stone Dragon Warriors were holding. When the first Stone Dragon Warrior had only just raised its spear and took up an attacking posture, Yun Che's sword had

already smashed onto the stone spear, instantly breaking it into pieces. Then, without any loss of momentum, his sword broke into its waist... However, even at this point, there was no sign of the force behind the sword decreasing, as it continued to sweep across the air, smashing into the body of the second Stone Dragon Warrior.

The shattered bodies of the two Stone Dragon Warriors laid on the floor and then, disappeared completely in a flash of light.

Yun Che had only swung once... and in only a single breath's time, he destroyed two Stone Dragon Warriors and a stone spear. It's completely not exaggerated to say that, in the entire younger

generation within Blue Wind Empire, it was impossible to find a second person, at the same level as Yun Che, who was capable of doing this.

After instantly defeating two opponents of the same level, Yun Che did not relax because of this. This was the Dragon God's trial, so how could it be this easy? If the difficulty of the trial was only at this level, then it would not make sense for all of the previous hundred and twenty nine people who took the trial to lose their lives.

Ziiiiing~

Not even three breaths' time after Yun Che defeated the two Stone Dragon Warriors, in front of him,

four yellow balls of light suddenly started to flash, and right after, four Stone Dragon Warriors, with exactly the same figures as the ones before, held up their spears as they charged towards Yun Che.

Although the number was increased to four, the strength of these Stone Dragon Warriors did not change and was still at the same level as Yun Che, the fourth level of the True Profound Realm. Yun Che took a step forward; his heavy sword swept across like a dragon's tail, and with a loud bang, the four Stone Dragon Warriors which weighed at least several hundred kilos were sent flying far away. When they landed, all four of them shattered into countless pieces.

Four Stone Dragon Warriors, were still instantly eliminated. The tyranny and the attack range of a heavy sword, was something a longspear could never compare to.

Without even giving Yun Che time to wait, after the four shattered Stone Dragon Warriors disappeared, the yellow rays of light once again flashed in front of Yun Che, and this time, there were eight of them.

Eight Stone Dragon Warriors appeared in a single line in front of Yun Che. Even with these numbers, Yun Che was still not afraid. Without waiting for the Stone Dragon Warriors to attack, he took the initiative to rush towards them and swept his heavy sword across



with more strength than before.

BANG BANG BANG!!

Three Stone Dragon Warriors had only just appeared, but their heads had already turned into rubble, falling upright onto the ground. At this moment, three spears came thrusting towards Yun Che from his sides. Without even looking at them, Yun Che swept his sword, then three stone spears were instantly destroyed, and the airwave brought about by the sweep forced the remaining five Stone Dragon Warriors to retreat. Right after, he sped forward and slashed three times. Three heavy bangs resounded, and the five Stone Dragon Warriors shattered one after another... In this entire

process, not only were the eight Stone Dragon Warriors not able to touch Yun Che, they were not even able to approach within three steps from him.

At this moment, in Yun Che's mind, Jasmine's warning sounded. "Don't attack them so ferociously. Try to limit your profound energy usage as much as possible. Haven't you noticed that the number of these Stone Dragon Warriors double in every subsequent wave? In the last few waves, there will be definitely even more of them!"

"I know." Yun Che nodded. The first wave had two, the second wave had four, and the third wave had eight. Following this pattern, the next wave will definitely have sixteen of

them, and the next wave after that will have thirty-two, and then sixty-four...

“Fighting against opponents of the same level, and even a dozen of them at the same time, if it was someone else, it will definitely be despair. But to me... even if a hundred of them were to come at the same time, I will still be able to kill them all without even leaving a single one!” Yun Che said solemnly.

As he was saying that, yellow light once again flashed in front of him, and eight new Stone Dragon Warriors appeared.

Mn? Eight of them? Why are there only eight? Is eight actually the limit? In his heart, Yun Che was a

little surprised. When he was about to head forward to attack, suddenly, he felt something was wrong... Because the auras of these Stone Dragon Warriors were not only present in front of him, but he could faintly feel them behind him as well.

He stopped his tracks and quickly turned about. He was shocked to see eight spear-wielding Stone Dragon Warriors appearing at the back as well, and they were currently charging towards the Little Fairy, who was laid on the floor.

“You’re courting death!”

Enraged, Yun Che ran back at lightning speed. Like a dragon, a

swing of his sword brought about a windstorm, pushing back all of the Stone Dragon Warriors approaching Little Fairy, and then, he quickly headed to Little Fairy's side. But this time, he did not dare to take the initiative to take them head on. Rather, he stood by Little Fairy's side, and destroyed the Stone Dragon Warriors that charged towards them one after another... But, before he could finish dealing with the ones in front of him, the eight Stone Dragon Warriors behind came charging towards them together. They seemed to have come to know of Yun Che's weakness, as all of their longswords thrust towards Little Fairy, who had been laid on the floor.

Attacks coming from his front and

back; to Yun Che, they were a small matter. But Little Fairy was in the midst of danger, so he could not afford the slightest negligence; as with Little Fairy's current state, she could die at any time. And currently, there were only sixteen Stone Dragon Warriors, yet there would be even more in each subsequent wave. If she was going to lay on the ground the entire time while he simply stood guard her by her side, it was simply impossible to ensure her safety.

Yun Che thus made a decision. He wildly brandished his heavy sword, drawing a pale-black full moon around his body, which forced all of the Stone Dragon Warriors to retreat about six meters away. Then, he released his left hand from the

sword handle, and wielded it with only his right hand. He brought Little Fairy up with his left arm, and tightly held onto her against his shoulder. Then, he plunged into the group of Stone Dragon Warriors; wherever his heavy sword was swung, shattered rocks would fly.

“Are you crazy!?” Yun Che’s action completely stunned Jasmine as she exclaimed. “You’re actually wielding your heavy sword with a single hand... This will cause your strength to fall twice as fast! By carrying her, not only will it increase your stamina depletion rate, it will also affect your movements, and cause you to be constantly distracted... If you don’t wish to die here, hurry and throw her aside and then control your

energy consumption.”

“I can’t do that!” Yun Che said unhesitatingly. “You can call me an idiot and even call me conceited, but I will never put her down... If you were in her place, I would never throw you aside either!”

As he said that, Yun Che’s heavy sword had already swung out six crescents, shattering all of the sixteen Stone Dragon Warriors.

Jasmine: “...”



# Chapter 181:

## Desperate Straits

Yun Che's words stabbed into one of Jasmine's many nerves, and she no longer said anything.

Within this period of time, the fifth wave of Stone Dragon Warriors were summoned. A total of thirty-two Stone Dragon Warriors appeared in a circling formation and surrounded Yun Che.

"Don't... care about me..." Little Fairy had always been awake and she clearly understood the current predicament. She, who was pressed against on Yun Che's shoulder, slightly struggled.

Yun Che turned a deaf ear on her, and wielding his sword with a single hand, he engaged the incoming Stone Dragon Warriors. His sword swinging speed naturally decreased, as he was wielding a one thousand nine hundred and fifty kilo heavy sword with a single hand; however, it was still as ferocious and tyrannical as before. Each one of his swings were huge and wide, bringing about the whistling of the wind as the sword sliced through the air, causing the destruction of the Stone Dragon Warriors one after another before they could even approach him.

The sounds of exploding stone continued without rest. Although he was wielding the heavy sword with a single hand, although he was

hugging onto and protecting someone with his left arm, these thirty-two Stone Dragon Warriors still did not threaten Yun Che. In less than two minutes, under Yun Che's dozens of continuous swings with his heavy sword, they all turned into shattered rocks on the ground.

But, the fifth wave, was still not the end. Immediately after, the sixth wave of Stone Dragon Warriors appeared before Yun Che, and this time, there were sixty-four of them!

Looking at the sixty-four Stone Dragon Warriors encircling him, Yun Che took a deep breath as the hand he was using to wield the sword unconsciously tightened. The Prison God Sirius' Tome was able to

give him complete mastery over the control of heavy swords, but it definitely did not mean it could allow him to ignore the weight of the heavy swords themselves.

Holding a heavy sword with a single hand was unwise to begin with, and after eliminating the fifth wave of Stone Dragon Warriors, his right hand had already begun to feel numb.

Boom... Boom...

The sixty-four Stone Dragon Warriors started running together and the ground they ran on shook with every step they take. Yun Che growled, raised his sword and plunged into the crowd of Stone Dragon Warriors which just doubled in numbers. He charged.

He clashed. His heavy sword was swung to the left. And then, it was swept to the right. Over and over again. The enemies were swept away one after another, and their bodies shattered one after another... Right here and now, he who had Little Fairy in his embrace, was extremely glad that he chose a heavy sword as his weapon back then. Because, when heavily surrounded, the only weapon that would allow one to fearlessly sweep in all directions like now, was only the heavy sword! The only weapon that could allow one to embrace a person, and protect her from the slightest bit of harm, was only the heavy sword! The only weapon that could easily shatter these Stone Dragon Warriors, whose hard and sturdy bodies could hardly be

harmd by any other weapons, was also only the heavy sword!

The advantages of a heavy sword, in a battle like this, were thoroughly displayed. Yun Che absolutely believed that if he was currently wielding a light sword in his hand, he would not be able to move effortlessly in this encirclement of many Stone Dragon Warriors, and he would not be able to protect Little Fairy this perfectly.

But at the same time these advantages were being displayed, the disadvantages were slowly revealing themselves as well.

Boom...

Bang...

Boom... Boom....

With another set of tyrannical brandishing with the heavy sword, the sixth wave of Stone Dragon Warriors had turned into rubble as well. And the time taken, was exactly four times the time he had taken to finish the fifth wave.

Yun Che stabbed his heavy sword into the ground as he finally began to pant. Under Jasmine's "command", Yun Che had never kept his heavy sword in the Sky Poison Pearl, and had always carried it behind his back, so as to get used to its weight. However, no matter how one gets used to it, it definitely did not mean that it could be completely ignored. Because that weight of a thousand nine hundred

and fifty kilos, will always be there. It will neither decrease, nor will it disappear.

The sixth wave, was still not the end.

Ziiing... Ziiing...

A large number of yellow rays of light flashed around Yun Che, and the figures of an exact total of a hundred and twenty-eight Stone Dragon Warriors appeared. And these Stone Dragon Warriors had undergone changes as well. Their weapons were no longer just longswords; at the back, there were Stone Dragon Warriors who decided to discard their shields, and were wielding two longswords and two longblades.



More than a hundred of them...  
Facing more than a hundred  
enemies of the same level at the  
same time, and even after a large  
consumption of energy, how the  
hell could this be a trial? It's  
basically abuse! This should  
probably be the last wave, I guess.

Yun Che thought as such. His  
initial ragged breathing had already  
calmed down after he regulated it.  
He threw an Intermediate Profound  
Recovering Pellet into his mouth,  
and adjusted his left shoulder so he  
could tighten his hold on Little  
Fairy by a little bit. He then pulled  
out the heavy sword from the  
ground with a single hand, and  
pointed it to the front.

The fierce battle between a one-

handed person and a hundred warriors, thus began.

The Stone Dragon Warriors wielding longswords and longblades were not only different weapon-wise; even their movement speed was evidently faster than the Stone Dragon Warriors wielding spears. They rushed towards the front, and silhouettes of swords and blades enveloped Yun Che... Until now, what Yun Che was really consoled about, was that these Stone Dragon Warriors did not possess any long-ranged profound skills. Under the swings of his heavy sword, they were not able to approach him, which also meant that basically, they were not able to harm him and Little Fairy. Otherwise, their predicament would undoubtedly be

several times more difficult.

However, the condition for this situation to persist was for him to maintain the frequency of his swings. But with the combination of his increasing energy consumption and increasing sense of fatigue in his arm, the speed of his heavy sword swings, and their level of ferociousness, were evidently falling. This also lead to even bigger openings and flaws after his every swing.

Bang bang bang...

In a series of explosions, five Stone Dragon Warriors that came to attack together were sent flying with a crescent swing of the heavy sword. But because of the gradually

piling exhaustion from exerting his strength, when Yun Che was withdrawing his sword, his posture suddenly became unbalanced for a moment, so the longspear of a Stone Dragon Warrior came thrusting from his side and ruthlessly pierced into Yun Che's waist.

Blood splattered out, and the Stone Dragon Warrior's spear-tip was instantly broken as well. With a protective veil of profound energy on the exterior, and adding the hardness brought about by the Great Way of the Buddha, although this thrust did cause a bit of blood to spill, it did not bring about any serious damage. However, it was enough to allow Yun Che to feel a heavier sense of danger.

“Haah!!”

The nearby Stone Dragon Warriors were smashed with a single swing of Yun Che’s sword. He then suddenly flung his right arm and threw the heavy sword in the air. Right after, he quickly and gently moved Little Fairy to the right and held her tightly with her right arm. His left hand grabbed onto the descending heavy sword, and with a single swing, it brought about a howl that was similar to the roar of a furious dragon...

With the swapping of arms, the numbness in his right arm finally eased up by a little. Although he could not wield the heavy sword as freely with his left arm, the frequency of his swings and the

power behind them slightly increased. However, the energy exhausting rate, was also evidently faster than when he wielded it with his right arm.

The Stone Dragon Warriors swarmed together towards Yun Che, and they shattered together by him as well. If these were not Stone Dragon Warriors, but actual living human beings, Yun Che's entire body definitely would have already been dyed in fresh blood.

His left arm then began to feel heavier, gradually reaching the point of unsustainability. He once again returned the heavy sword to his right hand, which had eased up slightly from the numbness, and continued the close quarter combat.

The amount of time he took to clear this wave, to him, was very much longer than the previous wave, to the point where he did not even know the total amount of time he used. When the final Stone Dragon Warrior was destroyed, only heavy panting came out from his mouth. When he finally stabbed his heavy sword into the ground, and when his right hand left its handle, that sense of relief, was basically as if he was soaring into the heavens.

“Hu... hu... hu...”

Yun Che’s entire face was flushed red; he was panting extremely severely, and the hot beads of sweat on his forehead were so fine that they looked like raindrops. Little Fairy, who was hooped before his

chest, could clearly feel the shivering arm hugging onto her.

Ziiing~~~

Not even three breaths' time after Yun Che let go of his heavy sword did an even larger number of yellow light flash around him. These rays of light caused Yun Che's ragged breathing to abruptly stop. He forcefully raised his head, abruptly stopped the shuddering of his right arm, and firmly gripped onto the hilt of the heavy sword.

The eighth wave... two hundred and fifty-six Stone Dragon Warriors!

This trial could no longer be described as "difficult", but extremely brutal, and as brutal as



hell. Within this brutality, not only did one have to face enemies with the same profound level, and not only did one have to face twice as many enemies after exhausting a large amount of energy, the most frightening thing was that the time between the clearing of a wave and the appearance of the next wave, did not even reach five breaths of time...

It completely did not give the person taking the trial any time for a breather and recover... or even the chance to heal his injuries!

With the appearance of these Stone Dragon Warriors, Yun Che's hand had returned to the heavy sword's handle. His expression was calm, but his pupils had evidently shrank

a little.

There was actually... another wave!

The crowd of Stone Dragon Warriors that appeared charged towards Yun Che with uniform movements. Yun Che looked beyond the group, and at the back of the group, he was shocked to see Stone Dragon Warriors whose bodies were entangled with long metal chains, in which ball-shaped stone hammers were suspended at both ends of each metal chain.

Those are... meteor hammers!!!

[image]

The Stone Dragon Warriors swarmed over with their overwhelming numbers like a huge

wave that tried to drown Yun Che within it. Yun Che's heavy sword was swept back and forth across the crowd of Stone Dragon Warriors but currently, his heavy sword felt particularly heavy. Every single time he swung, he was seemingly required to use his full strength. The Stone Dragon Warriors at the front of the crowd were falling one after another, while the Stone Dragon Warriors carrying the meteor hammers at the back were also quickly approaching.

Swish... Swish... Swish...

Five to six meteor hammers flew towards Yun Che and Little Fairy, who was in his embrace, from different directions.

Every single time Yun Che swung his heavy sword, he would always be able to tyrannically blast away the surrounding enemies, and prevent them from approaching too close. But attacks with the meteor hammers basically did not need the users to approach their enemies. These Stone Dragon Warriors were standing about six meters away, but the thrown meteor hammers were enough to accurately crash towards Yun Che. And, these meteor hammers also came from above, so when he was attacking the Stone Dragon Warriors, he basically could not sweep his sword towards the meteor hammers. If he were to sweep his swords towards these meteor hammers, he would be unable to sweep towards the surrounding Stone Dragon Warriors

in time, which would cause them to approach too close...

To Yun Che, the addition of these meteor hammer warriors were undoubtedly a nightmare within a nightmare. He could not help but use the Star God's Broken Shadow to move and cut through the crowd of Stone Dragon Warriors. But, because of this, no matter his energy consumption, attacking efficiency, or the number of dangerous elements, all of them had greatly increased.

Swish... Swish... Swish... Swish...  
Swish... Swish...

More and more Stone Dragon hammer wielders were charging over, and the meteor hammers

flying towards Yun Che were becoming more concentrated, to the point where, in every moment, there were at least dozens of meteor hammers pounding towards him from different directions. He continuously moved and dodged, and once again, moved and dodged. He basically did not have the chance to retaliate...

Bang!

A good number of meteor hammers smashed together, creating dazzling sparks. Yun Che leaped high into the air, and when he was the highest point, dozens of meteor hammers came flying over. Yun Che took a deep breath, and used Star God's Broken Shadow to descend instantly, but when he

landed, his right leg stepped on a fist-sized rock... In these type of situations, it usually would not have affected Yun Che in the slightest, but currently, because of the heavy consumption of energy, and with his mind strained, it was enough to influence his balance... His body leaned towards the left as he landed, and he staggered a distance of two steps... And this opening, was easily caught by Stone Dragon Warriors on his left, for three longblades came cleaving down ferociously at Little Fairy's position.

The approaching blade waves caused Yun Che to forcefully raise his head. But currently, he already had no time left to retreat, nor did he have the time to use his heavy sword to block them. Watching the

trajectory of the three incoming longblades, Yun Che straightened his left arm, which was holding onto Little Fairy, at lightning speed, and took the three stone blades head on...

Sss...

Three stone blades cut onto Yun Che's left arm at the same time. The sounds of the impact allowed Yun Che to know that, not only did the three blades cut into his flesh, they even cut into his bones. Yun Che's eyes widened. With a loud roar, he used his profound energy to push out the stone blades cutting into his bones. He wildly swung his heavy sword, smashing away all of the Stone Dragon Warriors that approached him. This sweep was



exceptionally ferocious; although he was able to sweep away all of the surrounding Stone Dragon Warriors, it also revealed a large enough opening. A meteor hammer suddenly flew over, and with a loud bonk, it smashed into Yun Che's head.

Yun Che's mind was currently shaking as his vision became a field of white. He quickly bit the tip of his tongue to recover his calm... But this split second of dizziness in this heavy encirclement, was enough to cause him his life.

Swish...Swish... Swish... Swish...  
Swish...

The moment his vision cleared up, he heard piercing sounds come

from close proximity; a total of seven meteor hammers were currently flying over... Without even thinking about it, Yun Che instantly took a lowered body stance, and at the same time, used his two hands to firmly embrace Little Fairy.

BANG BANG BANG...

Seven meteor hammers struck Yun Che's back at the same time, immediately smashing Yun Che onto the ground. Yun Che's complexion paled as a large mouthful of blood welled up and gushed out of his mouth. He did not stand up. While releasing a roar similar to that of a wild beast's, a scarlet fire started to wildly blaze from his body; it even shot up to a height of a few dozen meters in an

instant...

“Star Scorching Demon Lotus!!”

Like a blooming lotus, layers of flame waves were released layer after layer and in a blink of an eye, they spread to a circumference of a hundred meters. These more than two hundred Stone Dragon Warriors were packed closely as they surrounded Yun Che, and thus, were all drawn into the Star Scorching Demon Lotus. Under the hot flames that were mixed with the flames of a phoenix, all of the Stone Dragon Warriors quickly turned into ash.

He had never used Star Scorching Demon Lotus, which had a large radius, because the consumption of

this move was enormous. Within a short period of time, he could only use this ability once, and once used, he would definitely be close to total burnout. Hence, this was his final trump card. In the predicament earlier, he had no choice but to use it... Right now, he could only pray that the eighth wave was the last wave.

Since the eighth wave was already terrifying to this degree, it's impossible for a ninth wave to appear, right...

Unless, this Primordial Azure Dragon was simply just a crazed beast that liked to toy and deliberately murder the challengers taking its trial!!

# Chapter 182:

## Phoenix Break

As the Star Scorching Demon Lotus' flame slowly extinguished, more than two hundred Stone Dragon Warriors were charred as they broke and fell into pieces along with their weapons. Peace returned to the area once again as only Yun Che's heavy gasps for breath and the "drip" sounds from the fall of his sweat and blood could be heard.

With a "boom", the heavy sword fell onto the ground. With great effort, Yun Che straightened his back to allow Little Fairy to lean on his shoulder. "Are you alright? Are you injured?"

Little Fairy was unharmed. Let alone injured, those creatures couldn't even touch her. Looking at Yun Che's pale face, she knew clearly that if it hadn't been for Yun Che protecting her, he wouldn't have been injured at all, and the two hundred or more Stone Dragon Warriors from before wouldn't have almost pushed him to the edge.

"Your... hands..." Little Fairy mumbled with difficulty.

Yun Che's left hand was in unbearable pain. Although he could barely embrace Little Fairy, wielding the heavy sword was already impossible. He shook his head and laughed effortlessly, "I'm fine, their blades are made of stones and are blunt. I'd only received some

superficial injuries.”

“Let me go... or else... you will die!”

Little Fairy’s voice was cold and weak. Although her body was crippled and her aura was weak, her five senses were fine. The sound of the three swords cutting into bone had rang by her ears just now, so how could she not have heard it clearly?

After popping an Intermediate Profound Recovering Pellet into his mouth, he reached for some ointment and spread it across his wounds on his left arm. Without the body strengthening from the Great Way of the Buddha, his left arm would’ve definitely been chopped into pieces. Upon hearing what Little Fairy had said, he shook

his head. “Unless I’m dead, I will never abandon you. Don’t think yourself as a burden. In this situation, the will to protect you is my greatest motivation to move on. Besides, haven’t we already managed to pass? This trial’s first stage, we should have already.....”

Before he finish his sentenced, a large wave of Stone Dragon Warriors.... larger than the one previously, appeared after a bright flash of yellow light.

Dragon God Trial’s first stage, ninth wave..... five hundred and twelve Stone Dragon Warriors!!

Yun Che’s voice stopped there, as he was unable to continue saying a single word. His hand pointing



downwards, he grabbed at the heavy sword's hilt, pulling the heavy sword that had sunk in from the ground again.

Within his line of sight, there were twice the number of Stone Dragon Warriors as before, and there were even more than the total of the previous eight waves..... If this wasn't a delusion, then it was a nightmare; a well and true nightmare.

Amongst these Stone Dragon Warriors, the ones in front held broadswords, swords, and spears, while those at the back no longer wielded meteor hammers. What they held in their hands were obviously especially massive longbows!

## Stone Dragon Archers!

Bows and arrows that could shoot further and were a bigger menace than the meteor hammer!

“.....Little Fairy, can you tell me..... your name, now?” Yun Che asked as he embraced Little Fairy, supported himself up with the heavy sword, and watched the streaming group of Stone Dragon Warriors closed in.

The surrounding noises informed Little Fairy of the unfavourable situation they were currently in. She had already lost track of how many years it had been, but she had never revealed her name to outsiders, let alone to a junior. But at that moment, when hearing Yun Che's

voice, she couldn't muster the strength to reject him no matter what. Within the footsteps that cause the ground to shudder, her weak voice slowly spread:

“Chu..... Yue..... Chan.....”

“Chu Yuechan....” Yun Che recited softly. Then, he started smiling, “Chu — Lovely and moving, Yue — The beautiful and bright moon in the sky, Chan — A beautiful woman, a beauty that resides in the moon, lovely and touching. In this world, there is no other name that suits you more. I've always been calling you Little Fairy, and I have not been calling you wrongly at all..... So in future, I shall still continue to call you Little Fairy.”

Chu Yuechan: “...”

“Now that it has reached to this point, I’m already unable to tell if this is a trial or a completely unsurpassable trap.” Yun Che lifted the heavy sword, and pointed it at the Stone Dragon Warriors that had reached a distance within fifteen meters from them, “But, whether it’s me or you, we can’t die for nothing here..... I won’t die, nor will I let you die..... So, you’ll have to use your strength to... give me strength!!”

“Haah!!!!”

With a loud roar, Yun Che’s aura went berserk in a split second; his gaze grew extremely blood-thirsty and the blood in his body frantically

boiled. His spirit, willpower, conviction, and soul also seemed to come ablaze all at once.... In these two lives, the number of dangerous situations he'd encountered had been too many to count; the number of impossible situations, had also been far too many. But the formation in front of his eyes that made men despair, made his heart palpitate.... But the reason for this throbbing was all because of Little Fairy; throwing away the need to protect Little Fairy, a flame ignited in his heart with unexpected slivers of excitement.

A sort of twisted excitement rose in his soul after encountering countless thrilling impasses...

“Come as much as you want... No

matter how many that come, I'll kill them all!!”

Yun Che gave a low growl, and after releasing the “Star Scorching Demon Lotus”, a berserk energy that came from somewhere unknown, was produced once again from his originally exhausted body. He didn't retreat. Rather, he hugged Little Fairy tight and rushed into the massive procession of Stone Dragon Warriors.

Bang!!

In a swoop, an entire four Stone Dragon Warriors were sent flying.

Boom!!

Another strike, and five more Stone Dragon Warriors were chopped into

ten segments, and even a section of Stone Dragon Warriors in the rear were knocked down.

He, who should clearly have been exhausted, was currently actually wielding his sword even faster than before, and his strength had actually grown more ferocious. His heavy sword was like the Death God's scythe that did not stop rotating as it crazily reaped the lives of many Stone Dragon Warriors.

Jasmine, who was within the Sky Poison Pearl, felt a burst of shock. She was the clearest on Yun Che's body state. How could he, who previously could not even hold the heavy sword steadily, suddenly explode with this force that far outmatched his previous output.

Her eyebrows furrowed, and she delicately perceived Yun Che's current condition. Her small face revealed shock, and her shock also expanded subsequently.

This wave of energy was actually from his willpower; it was actually squeezed out forcefully from his vitality!!

Jasmine had no way of knowing how exactly he managed this; to have extracted strength from his life force. It was unknown what a gigantic amount of willpower and perseverance it would take to achieve this, but she was clear that this would have incomparably severe consequences..... Because Yun Che's current actions, was clearly using up his life crazily!! The



most direct consequence would be that his lifespan would reduce greatly, and after today, he would fall gravely ill and if lucky, he would even be completely powerless for as long as months without being able to leave the bed. But if he was unlucky, all his bodily functions and organs would fail and never recover.

The current Yun Che, was just like an enraged lion rushing into a flock of sheep. Wherever he rushed to, large piles of carcasses would be left behind.

The skies were filled with piercing sounds and a large volley of arrows spread through the skies as a large range of arrows rained down.

Swoosh.....

Yun Che's right arm was shot by three arrows.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.....

Yun Che's back was hit by another three arrows, and amongst them, one of these arrows dangerously hit the vital center of his back.

Reaching this sort of impossible situation and facing more than five hundred Stone Dragon Warriors, Yun Che made the most correct, as well as the most crazy decision; that was to concentrate mostly on his attack, and as for defense, it basically stopped at Little Fairy. Because the faster he killed, the less pressure there would be. Traveling

through the enemy ranks, he crazily chopped and cleared the Stone Dragon Warriors like a hurricane rushing through fallen leaves. The sounds of roars, crashes and explosions were ear-splitting, yet they never ceased.

Before two minutes had even passed, Yun Che had already been hit by twelve arrows, pierced by twelve spears, and hacked at by nine swords and thirteen blades at his back, shoulder and chest. More and more wounds opened up, and following his violent actions, these wounds no longer just bled, but were continually gushing blood. Horrifyingly, his shirt had long been completely dyed red by his blood.

The greatest threat to Yun Che was

undoubtedly the Stone Dragon Archers in the rear. The wounds on Yun Che's body were mostly the outcome of trying to escape lethal attacks from the arrows. These Stone Dragon Archers were also the most critical targets to be killed. However, there were layers after layers of Stone Dragon Warriors, and he was inhibited from directly rushing to the Stone Dragon Archers. Out of all the profound skills he had, the one that could attack the furthest, was the Sky Wolf Slash... but the Sky Wolf Slash's consumption was far too large. If he really used it, he would be completely spent through and through.

He had to dispose of these Stone Dragon Archers. If he didn't, and

continued to get injured this way, he would die before killing all the Stone Dragon Warriors here.....

Fixating his gaze on the Stone Dragon Warriors outside, Yun Che's gaze grew more and more solemn. On the surface of his body, a ring of fire began to rise and burn. Suddenly, his eyes flashed, and the flames on his body all rushed towards his heavy sword. Following which, along with the brandishing of his heavy sword, the fire was flung out far away.

Scree~~

In its wake, a resonant phoenix cry sounded and an enormous blazing phoenix flew from Yun Che's heavy sword. Passing through the Stone

Dragon Warriors' carcasses, it fell sixty five meters away in the middle of the pack of Stone Dragon Archers, and then exploded; in the rocketing blaze, a dozen or so Stone Dragon Archers were sent exploding into the sky as their bodies smashed into powder in midair.

“He.... He went as far as to merge the World Ode of the Phoenix's residual formula into the Prison God Sirius' Tome's fundamental formula... to give rise to a profound skill that combines the heavy sword with phoenix fire!” Jasmine blurted out in surprise from within the Sky Poison Pearl, and then mumbled, “To actually combine the two divine arts that normal people might never be able to fully grasp in their

lifetimes, and to do so in under this nearly impossible situation, and to be successful on the first try... How much of a monstrous perception does he possess!!”

This was Yun Che’s first self-made profound skill. Watching the dozen or so Stone Dragon Archers that had exploded, he mumbled this profound skill’s name quietly...

“Phoenix Break!”

The Phoenix Break was a large-scale burning attack that was no different than the Star Scorching Demon Lotus. Although it had a much smaller range, it could attack from a long distance and its consumption was much less in comparison. The corners of Yun

Che's mouth lifted. A wave of energy that came from who knows where, yet again welled up throughout his body and ignited the brandished heavy sword. He flung out a blazing phoenix that gave off a low cry one after another. These blazing phoenixes rushed close to the Stone Dragon Warrior's body and flew to the Stone Dragon Archers far away, exterminating wave after wave of Stone Dragon Archers that were originally already not many in number.

As the injuries on his body grew more and more severe, the blood that had flowed out from his body had unknowingly become a third of the total amount of blood in his body. His clothes had been completely dyed and a large portion



of Little Fairy's clothes were also dyed red, yet his expression was terrifyingly calm. His movements were still fierce and it was as if he completely did not feel any pain, let alone know that his body had already sustained so many horrifying injuries.

Him squeezing out his life, was also squeezing at his limits. Where his limit was located... perhaps even he himself did not know.

# Chapter 183: Stone Dragon General

This almost miraculous profound skill that was self-made by fusion, became a light of hope to the Yun Che who was in despair. His focus of attack switched to the far away Stone Dragon Archers; following the brandishing of the heavy sword, the close by Stone Dragon Warriors were blown away. What's more, the phoenix shaped flames that were shot flying out also blew up the Stone Dragon Archers one by one.

Yun Che's resounding roars, the heavy sword's howling, the rumbling collisions, and phoenix's

low cries weaved into a dreadful sonata in this isolated valley. Yun Che's vision gradually grew hazy. His body almost became entirely numb, to the extent that he almost could not feel the existence of his arm. But his right arm that tightly gripped the heavy sword, still continued to swing mechanically. After a few tens of phoenix cries, all of the Stone Dragon Archers fell, and more than half of the Stone Dragon Warriors that had numbered over five hundred also fell at this time. Nevertheless, the dancing of the heavy sword still did not stop, and made the numbers of fallen Stone Dragon Warriors higher and higher... Three hundred.... Four hundred.... Five hundred....

Boom!!!

Following the sounds of an explosion, the earth broke apart. Mustering up the last of his strength, Yun Che attacked. All the Stone Dragon Warriors were blown far away, and a fifteen meter radius void of nothingness instantly appeared around Yun Che. After this blow, Yun Che was finally going to black out as he knelt down... If it weren't for the heavy sword's support, he would have already collapsed to the ground. However, in his left arm, he still tightly held onto Little Fairy... His entire arm was covered in more than twenty blade, sword, spear and arrow injuries. His arm was blood red and there was essentially no area that was left unscathed. Little

Fairy, who was under the protection of this arm, did not suffer any injuries although her clothes had been stained red with fresh blood.

Under the Yun Che's last strike, the group of the Stone Dragon Warriors that was likewise the last, fell. The breath he had held on to with all his might, also exhausted along with the falling motion of his body. Let alone standing up, he couldn't even heavily pant. Even though his eyes were open, he could only see a field of white...

Even he himself could not believe that he actually trudged through this ninth wave of Stone Dragon Warriors. However, he was already incapable of remembering how he did it.

Crunch...

A burst of heavy sounds came from his front and made him subconsciously raise his head. In the midst of his blurry vision, he saw one Stone Dragon Warrior that fell down from his last attack, actually slowly stood up. It then wielded its spear, and pierced toward him at a running pace.

There was... one more...

Yun Che's teeth viciously bit onto the tip of his tongue as he abruptly lifted his body.... However, his current body felt as if it weighed millions of kilos; under all his strength, not only did he fail to stand up, it also instigated an acute

and heart-drilling pain in his entire body instead. It was simply impossible for him to lift the heavy sword; even nudging it was an impossibility.

The Stone Dragon Warrior was already a foot away as it came piercing in a straight line.... He had already killed an entire nine waves of Stone Dragon Warriors, which amounted to over a thousand. But this last one, instead, became a turbulent river that was seemingly impossible to cross.

If this spear strike was pierced toward Yun Che, it was quite possible for it to directly take Yun Che's life. However, it aligned the head of its spear, at Little Fairy.

The stone spear that stabbed toward Little Fairy, heavily touched a certain very sensitive nerve of Yun Che's. With strength that he mustered from who knows where, his left hand shot out like a bolt of lightning, and firmly gripped onto the spear's tip. His right hand grasped into a fist, and violently smashed out. With a heavy sound, it directly smashed through the Stone Dragon Warrior's chest.

With a 'bam' sound, the Stone Dragon Warrior heavily crashed down onto the ground. Yun Che's vision also went black once again, and he couldn't even keep his kneeling posture. After letting out a wheeze, he fell onto the ground facing upwards.



His entire being had already turned into a bloodied person through and through. Countless wounds and bloody holes dispersed throughout his entire body. Even he himself didn't expect that after receiving so many injuries, losing so much blood, and even exhausting his life on top of that, he was actually still alive.

No wonder all the previous challengers had died here... Yun Che closed his eyes and let out a powerlessly bitter laugh. This was only the trial's first stage and it had not even ended yet. Even though Yun Che had the aid of several divine skills and god's secret arts, he was already in such a predicament. If it were anyone else, he might not even pass the fourth

wave or even just the third wave. The later stages were definitely a nightmare or abyss that became scarier and scarier.

Is this really just a trial? How could there be such a scary trial in this world..... This trial, compared to the Phoenix Trial, was not just ten times more difficult. It was at least a hundred or even a thousand times more difficult...

“Yun Che... Yun Che!” Little Fairy shouted gently, but did not get a response from Yun Che.

Suddenly, the voice of the Primordial Azure Dragon rang from above.

“Very good, young human. The fact

that you were able to reach this stage is already an unimaginable miracle. If it weren't for the lady by your side, this trial would be several times simpler; at least you would not be in such a desperate situation. However, the first stage of the trial has not yet been completed. The last wave, which is also the most difficult challenge, is going to start soon. But before that, I will give you sixty breaths of time of rest..... No, with your injuries, this sixty breaths might not help you rest properly, and might instead even worsen your injuries, causing you to lose more life force..... Everything, will be decided by your own fortune.”

Yun Che laid down on the floor motionless. Even though his eyes were open, they were lifeless, as

though he had not heard the Primordial Azure Dragon's voice. Just as his consciousness was about to fade into stillness, Jasmine's voice seemed like a wake-up call, shocking him back to life.

"If you do not want to die, hurry up and use the Great Way of the Buddha to stabilize your injuries!"

Yun Che's eyes sprang back to life as his body slightly moved. The Great Way of the Buddha soundlessly activated. In just less than ten breaths of time, all the bleeding on his body had stopped.

"Little Fairy, don't worry. I'm fine..." While stabilizing his own breathing, Yun Che turned around and revealed a smile to Little Fairy to

comfort her: “You also heard it just now... There’s only one wave left... Victory, is just before our eyes. W... We, will definitely endure through this together!”

“If... it weren’t for me, you... at least... would only suffer some slight injuries... At least, you would still have thirty percent of your strength left... to deal with the next trial... You’re... really... stupid....”

“Haha....” Yun Che started to laugh. This laugh, instantly affected the countless wounds on his body, and made the muscles on his face intensely cramp from pain: “Since I’ve already been stupid for so long, then let me be stupid till the end. But you definitely cannot say such words like leaving you behind

anymore. Otherwise, wouldn't I have suffered all these wounds on my body for nothing."

Sixty breaths of time silently passed.

At this time, a rumbling sound suddenly came from the mountain cliffs directly in front of him. Along with the sound, a gate that was near ten meters in height suddenly opened in the mountain cliff. Within the mountain gate, a towering silhouette slowly walked out with heavy steps. As it fully walked out, the stone gate behind him also closed amidst the rumbling sound.

This silhouette's outer shape was very similar to the Stone Dragon

Warriors, however, it was much bigger than an ordinary Stone Dragon Warrior. Its body was over three meters, and its entire body was covered in thick and heavy golden colored armor; the weapon in its hands was more so extraordinarily eye-catching... That was a colossal sword with a completely grey body, and was even a size larger than the Overlord's Colossal Sword in Yun Che's hands. The sword's shape was twisted, as if it was an oddly shaped dragon bone. As for the sword's tip, it impressively displayed the shape of a ferocious roaring dragon.

Whether it was this enormous Stone Dragon Warrior, or the sword in its hand, both emitted an extremely terrifying aura... An aura

that was even more terrifying than the five hundred Stone Dragon Warriors that appeared altogether at the same time.

The last trial of the first stage of the Dragon God Trial, only had one opponent — Stone Dragon General!

Yun Che laid Little Fairy down delicately, then stood upright, both hands grasping onto the hilt of the heavy sword. If there was only one opponent, all he had to do was pull it away a little, so he wouldn't need to hold Little Fairy anymore, and he would be able to fight with both his hands and all his strength.

Every part of his entire body, every ounce of energy from his cells was



forced out with all his might. With a low growl, he stood up once again, and grasped the heavy sword horizontally in front of him with both hands.

“You are not its match... Fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, even if you were in peak condition, there is simply no chance that you would be able to defeat it, let alone the you in your current state.” Jasmine said with a gloomy voice: “And... Do you see the sword in its hands? That sword is even more frightening than the enormous Stone Dragon General itself because it is a heavy sword, and a genuine... Sky Profound Weapon!”

Yun Che: “...”

“Even if I can’t defeat it... I still have to fight! I’ve already gotten to this point, I don’t have any reason to give up and resign!” Yun Che growled in a low voice. In order to have the fight as far away as possible from Little Fairy, he took the initiative to face the Stone Dragon General. In order to save a bit of energy, he dragged the heavy sword as he moved forward, and the heavy sword’s body plowed a deep indentation through the ground.

The Stone Dragon General did not show any emotion and did not speak; it only attacked. When Yun Che entered its range of perception, its eyes suddenly lit up under the golden-yellow helmet. Its footsteps abruptly sped up and it swung the heavy sword out, smashing straight

at Yun Che.

This was the first time in Yun Che's life against an opponent that also used a heavy sword. But he firmly believed that this Stone Dragon General's ability to control a heavy sword definitely could not compare to him, because he possessed the Prison God Sirius' Tome. And because he was proficient in the fundamental stage of the Prison God Sirius' Tome, Yun Che was well-acquainted with all the advantages of the heavy sword, as well as all the disadvantages of the heavy sword. He must not forcibly clash with the Stone Dragon General's heavy sword; the only chance of him defeating it relied on speed and guerrilla warfare, attacking whenever there is an

opening.

When the Stone Dragon General's heavy sword came swinging by, his eyes flashed as he swiftly retreated with a Star God's Broken Shadow and completely dodged that strike. Although he managed to dodge it, he was completely spent and weakened. The wind wave brought about by the sword strike made him lose his balance and narrowly missed the floor.

The Stone Dragon General stepped forward and brandished the heavy sword in a chain of four or five successive strikes that were all dodged by Yun Che's use of the Star God's Broken Shadow... However, the only thing he could do was evade, because his weakened body

had become slow and it was fundamentally impossible to find any opening for a chance to counterattack.

Its body was too heavy, the sword was too heavy, and the Stone Dragon General's speed was not fast. In the few times it attacked, it didn't touch Yun Che at all. Thus, it seemed to have been enraged. It suddenly raised the heavy sword in its hands high in the air, and emitted an extremely harsh screeching sound.

In the wake of the screeching sound, several chaotically flashing yellow lights appeared at random places of the area. In the midst of the yellow lights, around thirty or so Stone Dragon Warriors wielding all

sorts of weapons appeared in different locations... A few that were near Little Fairy's location immediately charged straight at her.

No matter what, Yun Che would never have expected that this Stone Dragon General could actually summon Stone Dragon Warriors. Looking at the Stone Dragon Warriors that rushed toward Little Fairy, he maniacally roared; energy surged from his entire body as he dashed over with his fastest speed. He then swung out his heavy sword and blew away all of the nearby Stone Dragon Warriors. While quickly passing ahead, he once again held up Little Fairy to his chest.

At this time, a terrifying whirlwind suddenly pressed toward him from his backside. As he rushed backwards, the Stone Dragon General also closely followed behind him. When he lifted up Little Fairy, the Stone Dragon General's terrifying heavy sword also violently smashed toward Yun Che's back. The Yun Che in this current situation could not evade, and it was impossible for him to even fully turn his body around. He could only firmly hold Little Fairy with his left arm, turn his body halfway and tightly clench his teeth; carrying all of his strength, his right hand that gripped the heavy sword greeted the Stone Dragon General's heavy sword.

# Chapter 184:

## Between Life and Death (1)

BOOM!!!

Before today, Yun Che had never encountered a weapon more powerful than the heavy sword he wielded. However, the moment the heavy sword slammed into the Stone Dragon General, he felt as if an enormous mountain had fallen from the heavens to slam into him.... He suddenly lost all feeling in his arm, and the heavy sword flew up into the air. He himself smashed down into the earth, shooting like an arrow across the



surface of the ground, leaving behind a nearly sixty meter mark in the dirt.

Bang! The heavy sword descended, miraculously slamming down next to his feet, penetrating the hard-packed earth. Shockingly, a two inch nick had appeared on the blade of the sword.

After Yun Che slid to a stop, everything was still. His arm was bent backward at a horrifying angle. It was hard to tell if it was just severely dislocated, or simply broken.

“Yun Che... Yun Che!!” Little Fairy cried at the top of her lungs as her heart filled with anxiousness. Just now, when Yun Che had been

thrown backwards across the ground, he had held her tightly up against his chest. She hadn't been hurt even the slightest bit. However, Yun Che had clearly suffered a severe injury. Such a blow would have been fatal to anyone other than him.

Little Fairy knew that she was the reason Yun Che had been injured. If he hadn't been attempting to protect her, he could deal with the Stone Dragon General with speed. Perhaps he wouldn't have achieved victory, but at least he wouldn't have been so quickly put into such a miserable situation.

“I'm... okay....”

Yun Che struggled to sit up. His

voice was hoarse and a bit muffled as he spoke. By the time he sat up, the Stone Dragon General was roughly thirty paces away. His right arm was still twisted back, and he couldn't feel it anymore. The only thing he could feel was a sharp pain in his shoulder.

“Let me go... If you don't wish to die, hurry up and let me go!” Yun Che's miserable condition caused Chu Yuechan's vision to swim. She just couldn't understand why he would risk his life to protect her... risk his life and not hold anything back! People were selfish by nature. Cherishing life was an instinct. She really didn't understand why this mysterious young man could hold such disregard for his own life and his own benefit just to protect her.

“No... no way!” said Yun Che gravely, gritting his teeth.

“If you don’t let me go... I’ll bite off my tongue and kill myself!”

Chu Yuechan’s words caused Yun Che’s pupils to constrict. He tilted his head to look at her. Seeing her determined face, his mouth twitched, and then suddenly he roared at the top of his voice: “Shut the hell up!”

The furious roar knocked Chu Yuechan virtually senseless. When had anyone ever dared to speak thusly to her; she, who stood so arrogantly at the apex of the profound strength pyramid, who looked down at all creation?

Yun Che's entire body trembled. While staring at Chu Yuechan, he grated, "Little Fairy, you need to listen to me carefully. At the moment, you are not a revered practitioner half a step away from the Emperor Profound Realm. You are not set above the masses, nor are you a Frozen Asgard Fairy who can look down on everyone. You're just a weak little girl who can't even protect herself! As a weak little girl, there's only one thing you can do. And that is, to let a man protect you!

"Now I get it. You kick men away, you basically hate them down to your bones, disdain them.... Well, there probably aren't any men your age in the Blue Wind Empire who

can measure up to you. One day you might well become the most powerful person in all of Blue Wind Empire, but that doesn't mean you can despise all men! Even the most powerful of women must have a man to rely on sometimes. That's obviously why women and men both exist in the world! If throughout her life, a woman rejects all the men who wished to protect her, then she'll end up with no one! If that happens, then even if she stands on top of the entire world, she's still nothing but a failed woman. She doesn't even deserve to be called a complete woman....

“In terms of strength, I may be thousands of times weaker than you, but here you are, relying on

me! You can seek death, you can try to kill yourself, or even give up. But I won't. Because I'm a man. When a man must protect someone, only death can stop him!"

Yun Che slowly stood up. Without his arm to support him, it was a bit difficult. "You want to die, but I don't... I selected the heavy sword so that I could take care of the people I chose to protect. The first person to fall under the protection of my heavy sword is not a family member, or a loved one, or even a friend. It's you.... If I'm not capable of defending the very first person to come under my protection, then how can I continue to use the heavy sword?

"Today, I'll bet my life and my

dignity to show you, you who hates men... what is... a true man!!”

“UAHHHHHHH!!!”

Yun Che opened his eyes to its extreme limit as he let out his hoarse cry. He jerked the right side of his body, causing the dislocated arm to snap forward. It clicked back into place with a popping sound.... It only took a moment, but the pain was unimaginable. However, Yun Che didn't so much as frown. His arm was now back in its original position, but couldn't be moved forward. He gripped the hilt of the heavy sword and looked at the approaching Stone Dragon General. He laughed, a laughter grim and shrill.



“Burning... Heart!!”

As the two words erupted from his mouth, his eyes suddenly filled with a light red color. Evil God's Profound Veins' second gate — Burning Heart, a gate that he would never dare to open under any circumstances, was forcibly opened by him in his most weakened state.

Inside the Sky Poison Pearl, Yun Che's action caused Jasmine to turn pale in shock. She opened her mouth, but then immediately bit down the words that nearly left her mouth. While accessing Yun Che's current condition, she went into a daze; her vision became hazy as an indistinct figure that she always yearned for appeared before her eyes. Then, it slowly overlapped

with Yun Che's current form...

His personality seemed very, very much like that of her older brother...

In order to protect those he must protect, in order to protect his own pride and honor...

He knew what he had to do, and he knew what would happen if he did... However, he would never hesitate. Furthermore, there wasn't anyone who could stop him...

When "Burning Heart", the Evil God's second gate, opened, the previously exhausted body was suddenly filled with an incomparable vigor. But at the same time, it also gave rise to unstable

energy ripples. Yun Che gripped the heavy sword and let out a roar of rage. He hurled the heavy sword toward the incoming Stone Dragon General.... The blade of the sword danced with scarlet Phoenix Flames.

“Phoenix Break!!”

This Phoenix Break did not send forth a blazing phoenix. but rather, a flaming heavy sword!

Flames danced madly upon the surface of the heavy sword's blade as it transformed into an enormous steel phoenix. It shot forward toward the Stone Dragon General as flames filled with unstoppable power rippled. Yun Che flew along behind it. As he did, phoenix flames

burst out around him, as a pair of resplendent illusory phoenix wings sprouted from his back.

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!!”

They flew through the air, sword and man!

Bang!!!!

The heavy sword stabbed into the chest of the Stone Dragon General, sending flames bursting out.

Massive tongues of fire engulfed the Stone Dragon General, shoving its torso backward. The force of the explosion caused Yun Che’s torso to also bend backwards. Thrown off balance, he lost control and spun down towards the ground.

He spun in midair, while keeping one arm encircled protectively around Chu Yuechan. His other hand reached out to grab the heavy sword as it flew back toward him. Vicious violence glittered in his eyes as he raised the heavy sword high into the air...

“Sky... Wolf... Slash!!”

“Haah!!!”

A massive wind chaotically sprung up, and a blue wolf howling at the sky flashed behind Yun Che. As Yun Che brandished the heavy sword, the wolf shot forward, carrying with it power seemingly sufficient to collapse the heavens and crush the earth.

BOOM BOOM BOOM BOOM.....

The wolf charged, leaving a deep gully in its wake as it shot forward. It reached the fallen Stone Dragon General in the blink of an eye, slamming into it and sent the Stone Dragon General flying up into the air. The immense power of the attack knocked the Stone Dragon General a full one hundred meters away. It slammed into the side of the mountain, then slowly slid down toward the ground.

Crumbling rocks and debris rained down onto it, burying it completely. Only its heavy sword remained on the outside.

Chu Yuechan watched mutely as all of this happened, seemingly having

lost the ability to even think.

“Did... did it... work?” she said. She felt as if she were in some sort of dream. Despite such a serious injury, despite being drained of energy, Yun Che had suddenly erupted with a shocking amount of power.... He was like some sort of monster. It was as if his body didn’t have any bottom line.

The only answer she received was the ear-splitting drone of the heavy sword.

Chu Yuechan forced her tiny head to look up. When she caught sight of Yun Che’s face, her eyes instantly grew wide.

Yun Che’s eyes were closed, and

two thin streams of blood seeped out from their corners. Blood also oozed out of his mouth, nose and ears.

Drip... drip....

Faint but intense cracking sounds could be heard, emanating from Yun Che's skin, blood vessels and bones. The skin on his face, arms, and body... were slowly being filled with cracks. Blood oozed out of the cracks. Over a few breaths of time, his face began to fill with similar narrow cracks. It looked like parched, dry earth... beneath his clothes, cracks covered the rest of his body. Beneath his skin, his blood vessels and bones also seemed to be splitting apart.



Using the Burning Heart in a normal situation was dangerous enough. But to use it in a weakened state was even worse. Yun Che had predicted that something like this would happen. The three moves he had made after using Burning Heart had completely sapped him of all energy and will. Perhaps it would turn out to be his final blaze of glory before dying.

Ba-thump....

Yun Che's left arm went limp and Little Fairy dropped to the ground. Then, Yun Che fell flat onto the ground, unmoving. He didn't even have a chance to utter a single word to Little Fairy.

“Yun Che... Yun Che... Yun Che!!”

Chu Yuechan's cried out as loud as she could and reached out to touch him with her right arm, the only arm she could move. However, she was simply too weak. The half pace that existed between them was a gap too far to cross. She looked at Yun Che, who laid there motionless, hemorrhaging blood, and her heart began to throb with pain.... It was a pain she had never felt before, mixed with a deep dread — dread that Yun Che might die.

Before she realized what was happening, her vision began to grown blurry. This fact filled her mind with numbness and confusion, because... she was crying. Dozens of years had passed in which she never imagined that

she would cry, especially not for a man so beneath her. What was unfamiliar, were not only her uncontrollable tears, nor the unbearable pain which stabbed into her heart like an arrow, but also deep fear.

Here she was, crying. She didn't know why she was crying, or why she felt pain, or why she was scared.... She began to weep; great billowing waves of weeping that she couldn't prevent, and couldn't stop.

“Yun Che... Yun Che!” she cried with a voice filled with helplessness and sorrow.

Boom!!

Her shouts did not provoke any

response from Yun Che. However, over at the base of the mountain, the sounds of crumbling rocks suddenly sounded out. The Stone Dragon General suddenly emerged from the pile of rubble. Debris showered off its body as it stood up once more.

# Chapter 185:

## Between Life and Death (2)

The Stone Dragon General lifted its heavy sword and walked forward step by step; each step was like the approaching footsteps of a Death God.

Chu Yuechan motionlessly stared blankly. In this certain death situation, the Yun Che who was completely covered in blood, made her, who had been wholeheartedly seeking death, suddenly possess an intense will to live. Because her current life was desperately protected by Yun Che's own life

and conviction. If she died, all of Yun Che's efforts and injuries would have all been for naught. Whether it was for herself, or for everything he had done for her, she did not want to die anymore... and even more so, did not want Yun Che to die.

If it was the her before today, eliminating this Stone Dragon General would only take a split second. But at this moment, this enemy that she would've never taken a glance at previously, had become a Death God that she was incapable of opposing. Every step the Stone Dragon General took to draw near, her expression became all the more ice-cold and unwilling... At this moment, her eyes suddenly flashed and she

remembered something that she had long forgotten for many years.

She struggled to open her right hand and took out an extremely small glass bead from her spatial ring. Then, she used every inch of her strength to pinch it into pieces. Immediately, the shattered bead released an expanse of an ice-blue brilliant aurora. After that, the blue radiance flashed and formed a flowing ice-aurora barrier around Chu Yuechan and Yun Che.

The Stone Dragon General currently within five steps away. Its body rammed against the barrier and was bounced back by the tough barrier. The Stone Dragon General took a step back, raised the gigantic sword in its hands, and heavy

smashed at the barrier.

Boom!!

The Stone Dragon General exploded with power yet the ice-blue barrier only rippled faintly and did not show any signs of being damaged. However, the Stone Dragon General's body was repelled by the tremor and was knocked two steps back. Unresigned, it continued onwards and repeatedly attacked the barrier with its heavy sword but it was never able to make any sort of crack on the barrier.

The bead that Chu Yuechan had shattered was called the "Frozen Soul Bead". After breaking it into pieces, a "Frozen Soul Barrier" would be released. The longest



duration a Frozen Soul Barrier could last was ten hours. Not only that, any profound practitioner lower than the Sky Profound Realm was incapable of damaging it.

This Frozen Soul Bead was given to her by her master when she was around the age of twenty to use during a life-threatening situation. But only a few years after that, she had already broken through into the Sky Profound Realm, so there weren't any situations in which she had to use it. Ten or so years had passed so she simply had already forgotten about the Frozen Soul Bead's existence. However, just a moment ago, when her passion to live ignited once more, she suddenly remembered it.

Although the Stone Dragon General wielded a Sky Profound heavy sword, its own profound strength was merely at the Spirit Profound Realm; it was fundamentally impossible for it to split open this Frozen Soul Barrier. The surrounding Stone Dragon Warriors that were summoned by the Stone Dragon General all charged forward and all sorts of weaponry bombarded the barrier. But even if these Stone Dragon Warriors came again a hundred times, or a thousand times, there was no way of making even a sliver of an dent on the barrier.

Inside the Frozen Soul Barrier, they were safe for the time being. Although Yun Che was motionless, bleed from all seven apertures on

his head, and was riddled with scars, Chu Yuechan still faintly sensed his extremely weak life force. Under the temporary protection of the Frozen Soul Barrier, she silently watched Yun Che and waited for a miracle to happen... Which was Yun Che standing up again. Since he was able to stand up so many times before, he was definitely able to stand up once more.

Yun Che indeed had not died yet, and he was actually completely conscious the entire time. He just could not feel his body, couldn't see anything, and could not hear anything. His completely awake consciousness was also especially fuzzy. If it weren't for the support of his unwavering willpower, this

wisp of consciousness would have long since dissipated.

The three drops of Phoenix blood actively circulated near his heart and protected the last of his life force within its flames.

I can't... die yet...

How can... I die... here...

Little aunt's waiting for me... Senior sister's also waiting for me...

Jasmine gave me a new lease in life, and I haven't even fulfilled a single one of my promises to her...

I absolutely... cannot... die!!

His barely remaining consciousness had completely transformed into a

will to live. He knew clearly, that in order to live, he had to forcibly suppress the rupturing of his body brought about by Burning Heart right away. It was just that the current him was incapable of mobilizing his internal energy. The opening of Burning Heart, had also completely paralyzed his profound veins. The only thing he could arouse was the Great Way of the Buddha that was within his consciousness.

He was incapable of sensing anything from the outside world, so he was naturally unable to be disturbed. Under this sort of state, his mind reached a sort of concentrated peak. Inside his mind, the profound formula for the Great Way of the Buddha clearly

surfaced...

I, am the master of everything in this world. Buddha exists in my heart, so I am worthy of the Great Way...

The Great Way of the Buddha slowly began to activate. Using his consciousness as the starting point, it slowly spread toward his broken body and gradually began to absorb in nature's essence.

The Great Way of the Buddha's fundamentals just happened to use the essence of nature to temper one's own body. It would bestow the body with an enormous strength that was extremely resilient and could also rapidly quicken an injury's recovery. At the

lowest of levels, the Great Way of the Buddha could absorb the essence of nature. At the intermediate level, it could then take in the origin of nature's essence. And at the later stages, legend has it that it could absorb the original essence of Primordial Gods.

Yun Che's current injuries were too severe and was a fine line away from death. The activated Great Way of the Buddha was no more than a cup of water on a flaming cart of firewood; the speed at which it recovered his injuries was completely incapable of catching up to the speed of his injuries worsening. His body's vitality left him at a quicker rate than it absorbing the essence of nature.

However, Yun Che was completely unaware of everything that was happening; he merely clung onto his will to live. While tenaciously refusing to allow the last of his consciousness to fade, he desperately channeled the Great Way of the Buddha.

The Great Way of the Buddha's profound formula slowly drifted in Yun Che's consciousness. Yun Che's entire consciousness concentrated upon it... Suddenly, these profound words became indistinct and then rapidly scattered about. Then, a slowly rotating silver colored pagoda appeared in its place... Afterwards, the slowly rotating pagoda enlarged, and then enlarged again, until it filled his entire consciousness...



Ping...

This silver colored pagoda in his consciousness shattered into pieces after slightly trembling, and became brilliant silver rays of light that filled the sky... At the same time, a faint layer of silvery radiance also surfaced upon Yun Che's body that was riddled with scars.

The Great Way of the Buddha's circulation suddenly became quicker; as if pulled in by an immense force, the essence of nature in the surroundings was quickly absorbed by Yun Che's body. At the moment, his body that was currently riddled with ghastly cracks suddenly became the most optimal state in which he could

take in the world's elements.

The operation of the Great Way of the Buddha became faster and faster, and the absorption of nature's essence also hastened with it. Gradually, it reached the extreme limit of the Great Way of the Buddha's first stage, yet it still did not stop and operated at an even faster rate than Yun Che at peak condition.

The different aura was sensed by Chu Yuechan. She tilted her head and stared blankly at Yun Che... Currently, his entire body was covered in a thick layer of silver light, and this layer of silver light still continued to faintly expand as every crack that could be distinguished by the naked eye,

slowly healed. Those minute cracks from before had now completely disappeared without a trace.

Chu Yuechan's gaze shook as she silently watched this inconceivable scene. Even with her knowledge of the world at her level and several tens of years of extensive observation, she still did not understand what was happening to Yun Che's body.

The silver colored radiance grew even more brighter than before. A current of air chaotically swirled round and round in his surroundings, as if something was wildly entering his body.

Yun Che's consciousness became clearer and clearer. He gradually

started to sense the existence of his body, head, chest, and limbs... What came to him was not acute pain, but was rather a sort of wild joyfulness; it was because this signified that after the opening of Burning Heart, these places in his body had not been destroyed.

Immediately, he silently concentrated and calmly continued to operate the Great Way of the Buddha, letting it circulate within his body over and over again... Once, twice... ten cycles... a hundred cycles... three hundred cycles...

After thirty complete cycles of the Great Way of the Buddha, he was finally able to feel all of his body parts. Pain and their existence were felt clearly, and a continuously sort

of striking sound was heard beside his ears. After a hundred cycles, his profound veins awakened from their paralysis. He felt an external force from the outside world quickly enter his fifty four profound entrances via his profound veins, and rapidly restore his profound strength at an extremely shocking rate. The feeling of having a powerless and stiff body, slowly faded away.

After two hundred cycles, the pain in his entire body completely disappeared.

After three hundred cycles, Yun Che slowly opened his eyes that radiated a penetrating brilliance similar to the cold edge of a blade.

The second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha was miraculously attained during a near-death experience in which he was clinging to life!

The Great Way of the Buddha was a profound art that belonged to the Rage God; every stage's breakthrough required an extremely long period of mental and physical comprehension, as well as lucky opportunities that could only be discovered by chance. It took Yun Che not even a month's time to perfectly master the first stage of the Great Way of the Buddha. In Jasmine's eyes, this feat was already a miracle. To her, even if Yun Che's comprehension was shocking, in order to reach the second stage, he would at least need

a year's worth of time. Never would she have thought, and never would Yun Che have thought that being on the brink of death, while in extreme concentration, while not hesitating to do anything to live... Under these dangerous key circumstances of when Yun Che could not even sense a single thing, the Great Way of the Buddha had actually broken through to the second stage.

And every time a stage had been stepped across, it was also accompanied by the shedding of one's body and bones.

Yun Che's every injury, whether they be internal or external, were all completely healed that not even a single sliver of a scar remained. His

hair grew longer by half a foot, his eyes became even brighter, and his hearing became even more acute. His organs, bones, skin and flesh, all brimmed with an incomparable toughness. Even his blood became a bit more thicker as the throbbing of his heart's pulse became even more robust. The previously weakened body that could not even lift a single finger was now brimming with incredibly powerful strength... This powerful sensation was actually felt under a state in which he had not used the slightest amount of profound strength!

Jasmine had told him before that the second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha would give the body strength that totaled four thousand kilograms!



\* \* \*

Author Note: Isn't there an illusory feeling of instantly refilling both HP and MP after leveling up?

# Chapter 186:

## Dragon Fault

Yun Che hopped up from the ground like a carp flipping out of the water. Looking at his hands, he felt power bubbling throughout his entire body, as if he was in a dream.

Yun Che's sudden leap up undoubtedly startled Chu Yuechan. She watched Yun Che, and said weakly: "Yun Che... you..."

At this time, from the time Yun Che lost consciousness and the opening of the Frozen Soul Barrier, six hours had already elapsed. With Chu Yuechan's current state, she had

unyieldingly resisted falling asleep, and painfully waited for Yun Che to wake up and stand up again. Only, she never would've thought that not only did Yun Che stand up once again, his entire person, in the short span of six hours' time, had completely recovered from all its injuries, replenished all its strength, and had been completely reformed.

"I'm alright now." Yun Che put both hands down, then said with a slight smile. He looked at the Stone Dragon General outside, which was firmly isolated from the Frozen Soul Barrier, and said in a low voice: "Was it this barrier that protected us?"

"Hmph, you don't say! If it wasn't for this barrier, don't mention

breaking through, you would've died a hundred times already!" Jasmine said snappily.

"This is a Frozen Soul Barrier; it can still sustain for four more hours. You... are you really alright?" Chu Yuechan looked at Yun Che, and said with a voice still filled with disbelief.

Yun Che smiled lightly, and did not speak. Profound energy spread outwards, dispersing all the bloodstains on the exterior of his body. In an instant, not even a trace of bloodstains could be seen on his face, hands, and skin revealed through the holes of his clothing. His skin was as bright and clean as jade, with absolutely no sign of scarring.

This scene caused Chu Yuechan's eyes to reveal some uncertainty. Yun Che bent down, and sent a gust of profound energy into Chu Yuechan's body to protect her heart veins, and said with a gentle expression: "Wait for me here. We'll leave this place immediately."

After speaking, Yun Che grabbed the heavy sword on the floor, and charged out of the Frozen Soul Barrier... The Frozen Soul Barrier was a protective ward, and also an isolation ward. One could not enter, but one could leave.

Breaking through to the second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha had allowed the strength of Yun Che's body to increase greatly.

The one thousand nine hundred fifty kilogram heavy sword in his hands felt so light that it was almost as if it didn't exist. It also felt much lighter than an ordinary profound practitioner holding a light sword. Once he exited the Frozen Soul Barrier, he swept the heavy sword horizontally outwards. With a string of explosions, those Stone Dragon Warriors were smashed to bits and pieces like pulverized beans... Crushed with incomparable thoroughness.

At this time, the strength contained in one strike was completely incomparable to before. More than twenty Stone Dragon Warriors were completely destroyed in just one sweep. Then, his body turned and jumped high in the air. With a low

growl, he struck straight at the Stone Dragon General.

Before, he had been beaten half to death by one strike from the Stone Dragon General... And this time, he wanted to verify if his current reformed self could compare to the power of this Stone Dragon General head-on.

Boom!!

The two heavy swords collided ferociously. With an enormous sound, two intertwining gorges formed in the ground underneath their feet. The Stone Dragon General moved backwards while Yun Che shot outwards. After landing, he slid a distance before stopping with great effort, and his

hands felt numb for a while.

On the body of the Overlord's Colossal Sword, another nick around an inch long appeared.

The Overlord's Colossal Sword had clashed with the enormous sword in the Stone Dragon General's hands twice, and both times, a huge nick had been smashed into it. This was the disparity between two levels.

Yun Che's eyebrows sunk slightly. Although his strength had increased greatly, the Stone Dragon General had attained the fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, and it wielded an extremely rare Sky Profound heavy sword. His thoughts of facing it head-on was still a little



naive.

However, Yun Che's expression didn't reveal any unease. Possessing the Prison God Sirius' Tome, he was least afraid of opponents that wielded heavy swords, because he was simply too familiar with every facet of the heavy sword. His gaze landed on the oddly-shaped heavy sword in the Stone Dragon General's hands, and an unusual expression flashed repeatedly in his eyes.

Sky Profound Weapons; there were probably only ten in the entire Blue Wind Empire! As for Sky Profound level heavy swords, they simply did not exist.

But today, there was actually one

right in front of him!

Although the current setting was the realm of the trials, since one could die or break through the realm, this meant that everything in this place was real, unlike the dream world of the secret Phoenix Trials. This also meant that the Sky Profound weapon in front of him was real as well!

With this thought, Yun Che raised his head and lifted the heavy sword up. He charged at the Stone Dragon General like lightning, but this time, he didn't continue attacking the Stone Dragon General head-on. Rather, as its heavy sword came forward to receive his strike, he shifted his position using Star God's Broken Shadow. He flashed to its

left side, and smashed down with all his strength using the heavy sword.

The physical strength and power of the Stone Dragon General's body, as well as its weapon, were both incredibly frightening. But it had one great flaw, which was its speed. Yun Che had clearly figured this out in his half-dead state before his breakthrough.

Along with a "boom", the heavy sword smashed heavily onto the Stone Dragon General's right shoulder. The golden-yellow armor on its shoulders fell off in an instant, but its body only stood askew to the left for a moment; it didn't even lose its balance. The sword in its hands chopped

horizontally, sweeping towards him.

Yun Che fled far away, escaping the Stone Dragon General's counterattack. Then, he bared his teeth... This fellow's body is too sturdy, even this heavy sword can't injure it... It's no wonder it didn't die after receiving the combined strike of Phoenix Break, Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing, and Sky Wolf Slash under the effect of Burning Heart.

I just don't believe you'll be able to continue resisting so steadily!

Yun Che's eyes flashed, and he charged forward once again. He flashed around the Stone Dragon General's surroundings with Star God's Broken Shadow, leaving

behind several afterimages. Every attack from the Stone Dragon General was extremely frightening, but all of them struck the afterimages Yun Che left behind, while every one of Yun Che's strikes landed accurately on its body.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...

After being pounded heavily by Yun Che several tens of times, the golden-yellow armor on the Stone Dragon General's body became riddled with holes, but its body was still basically uninjured. The Stone Dragon General turned its body half-way, and swept its heavy sword horizontally towards Yun Che. But this time, Yun Che didn't jump backwards to escape.

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!”

BOOM!!!

For this strike, Yun Che selected the Stone Dragon General’s head as the point of attack. Following the sound of an explosion, a lump of flame exploded from the center of the Stone Dragon General’s head. The Stone Dragon General’s helmet directly shattered, and it emitted a painful howl. Its body finally lost its balance for the first time, and it stumbled backwards for a while. Under its body’s current condition, its left hand unconsciously let go of the heavy sword in order to maintain balance.

And what Yun Che was waiting for, was precisely the moment when one of its hands left the heavy sword; when it was only holding onto the sword with one hand.

Another weakness of the heavy sword was the wrist! Because the heavy sword was too heavy, when brandishing it, one must use both hands to grasp it. Only with both hands grasping could one exhibit the maximum strength of the heavy sword. But it also due to its immense weight that when the wrist receives a heavy strike, it was very easy for the heavy sword to leave the hand... especially when only one hand was grasping the sword!

While focusing tightly on the

location of the Stone Dragon General's right wrist, the moment Yun Che landed, he shot forwards like lightning, and the aura of profound energy surrounding him abruptly became incomparably chaotic.

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!!”

Just as the Stone Dragon General's body stabilized, Yun Che's heavy sword that frantically brought about ten times its usual strength, struck heavily and accurately upon the Stone Dragon General's wrist which was holding the heavy sword.

Bang!!

Within a deafening collision sound, the Stone Dragon General emitted a



painful howl once again. It's entire arm was lifted up, and the armor covering it was also completely shattered. The oddly-shaped heavy sword flew out of its hands, just as Yun Che expected. After flying for several tens of meters, it landed heavily... Right before it landed, accompanying a sound akin to a landslide, a ravine several meters long appeared in the ground.

Yun Che dashed over, arriving in front of the heavy sword which had flown out of the Stone Dragon General's hands. With both hands, he grabbed at the dragonbone-like sword hilt, gripping it within his own hands.

Although he had expected this heavy sword to be heavier than the

Overlord's Colossal Sword, once it entered his hands, he became shocked for a long while. This was because its weight was at least one-fold heavier than the Overlord's Colossal Sword, which meant it weighed at least four thousand kilograms! If he hadn't broken through the Great Way of the Buddha, even if he could pick it up, he shouldn't even fancy the thought of wielding it freely like the Overlord's Colossal Sword.

Although they were both heavy swords, the feeling Yun Che had when holding this sword could be said to be as different as the heavens and the earth compared to when he held the Overlord's Colossal Sword. The aura of his entire person also underwent a

complete change, and became a fierce tiger with claws and teeth open waiting to pounce, ready to burst out with earthshaking strength.

His profound energy flowed into the heavy sword, and the name of the sword appeared within his mind...

“Dragon... Fault... What a good sword, what a good name!” Yun Che said in a low voice, and a slight smile appeared in the corner of his mouth. Although there was only one great realm of difference between a Sky Profound Weapon and an Earth Profound Weapon, the difference in its weight, power, and aura was like the difference between the heavens and earth. The Stone Dragon General’s aura

decreased more than one-fold after losing the Dragon Fault, just like a fierce tiger that had its talons and teeth pulled out. This made it so that Yun Che couldn't feel any threat from it at all.

His gaze turned to the Stone Dragon General, and said with a cold laugh: "Using this sword you've given me, I'll send you back to the West!"

Just as his voice landed, he charged towards the Stone Dragon General. Following a screaming gust of wind, within Yun Che's hands, the heavy sword Dragon Fault displayed its cutting edge for the first time. In the midst of a rumbling sound, Dragon Fault slashed across the Stone Dragon General's body. Only

an incomparably ear-piercing “rip” sound could be heard, and the layer of golden-yellow armor disintegrated like a layer of thin paper. The Stone Dragon General emitted a low roar, and its body took many steps backward. A scar that was over an inch deep and over two feet long remained on its solid body.

The result of this one strike caused Yun Che to smile in delight. Without waiting for the Stone Dragon General to recover its balance, he jumped high in the air as his entire body lit with the phoenix flame. His gaze locked onto the head of the Stone Dragon General, and he said with an ice-cold voice: “Let’s see if your head can withstand the power of this Sky

Profound Weapon!”

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!”

RIP!

Yun Che’s flame-covered body tore through the air, striking the head of the Stone Dragon General from high up in the sky. With a “boom”, the flames exploded, and the power of the phoenix flame, in conjunction with Dragon Fault, erupted. Along with the Stone Dragon General’s thick and heavy helmet, its solid head also shattered in an instant, filling the sky with fragments of stone.

Yun Che flew downwards and steadily landed on the ground. Both

hands held Dragon Fault horizontally in front of him, and his eyes revealed an incomparably excited light. Behind him, the Stone Dragon General, with its head completely shattered, slowly fell backwards. Then, with a muffled “bang” sound, it fell on the ground, throwing up a cloud of dust in the sky.

# Chapter 187: An Endless Plain

RRRumble...

Along with the collapse of the Stone Dragon General, the enormous stone gate in which it came from slowly opened. Subsequently, the Primordial Azure Dragon's pleased voice came from overhead:

“Very good. Young human, you have allowed me to see a shocking result. In these ten thousand years that I've stayed on this continent, you are the first person to pass this stage of the trial. During these ten thousand years of wait, I have



regretted multiple times about leaving a trace of my soul and strength on this piece of land, because the level of strength within this continent is just too low; it made me gradually realize that the trial I had left behind was something that humans on this continent could never pass... Fortunately, I met you.”

“You have already passed the first stage of the trial. Not only did you pass with a two-fold difficulty level, you also accomplished this while being tied down; you have allowed me to see the greatest of hope. The second stage’s trial ground gate has already opened. After making sufficient preparations, go in the opened stone gate and you will enter the second stage’s trial

ground. I wish you good fortune.”

The opened stone gate was the second trial’s gate.

The first stage of the trial was so terrifying that the second and the third stage were bound to be even more challenging... It was unknown as to what degree of brutality awaited.

The Frozen Soul Barrier was still in place because Yun Che had eliminated the Stone Dragon General in a span of fifteen minutes.

“It’s finally alright now.” Yun Che went back to Chu Yuechan’s side and helped her adjust to a more comfortable laying position. He

extended his hand, slowly guided his profound energy into her body, and helped her circulate her internal energy and blood.

Chu Yuechan's half opened eyes blankly stared at him for a long while. Then, she softly asked: "How did you recover from your injuries and regain your strength so fast?"

Yun Che did not want to lie to her, so he replied immediately: "The profound art I cultivate is capable of speeding up the recovery of my injuries and can restore my strength."

"Can you tell me the name of this profound art?" Chu Yuechan asked softly. At her level, profound arts that piqued her interest were

indeed not many. She knew many profound arts that could speed up the recovery of injuries and restore strength like Recovery Arts, Nine Cycle Recovery Arts, the Divine Art of the Fleeting Flowers and Snowy Moon, and so on. But the injuries Yun Che had received were severe. It was extremely clear to her that he had used up too much power, so much that it had been critically overused to the point that it affected his lifespan... Yet it only took six hours to fully recover. Even added together, all the powerful recovery profound arts that she knew of were incapable of displaying such a shocking result.

Yun Che slightly hesitated but still said it out loud: “You probably have never heard of this profound art’s

name. It is called the Great Way of the Buddha.”

“Great Way of the Buddha...” Chu Yuechan pondered lightly as her eyes flashed with confusion. She indeed had never heard of this art before.

“A profound strength at the middle of the True Profound Realm... in such a short period of time... slaughtered a thousand opponents of the same level... And even easily executed an enemy whose level far surpassed his own by a whole great realm... Even though your profound strength matches your age and you can only be considered an ordinary genius, your innate talent in using your profound strength... Perhaps even Xia Qingyue... is inferior...”

Your master must be... a very extraordinary person.”

It was the first time she said that many words, and Chu Yuechan was already out of breath. For her, who treasured words more than gold, to suddenly say so much, also revealed how much Yun Che had shocked her.

“Mn, I have two masters and they’re both very extraordinary.” Yun Che nodded as he smiled: “One of my masters taught me medical arts and how to to be human. The other master taught me all kinds of profound arts. Both of them gave me a new lease in life; without them, the current me would not exist.”

Chu Yuechan closed her eyes and spoke no more. She relaxed and then the feeling of weakness and exhaustion came at the same time. Not long after, she fell fast asleep.

With completely destroyed profound veins and meridians that were almost all broken, it undoubtedly took an enormous amount of perseverance to have remained conscious for so long. And what made Yun Che exceptionally happy, was the fact that he no longer felt the desire to die from her body.

Yun Che did not immediately enter the second stage's gate. Instead, he calmly watched over Chu Yuechan at her side. Dragon Fault was still in his hands, and had not disappeared

along with the Stone Dragon General when it died.

When Chu Yuechan awoke, it was already the morning of the second day. Although her body was still weak after being treated by a night of Yun Che's profound energy flow and warmth, her complexion had already improved greatly.

"Here, drink some water first." Yun Che lifted Chu Yuechan's upper body and allowed her to lean against his chest. After passing the water over her lips, he watched her take small little sips. Perhaps he had never thought that there would come a day in which he would be holding this Little Fairy, who was at summit of the Blue Wind Empire, and helping her drink water in the



same way one would carefully feed an infant. Chu Yuechan herself would never have thought of this happening either... And at this moment, even Chu Yuechan herself was not aware that she had not strongly rejected Yun Che's intimate touch, but instead had a very strange sense of security. But all of this was summed up to be because of her completely crippled body; it was fundamentally impossible for her to take care of herself, and she didn't even have the ability to resist.

In her current state, Chu Yuechan could only eat plain watery food. Fortunately, Yun Che had purchased a few grains at an inn before entering the Wasteland of Death. He boiled a little pot of

porridge using the phoenix flame and then helped her drink it. After all preparations were in order, he lifted Chu Yuechan and headed toward the gate of the trial's second stage.

After slowly entering the stone gate, his vision became pitch-black. Then, he took two more steps forward and it suddenly lightened up; it was as if it only took two steps to completely step over from one world into another.

What appeared before his eyes was a vast expanse of an endless plain. Grass covered the ground and there were also trees that gave shade; even the faint sound of running water could be heard. There were short hills in the distance that rose

and fell. Occasionally, the cries of all kinds of birds and animals could be heard.

This place's refreshingly delightful atmosphere and smells were also completely different than the previous location's. Yun Che turned around and still saw the endless plain; there were simply no signs of any mountain walls or stone gates. He immediately understood then, that he did not walk through some stone gate, but rather a transportation formation.

"This is... the next trial ground? It doesn't seem... to have any hint of danger." Chu Yuechang said softly.

It was also at this time that the Primordial Azure Dragon's voice

sounded.

“Young human, welcome. This place, is the Dragon God Trial’s second trial ground. This trial ground has no limit, and also has no exit. You can only leave this place after you have successfully completed the trial. Or perhaps you would be buried here before completing the trial.”

“There are an innumerable amount of profound beasts here in this endless plain. The level of the profound beasts here have all been adjusted with your strength as the benchmark. Also, as a result of the two-fold difficulty level you have to bear, every single profound beast here is not lower than the Spirit Profound Realm. As for some of the

more powerful profound beasts, their strength far surpasses the Stone Dragon General that you had killed.”

“To these profound beasts, this place is an endless paradise. But to you, this place is extremely dangerous; it is an abyss filled with countless shadows of death. This is because once the profound beasts here sense your aura, they would all immediately unleash an endless barrage of attacks. At the same time, under my soul’s guidance, profound beasts near you would all be led in your direction. You would be hunted at all times by profound beasts and would never be able to sleep soundly or eat in peace.”

Yun Che: “...”

Yun Che did not have any obvious reactions to all of that, but the Primordial Azure Dragon's following words almost made Yun Che spit out a mouthful of blood.

“And your objective in clearing this second stage of the trial is also very easy. It is to kill ninety-nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine profound beasts, within one year!”

# Chapter 188:

## Burning Heaven's Young Master

While being hunted by countless profound beasts, he had to kill ninety-nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine profound beasts, and these profound beasts' levels were all higher than his. This trial's difficulty and troll level wasn't even just cruel. It was practically at a crazy and unreasonable stage.

What made Yun Che the most angry was..... You might as well add one more to it to make it a round number, okay?! What's the meaning of insisting on 99999!

The Primordial Azure Dragon's voice fell, and the surrounding atmosphere suddenly turned from fresh to gloomy.

The howls of innumerable profound beasts sounded from far away. Surrounding Yun Che, the shadows of a dozen or so profound beasts also started to move. Their aura kept Yun Che firmly fixed, and then they all rushed towards where he was.

Out of all the profound auras these profound beasts were releasing, none of them were below the Spirit Profound Realm.

In the blink of an eye, Yun Che was already surrounded by a large



number of profound beasts. The Primordial Azure Dragon's voice said that the profound beasts here would actively move towards Yun Che under the guidance of its aura. When they discover him, they would then commence a do or die hunt. These words were obviously not said in jest!

Yun Che quickly drew out Dragon Fault with one hand and rushed towards these profound beasts. As Dragon Fault danced, it brought about waves of surging phoenix fire, causing the surrounding profound beasts to back away again and again. However, the strength of these profound beasts far outmatched the Stone Dragon Warriors he had defeated in the first stage of the trial. When ten of

them charged over, the pressure far exceeded the attack from a few hundred Stone Dragon Warriors. Also, following Yun Che's kills, the number of profound beasts did not decrease. Rather, they quickly increased. At every moment, there were large amounts of profound beasts rushing over from the surroundings.

In a few dozen breaths of time, the pressure on Yun Che was already enough to nearly cause him to suffocate. In another dozen breaths, he was already surrounded all around by peril. He firmly protected Chu Yuechan and beseeched Jasmine for help, "Jasmine, what do we do now!"

"There's only one way." Jasmine

said calmly.

Yun Che's spirit was roused, "What way?"

"Of course it's to escape!" Jasmine got angry, "If you don't want to escape, do you want to wait to die here! Did this princess teach you the Star God's Broken Shadow just to set you up to fail!"

" ... "

"Haah!!"

The flames on Yun Che's body exploded and a scaled down version of the Star Scorching Demon Lotus blossomed layer by layer, forcing back the formidable crowd of profound beasts around him.

Taking advantage of the flame's cover, he leapt up high. Dashing for a distance with the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing, he then used the Star God's Broken Shadow for a few times consecutively, and finally broke away from being encircled within the profound beasts. He withdrew Dragon Fault into the Sky Poison Pearl, and suddenly, his body became extremely light. Following which, he concentrated his profound energy into the bottom of his legs and rushed away madly; all while holding Chu Yuechan.

“The trial this time, be it the strength of the opponents, the level of danger, or the amount of time needed, it will all be far greater than the first stage of the trial.” Jasmine

said with a heavy voice, “Even though you have to kill 99999 profound beasts to pass the trial this time, with the degree of scariness here, the moment you touch a single profound beast, it will alarm the rest of the profound beasts nearby. Then, you will fall into dangerous circumstances — Besides, you’re also bringing a useless woman around! Therefore, most of the time you spend in here will not be on killing, but on escaping!”

“These few months, all your training has been concentrated on your heavy sword and the Great Way of the Buddha, but you haven’t attended to the Star God’s Broken Shadow I’d taught you! If you want to get past his trial, you’ll first have

to ensure that you have the ability to survive. If you want to preserve your life in this dangerous place that's filled with profound beasts, you'll have to train your Star God's Broken Shadow to the second stage, 'Twin Shadows', in the shortest amount of time possible!"

"I'll give you a month's time. Within this month, you have to stop at the safest place, and unless it's absolutely necessary, do not attack any profound beasts. This way, you'll at least, be much safer. Within this period of time, you have to train your Star God's Broken Shadow to at least the second stage."

"Since it was possible for you to reach the second stage for the Great

Way of the Buddha in such a short time with your perception, it shouldn't be too difficult for you! When you can fluctuate to form the second shadow, and be more capable of escaping and saving your own life, you can then begin to kill these profound beasts.... Do you understand!"

"...Understood." Yun Che wasn't opposed to Jasmine's words in the least. After being surrounded by a dozen profound beasts, and feeling the immense pressure and danger he was in, it made him still have lingering fears even until now.

There was one line that Jasmine had spoken that wasn't wrong at all.... If he wanted to pass this stage of the trial, the first thing he had to

do was to protect his own life!

-----

Blue Wind Imperial City, Moon  
Embracing Palace.

Dressed in her finest clothes,  
Princess Cang Yue stood beside the  
Lotus Pond and stared at her own  
incomparably beautiful reflection.  
Her eyes were fixated, and nobody  
knew what she was thinking of.

A palace maid walked in quickly,  
bowing slightly while saying  
respectfully, “Princess, Blue Moon  
Profound Palace’s Palace Master  
Qin requests an audience.”

Cang Yue’s gaze moved from the  
water’s surface, “Bring him in.”



Not long after, Qin Wushang walked in by himself and bowed to Cang Yue, “Qin Wushang pays his respects to Your Highness.”

“Qin Wushang may spare the formalities.... Palace Chief Qin, did you come this time because you have information on Yun Che?” Cang Yue’s, who was also Lan Xueruo, voice was clearly urgent.

Qin Wushang shook his head slowly and then sighed, “Ashamedly, until today, I still have yet to find the least bit of information on him..... Sigh, Princess, please forgive my bluntness. The Wasteland of Death is a place even I would not casually step into. Five months ago, many

people saw him enter, but since then, nobody has seen him come out. The number of geniuses who have died there is simply too many. Five whole months..... Sigh, princess, you should stop being so attached to him.”

“No..... Absolutely not! I believe that he’ll definitely be fine!” Cang Yue’s voice began to tremble slightly. Even though she had always been striving to repress them, she still lost control of her emotions and her eyes began to grow misty, “He promised me before..... He’s definitely be safe and sound..... He’ll definitely return within half a year..... He’ll definitely be fine..... It’s definitely because he doesn’t want to be found.... It must be.....”

Continuously, she said “definitely” six times with an additional “absolutely”. It wasn’t known if she was saying it to convince Qin Wushang, or to convince herself.

Not long after Yun Che had left, she became unable to contain her thoughts, and began to send Sound Transmissions to Yun Che. But whether it was from the Thousand Mile Sound Transmission Talisman, or the incomparably precious Ten Thousand Mile Sound Transmission Talisman, there was no reply. Later on, she finally scouted out Yun Che’s whereabouts.... In front of the Wasteland of Death, many saw a man of around sixteen to seventeen years old wander into the Wasteland of Death alone, carrying a large, pitch-black sword on his

back. The shopkeeper at the inn he stayed at further affirmed this.

Yet nobody had seen him come out.

If she had known back then that Yun Che was going to the Wasteland of Death, she would never have let him leave no matter what. This was because that place was a place of nightmares which stank of death in all respects. Every year, the number of people who die in there was innumerable, including many talents who had reached their pinnacles and had absolute faith in their abilities.

This sort of news caused Cang Yue's expression to be on the brink of crumbling apart..... Up until now, five months had already passed, but

still, nobody had seen him walk out of there and even those expert teams that went deep into the Spirit Profound Beast territory had never seen him before.

To enter the Wasteland of Death for five months and not come out without a single trace, the only possibility was that his corpse had been buried within, or that his corpse had been destroyed, or was eaten by a profound beast.

Qin Wushang sighed silently in his heart. As for Yun Che's death, he also felt extremely regretful. He immediately changed the topic, "Your Highness, I saw the emperor just now and I consulted with him about issues regarding the coming Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.

The emperor has allowed me to discuss it directly with Your Highness. There's only a month of time left to the start of the ranking tournament. We need to choose the practitioner who will represent the Blue Wind Imperial Family. May I know if Your Highness has already chosen a person, or will it be through choosing an inner palace disciple from a competition like what had been done in previous years?"

Cang Yue looked to the side. After she had finally calmed down somewhat, her eyes flashed and she said, "Palace Chief Qin, wait a little.... wait for half a month more. If.... If there is still no news of him, then we will choose from within the inner palace just like we had in

former years.”

“But, if it’s that way, the timing would be.....” Speaking halfway, Qin Wushang saw the distressed expression on Cang Yue’s face and his heart lamented and he swallowed back the two words “too rushed”, respectfully saying instead, “I understand. Everything will be as Your Highness wishes. As for Yun Che, I hope Your Highness will be able to cheer up. Nowadays, the crown prince and the third prince are becoming more and more rampant. You are the emperor’s last pillar of support, so you must definitely take care of yourself.... Sigh, if I may be excused.”

As the Vice Palace Chief of Blue Wind Profound Palace, Qin

Wushang was naturally not a fool. When Yun Che had just joined the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he could still see Cang Yue's special care towards Yun Che as a respect to allow him to represent the imperial family to participate in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. However, later on, she would specially visit him in the inner palace every few days. Nobody else knew of these things, but as Palace Chief, he naturally could not have not known. Her reactions after finding out that Yun Che had died in the Wasteland of Death let Qin Wushang understand more and more that she had obviously fallen in love with Yun Che, and this wasn't just a simply "valuing him".

“...Take care, Palace Chief Qin.”



After watching Palace Chief Qin leave, Cang Yue turned around and slowly closed her eyes...

Junior brother Yun, why must you go to such a dangerous place... Are you really staying in that Wasteland of Death forever and never coming back...

The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament is about to begin. You once said that you wanted to directly participate in this round's Blue Wind Ranking Tournament... But now, where are you... You've made me become used to your presence, made my originally undisturbed spirit depend on, have someone to return to and hate leaving. So why would you

disappear from my world so hurriedly...

If you don't appear in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament this time.... Then, after my father's wake, I will personally go into the Wasteland of Death to find you... If I can't find you, then I'll accompany you... and stay there forever... I won't let you feel lonely...

Two delicate hands clenched quietly under the luxurious phoenix gown and coronet, as slivers of melancholy overflowed from her aura.

At this, a young man's impudent voice floated over:

“Hahahaha, my imperial sister,

you're here indeed. Your imperial brother has come to see you. Quick, look. See who I've brought you from the palace."

This voice made Cang Yue's brows furrow slightly, and in a flash, the expression on her face changed from frigid to calm. She turned over and looked toward the person speaking, as well as those standing beside him. Her expression was steady, and her voice was all the more calm, "Third imperial brother, Young Master Fen, long time no see."

The four words, "long time no see", were as mild as a light breeze, and there wasn't any surprise or happy mood that usually came with "reunion after a long separation".

Third prince Cang Shuo looked to be about twenty seven or eight years old. The person beside him looked to be slightly younger and only looked twenty two or three. However, while standing abreast this imperial prince, he had an inherently grandiose and lofty bearing, so he did not lose to Cang Shuo in the least. Rather, he even surpassed him.

He took a step forward and bowed slightly. Adoration burned like a blaze within his eyes that looked towards Cang Yue and it was not concealed in the least, “Fen Juecheng of the Burning Heaven Clan pays his respects to the beautiful and elegant Princess Cang Yue. I’d heard that Your Highness

had returned to the palace eight months ago, but during this period of time, Juecheng has been continually training within the Fierce Sunfire Region, and had only been released two days ago. I hope Your Highness will not blame me.”

“Hahahaha,” Cang Shuo laughed, “The moment Young Master Fen comes out, he eagerly travels day and night just to rush to meet my imperial sister. This great relationship is really touching and makes one envious.”

# Chapter 189: An Endless Hunt

Cang Yue smiled lightly, and said: “I thank Young Master Fen for your kindness. All is well with Cang Yue, Young Master Fen need not worry. I’m not sure why Young Master Fen is visiting this time?”

Although she had just heard Cang Shuo say that the sole purpose for Fen Juecheng’s visit this time was to meet her, Cang Yue seemed as if she hadn’t heard at all.

Fen Juecheng also smiled faintly, and said in a gentle and straightforward manner: “I’ve heard that Your Highness has been

continuously training in multiple profound palace branches.

Juecheng was worried about you, and also deeply respects that.

Although I wished to see Your Highness a few more times even in my dreams, I thought it would frighten Your Highness so I've always been suppressing it in my heart. Now that I've finally seen Your Highness, Juecheng is unceasingly happy. In these two years, Your Highness has become even more beautiful and elegant that the legendary goddesses turned mortal can not even compare. In Juecheng's point of view, Your Highness' beauty is Blue Wind Imperial Family, no, the entire Blue Wind Empire's heaven blessed treasure."

As he spoke, Fen Juecheng's adoration and infatuation was revealed completely, not masking it in the slightest. Yet Princess Cang Yue seemed as if she didn't notice this at all, and still returned a weak smile: "Young Master Fen is mistaken, Cang Yue is not worthy."

"I thank Young Master Fen for his compliments in place of my imperial sister. I also deeply believe that what you said about my imperial sister being our Imperial Family's treasure is true." Cang Shuo said with a beaming smile. His eyes lit up as they turned and hinted at the attendant behind him. The attendant immediately understood and stepped forward right after. Then, he pretended to whisper in his ear.



“Oh?” Cang Shuo’s eyes revealed some shock, then said apologetically to Fen Juecheng: “Young Master Fen, this prince suddenly remembered something that must be taken care of immediately, so you’ll have to excuse me... Imperial sister, Young Master Fen hasn’t visited the Imperial Palace for quite a while, why don’t you accompany Young Master Fen on a walk through the palace.”

“Please forgive Cang Yue’s refusal.” Right after Cang Shuo had just finished speaking, Cang Yue immediately declined. “It is not because Cang Yue is not willing, but Imperial Father has ordered me to go meet him in his chambers at this time to discuss an important

matter. Cang Yue does not dare to go against Imperial Father's orders, and wishes that imperial brother and Young Master Fen does not take offense. Cang Yue will take her leave first."

After she finished speaking, Cang Yue nodded slightly and unhesitatingly walked out of the Moon Embracing Palace.

Cang Shuo greatly furrowed his eyebrows yet Juecheng only smiled calmly. As soon as Cang Yue left his side, he suddenly turned around. "Your Highness, when Juecheng came to the Imperial Palace, he unintentionally heard that Your Highness seems to have been searching for a strange flower called the 'Burning Soul Flower'

with all her might. I wonder if Your Highness has found this flower yet? If it has not been found yet, Juecheng just happens to know where to find a Burning Soul Flower.”

Not only did Fen Juecheng's arrival cause Cang Yue to become disturbed, it also made her completely uneasy and want to leave as soon as possible. But Juecheng's words stiffened her entire body as her departing footsteps rigidly stopped in place. She turned around and said in the calmest voice possible. “Is Young Master Fen serious? Cang Yue is indeed looking for the Burning Soul Flower. If Young Master Fen knows where to find it and is generous enough to tell me, Cang Yue would

be sure to be forever thankful.”

Fen Juecheng smiled: “Juecheng naturally will not refuse Princess Cang Yue’s request. Juecheng knows that this Burning Soul Flower just happens to be in our Burning Heaven Clan’s training grounds — within the Fierce Sunsky Region.”

Cang Yue’s heart surged as she suppressed her excitement: “Then that’s just wonderful. May I ask if your honorable clan can give our Imperial Family this Burning Soul Flower? No matter the price or conditions, your honorable clan can speak at will.”

Fen Juecheng narrowed his eyes as they greedily closed in on Cang

Yue's peerless beauty, extremely noble complexion, and figure. He answered lightly: "Juecheng does not have a say in this matter. In the Fierce Sunsky Region, only one Burning Soul Flower matures once in a millennia. The entire clan all regards it as their most valuable treasure. It is absolutely impossible for it to be given to another, but..."

Fen Juecheng paused, and then smiled even more casually: "If the person who wants the Burning Soul Flower is my clan's inner member who urgently needs this Burning Soul Flower, with the addition of me, the future Clan Master's personal plea, I believe that my father and elders would not be that stubborn and inflexible; they would most certainly be accommodating."

While Fen Juecheng's words sounded gentle and reserved, they actually contained a trace of open coercion. To let an outsider become an inner clan member would either mean that they have to become a disciple or possibly marry into the Burning Heaven Clan.

Cang Yue's erect chest slightly rose and fell. However, she slowly shook her head afterwards: "Since the Burning Soul Flower is that precious to your honorable clan, then Cang Yue shall not make such an unreasonable request. I thank Young Master Fen for his information, farewell."

Cang Yue's straightforward and firm reaction was outside of Fen Juecheng's expectations. His

expression stiffened, and he watched Cang Yue's departing figure as his brows also slowly sunk.

"My sister's temperament is still as tough as ever." Cang Shuo said as he faced Fen Juecheng. His words and action actually carried a hint of respect.

"It's tougher than before. When she previously declined, at least she was being tactful, but now, she's so unyielding that it seems as if she's telling me to stop having any delusions." Fen Juecheng appeared to mock himself as he laughed resentfully.

"Young Master Fen does not need to be so pessimistic," promptly

consoled Cang Shuo, “With Young Master Fen’s strength, appearance, and identity, how could any of Blue Wind Empire’s young talents compare to you? Cang Yue is still young right now, so she does not notice some things. I believe that it won’t be long before she takes the initiative to throw herself at Young Master Fen without you even needing to woo her.” After speaking to here, Cang Shuo hesitated, but then continued: “I might know a bit behind the reason why Cang Yue has suddenly become this resolute.”

“Oh?” Fen Juecheng shifted his gaze.

Cang Shuo continued: “From the information that I’ve obtained, not only has Cang Yue been searching



everywhere for the Burning Soul Flower these days, she is also searching for a person as well; a person she had personally come back with from New Moon Profound Palace. It has been reported that she and the person were extremely close those couple of months before she brought him here... But rest assured Young Master Fen, this person has already disappeared five months ago; he seems to have overestimated himself, entered the Wasteland of Death, and never came back out. After his disappearance, I've heard from the palace maids by Cang Yue's side that she countlessly wept and could not eat in peace..."

"What is that person's name!"

“Yun Che... he’s still young, and is only seventeen this year. However, his innate talent was out of the ordinary so both Cang Lin and I attempted to pull him into our factions.”

“Hmph!” Fen Juecheng’s eyebrows firmly tightened as an astonishingly heavy baleful aura surged in body. “There actually is another person who intends to dip his finger in the woman that this young master fancies... It’s best if he’s dead, otherwise, I’ll drive him into utter misery that even if he begs for life, he won’t live, and even if he begs for death, he can’t die!”

Fen Juechen’s body suddenly released the baleful aura and caused Cang Shuo to shake all over.

The eyes of the bodyguards on Cang Shuo's side were even more round as they shivered in fear. Because the profound aura that came from Fen Juecheng's body... was clearly already at the Earth Profound Realm!

-----

Realm of the Dragon God Trial, an endless plain.

Five months have passed since Yun Che entered this place.

Up ahead, was the sound of a little creek. The creek's water was so clear that one could see its bottom. Inside the creek's clear water, were schools all different kinds of little fish that cheerfully moved about.

Yun Che laid Chu Yuechan on the grass next to the creek delicately, then crouched at the edge of the creek. Watching the fish swimming in the middle of the creek, he said while beaming: "Little Fairy, we can drink fish soup again... Hmm, what flavor should the fish soup be today?"

Just as his voice landed, Yun Che's left hand penetrated the surface of the water like lightning, catching a large fish nearly a foot long. And at this time, a river boulder to his right suddenly tumbled, and a huge crab, its body half the size of Yun Che's body, shot over. The pitch-black huge crab's pincers opened, and it snapped fiercely at Yun Che's neck... The barbs on this crab's pincers glistened coldly, even steel

would be snapped instantly, let alone a person's neck.

Yun Che threw the fish in his hands onto the grass. Without even raising his hand, his right hand extended like lightning, and grabbed onto the edge of the crab's pincers. He forcibly clutched onto the Murderous Kingcrab and suddenly flung it into a river boulder.

Yun Che's arm strength was not just terrifying. With a loud "bang" the river boulder smashed into pieces and the Murderous Kingcrab was smashed into unconsciousness. This sound was like alerting a hornet's nest. Tens of Murderous Kingcrabs simultaneously scuttled out. Their humongous pincers were

opened guillotine style as they sliced out along with a glittering cold radiance. Lightning quick, Yun Che took out Dragon Fault. He shifted his body once and three indistinguishable illusory silhouettes appear in three different positions. The four thousand kilogram Dragon Fault was as light as a large feather. In a few breaths of time, a dozen or so strikes were made, and each strike heavily attacked each Murderous Kingcrab's back.

The Murderous Kingcrab was a dangerous profound beast at the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm that possessed two terrifying pincers, and its shell was even more incomparably hard. Even for ordinary Spirit Profound

practitioners, it was hard for them to injure it. However, under one of Yun Che's heavy smashes, after the bursting of thirteen consecutive sounds, the backs of thirteen Murderous Kingcrabs were completely split open as a berserk profound strength immediately charged straight through and powerfully snapped their life veins in a flash.

With a flick of his wrist, Dragon Fault returned onto Yun Che's back. In order to completely adapt to Dragon Fault's weight, after cultivating Star God's Broken Shadow to the second stage, he constantly carried Dragon Fault on his back.

“Eighty-three thousand nine

hundred and forty-seven.” After exterminating the thirteen Murderous Kingcrabs, the numbers in Yun Che’s mind also refreshed. After seeing the ground covered dead crabs whose legs lifted into the air, Yun Che pinched his chin and muttered: “I wonder if I could make these huge crabs into soup...”

Yun Che finally gave up this tempting thought and returned to Chu Yuechan’s side with the fish in hand. Then, he set up a pot rack and put in the creek’s water along with the fish before boiling it with fire... If the divine beast, the Phoenix, knew that Yun Che had used phoenix fire to mostly cook food after obtaining its blood, it was not known if it would be angry enough to torch Yun Che into burnt



slag.

Once the fire was raised, trouble followed shortly after. The grassland beneath his foot abnormally shifted. Not waiting for the underground thing to surface, Yun Che suddenly thrust his hands into the ground and forcibly clutched at the Spirit Profound Armor Plated Earthworm that was about to attack. After two or three strikes that had beaten it into tight knots, it was then thrown away into the distance... It was sad that this Armor Plated Earthworm was only a low level Spirit Profound Beast. Although its body was as hard as fine steel, in Yun Che's hands, it was no different than an ordinary hemp rope. Even though Yun Che's profound strength was inferior, his

arm strength was something that not even a high level Spirit Profound practitioner could match.

The Armor Plated Earthworm that had been coiled into tight knots chaotically twitched about on the grass. But after losing too much blood for a long while, it was no longer capable of movement.

“Eighty-three thousand nine hundred and forty-eight.” Yun Che said aloud in a low voice. Right after he finished counting out loud, his arm suddenly swung up and Phoenix Flame shot outwards at the two Fierce Storm Hawks overhead that were about to dive down, making them fall after an explosion.

After these five months of comprehensive mastery, he no longer needed the heavy sword to unleash Phoenix Break, and could also activate it with a wave of his arm, because even his arm, could be treated as a heavy sword.

With the scorching heat of the phoenix flame, it didn't even take sixty breaths of time for the fish soup to be ready.

After ladling the fish soup, Yun Che carefully blew at it to keep it cool and arrived at Little Fairy's side. Supporting her upper body, he lifted the little bowl against her lips: "Here, it's not hot anymore."

Chu Yuechan opened her beautiful eyes and parted her soft lips. Using

what little strength she had, she lightly sipped and drank the fish soup. Right as she swallowed her first mouthful of soup, an unearthly cry came from up above. Six extremely long tailed dark green monstrously large birds dove down from six different directions at Yun Che.

Without raising his head, Yun Che swung his left hand upwards and clutched Dragon Fault between his fingers. After locking onto the positions of the six Verdure Great Birds, Yun Che continuously swung Dragon Fault six times in two breaths of time. On the third breath, he had already withdrawn Dragon Fault and placed it back on his back.

Scree Scree Scree Scree...

Amongst the chaotic Phoenix cries, six Phoenix Breaks soared into the sky, accurately blasting onto the Verdure Great Birds that were in the midst of their attack, and exploded on them one by one.

During this entire process, not a single drop of the fish soup in the little bowl spilled out. Chu Yuechan was also not startled, and her snowy lips never left the little bowl. When all six of the Great Birds dropped down, half of the fish soup in the little bowl had already been devoured.

Since they had encountered this type of situation everyday for the past five months, she had long become accustomed to it, and was

even more certain that Yun Che could perfectly hold them off.

In this five month period, they were subject to all kinds of profound beast attacks at nearly every moment. The period in-between varied, but it never stopped. The “never be able to sleep soundly or eat in peace” that the Primordial Azure Dragon had said was not the least bit exaggerated or made up in order to scare them.

The difficulty level of this stage of the trial was more than ten times harder than the first. What was scary, was not that the level of profound beasts were too high, nor was it the shockingly quantity of the profound beasts. It was rather the unceasingly barrage of assaults!

They came from the ground, underground, in the water, from the skies, and any profound beast could attack at anytime. If one relaxed his mind for even a second, it was possible for him to lose his life. In this sort of situation, it was perhaps likely to persevere through two days. Even three or four days could be endured, but when the period of time continued to lengthen, even if one's body could handle the pressure, the collapse of one's mind was also possible... If another person with profound strength that was stronger than Yun Che's by one-fold was swapped in, it was still nearly impossible for them to continue on.

Yet just for Yun Che, this trial's difficulty level wasn't that much

higher than the first stage's.

Because in his past life, he precisely spent his time being hunted down. Being hunted down by this endless plain's profound beasts was undoubtedly terrifying, but in his past life, he had actually been subjected to being hunted down by the most supreme of sects, clans, and strongest experts! Moreover, that persisted for an entire seven years. Within those seven years, his alertness, perception, reaction speed, and counter attack abilities were also refined to an extremely frightening level.

After reincarnating, there was no chance for those abilities to surface. But being hunted by this endless plain's endless amount of profound



beasts, his abilities were aroused  
once more.

# Chapter 190: Killed by Poison

Under Yun Che's recuperation, although Chu Yuechan's meridians were still not recovered, the state of her body was already much better. Her face, which was originally as white as a sheet of paper, had already recovered some of its original color. However, her entire body was still paralyzed, and only her right arm and right hand could move a little. In this extremely dangerous place, for Yun Che to protect her well, he had to stay right by her side.

For each meal, Chu Yuechan could not eat much and a small bowl of

fish soup would already suffice. Chu Yuechan, who had finished drinking the fish soup, closed her eyes gently and lay on Yun Che's chest with a peaceful expression..... Even she herself did not realize, that this ease she felt, surpassed what she had felt when she was meditating in seclusion in her sect.

In these five months, a large part of her time was spent in slumber. The only thing she spent more time in other than sleeping, was in Yun Che's arms. From the first rejection, to gradual acceptance, and finally completely accustomed. After she was used to it, she would unknowingly come to hate to leave him..... But this concept of "wanting to stay near" was completely foreign to Chu Yuechan, because

before Yun Che, she had never lived alone with any man before, let alone come into contact intimately. But this time, they had actually lived inseparably and close to each other for almost five months. To Chu Yuechan, this was absolutely unimaginable.

Nobody knew what frame of mind she had in interacting with Yun Che, and even she herself did not know.

“Sleep peacefully for a while. Soon, we’ll be able to leave this place. And by then, all your strength will be recovered.” Yun Che patted Chu Yuechan’s pale back lightly, his voice soft, like he was coaxing a baby to sleep.

Not too long after, Chu Yuechan's breathing became light and even, and she had fallen asleep.

Yun Che kept the thing by his hand, and stood up while carrying Chu Yuechan. Looking forward, he spoke, "Jasmine, how long have we been here?"

"Today is the hundred and forty first day." Jasmine answered precisely.

"...That means, it's less than a month away from the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament." Yun Che furrowed his eyebrows as his heart grew slightly impatient. He had promised Lan Xueruo that he would return within half a year. By now, more than five months had already

passed, but he was still trapped in this trial area. After five months had passed, he had already become accustomed to this place. To complete this trial, what he needed was merely time. But to leave this place, he still had to kill ten thousand more profound beasts. These profound beasts could not be killed as he pleased, because any one of them were all genuine Spirit Profound Beasts.

Also, after the second stage of the trial, there was still the third stage.

After exiting the trial grounds, it would still take a long time to walk out of the Wasteland of Death, and after walking out of the Wasteland of Death, even if he traveled day and night, it would still take at least

five days' worth of time to return to Blue Wind Imperial City...

If he didn't leave this place as soon as possible, he would be unable to make it to the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, and he would be unable to fulfill his promise towards Xuero.

"It looks like I'll have to speed up. Even if I die, I still have to finish killing the profound beasts here within ten days!" Yun Che frowned and said.

"Ten days? Hmph, what joke are you cracking! To complete this trial, you still have to kill sixteen thousand profound beasts. If you want to finish it in ten days, you'll need to kill at least a thousand and

six hundred of them every day! In these five months, you've only killed an average of six hundred profound beasts each day, and this is already your maximum speed after you'd gone all out. Killing sixteen thousand profound beasts in ten days is absolutely impossible..... If you get ahead of yourself in your impatience and lose your cool, you might get reverse killed by profound beasts instead." Jasmine warned.

Yun Che had no way of countering that.

“ROAR!!”

Suddenly, an ear-splitting growl came from far behind him. This sound made Yun Che frown, and



then mutter darkly, “Damn! Why is it this guy again, it’s practically like a lingering spirit that won’t leave!”

At that, without even thinking, Yun Che ran. Not long after, a gigantic single horned profound beast rampaged past the spot he had been at, bringing a berserk aura as it rushed towards him.

Even though he had stayed here for the past five months, and had been surviving by killing profound beasts which far surpassed him in levels every day, Yun Che’s profound strength had still stayed at the fourth level of the True Profound Realm. It wasn’t that his profound energy had not shown any signs of breaking through, but rather that he kept pushing it down forcefully,

not allowing it to break through. This was because, when profound strength made a breakthrough, he would be incapable of moving for a short period of time, and could not be disturbed by anything, or else his meridians would be easily damaged. In this endless wilderness that was fraught with dangers, not only could he not be guarded by anyone when he was breaking through, but Chu Yuechan would also be exposed to the same dangerous environment. Therefore, the breakthrough in his profound strength had forcibly been suppressed all this time.

Otherwise, with how he was killing far above his level every day and night, and how all fifty four of his profound veins were open, in five

months, it wouldn't be an exaggeration if his profound strength could rise to the eighth level of the True Profound Realm.

Although he had not broken through all this while, his profound energy grew progressively, and even if he did not have the power of four great gods, his profound strength far surpassed the average practitioner in the fourth level of the True Profound Realm.

This profound beast that was chasing him was named Overlord Single-Horned Beast, and it was a profound beast of the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. It had great strength and an extremely tough body. That, in addition to its strong and solid profound defense

made it difficult for Yun Che to harm it even with Dragon Fault. If Chu Yuechan hadn't been at Yun Che's side, he could still deal with it, but with one arm around Chu Yuechan, he could only hold the sword with one hand and it was impossible for him to even be a match for the Overlord Single-Horned Beast.

That was why Yun Che would run every time he met this guy.

Star God's Broken Shadow was a single instance profound movement skill and not a long term speed increase type of profound skill, so it would not cause Yun Che's speed to increase by much. However, Yun Che would usually be carrying a sword that weighed four thousand

kilos. Therefore, when he needed to escape, all he had to do was to throw the sword into the Sky Poison Pearl, and his body would feel as if it were floating. Escaping would also be as fast as lightning, and shaking off this Overlord Single-Horned Beast would only be a matter of minutes.

Yun Che ran forward with all his might and the dirt underneath his feet were sent flying back as he increased the distance between him and the Overlord Single-Horned Beast. At this time, Jasmine's warning suddenly came from his mind, "Careful, there's a cliff up front!"

Just as Jasmine's voice fell, a cliff appeared in front of Yun Che's line

of sight. His brows furrowed and his speed suddenly decreased as both his feet planted onto the ground firmly. After sliding for a short distance, he finally stopped dangerously at the edge of the cliff. But instantly, he let out a silent breath of relief.

Because looking down, the cliff was actually not high and it wasn't even one hundred fifty meters tall, so he could easily leap down. There wasn't any place dangerous below the cliff either, it was only extremely dense woods... Perhaps forest would be a better term for it, because before his eyes, each tree was joined to the next, and even though he was standing at a high vantage point, he still couldn't completely see the edge of it.

“It’s a field area, why would there be forests.” Yun Che muttered and was about to jump down, when suddenly, a sliver of dangerous, strong wind came from his right side.

Yun Che glanced to the side and his right arm stretched out like lightning as two fingers pinching forcefully onto a thin, cold and slippery thing.

It was a Black Thread Snake that wasn’t very long and was only as thick as half of his finger. Seven inches of it was grabbed onto tightly by Yun Che and it struggled in pain, spitting blackness.

“Emperor Black Thread Snake!” Yun Che, who was proficient in all

poisons that existed in the world, recognized the poisonous snake in an instant.

The Emperor Black Thread Snake was very thin and short, and its body was very weak. Even if a normal child were to accidentally step on it, it would also be stomped to death. But such a small and weak snake like this was crowned an “Emperor”, and was actually an expensive Spirit Profound Beast! This was because it had an extremely frightening toxicity and speed despite its size. All that come into contact with its poisonous fangs, as long as they were below the Spirit Profound Realm, would undoubtedly die within ten breaths of time. Even if those in the Spirit Profound Realm were to be bitten



by it, they would not be able to live for longer than an hour without the antidote. Also, because of its small size, it was very hard to discover.

When it moved, it resembled a streak of black lightning, so people had no chance of guarding against it. All Spirit Profound Beasts, and even Earth Profound Beasts that encounter it would have to take a detour, lest they're too late.

With the Sky Poison Pearl in him, even if Yun Che were to be bitten by it, he would still not be affected in the least. Staring at this Emperor Black Thread Snake, he suddenly turned around to face the Overlord Single-Horned Beast that was already chasing towards him. Shifting the Emperor Black Thread Snake from his right hand to his

left, he used the Sky Poison Pearl to instantly suck out all its poison, and then, throwing it away, he took out the Tiger Soul Sword he had not used in a long while and wiped the poison onto the blade of the Tiger Soul Sword.

“...It seems to be the first time you’re using poison after the Sky Poison Pearl’s poison had vanished.” Looking at the tip of the Tiger Soul Sword, the tragic scene of the massive area of corpses that had been resulted from releasing the poison onto the entire city that year flashed across his mind. His gaze quietly darkened by a tad, and he subsequently rushed toward the Overlord Single-Horned Beast like a gale.

Seeing that this human who normally ran away the moment he saw it unexpectedly rush up to it this time, the Overlord Single-Horned Beast paused in confusion for a bit, and then, with a roar, it exposed its fangs and pounced towards Yun Che

Whoosh!

The Overlord Single-Horned Beast's claws streaked across one of Yun Che's illusionary shadows, while Yun Che's moved horizontally from where it had been. Rushing up to it from its right side, he gathered his profound strength onto the Tiger Soul Sword and ruthlessly slashed at its right side, leaving a streak of two inches of so, leaving an injury that was enough to draw blood.

Yun Che stopped and the Tiger Soul Sword in his hands had already been kept, and swapped for Dragon Fault.

With the Overlord Single-Horned Beast's large size, this small injury didn't even count as an injury at all. The Overlord Single-Horned Beast, which had leapt into the sky, turned around and opened its large mouth as its body pounced towards Yun Che again. But midway, its front leg suddenly twisted, and its entire body fell onto the ground firmly. After that, it began to twitch, and its four limbs began to stamp on the ground, yet it was able to stand back up no matter what. Gradually, waves of pained yells came from its mouth... From that tiny wound, drops of pitch-black blood flowed

out slowly.

Yun Che rushed up, and with a single blow, crushed its profound defense that had already been weakened under the extremely poisonous corrosion. After which, he continually rained seven to eight blows on its head, until it no longer made a sound.

“We don’t know either when the Sky Poison Pearl’s toxicity will recover.” Yun Che couldn’t help but sigh. Relying on just a little poison, he had practically finished off this Overlord Single-Horned Beast that he could only escape from previously without sparing much effort. On how formidable poison was, he was clearer than anyone else. That year, he hadn’t even been

thirty yet, but he lived for a full seven years in the midst of all the chasing and killing throughout the entire continent. What he relied on, was the Sky Poison Pearl's toxicity. Under the Sky Poison Pearl's heavenly poison, countless of experts whose strength far surpassed Yun Che's by many times over, and even the exceptionally strong all died under his hands.

"If the Sky Poison Pearl still had its poisonous strength, then within this trial ground, as the heavenly poison spreads, let alone ninety-nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine profound beasts, even if it was ten times that number, they would all still be poisoned to death by dusk." Yun Che said with extreme emotion.

As a Heavenly Profound Treasure,  
the overpowered aspects of the Sky  
Poison Pearl laid in more than just  
its tempering and refining.

Wait... heavenly poison spreading?

Yun Che's mind suddenly turned,  
and he looked towards the  
boundless forests beneath the cliff.  
In a while, he slowly began to smile.

“Jasmine, do you believe that we’ll  
be able to leave this place today if  
we’re lucky.”

# Chapter 191: Blood of the Dragon God

“... What are you going to do?”  
Jasmine asked with suspicion.

The wind screamed past Yun Che’s ears as he stood near the cliff and stretched out his hands to feel the wind. He faintly smiled, then took a deep breath. Facing upwards, he used all his strength and shouted loudly:

“AHHH~~~~~”

“Enhanced by profound strength, this shout was transmitted quite far, and directly scared Jasmine. Immediately after, countless



profound beast roars sounded from the distance. For all the profound beasts living in this endless plain, Yun Che was their target.

Previously, Yun Che hid whenever he could, so this was the absolute first time that he dared to behave in such a flashy way... And to actually do it in this place, was essentially the same as seeking death.

Very quickly, the roars of profound beasts grew in number as the sounds came closer and closer.

From far away, no matter whether it was from the skies or the ground, more and more profound beast silhouettes began to surface as they all rapidly charged in this direction.

The sleeping Chu Yuechan was shaken awake by Yun Che's yell.

She opened her eyes slightly and asked: “Yun Che... What are you doing?”

Yun Che looked down at her and gently answered: “Little Fairy, your Frozen Cloud Asgard is located in the empire’s northern region, so you all you really see is just ice and snow right? You must have never seen much fire... Today, I’ll show you a really big fire. Remember to keep your eyes wide open.”

After his voice fell, Yun Che leapt down from the cliff and fell into the endless forest beneath.

Just as he had expected, the profound beasts in this nameless forest was even more concentrated than the one’s in the plains. Right

as he landed, he felt the aura of a dozen or so profound beasts lock onto him. He did not stay for long; after quickening his pace, he madly dashed forward. At his rear, the dozen or so profound beasts all made unearthly sounds. Bringing along a berserk aura, they sprang out from either the bushes or the trees and chased after Yun Che.

In the wake of Yun Che's full strength dash, alerted profound beasts grew larger in number, and thus, the profound beasts at his rear naturally went up in number as well. After ten or so breaths, he suddenly halted in his steps. Not even taking a single glance at the profound beasts chasing him behind him, Yun Che's body combusted into a bunch of flames

that were several meters tall. He took a deep breath, and the group of flames rose higher and higher; they immediately rose up to over twenty meters in height and following Yun Che's low roar, exploded outwards.

“Star Scorching Demon Lotus!!”

Boom!!

Different from the previous blossoming Star Scorching Demon Lotuses, every layer of this Star Scorching Demon Lotus exploded outwards. This was the largest Star Scorching Demon Lotus Yun Che had ever discharged that used a full seventy percent of his profound strength. In the split second the Star Scorching Demon Lotus

exploded outwards, it enveloped approximately three hundred meters of the nearby surroundings.

From far away, it was as if a volcano had erupted within this boundless jungle of trees.

More than half of the profound beasts that were chasing from behind were instantly killed under the extremely might of this Star Scorching Demon Lotus; the ones that remained alive within the flames howled in pain. This lush dark green forest was not easy to ignite, but what Yun Che released was a flame fused with Phoenix Flame. When the green trees that filled the sky made contact with the phoenix fire, they quickly combusted, as if they were dead

trees.

A dozen or more breaths had passed by. Not only had the sea of fire created from the Star Scorching Demon Lotus not shrunk, it quickly expanded. Spurred on by the southern wind, the flourishing fire was like irresistible turbulent tide as it rapidly extended and swept southwards.

The large fire continued to burn. Along the sky of ancient winding trees, the fire immediately shot to a height of several meters. The southern wind whipped by, and the speed of the spreading fire quickly increased. In the blink of an eye, devastated land grew from five kilometers to ten, to fifteen...

The wretched roars from countless profound beasts came from far away. As Spirit Profound Beasts, it was difficult for ordinary fire to bring them harm, but staying inside a sea of fire for a long period of time was a completely different story. Forget about Spirit Profound Beasts, even if they were low level Earth Profound Beasts, if they could not escape in time, they would inevitably be buried in the sea of fire. However, the wind helped the fire flourish, and in an instant, it spread to around three hundred meters wide, so how could profound beasts possible escape?

Poison could be spread by air or water, but inside the forest, with the assistance of the pushing wind, the speed in which fire spread far

surpassed the spreading of poison. Yun Che stood in the sea of fire. His entire person was already enveloped in flames, and no matter what direction one looked in, it was all ignited by a large wildfire. But with his Evil God Fire Seed's mastery of flame, any sort of fire or smoke was completely repelled, and could never bring harm to Chu Yuechang.

“Little Fairy, I didn't lie to you right?” Yun Che asked while beaming. Standing in the midst of the blaze, he had a sense of security that he didn't have for a long time. At least, when he stood in the middle of the large fire, there were no longer any sneak attacks from profound beasts that came at him.



“I don’t like fire.” Chu Yuechan softly said with closed eyes. The profound art she practiced was that of a pure-ice attribute. Fire and ice were incompatible elements, so she naturally had an instinct to reflexively reject fire.

“That’s because you were always alone back then.” Yun Che smiled, “Now that you’re with me inside this fire, if we look at it together... Would you still not like fire?”

“...” Chu Yuechan opened her eyes and stared at the boundless sea of fire before her. She stared blankly for a while and did not say a single word, but she also did not shift her gaze.

“So that’s it. You actually wanted to

burn this entire forest. This forest ought to have existed here for a long time, so the moisture here is quite heavy. There is absolutely no way for ordinary fire to burn here, this is truly worthy of being called the Flame of the Phoenix. If the wind does not stop, this sea of fire would continue to burn until the entire forest was burned to a crisp. The profound beasts in this vast forest would also be burned to death. But are you sure that the profound beasts being burnt to death here, would be counted as being killed by you?" Jasmine asked.

"I'm sure!" Yun Che nodded: "The Primordial Azure Dragon only said that I had to eliminate ninety-nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine profound beasts, and didn't say

how I had to eliminate them. Death by assault is fine, using poison and using fire is also fine. As long as I am the reason why these profound beasts are dying, then it would obviously be counted as my kill!”

The huge fire wildly spread like a gigantic crimson beast that proceeded to swallow up the entire forest filled with countless profound beasts. It didn’t even take an hour’s time for the fire to spread to a distance of fifty kilometers. Fifty kilometers of sky also shone red as the clouds became a burning red that usually happens at dusk.

The fifty kilometer fire’s burning sound was extremely fierce, but it was unable to drown out the miserable despairing howls of

countless profound beasts. The number of profound beasts that died in this sea of fire was increasing at a rapid pace...

At this time, the scene before Yun Che's eyes suddenly distorted. The sea of fire that filled the sky disappeared within the fuzziness, and became a field of blackness. The sounds near his ears had also completely faded away, and became tranquil. While carrying Chu Yuechan, he suddenly entered a completely dark world.

Above this dark world, a pair of gigantic azure blue eyes slowly opened.

The Primordial Azure Dragon's eyes.

“Primordial Azure Dragon, since you took us out of the second stage’s trial ground, does it mean that we have already passed the second stage of the trial?” Without waiting for the Primordial Azure Dragon to speak, Yun Che spoke first.

“Right.” The Primordial Azure Dragon answered: “Although your method was a bit cheap, but you did indeed pass. Not only that, you also passed before five months of time. I believe that even if you do not use such a method, you would still be able to successfully accomplish your goal of exterminating ninety-nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine profound beasts in at most a month. As a lowly human, you have yet again shocked me

greatly, you are truly extraordinary. Your performance within the trial realm has made me completely incapable of believing that you are a mere seventeen year old youngster.”

The Primordial Azure Dragon’s voice was filled with emotion. And to let a divine beast like the Dragon God feel such emotion, was undoubtedly a kind of supreme honor.

“And it also looks like you seem to urgently want to leave the trial realm. Otherwise, you would not chose to use your last forest burning method.”

“Yes,” Yun Che nodded: “I must return to the place I had previously

settled in within twenty five days. Thus, I hope that the third stage of the trial would not take that long.”

“Twenty five days? Haha, is enough. Because you have already passed the third stage of the trial.” The Primordial Azure Dragon calmly stated.

“Already passed?” Yun Che said in surprise.

“You have went through the Phoenix Trial, so if I’m guessing correctly, one of the stages within the Phoenix Trial is most certainly a test of character. We would never let our bloodline be passed onto a human of inferior morals. And the last stage of this trial, just happens to be a trial of character. When you

were passing through the two stages, you were always doing your best to protect the woman by your side, even if it meant that she would burden you with an increase in trial difficulty. Even when you were nearly unable to complete a trial, you never had a single thought of abandoning her. And the reason why you brought her into the trial ground, was also to personally protect her from danger. These actions of yours, is sufficient proof of your character. Thus, there was no need to carry out the third stage of the trial, for you have already passed.”

“Congratulations young human, you have become this land’s sole person who has passed the Dragon God Trial.”



Yun Che's expression relaxed, and then he asked somewhat excitedly, "Since I have already passed, then doesn't it mean that you can now tell me how to restore Little Fairy's strength?"

Chu Yuechan's eyes trembled... His first question was not about the Dragon God's bloodline, but instead was about her strength restoration method. Even if her heart was as cold as pure ice, it would still be incapable of throbbing so quickly.

"Of course I'll tell you that method. But before that, I have to first grant you something that you deserve."

"Challengers who have passed the Dragon God Trial could obtain three drops of the Dragon God's

blood. And since you two have entered this trial as a pair, you may obtain three drops of Dragon God blood. Young human, the true person who had completed the trial is only you, and what you had completed was a trial with a two-fold difficulty, so I will grant all six drops of Dragon God blood to you.”

Yun Che stared dazedly, then immediately shook his head. “No! We entered the trial together and completed the trial together. The process is insignificant, but the outcome, was something we passed through together! How can I possibly monopolize the six drops of Dragon God blood. I should get three, and she should get three.”

Chu Yuechan: “...”

“Heheheheh, I guessed that you would say that. But currently, her profound veins and meridians are all broken, and she simply cannot fuse with the Dragon God blood at the moment. Instead, the power of the Dragon God blood would destroy her in an instant. Furthermore, the method to save her has to be executed by you. However, the prerequisite, is for you to possess at least six drops of Dragon God blood. If you really want to save her, then you must completely fuse with six drops of Dragon God blood, not one drop less.

Yun Che lowered his head and looked into Chu Yuechan’s eyes for a little while, and then nodded his head: “Alright.”

“I will give you seven days to completely fuse with the six drops of Dragon God blood. After seven days, I will then tell you how to save her. At the same time, within those seven days, you have to stabilize the profound strength breakthroughs that you had been suppressing for a while as well. You forcibly suppressed your breakthroughs for so long, so it is very likely to bring harm to your profound veins; if it is serious, it may affect the breakthroughs you will have later on. Carefully stabilize it... As for this woman, in these seven days, I will use my power to protect her life veins. You need not worry.”

As the Primordial Azure Dragon's voice fell, a speck of azure blue light suddenly came flying from the

darkness, and accurately touched the spot between Yun Che's eyebrows. Afterwards, it directly entered the space between his brows.

# Chapter 192: Peak of the True Profound Realm

Six drops of the Dragon God's blood entered his body, causing Yun Che to instantly feel as though six balls of flames exploded within his body at the same time .

To Yun Che, due to the existence of the Evil God's Fire Seed, his fusion with the Phoenix's blood was completely riskless and easily accomplished. However, the energy density of the Dragon God's blood was evidently stronger than the Phoenix's blood, and the energy from the Dragon God's blood did

not have a specific 'element'. To Yun Che, completely fusing with the six drops of Dragon God's blood, was ten times more difficult than fusing with the Phoenix's blood.

Yun Che even suspected that, the Primordial Azure Dragon transferring all six drops of Dragon God's blood into his body at one go might be another form of test for him.

Yun Che immediately calmed himself. He sat down, and submerged his entire consciousness within his inner body. With his profound energy fully released, he began the slow and difficult process of fusing with the Dragon God's Blood. As he felt the tremendous

bloodline power hidden within the Dragon God's Blood, he started to suspect himself if he was actually able to completely fuse the six drops of blood within seven days.

The pitch-black world was completely isolated from the outside world, and no external forces would be able to interrupt him. Because of this, Yun Che was able to concentrate fully without any worries. Beside him, Chu Yuechan was under the protection of the Primordial Azure Dragon's power, as she was enveloped by a layer of light-blue colored aura.

Outside the pitch-black world, in the dim mountain cave where Yun Che encountered the Primordial Azure Dragon, Jasmine slowly



revealed her figure. Raising her pair of cold eyes, she stared at the azure blue eyes in the sky. “You’re actually able to find out about this princess’ existence!”

“How can I not recognize the power of the twelve Star Gods?” The Primordial Azure Dragon’s gentle voice sounded. “You, as one of the twelve Star Gods, actually appeared in this world, and you’re even harboring the Absolute God Slaying Poison. It seems something big must have happened in the Star God Realm.”

Jasmine snorted, and coldly replied. “Hmph! You’re nothing but a residual soul that will disappear in a few years. Your role, is to watch over and conduct the trials and

bestowals of your blood inheritance. As for the things happening in our Star God Realm, you do not need to be concerned about them.”

Towards her cold tone, the Primordial Azure Dragon did not mind in the slightest, and still retained his calm tone. “In the World of Gods back then, many Gods were still extremely fearful of the Absolute God Slaying Poison. I did not expect that, even until now, within this realm, this frightening god-killing poison still exists. It seems, some individuals must have found the inheritance left by that ‘Demon’. And in this realm, the only thing capable of cleansing this poison, is the Sky Poison Pearl. Your body currently resides with the Sky

Poison Pearl, and as long as you do not use your profound energy, within three years, the poison will be cleansed... However, you're harboring a very deep hatred and killing intent within your soul. Even though the power restriction brought about by the Absolute God Slaying Poison, and the existence of this youth which you might have developed some form of feelings for, have completely suppressed these deep hatred and killing intent of yours, if you manage to fully cleanse your body from the poison one day, and leave this youth... It's hard to imagine, just how many lives will be taken by your hands."

Jasmine's thin brows slightly sank, and her charming and tender small face was filled with hideousness,

like a demon from hell. “People that this princess wish to kill, are people who deserve to die! These people who ought to die are are spreaded throughout nine star realms, and they total to twenty-six billion people! As long as this princess is still alive, there will come a day, when all of them, will die!”

The Primordial Azure Dragon grew solemn, and then heaved a long sigh. “You once possessed the purest and kindest of souls, but nonetheless, the deep hatred and killing intent that were born and grew within this purity, were also extremely pure. I can only hope that there will be someone who will save you from within this deep hatred and killing intent... I am only but a residual soul, which indeed do not

have to know too many things that I do not need to know. But the reason why I wish to converse with you, is to find out... whether that sword, has already been found.”

Jasmine seemed to be really clear what “that sword” was referring to, and coldly laughed. “Many gods have died because of that sword. Even though you’re only a wisp of a residual soul, you actually still have deep memories of that sword. This princess, however, can tell you this. Although countless people have risked their lives to find that sword, it has yet to be found by anyone.”

“... The reason why I asked about that sword, is not because of the deep memories I have for it. Rather, residing within that sword, is a

spirit that's extremely important to me."

Jasmine: "??"

"I have no idea just what kind of answer I wished to hear as well. No matter if it's been found by someone, or has yet to be found, either answers will bring about hope, and at the same time, worry. I hope that it has been found, but I worry that it's been found as well...

Jasmine furrowed her brows.

"What's the meaning behind what you just said? Unless there's still a special secret kept within that sword?"

"It's not really a secret, but a worry that will never be relieved even if I

were to perish... Little girl, I thank you for being willing to reveal yourself and converse with me, and even frankly tell me about some things. Your existence, have given me a few other ideas for this youth who have passed my trials. But you need not worry, I will not harm him, I will only bestow him a few more gifts, and then, entrust him with a part of my wish..."

-----

Under Yun Che's careful release, the profound energy which he had suppressed in the endless plains for nearly five months, was like a flood bursting through a dam; he made rapid breakthroughs. In a single day, he continuously broke through three levels, and arrived at the

seventh level of the True Profound Realm.

After that, with the fusion of every single drop of the Dragon God's blood, the power of the Dragon God's bloodline that was stored within, allowed Yun Che's profound strength to increase rapidly as well.

After fusing with the first drop of the Dragon God's blood, Yun Che's profound energy immediately shot up to the eighth level of the True Profound Realm, and after fusing with three drops of the Dragon God's blood, it was raised to the ninth level of the True Profound Realm.

Seven days later, the fusion with all six drops of the Dragon God's blood



was complete, and Yun Che's profound energy climbed to the tenth level of the True Profound Realm. With just one more step, he would enter the Spirit Profound Realm.

To have arrived at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm from the fourth level of the True Profound Realm within seven days was undoubtedly a dream-level increase. Yun Che's strength had also grown crazily in this type of increase.

On the eighth day, Yun Che finally opened his eyes. The world within his profound veins had been expanded by several times, and an unbelievably strong force was surging through every drop of blood and every cell within his body. At

the same time, he felt that the level of tyranny of his meridians, profound veins, bones, and skin, had long surpassed before, and these changes did not come from the Great Way of the Buddha. They evidently came from the Dragon God's bloodline!

The Primordial Azure Dragon's power did not possess an 'element', its physical body and strength, could be described with one word, "tyrannical". With the infusing of the Dragon God's bloodline, it had undoubtedly changed Yun Che's physical body and strength, causing them to become incomparably tyrannical. At the very least, they had long surpassed the realms of a mere human.

Although he did not breakthrough into the Spirit Profound Realm, with the power surging within his body, Yun Che believed that, with his current self, even if he were to face a late-stage Spirit Realm practitioner, he would not feel the slightest bit of fear. He was now confident that he could defeat Ling Jie, who had an overwhelming advantage over half a year ago, with a single blow... Of course, that was restricted to the Ling Jie of half a year ago. Yun Che himself had gained a leap in strength, so that monster-like Ling Jie might have made extreme improvements during this period as well.

Chu Yuechan had always been by his side. When he opened his eyes, the blue power that had been

protecting Chu Yuedan slowly dissipated. He hurriedly carried Chu Yuedan's upper body, speedily poured his profound energy into her body, and said with concern. "Little Fairy, are you alright?"

"I'm fine." Chu Yuechan replied softly. "You actually broke through... to the tenth level of the True Profound Realm!"

Although she had lost all her profound strength, her ability to identify the intensities of profound strength was not lost. According to the intensity of Yun Che's profound aura, she was able to instantly discern that he had actually reached the peak of the True Profound Realm.

“Mn!” Yun Che nodded with a smile. “Don’t worry, I have already completely fused with the six drops of the Dragon God’s blood. The Primordial Azure Dragon told me that, with this done, I’m able to completely heal you, and you might even gain a breakthrough into the Emperor Profound Realm.”

He raised his head, and asked loudly. “Primordial Azure Dragon, I have already completely fused with the bloodline, it’s about time you tell me what I should do to heal Little Fairy.”

“It’s very simple.” The azure blue eyes opened in the skies above, accompanied by the Primordial Azure Dragon’s voice. “Although you have only assimilated with six

drops of Dragon God's blood in your veins, with just the dragon's system alone, the intensity of your bloodline has already long surpassed the average True Dragon. Her meridians have snapped, and her profound veins have been broken; staying alive is easy, but to recover her former abilities, is extremely difficult. And the only way to allow her to heal completely, is to obtain a way to breakthrough and that is, your virgin dragon seed. You only have a single virgin dragon seed in your entire life, and it possesses an extremely mystical ability. With you, being a virgin male, and her, being a virgin maiden, your Yin and Yang are extremely compatible. Your virgin dragon seed will be completely absorbed by her Yin element as a

virgin maiden, healing all of the injuries in her body, and she will even obtain a certain degree of the Dragon God's bloodline.

Reconstructing a new set of profound veins has a high possibility of directly breaking through the bottleneck, and reaching an even higher realm."

As the Primordial Azure Dragon narrated this, Yun Che, who was initially filled with high expectations, was momentarily stunned. He subconsciously turned to look at Chu Yuechan, only to find her face blushing red; her eyes flickered with deep resentment. He said with a little stutter, "Primordial Azure Dragon, you're saying... you're saying..."

“Hoho, I have already described it really clearly. This was also why I only told you about this after you completely fused with the Dragon God’s blood. To restore her profound strength, this is the only way. As to how you’re going to go about doing it, it’s up to both of you to decide... Summon me whenever you’re done.”

After the Primordial Azure Dragon left these words, the blue eyes slowly disappeared, and its aura completely disappeared without a trace.

In this dark world, only Yun Che and Chu Yuechan was left. Within this extreme silence, both of them could hear their intense pumping hearts.



Yun Che slowly took a deep breath, and his state of mind quickly became calm. He was very clear that, in this situation, Chu Yuechan basically could not move a single inch, and nor would she accept it. So, he had to be the one to take initiative. As for the blame and the consequences that followed, he had to take responsibility for all of that as well.

Yun Che once again carried Chu Yuechan, and moved her to his body. “Little Fairy, the method the Primordial Azure Dragon spoke of earlier, you clearly heard it as well, right?”

“No...” Chu Yuechan’s emotions were in a state of severe unrest. “Even if I die, I will never...”

“I know.” Yun Che calmly said.

“You women from the Frozen Cloud Asgard are as clear as ice and as pure as jade for your entire lives; no matter your body or spirit, they are both pure and clean like ice and snow. Even in death, you will never be willing to have your body tainted. But, we have already been together for so long, and especially, in this five months, we have nestled in each other’s embrace at every single moment. Ask your inner heart, do you really hate the way I’m hugging you right now? If I’m the only person in your entire life who takes away your chastity, are you really that... against it?”

Chu Yuechan’s eyes froze. Right after, they turned completely misty, and not long after, they once again

started to shake violently.

“I’m well aware of the sect’s taboo that has been passed down for generations in your Frozen Cloud Asgard, and the way of thinking that’s deeply ingrained in your mind for tens of years; you’re basically unable to get past that barrier in your heart... Then, I will help you get past it. You did not make any mistakes, nor did you break any of your sect’s taboos, everything was because of me. If, after today, you’re willing to become a real woman, I will take responsibility for my entire life, and if you choose to leave, I will definitely not stop or pester you either. I don’t know which choice you will make, but there’s one thing I’m sure of, and it’s that you’re

definitely unwilling to stay a cripple for your entire life.”

After saying that, Yun Che placed Chu Yuechan on the ground. He stretched out his hands and slowly pulled off the clothes in front of her chest, revealing her ice-snow skin.

“No... don’t...” Chu Yuechan’s eyes were trembling with shock. Using all her strength to raise her right arm, she grabbed onto his wrist. “If... you dare to do that to me... I will definitely... definitely... kill you...”

Yun Che took hold of her hand, bent his body over, and forcefully kissed her fragrant lips, preventing her from making any other sounds.

Chu Yuechan's beautiful eyes widened, as she emitted out whimpering sounds. But as her extremely beautiful upper body was being completely exposed under Yun Che's body, her whimpering sounds became more powerless as time went by...

# Chapter 193: The Primordial Azure Dragon's Request

Under Yun Che's forcefulness, Chu Yuechan's weak struggles amounted to an exercise in futility. In the blink of an eye, her flawless, snowy white body that looked as though it had been sculpted from jade or ice, had become completely uncovered in front of Yun Che... and when her last 'barrier' was broken through by Yun Che's charge, her mental defensive perimeter instantly, completely collapsed as well.

This was a world separated from

the outside world; it was incomparably silent. And thus, the sounds of a man and a woman joining together were exceptionally clear, striking against their ears and souls. In this place, nobody would be able to bother them; there wasn't even any wind.

Her agitated attempts at resisting slowly transformed into increasingly charming sounds of panting. Her minute struggling movements slowly, unconsciously transformed into a welcoming acceptance. After several tempestuous, emotional rounds, at the location where their bodies pressed tightly against each other, his virgin Yang and her virgin Yin finally completed their perfect union.

Yun Che lay there, his mouth open as he panted roughly. His hands were holding Chu Yuechan's soft, slick white back. Chu Yuechan quietly lay there against his chest, her beautiful eyes shut, seeming to have fainted. The quiet, sorrowful tears that silently leaked out had left tear stains that had yet to dry.

Biologically speaking, Yun Che truly had been a virgin. Mentally, however, he definitely was not. In the Azure Cloud Continent, he and Su Ling'er had been together for many years, and although the number of times they had coupled in the 'inverted phoenixes' position might not have reached into the thousands, it had certainly reached into the hundreds. When he thought back to it, however, back



then his heart had been completely filled with hatred, and so he had essentially been giving vent to his bestial lust upon Su Linger's body. Today's 'storm' was one of a gentle wind and drizzling rain. It really was his first time...and this made him feel even more regret towards Su Ling'er.

Only, although it was a 'gentle wind with drizzling rain', this had still 'tormented' Chu Yuechan quite a bit. This was because his body possessed the Great Way of the Buddha, and had also just fused the Dragon God's bloodline, making the strength of his body far superior to an ordinary person's. He had spent more than two full hours entangling Chu Yuechan's charming, fragile, virgin body

before finally releasing what the Primordial Azure Dragon had referred to as the ‘virgin Dragon seed’. Chu Yuechan had been ravaged like a tender lotus in a tornado. Her upper body, her lower body... every part of her body was covered with traces of the storm.

After the wind and the rain, the two remained tightly coupled to each other. Yun Che secretly looked at the quiet, silent Chu Yuechan. Even after a long period of time passed, he didn’t say anything. He didn’t know what he should currently say to her. In his head, however, now came the bellowing shouts of Jasmine.

“You BASTARD! Lowlife! Pervert!!  
You actually caused me to see this

sort of a scene! And hear those unmentionable sounds for so long... If I didn't have to rely on you for now, even though you are my disciple, I would definitely kill you!!”

Jasmine's voice was filled with anger, and it was even quivering slightly. Yun Che rolled his eyes; his face didn't even redden. He replied quietly, “All you had to do was seal off your six senses and make it so that you couldn't hear or see anything.”

“Bastard! Lowlife! Pervert!” Jasmine began to bellow again.

“...Haha, this is a type of normal human behavior. The first time, perhaps you might truly be unaccustomed to it, but after you

see it a few more times, you'll naturally grow accustomed to it."

"Pervert! Pervert!! PERVERT!!! You are exactly what my mother and big brother told me about, a PERVERT who I absolutely, absolutely, absolutely can't get close to!"

After finishing her howling, Jasmine said nothing else and paid no more attention to Yun Che.

At this moment, from the place they were conjoined, he suddenly sensed an icy aura violently surge into his body, causing his entire body to grow stiff. His consciousness instantly was dispersed, and he fainted. As he fainted, that powerful, icy energy moved from the inside to the

outside, quickly covering his entire body and causing tendrils of icy, misty energy to rise above his form.

-----

As Yun Che lay in his coma, he didn't know how much time had passed.

He remained within that dark world, but Chu Yuechan's form was no longer by his side. The only thing remaining was a red 'blossom' on the ground and several marks, which testified that what happened had been no dream.

"Young human, you have awakened."

Within the darkness appeared two blue lights. Two enormous azure

blue eyes had opened in the air above.

“Why did I...faint?” Yun Che pressed against his head. His body didn’t feel strange at all; his earlier sudden fainting had caused him to feel very confused.

“After the two of you joined your Yin and Yang together, she gained your True Dragon’s virgin seed. Her wounds were completely healed, and, as I anticipated, her newborn Profound Veins allowed her to make a huge breakthrough, and she directly entered the Emperor Profound Realm. As for you, after you gained her virgin Yin, your body gained a powerful ice-attribute profound energy. Unfortunately, your profound energy was originally

of the fire-attribute. Fire and ice just so happen to counter each other, and so not only was the ice-attribute energy of no benefit to you, it actually clashed against your Phoenix flames. The reason why you suddenly passed out was because these two types of diametrically opposed energy suddenly began to clash with each other.

“Your ice-attribute energy has now been completely suppressed by the flames of the Phoenix. If my guess is correct, you have already gained the ice-attribute profound energy that woman had on her.”

The words of the Primordial Azure Dragon caused Yun Che to be stunned. He somewhat calmed

himself down, then suddenly discovered that within his consciousness, there was a powerful ice-attribute Profound Art...

The Frozen Cloud Secret Arts!!

In addition, it was the Frozen Cloud Secret Arts that had already reached the sixth realm, of being able to “activate the celestial snow”!

This discovery greatly shocked Yun Che. Of course he had heard of the saying, ‘dual Yin Yang training’, but the true essence of ‘dual Yin Yang training’ lay in harmonizing Yin and Yang, helping them make up for each other’s deficiencies.

Perhaps the attribute of one’s energy might be transformed through dual Yin Yang training, but



to gain the other person's complete Profound Art after coupling with them...

This was completely unheard of!

Wait a moment! Yun Che suddenly thought of something. Could it be that the reason why Frozen Cloud Asgard absolutely forbade the disciples of the palace from losing their chastity was actually precisely because...the Frozen Cloud Secret Arts could be completely transmitted to a man through the virgin Yin?

As Yun Che pondered this, the more he thought about this, the more likely it seemed. The results of ten or tens of years of cultivation by the disciples of Frozen Cloud

Asgard... if a man could take away their chastity, then without any effort at all, he could gain it all. How unfair was that! At the same time, it would result in their sect's Profound Arts being transmitted to outsiders. If word of this spread, without question, there would be countless greedy eyes which would stare at every single disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Despite how powerful Frozen Cloud Asgard was, they would be thrust into tremendous danger.

So that was the reason why...the women of Frozen Cloud Asgard were forbidden from developing relationships with any man, and until the day they died, they were not permitted to lose their chastity. It wasn't because love would impact

their training of the Frozen Cloud Secret Arts; it was because of this...

The Primordial Azure Dragon continued, “Generally, you will need to use the Frozen Cloud Secret Arts to lock up the ice-attribute energy as much as possible. Otherwise, if it explodes forth, it will probably result in tremendous damage to your body...unless, of course, you are able to find the water-attribute Evil Seed which the Evil God left behind. Only the Water Seed of the Evil God is capable of letting ice and fire, these two diametrically opposed attributes, to perfectly coexist within a single person’s body.

“...You know that my body has the profound veins of the Evil God?”

Yun Che raised his head.

“I can even detect the bloodline of the flames of the Phoenix, so how could I possibly not recognize the aura of the Evil God? Aside from that, your body also has the aura of the divine power of the Rage God and of Sirius the Sky Wolf. The reason why you were able to pass these trials was because you relied on these powers. Your situation makes me sigh in amazement, and also makes me, for the first time, desire to see what a human’s future is.”

The voice of the Primordial Azure Dragon was filled with deep regret.

“The Evil God’s Water Seed. I will try to find it.” Yun Che said. Sensing

the additional ice-attribute energy in his body, he murmured in his heart, “I won’t let the energy that you bestowed upon me with your chastity to forever be sealed...”

He raised his head and asked calmly, “And her? Where did she go? Did she say...when she would return?”

“She left. She didn’t say when she would be back.” The Primordial Azure Dragon replied.

“...Then before she left, did she want to kill me?” Yun Che asked in a rather lost manner.

“She raised a sword and pointed it at your vital points, but from the moment she lifted up the sword to

when she put the sword away, she never had a hint of a true killing aura. I could tell that she was just struggling in her heart about something... She stared at you for a long time, then left. But when she left, she didn't seem very resolute; at the very least, as she left, she turned to look at you three times."

Yun Che's eyes trembled, and the lost look on his face vanished and was replaced with a calm smile.

"Thank you, Primordial Azure Dragon. You not only bestowed me with power, you truly rescued her as well."

In his heart, he added another phrase: If it wasn't for you, I wouldn't have even gotten close to being able to enjoy Little Fairy's

body...

“Heh heh heh heh, you don’t need to think me. I simply wished to, for my own sake, find an ideal candidate for the transmission of my lineage. However...if you truly do feel gratitude for what you have gained, then can you agree to a request of mine?”

The word ‘request’, when spoken, carried a slight tremble to it. As the Primordial Azure Dragon, the leader of the countless divine beasts of the Divine Realm, how often had it ever ‘requested’ anything from others? A request from the Primordial Azure Dragon...this was something that a normal person couldn’t even fathom.

Yun Che nodded solemnly. "Speak. Although I cannot guarantee that I will definitely be able to assist you, as long as it is within my powers, I will definitely try to do everything I can."

"It is enough for you to answer me in this manner. My request is indeed far too difficult for you. You might spend your entire life without being able to even come close to the borders of this request, but the strength in your body, as well as your soul, makes it so that I can't keep myself from feeling hopeful... I hope that you, sometime in your life, will be able to find a sword."

"A... sword?" Yun Che was stupefied. "What sort of a sword?"



The Primordial Azure Dragon didn't directly answer this question.

Instead, he said slowly, "Have you heard of the place known as the 'Realm of the Gods'?"

"Realm of the Gods?" Yun Che shook his head. "I've never heard of it."

"The Realm of the Gods is also known as the Divine Realm. In the Primordial Era, the Gods dwelled there. That is an incomparably enormous plane, ten thousand times greater than the Profound Sky Continent you currently reside in. Afterwards, the Gods fell, but the Divine Realm didn't grow empty because of this. It became filled with countless humans, who took over this world that was formerly of

the Gods and who searched for and fought over all the things which the Gods left behind... Relics, weapons, spiritual medicines, lineages, profound arts, and more.

Afterwards, by relying on the divine relics that they found, they erected increasingly large and powerful clans, forces, lands, and even miniature worlds.”

A dazed look was in Yun Che’s eyes, as though he were hearing the words of the heavens.

“That place also has the lineage that I left behind. I learned these things only through the remnant spirits that remain in that place. The current Divine Realm is no longer a world of the True Gods; rather, it has been chopped up into

many spheres of power by the countless inheritors of the lineages of the Gods. It has become the plane with the highest levels of power in this era. In addition, the Divine Realm is incomparably large. Everyone continues to imagine that there must be more divine relics that have yet to be discovered, and so every day, many people will go to search for them... and in particular, they are searching for a sword. That sword has already disappeared countless years ago. Ever since the Gods were annihilated, not even a hint of it has appeared. However, its power and might made it so that people are unable to give up the search for it.

“That sword’s name is the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword.”

“You possess one of the Seven Heavenly Profound Treasures, the Sky Poison Pearl. Naturally, you should understand what it means to be in possession of one of the Seven Heavenly Profound Treasures. As for that Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword, it is ranked as number one amongst the Seven Heavenly Profound Treasures! According to legend, its power is enough to annihilate everything. It entirely lives up to its title of being the number one supreme treasure. Even if it falls into the hands of a mortal, that mortal will still be able to easily slaughter True Gods and smite the Heavens!”

---

alyschu note: inverted phoenixes

position = 69

# Chapter 194: The Approaching Ranking Tournament

The number one amongst Heavenly  
Profound Treasures!

Even in the hands of a mortal, it  
could slaughter Gods and smite the  
Heavens!

Every description pertaining to this  
Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword  
caused one to have a kind of deep  
heartfelt feeling. It was like a sword  
straight out of the legends;  
powerful, but like an abstract

concept that should not even exist.

As another one of the Heavenly Profound Treasures, the Sky Poison Pearl's power was something that Yun Che cannot be more clear about. With the Sky Poison Pearl by his side, the Yun Che of the past was able to rampage across the Azure Cloud Continent for seven years while exterminating countless experts stronger than himself, even though he only had slightly above average strength. Considering the fact that the core strength of the Sky Poison Pearl was not destruction, yet it was still already so frightening, the power of the highest ranked Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword must be beyond imagination.

It might be an exaggeration to say that it could slaughter Gods and smite the Heavens in the hands of an ordinary person, but the strength it could manifest was undoubtedly extreme.

“Why do you want me to find this sword?” Yun Che asked in the midst of his shock.

“Because.....” The Primordial Azure Dragon’s voice suddenly became sad: “Because my daughter is sealed within the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword! Her body and her spirit are both sealed within that sword!”

Yun Che : “Your... daughter?”

Jasmine: “... !!”



“After the demise of the gods, the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword never appeared again. I wish for it to be found, yet am frightened that it may be found. Because if it is never found, my daughter will forever be sealed within that sword, suffering endless darkness and loneliness. However, if that sword is found... If the person who obtains the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword is greedy and evil, after he unseals the sword, my daughter will become that person’s tool... After all, my daughter has the pure lineage of the Dragon God!”

“Then the reason you want me to find the sword, is to...”

The Primordial Azure Dragon replied gravely: “I believe in your

character. You are a trustworthy person. If that sword is in your hands, I believe that my daughter can be saved.”

Yun Che laughed self-deprecatingly, “Primordial Azure Dragon, it’s not that I want to reject your request, only ... you think too highly of me. The place that you speak of, I have never heard of it, nor know where it is. According to you, that place is of the highest level, populated by people who have inherited various abilities belonging to that of True Gods for countless generations. I am only a little practitioner at the True Profound Realm. The level of the place you speak of is too far above me and is too far away. Whether I even have the capability to leave Blue Wind Empire is not

yet known. There is simply no possibility for me to reach the place you speak of.”

“I understand,” the Primordial Azure Dragon said gently: “The request that I have is a difficult one, as hard as climbing the heavens. I don’t have the right to make you do this. I only hope that, if one day you step into the Realm of the Gods, you will try to look for the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword. If you never step out of this continent within your lifetime, then you can forever ignore my request.”

The most important reason why the Primordial Azure Dragon made this shocking request to Yun Che was because of Jasmine’s existence. Without Jasmine, there was no way

that Yun Che would have the chance to encounter that world. He might not even know about the existence of that world for the rest of his life. However, Jasmine's life was currently attached to his and his godly abilities originated from Jasmine. It could no longer be denied that there was a possibility for Yun Che to step into that world.

Since the Primordial Azure Dragon was willing to say this much, Yun Che, naturally, could no longer say anything else. He nodded his head sincerely, and replied: "Alright, I will remember all the words you have just said. If there truly is a day when I reach that place, I will definitely try to find that sword... If I find it, I will try to find a way to break the seal and allow your

daughter to see the light of day once again.”

“...Your voice is genuinely sincere and your soul does not have the slightest of tremors. It is clear I have chosen the right person. Thank you for your promise.” The Primordial Azure Dragon said in a gratified manner. “My clan of Dragon Gods had never owed favors to anyone. I will not let you do this without a reward... This residual soul of mine is attached to some remaining Dragon God blood. Opening the secret trial realm and giving you Dragon God blood has cost me dearly. This residual soul can only last three more years at most. This is also my last remaining soul. The residual souls that I left in other places have all dissipated

after passing on their abilities. I want to leave everything else I have left to you, but your inherent strength is far too weak. Even with the godly strength of the Evil God and Rage God to protect your body, you still will not be able to inherit my strength.”

“I will wait for you for three years. If you can reach the Earth Profound Realm within three years, return to this place to find me. I will bequeath you the last of my ‘Dragon God Marrow’ and ‘Dragon God Soul’!”

“However, I will only wait for you for three years. After three years, everything that I am will dissipate, leaving nothing but regrets.”

Dragon God Marrow, Dragon God Soul... Regardless of what it was, as long as the two words “Dragon God” were attached to it, it must be something powerful, even if it was merely a hair that had fallen from the Dragon God’s body. Yun Che could not resist this sort of temptation: “Alright! Within three years... No! Within two years, I will reach the Earth Profound Realm! At that time, I will definitely come here to find you.”

“Haha, good... Good.”

The Primordial Azure Dragon gladly assented. Then, his azure blue eyes that were floating in midair, slowly disappeared.

The darkness surrounding Yun Che

quickly dissipated and a dim light appeared. Yun Che looked at his surroundings and noticed that he had returned to the center of the Wasteland of Death, inside that dark cave.

“It is time for you to leave. Remember what I said. When you reach the Earth Profound Realm, you must definitely come back to find me. I am not doing this for your sake, but so that my daughter can have just a portion more of hope.”

“Be at ease. With such huge benefits, I won’t forget.” Yun Che replied.

“Your next plan is to return to the place you mentioned earlier?”



Yun Che looked at the cave's exit, and felt the strength his body now contained. Clenching his fists tightly, he said seriously, "The next thing to do is obviously to make it out of the center of the Wasteland of Death alive!"

The center of the Wasteland of Death was the Sky Profound Beast territory. Further on was the Earth Profound Beast territory. When he arrived, he was under Chu Yuechan's protection, but now he was alone. For the current Yun Che, these two areas were terrifying beyond compare, and were deadly lands that held surprises at every step.

To him, leaving the Wasteland of Death was just as difficult as the

Dragon God Trial's "test". But this "test" did not scare Yun Che at all. His profound strength had continuously risen six levels within the last seven days, and he also needed a large number of battles to stabilize his profound strength.

"I wish you a smooth journey."

Yun Che grinned and nodded. He bid farewell to the Primordial Azure Dragon and then head towards the cave entrance, stepping into the Wasteland of Death, where dangers abound...

Time had silently flown by. Without realizing it, the date for the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament came closer and closer.

The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament that was previously held once every ten years, had now been compressed to once every three years. Even though the frequency of the tournament had increased, the various large sects had never considered it less important than before.

The outcome of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament decided a sect's level. Proving one's strength in an authoritative manner could be done by getting a good position at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. If a previously unknown sect has an exceptional performance in the tournament and entered the top one hundred, then it would become famous overnight. The number of people seeking to

become a disciple would also become countless beyond measure.

To the sects that already stood at the apex, a good ranking was incomparably important because it would decide their position and prestige for the next three years.

And rank, was only a part of the reason why the large sects considered the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament to be important. The other reason was: Firstly, because the top ten ranking disciples would obtain prizes beyond compare, especially for the top three, for they would come from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region of the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Those were prizes money could not buy; even Blue Wind Empire's top sects could

not come up with such treasures! Secondly, the top ten ranking sects would have the right to explore the “Heaven Basin Secret Realm”, which only opened once every three years.

All the sects considered this “Heaven Basin Secret Realm” to be of the most importance.

The only reason the frequency of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament had increased to once every three years was because the frequency that the “Heaven Basin Secret Realm” was opened, increased from every ten years, to every five years, then to every three years.

Up until now, no one knew where

the “Heaven Basin Secret Realm” came from, aside from the various rumors that said it was a solitary domain opened by a super strong practitioner who had reached at least the Sovereign Profound Realm, who brought it to the Blue Wind Empire for unknown reasons.

Regardless, its true origin was not important. The important point was that there were undoubtedly countless treasures hidden inside the “Heaven Basin Secret Realm”. Every disciple who entered all came back loaded with treasures. Also, even though this “Heaven Basin Secret Realm” had been opened many times, no one had ever found its boundary. Many still believed that the greatest treasure hidden within the realm to this day, had yet to be discovered.

As the date for the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament drew nearer and nearer, various top sects were intensely busy in secret preparations.

Blue Wind Profound Palace was likewise. Except, for various reasons, its preparations this time around were especially late and hurried. With only three days until the start of the tournament, many sects were already on the journey to the Heavenly Sword Villa. Whereas Blue Wind Profound Palace was still in the midst of holding a selection competition to choose the participating disciples.

In accordance to Cang Yue's wishes, the Inner Palace Selection Competition, which should have

been held a month ago, was delayed for half a month before it began.

It was only this evening that the participating disciples were finally decided. With hurried steps, Qin Wushang personally left for the Moon Embracing Palace, the place currently occupied by Cang Yue, to let her know the results of the selection competition.

“Princess, the results of the Inner Palace Selection Competition between our Inner Palace disciples are out. As expected, it just happens to be the top three on the Inner Palace’s Heavenly Profound Ranking.”

Cang Yue calmly received the list of names delivered by Qin Wushang,



but Qin Wushang could feel the distress underneath her calm... and a kind of apathy, as if her heart had died. He let out a long sigh in his heart. He could only sigh. Not only did that Yun Che possess a shocking innate talent for profound strength, it seemed as if he had some kind of demonic power; to have actually let the Blue Moon Princess, who firmly rejected Fen Juecheng, fall in love with him so deeply she had willingly sunk into the dangerous condition of allowing her heart to die.

Fang Feilong, second level of the Spirit Profound Realm; Feng Bufan, third level of the Spirit Profound Realm; Fen Juechen, fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm..." Cang Yue softly read through the names

on the list of names once. She asked in a somewhat absentminded manner: "So it just happens to be the top three on the Inner Palace's Heavenly Profound Ranking. If I remember correctly, when I returned to the palace eight months ago, Fang Feilong and Feng Bufan were already twenty years old. Will they be over the age limit?"

"Regarding this point, Your Highness can be at ease. Fang Feilong and Feng Bufan are both about a month away from reaching twenty one years of age, and therefore, both are within the twenty year old age limit. I even used the Profound Assessment Stone to test the age of their bones, and it showed that both are still twenty years old." Qin Wushang

said respectfully.

# Chapter 195: The Return

“Fen Juechen is from the Burning Heaven Clan and is also their Clan Master’s son. If he represents the Blue Wind Profound Palace in the tournament, we would undoubtedly be criticized. Furthermore, even if he manages to get into the top hundred and defeat Fen Juebi, no one would recognize him as a representative of Blue Wind Profound Palace and accept our Palace’s ranking. Instead, we would be mocked. Father would definitely not feel proud about this... What do you think, Palace Chief Qin?” Cang Yue calmly said.

“What you said is definitely true Princess. It would definitely bring us large amounts of criticism and mocking,” Qin Wushang nodded, and continued helplessly: “However, the only reason Fen Juechen entered our Profound Palace was so he could participate in this year’s Blue Wind Ranking Tournament . He wishes to rank higher than Fen Juebi in order to avenge his shame. This point, the third prince had also specifically instructed before. Furthermore, he indeed is a Profound Palace disciple. If we kick him out, I’m afraid...”

“Since that’s the case, then let’s just let it be. I will explain to father.” Cang Yue took the namelist over and replied. Her tone was casual and weak as though she did not

care about this namelist or even this year's Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.

Cang Yue's reaction made Qin Wushang sigh again. He bowed and said: "All shall be as Princess has arranged. We are only three days from the tournament. Shall we set off tomorrow morning? What time would be more appropriate for you, Princess?"

"Me?" Cang Yue shook her head and replied dejectedly: "I had forgotten to inform you earlier Palace Chief Qin. I won't be going for this year's Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. I would have to trouble Palace Chief Qin and Palace Chief Dongfang to bring the team this time."

“Ahhh? This...” Although Palace Chief Qin could have guessed Cang Yue’s reaction from the way she acted, hearing the cold words straight from her mouth still made his heart fall. With a dark expression he continued: “But Princess, Palace Chief Dongfang had always been hard to track down. Ever since his majesty became sick, he rarely stayed in the Palace. More than a year ago, he left the Palace on a tour, and no one has seen him ever since. Not even the Sound Transmission Talisman could contact him.”

“Furthermore, even if Palace Chief Dongfang was able to get back in time, me and him bringing the team there would be highly inappropriate. Blue Wind Ranking

Tournament is the most prestigious tournament in the country and is held by one of the top ten sects in the world. The people attending are all of the status of at least Sect Elders. There are even sects where the Sect Masters themselves personally bring the teams in. Our Palace has always brought a prince or princess to lead the team. If we were to send a Palace Chief this time, it would likely cause the other sects to feel that we are looking down on them. The Heavenly Sword Villa might even hold grudges against us.”

“His Majesty’s body is unwell and he cannot move around much. The princes are all involved in the battle for power and therefore would not concern themselves with this.



Therefore, we can only trouble you, Princess. Three years ago, our Blue Wind Profound Palace merely ranked two hundred and twenty three, but your elegant demeanor stunned the entire crowd, completely overshadowing out pathetic results. This time, we have no choice but to trouble you again. If not... I really do not know what to do.”

During the previous few Blue Wind Ranking Tournaments, the Blue Wind Emperor himself personally brought the team to the tournament. But now, he was sick and unable to do so. Despite the power struggle within the family, the princes all know the importance of this event. However, the Palace’s results were always pathetic and

going to Heavenly Sword Villa would only cause them to be embarrassed. Therefore, none of them were willing to go for it. That was why Cang Yue had to bring the team to the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament three years ago.

This year's predicament was the same one as the one three years ago. Qin Wushang knew that the only one he could rely upon was Cang Yue.

Yun Che's matter, had already caused Cang Yue to become dejected and devastated. There were even several times when she felt absolute despair. She really had no more intention to bother with anything concerning the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. However,

hearing what Qin Wushang had said, Cang Yue knew that she did not have any choice. She had to consider the reputation of the imperial family and the relationship with Heavenly Sword Villa. She nodded slightly and closed her eyes: "I know... Prepare the flying profound beasts. We will leave tomorrow morning."

"Yes." Qin Wushang finally heaved a sigh of relief.

---

The next morning, Blue Wind  
Profound Palace Inner Palace.

The sky was already bright and it was silent in the Inner Palace. Although it was still early, most of

disciples had already entered the Profound Gathering Tower. In the Inner Palace, disciples usually woke up and entered the Profound Gathering Tower before sunrise. Some even stayed inside the tower for several days and nights. Inside the tower, every second of cultivation was extremely precious and disciples did not dare waste it. After leaving Blue Wind Imperial Palace, it was nearly impossible for them to enter the tower ever again.

In front of Supreme Profound Hall, three Giant Snow Eagles stood majestically; every one of them emitted a faint cool aura. With the Giant Snow Eagle's speed, they were able to travel up to several thousand kilometers a day. It would take them at most two days to reach

Heavenly Sword Villa. Beside the Giant Snow Eagles was Qin Wushang, who was already waiting there. To his right were two Inner Palace disciples who looked around twenty years old. They looked average, but their eyes held glints of arrogance. They stared at each other with obvious signs of enmity.

These two, were the Inner Palace's second and third ranked disciples, Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong respectively. Although the two of them were only twenty, there were the idols of all the disciples in the Profound Palace. Even the entire Blue Wind Imperial City knew of them and recognized them as geniuses. The crown prince and the third prince also favored them and people expected them to be of great

power in the future. Having such achievements at such a young age made ninety-nine percent of the youths in the city comparably envious. This naturally fueled their ego and made them arrogant.

Since they had pledged their allegiance to the crown prince and the third prince factions respectively, they naturally as incompatible as fire and water. Not only did they see each other with enmity, their words were also full of insults and mockery.

Finally, Cang Yue had arrived. She did not wear anything special, nor did she put on makeup. She had also not brought along anyone as she arrived alone.

Qin Wushang went forward hastily:  
“Good morning Your Highness.  
Princess, you..... Why are you  
alone? Why is there no one  
protecting you?”

Cang Yue forced a smile and shook  
her head: “There’s no need. When  
going to Heavenly Sword Villa, it is  
better to have less people than to  
have more. Also, we have you here  
Palace Chief Qin..... Aren’t these  
two Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong?”

Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong came  
forward to greet the princess.  
Although they were courteous, they  
did not have the fear and agitation  
commoners usually had when they  
encountered royalty. After following  
the crown prince and the third  
prince, they knew that Blue Wind

Princess held very little weight in the contest for power. She did not have any influence and merely held the title of princess. Perhaps her only influence was the influence still held by the current emperor — Which also included this the Profound Palace. When the current emperor passed away, the fight for power between the crown prince and third prince would be concluded. At that time, the fate of the princess would also be decided. Even if she was not sought after by Burning Heaven Clan, Cang Lin or Cang Shuo would definitely use her as bargaining chips in order to obtain benefits.

“Where’s Fen Juechen?” Cang Yue looked around and asked.



Qin Wushang shook his head helplessly: "Yesterday, I already informed Fen Juechen of the time. However, we have already waited for an hour and he still has not arrived. Fen Juechen was highly arrogant and does not wait for people. Perhaps he will arrive at towards the end of the morning. Other than that, everything is already prepared. Princess can rest assured."

"Palace Chief Qin arranged everything personally. Of course, I'm not worried." Cang Yue replied coolly: "Since that's the case, let us wait here for a while more. If he still doesn't arrive by the end of the morning, there's no need to wait any longer."

Cang Yue had not wanted Fen Juechen to represent their Palace in the ranking tournament. Naturally, she did not have much patience with him.

“Yes.” Qin Wushang replied respectfully. However, he was certain that Fen Juechen would arrive before morning ended. Because he trained tirelessly in the Profound Palace all for the chance to defeat Fen Juebi during the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, to make up for his previous shame. About a year before the tournament, he started cultivating vigorously in the Profound Gathering Tower. He trained like a madman everyday in order to raise his profound strength and profound arts. And in barely one year, he

directly stepped over from the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm to the fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm today... Such an wild improvement made Qin Wushang nervous. It also made him believe that in terms of talent, Fen Juechen did not lose to Fen Juebi, and even exceeded him greatly!

As they were speaking, a figure appeared at the entrance of the inner palace, walking casually in.

“Oh, looks like Fen Juechen is here.” The figure from far away startled Qin Wushang slightly as he spoke to Princess Cang Yue. But immediately, he knitted his eyebrows as his face revealed deep shock.

As the figure approached, he could be seen more clearly. It was a youth of seventeen or eighteen, wearing a simple white shirt that had been stained with travel dust and dew. It looked as though he had been rushing through the night. He did not give off any arrogance — at least not the type of arrogance Fen Juechen had. With a smart looking clean and white face, he did not possess any of the overbearing aura profound practitioners, and looked more like a sheltered young man.

That person was not Fen Juechen.

He was the Yun Che who had rushed day and night to get back.

From the center of the Wasteland of Death, Yun Che took an entire

eleven days to get out. In these eleven days, every step he took was dangerous, especially in the Sky Profound Beast and Earth Profound Beast territories. Every step he took was cautious and difficult. He met with no less than a hundred times of fatal danger. However, he avoided them all. Just like this, only using his strength that was only in the True Profound Realm, he manage to escape half of the Sky Profound Beast territory and escaped from the Wasteland of Death. Then, he rushed day and night, and finally in six days, he finally arrived at Blue Wind Imperial Palace this morning.

Arriving back in Blue Wind Imperial Palace, the first person he saw was Qin Wuyou..... And Qin

Wuyou's expression when he saw him was like seeing a ghost in midday. He then understood that his entering of the Wasteland of Death had already spread around and many thought he had died in the Wasteland of Death.

After that, he heard from Qin Wuyou that the team going to the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament at Heavenly Sword Villa was about to depart. Therefore, he abandoned Qin Wuyou and rushed to the palace at top speed.

When he arrived, he saw the stunned Qin Wushang and Cang Yue.

“Palace Chief Qin, Senior Sister, it's been awhile... I'm back.” Yun Che

stood in front of them and said  
while smiling.

# Chapter 196:

## Instant Defeat

“Ju... Junior Brother Yun!!”

Cang Yue immediately covered her lips, and looked at the figure that was easily within her reach in disbelief. Instantly, her vision became hazy, making her feel as if she had plummeted into the realm of dreams. Waves of dizziness had even emerged in her brain.

She took a step forward, and even though she forcefully endured the impulse to dive into his embrace, she could not suppress the tears on her face that gushed out no matter what. Looking at Yun Che and



suppressing her weeping sound, she tried to speak; but she was already crying to the point of being unable to utter any sound, and couldn't even voice out a coherent sentence.

Yun Che walked to Cang Yue's front. Without minding Qin Wushang and the other two people on the side, he reached out his hand, gently wiped away the tears on her face and said with an aching heart: "Sorry, Senior sister, I have worried you."

The voice belonging to Yun Che was like the most gentle of wind and reverberated within Cang Yue's ears. She had thought she would never hear his voice ever again in her entire life. She grasped Yun Che's hand. Her tears from joy and

surprise could not stop as she said while weeping: “I... I had thought... had thought... never again... never again....”

“I didn’t tell Senior Sister that the place I went to was the Wasteland of Death, and it is my fault...

However, I’ve returned safely; not a single hair is missing.” Yun Che comforted her while smiling:

“Before I left, I had promised Senior Sister I would return within half a year. Even though I was almost late, at least I did not break my promise with Senior sister. Senior sister, don’t cry anymore... No matter where I go from now on, I’ll definitely tell you honestly, and never again let you worry for me.”

Cang Yue’s tears, Yun Che’s

whispers... Even if one were an idiot, they would still be able to clearly tell their relationship at this moment. Leaving aside Qin Wushang, who had noticed inklings of this long ago, as Qin Wuyou had also secretly hinted toward him a few times; even though he was somewhat awkward and uncomfortable just watching from the side like that, it was still acceptable. But for Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong, their expressions were much more interesting... Yun Che was someone of broad interest half a year ago; they have also heard news of his death in the Wasteland of Death. Following beside the Crown Prince and the Third Prince, they had also occasionally heard that Blue Moon Princess and Yun Che were

somewhat close. But at this time, they were seeing the two's drifting tears and exposed emotions up close and personal...

Whether Yun Che was dead or alive, wasn't any urgent concern to them. After all, he was merely a small character in their eyes, and at most, merely had a decent influence within the younger generation in addition to having had the attention of Crown Prince and Third Prince before. But Cang Yue... she was the one and only princess within the Blue Wind Empire's Imperial Family! And the identity that was even more important — She was also the woman that Feng Juecheng fancied!

After Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong

had finished being surprised, their gazes toward Yun Che instantly had a few more degrees of pity: Putting aside the Blue Moon Princess identity, if Feng Juecheng hears of this Yun Che who dared to taint the woman that he fancied, even if the entire Blue Wing Profound Palace were to cover for him, he would still certainly die an incomparably miserable death, and there definitely would not be a second outcome.

Glancing at Qin Wushang and the two people with abnormal expressions, Yun Che squeezed Cang Yue's hand, took a step forward and said: "Palace Chief Qin, I had left the profound palace unnoticed on my own accord half a year ago, and I wish for Palace

Chief's forgiveness."

"Haha, it's good as long as you returned, well and safe." Qin Wushang smiled benevolently. Seeing Yun Che's safe return, he was also truly joyous in his heart. At least, Princess Cang Yue would no longer continue to have an ashen heart be sad to the point of despair. He slightly nodded and said: "Oh! It also seems, that the fruit borne from your half year of training is very shocking. Your current profound strength rank is now... Hm? What!! True Profound Realm ten... Tenth rank? This this this...."

He had originally felt that the profound energy's aura Yun Che faintly emitted was much more

profound and thick than half a year ago, and thus he was very pleased. But only when he truly examined it, did he finally find out with extreme shock, that his profound strength level had actually already reached the tenth level of True Profound Realm!

When he last saw Yun Che, it was six month ago. At that time, during his showdown with Murong Yi, his profound strength was only at the second level of the True Profound Realm... With six months of time, he actually consecutively crossed eight levels!!

“True Profound... tenth level? Ah?” Cang Yue turned back her face that still had tears hanging on it, and spoke with a tone that was both

shocked and delighted: “Junior Brother Yun, is that true.... Your profound strength really has already reached the peak of True Profound Realm?”

Qin Wushang’s words, made the expression of both Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong change. They immediately probed for Yun Che’s profound strength; the result they got, made their expression change greatly again, and the shock in their hearts was at their limit. About the matter of him battling Murong Yi half a year ago, they naturally knew about it, and also knew Yun Che’s profound strength at that time.... But a leap of such an extent, jumping eight ranks consecutively in six month’s time, they had never even heard of such a case before.



Even for the current number one genius of the younger generation—Heavenly Sword Villa's Young Villa Master Ling Yun, it would have definitely been impossible for him to jump from True Profound Realm level two to True Profound Realm level ten in half a year.

What shocked Qin Wushang even more, was that not only did Yun Che's profound strength surged greatly, the aura was also extremely stable... Raising eight levels within half a year, the profound energy was still so stable and thick; any part of this would be enough to shock the world.

Yun Che nodded while smiling:  
“Yes. Even though the Wasteland of Death is filled with dangers, it

indeed could give a person an extremely good training experience.”

If it was only training, with Yun Che’s fifty-four fully opened profound veins, he would still have gained enormously in half a year. However, he absolutely would not have raised his strength by this much just because of that. Obtaining the Dragon God bloodline’s inheritance, was the true key factor.

“This... This is simply unbelievable.” Qin Wushang even somewhat stuttered from excitement: “Even those direct disciples of the top sects that possessed abundant resources and heritage, certainly wouldn’t have had such an

improvement that you did. Seems like, I had always underestimated you greatly. It is also no wonder why the princess would... toward you. Haha, hold you in such importance.”

“Palace Chief Qin’s praise is too much.” Yun Che casually smiled, and cut straight to the chase: “The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament should be starting in just two more days, I want to represent the Imperial Family to attend this time’s Ranking Tournament. I wonder if Palace Chief Qin can grant me permission?”

“This...” Qin Wushang hesitated for a moment, took a glance at Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong, and said: “Every single force that attends the

Ranking Tournament, can only bring three participant disciples at most. The three people that represents the Imperial Family to participate has already been chosen by matches within the Inner Palace. These two senior brothers of yours beside me are the two amongst them, and the other is Feng Juechen. If you were to participate, I'm afraid..."

"That's easy." Yun Che turned his gaze toward Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong: "Since it's a ranking tournament, then the tournament's outcome will affect the Imperial Family's rankings within all the forces, and naturally will also affect the Imperial Family's prestige. Thus, we absolutely must choose the strongest disciples as the

participants. Since these two Senior Brothers are two of the strongest three from the selections, then if I defeat either of them, does this mean that I could replace them?"

"This...." Qin Wushang looked at Cang Yue, and slowly nodded: "That indeed is so. If your strength is greater than either one of the your two Senior Brothers, you naturally will be more qualified to represent the Imperial Family and participate."

"That's good then." Yun Che folded his right hand behind his back, and extended his left hand toward Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong: "Then, I'd like to ask for some guidance from the two Senior Brothers here. I wonder which Senior Brother would

like to grant me guidance first?

Yun Che and Qin Wushang's discussion made Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong reveal their disdain. Even though Yun Che's progress was shocking beyond belief, the two of them had long since broken through the True Profound Realm and had already been in the Spirit Profound Realm for more than a year, so how could they possibly care about a tenth ranked of the True Profound Realm? It was even more impossible for them to think that they would be defeated by a True Profound practitioner.

In the face of Yun Che's attitude, the two laughed in disdain. Fang Feilong's mouth twitched, and said: "Feng Bufan, I'll leave this to you

then.”

The corner of Feng Bufan’s eyes slanted as he sneered: “Feng Feilong, you are merely someone who lost to me, so there is no point for me to do anything. If you can’t even pass through that, is there even a need for me to take action?”

Fang Feilong furiously countered: “Surnamed Feng, that was only because you consumed the Dragonscale Transforming Pellet early, and broke through one or two months earlier than me! Wait until I have completed refining the Dragonscale Transforming Pellet in these two or so days, then we’ll see who’s the loser!”

“There is no need for the two Senior

Brothers to quarrel.” Yun Che said with a chuckle: “If you guys cannot decide on who is going to give me guidance, then you can both come up together.”

After those words were out, Qin Wushang and Cang Yue were scared silly. Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong stared blankly for a bit, then sneered at the same time. Feng Bufan answered: “Hmph. Yun Che, you are indeed as arrogant and conceited as the rumors had said you were...”

Feng Bufan had only just started speaking, but was then impolitely interrupted by Yun Che: “The ranking tournament is already close at hand, we had better not waste time on unnecessary talk. If the two



senior brothers do not want to take the initiative to attack, then I won't be polite anymore."

As soon as his voice fell, Yun Che's figure flashed as he directly dashed at Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong. As he approached, his silhouette suddenly split in two, letting Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong clearly see a distinct Yun Che come attacking in each of their direction.

Against an opponent at the True Profound Realm, neither Feng Bufan or Fang Feilong felt any pressure, nor did they feel flustered. And a True Profound Realm that actually vainly attempted to simultaneously challenge two at the Spirit Profound Realm, in their eyes, was the biggest joke of the century.

“Die!”

The two coldly shouted as they individually grabbed at the Yun Che in front of them, but both of their hands simultaneously grabbed at the air... The two Yun Ches, were both residual images! But under both their attacks, attacking these two residual images felt no different that attacking a real person, and did not have the the vague illusory feeling that residual images usually should have.

This was Star God's Broken Shadow's most formidable aspect.

Afterwards, Yun Che's true body appeared above them. His body immediately spun as both his hands unfurled and simultaneously struck

in the two's direction. Like lightning, he struck the one on the left and the one on the right on the shoulder with an attack that didn't appear to be light or heavy.

Yun Che's surprise attack shocked them, but they did not have show any hint of fear when facing Yun Che's attack. It was simply impossible for a True Profound attack, especially one that simultaneously dispersed towards two people, to break through their profound energy defense. And as long as the two simultaneously countered with their profound energy the instant the attack hit, the two Spirit Profound Realm's counter energy was enough to let this arrogant egoistic brat who did not know the difference between

heaven and earth, suffer serious injuries.

But just as Yun Che's double slap hit their shoulders, an indescribable oppressive feeling sent instant chills down their backs as their hearts suddenly stopped. Then, after a loud "bang", they felt as if they had been ruthlessly smashed by a fifteen thousand kilogram sledgehammer as their profound energy defense, along with any thoughts of "counter repelling" broke apart in a split second. The two groaned in unison and were sent flying far away. As if they were two bundles of rice straws, they continuously flew past a distance of more than thirty meters away. Afterwards, they sprawled on the ground while moaning in pain, and

could not get up until a long while.

Yun Che's profound strength was indeed only at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, but how could his actual strength be measured by his profound strength!

Instant defeat!

Instantly defeated two people!

And these two, were the mighty top practitioners of the younger generation that had been second and third place on the Inner Palace's Heavenly Profound Ranking, for more than a year!

Qin Wushang's old eyes immediately opened wider than a cow eyes, and even Cang Yue had softly gasped as she subconsciously

covered her mouth. The shocked tint in her eyes that turned into pleasant surprise, once more turned into a deep admiration and reverence... like how an ordinary girl adored her brave lover.

Seeing the two people who were unable to get up from the ground, Yun Che looked at his hands and then said somewhat embarrassedly: "Senior Brothers, I apologize, I attacked a bit too heavily... Err, Palace Chief Qin. Uhm... I really didn't mean to do that on purpose... It shouldn't delay the ranking tournament, right?"

# Chapter 197: Fury

Qin Wushang was shocked for a long time before reacting. He immediately checked the injuries of Feng Bufan and Fan Feilong which then, left him speechless... Both of them had their shoulder bones shattered and the meridians in their shoulders were broken. In this kind of condition, before even considering the ranking tournament, they would need a month or two to heal their bodies, and would not be able to use their profound strength during this period.

Qin Wushang secretly swallowed down a surprised gulp. The blow

that Yun Che struck out was done very casually. Rather than with his full strength, not even half of his strength was used. This was enough to injure two of the powerful disciples who had occupied the top three ranks, to such an extent. With only strength of the True Profound Realm, he was actually capable of dealing blows of such shocking strength... It was simply unbelievable.

After checking both disciples for injuries, Qin Wushang sighed dotingly, "Severe shoulder bone fractures... Sigh, I'm afraid it is no longer possible for either of you to attend this tournament. Hurry over to the Medicine Hall."

The faces of the two disciples paled



upon hearing Qin Wushang's words. The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament was the Blue Wind Empire's most magnificent and most highly followed event, especially among the young generation. To be able to partake in this competition could be said to be one's lifelong dream. Because the tournament gathered the most elite of the young generation, and in the future, they would become the lords overseeing the world of profound strength within the Blue Wind Empire. There were eminent sect leaders and elders that were harder to meet than one to ascend to heaven. However, even these leaders and elders all gathered for the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.

For many young practitioners, whether they could get a good ranking was secondary. Even being able to partake in the competition once, was an immeasurably rich experience.

Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong were already almost twenty one. This would be the only chance they would ever have to attend the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.

Originally, they had been too excited to sleep all night and had already prepared early in the morning to set off. No one could imagine that a Yun Che would instantly shatter their beautiful dreams in a single moment.

“Palace Chief Qin, my injury... is not much of a burden, I can definitely

continue in the ranking tournament.” Feng Bufan straightened his body, strongly resisting the sharp pain in his shoulder while doing his best to put a serene mask on his face.

“There is no need to push yourself.” Qin Wushang waved his hand, “Your shoulder is already crippled. If we of the Blue Wind Profound Palace bring a cripple to attend the ranking tournament, that will just bring ridicule upon us.”

“Palace Chief Qin! “ Fang Feilong clenched his teeth and pointed towards Yun Che: “This Yun Che... he not only ambushed us, but also used a lot of force with malicious intent! We are the disciples representing the Imperial Family in

this tournament. For him to injure us so heavily like this, he simply cannot be pardoned! He crippled an arm for each person. As punishment, Palace Chief Qin, you should at least cripple both his arms and then expel him from the Blue Wind Profound Palace!”

“Enough!” Qin Wushang frowned coldly: “Whether or not it was a sneak attack, the two of you should know clearly in your hearts. If your skill is not equal to others, then you have no choice but to admit defeat. When you are comparing skills with others during the usual practice sessions, is there any shortage of heavy blows inflicted with malicious intent? If we follow what you say and punish everyone accordingly, the two of you would

already have had every single bone destroyed as punishment by now. Regarding the matter of the ranking tournament, it is indeed regretful that the two of you can no longer attend. But there is no longer any way to help you in that matter. What are you still doing here? If you do not quickly go to the Medicine Hall, your arms might be crippled forever.”

Qin Wushang was clearly favoring Yun Che. You could not blame him. Regardless of the close relationship between Yun Che and Princess Cang Yue, or the shocking strength displayed by Yun Che, Qin Wushang had no reason not to favor him. Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong gave a venomous look at Yun Che at the same time,

muttering some discreet sounds.  
After that, they covered the wounds  
on their shoulder and staggered off.

“Palace Chief Qin, can I represent  
the imperial family to participate in  
the ranking tournament now?”, Yun  
Che asked calmly after Feng Bufan  
and Fang Feilong left, not giving a  
care about their situation.

Qin Wushang laughed bitterly:  
“You have already injured the two  
of them to this extent, what other  
choice do I have?”

Cang Yue stood in front of Yun Che  
with a smiling face full of joy:  
“Palace Chief Qin, you have also  
witnessed how much stronger  
Junior Brother Yun is compared to  
the both of them. The rank that a

faction obtains in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament is based on the rank obtained by the best performing disciple, not the average rank obtained by its disciples.

Having Junior Brother Yun participate will be better than the both of them combined by a hundred times!”

At this time, there was suddenly an anxious shout from the entrance of the Inner Palace.

“Let me in alright... I’m going to find a person... I’m begging you to let me in, I guarantee that I will leave immediately after meeting this person... Elder, just let me in alright....”

This voice stunned both Yun Che

and Cang Yue momentarily. Yun Che immediately turned his head to look towards the direction of the main entrance of the Inner Palace :  
“That is Yuanba’s voice.”

Cang Yue immediately said :  
“Palace Chief Qin, quickly, let him in. He must have heard that Junior Brother Yun has returned, which was why he came running so excitedly.”

Qin Wushang nodded, and used a powerful and penetrating force to project his voice : “Elder Xu, let him in.”

The seal at the Inner Palace entryway disappeared. A tall muscular figure rushed over, immediately recognizing Yun Che



when he was near.

“Brother-in-law!!”

Xia Yuanba emotionally roared. Completely ignoring the existence of both Cang Yue and Qin Wushang, with tears streaming, he ran over to hug Yun Che like a child, while bawling and crying: “They all said... that you had died... I just knew Brother-in-law would definately be fine... It’s too wonderful... too wonderful... Uuu... Uuuuuuu...”

Having not seen him for a while, Xia Yuanba’s already stout figure looked to be fractionally more robust than before. Yun Che slapped Xia Yuanba on the shoulder, grinned and consoled

him: "It's alright now, am I not well and alive? Your brother-in-law has the luck and skill to protect his own life. How can I lose my life so easily?"

The body of a giant and the heart of a child. Two vastly differing elements gathered in the form of Xia Yuanba. Perhaps others would think that it was awkward but for Yun Che, this was the pure and simple Xia Yuanba he was most familiar with.

Yun Che needed to spend a large amount of time before Xia Yuanba could finally calm down. For Xia Yuanba, from childhood, Yun Che had been his only playmate, close friend and brother-in-law. After leaving the Blue Wind Profound

Palace, Yun Che's various actions had even surprised him into a deeper adulation. In his heart, Yun Che held as important a place as a family member. A few months ago, news of Yun Che having died in the Wasteland of Death had almost caused him to collapse.

Yun Che unconsciously felt the level of Xia Yuanba's profound strength. He was astonished to find out that his current level of profound strength was only at the seventh level of the Elementary Profound Realm. When they first came to the Blue Wind Profound Palace, Xia Yuanba's profound strength had been at the sixth level of the Elementary Profound Realm. Fully eight months had passed and yet even at the most basic of

profound realms, he was only able to advance a single level.

If this had been in Floating Cloud City, it would be just barely reasonable. However at Blue Wind Profound Palace, the conditions and atmosphere were many times better. There were support pellets given, various profound arts to learn. There were many experienced teachers and a mature training program. Under this kind of environment, this kind of progress was just too unacceptable.

“Junior brother Yun, somehow, the news that something had happened to you earlier had spread. After Yuanba knew about it, he had a huge crying session... At least for the sake of Yuanba, do not go to

such a dangerous place in the future ever again.” Cang Yue gently said. When she thought of the evil reputation of the Wasteland of Death, even if Yun Che was safely standing in front of her, she still had a trace of lingering fear.

“Yes, yes. I will earnestly follow Senior Sister’s instructions.” Yun Che replied quickly.

Under the curious questioning of the three people, Yun Che gave them a condensed version of his experiences in the Wasteland of Death... Of course, he did not tell them about Little Fairy. Regarding the Dragon God Trial, he only said that he had undergone a strange encounter. Unwittingly, an hour passed by, but Fen Juechen still had

not appeared.

“That’s strange... logically speaking, the reason Fen Juechen is training so hard is so that at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, he can face Fen Juebi to wipe out his shame. How could he be late on purpose... Could it be that he had forgotten about the time at the Profound Gathering Tower?”

The more that Qin Wushang thought about it, the more that he felt it was a possibility. He turned his gaze towards the Profound Gathering Tower, and said to Xia Yuanba: “Yuanba, go check if Fen Juechen is in the number one profound chamber in the Profound Gathering Tower. The number one profound chamber is on the right

hand side of the second floor of the  
Profound Gathering Tower.”

“Profound Gathering Tower... I... I go?” Xia Yuanba gestured at himself. At first, he was shocked and could not control his excitement. After all, the Profound Gathering Tower was a place that only disciples of the Inner Palace had the right to enter. It was said that cultivation in that place would produce twice the results with half the effort. The disciples of the Outer Palace and Middle Palace could only look at it dully without daring to hope that they could ever enter. Also, Fen Juechen was ranked number one in the Inner Palace, and even the entire Blue Wind Profound Palace. Many disciples who were at a lower level than the

Inner Palace had only heard of his reputation but had never seen him. They all treated him with a mixture of curiosity and yearning, but had never seen him before.

“Nn, Yuanba, you go. The aura in the Profound Gathering Tower is very special. You might even benefit a bit from within.” Yun Che said accordingly, “However, if Fen Juechen is really within, you should be careful when approaching him. That person probably does not have a good temper.”

“Alright, I understand.” Xia Yuanba excitedly ran like a kid towards the tower that he could previously only view from afar.

Qin Wushang had guessed



correctly. Fen Juechen had indeed forgotten the time during his final preparations for the ranking tournament. In a while, Xia Yuanba had returned, but he was not alone. A youth of about seventeen or eighteen years of age, dressed in black, with a face as hard as a knife walked in front of Xia Yuanba. His gaze was as still a pool of water with no ripples. He walked slow and steady steps, with a clear up and down rhythm and a natural bone-deep arrogance.

Fen Juechen!

Fen Juechen walked over. His gaze lingered at Qin Wushang, Cang Yue and Yun Che for only an instant, not bothering to give them a second look. He stopped in front of the

largest Giant Snow Eagle, and coldly said, "Go!"

Even setting aside the fact that he made Qin Wushang, who had the status of Vice Palace Chief, and Princess Cang Yue, who belonged to the imperial family, wait for him for such a long period of time and yet neither apologized or explained himself, he simply had no courtesy. Just a single word "Go", was issued as if it was an order. As if he was the most important person under the heavens. Other than himself, there was no one worth paying attention to.

Yun Che gave Fen Juechen a single glance before turning to look at Xia Yuanba. He was about to say something but then, a crease

appeared on his forehead, because the way that Xia Yuanba was walking was clearly unnatural. His right leg kept limping, as if it had suffered a grievous wound. When walking, his right arm moved in an unnatural rhythm... Xia Yuanba had already worked hard to pretend that nothing had happened, but how he could not hide from Yun Che's eyes?

Yun Che quickly walked up to support Xia Yuanba and asked: "Yuanba, what happened to you? Did you suffer an injury?"

"No... I did not." Yun Che's questioning caused Xia Yuanba to show a bit of panic. He quickly denied: "I just... when I was walking down the stairs in the Profound

Gathering Tower, I was careless and so I slipped and fell.”

“With your physique, even if you fell down the stairs ten times, it still wouldn’t be like this. What really happened? Was it an inner palace disciple who maliciously hurt you?” Yun Che’s brows slanted into two sword slits : “Tell me honestly! With me around... no one can bully you! Regardless of who it is, I will make him pay the price.”

“Really... it’s really alright.” Xia Yuanba continuously denied, and just then, a cold voice filled with deep disdain drifted over: “This useless thing who is only of the Elementary Profound Realm actually dared to walk in front of me, so I carved a memory into

him... What kind of price are you preparing to make me pay?"

Yun Che turned around, and his gaze fell upon Fen Juechen. His eyes narrowed and the light in his eyes grew ice cold.

"Was it you who injured Yuanba? Very good... Immediately apologize to Yuanba and then slap yourself on the face three times. Otherwise, I'll make sure you will never participate in the ranking tournament in this lifetime!"

# Chapter 198: Receiving the Flaming Sword Unarmed

Once Fen Juechen entered the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he immediately took the first position of the Heavenly Profound Ranking, and no one dared to move him. With the addition of his shocking background, in the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he was a god-like existence in many disciple's eyes. They could only admire and yearn to be like him; no one dared to provoke him.

To dare to speak like this to him, Yun Che was definitely the only one! Even the other completely arrogant people, such as Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong, definitely would not dare to do so.

Fen Juechen wasn't angry in the slightest after hearing Yun Che's words; his emotions didn't fluctuate at all. Because, in his eyes, the person in front of him simply did not have the qualifications to make him angry. He lightly spat out three words: "With just you?"

"Yes, with just me!" Contrary to Fen Juechen, Yun Che didn't conceal his anger at all. His view of Fen Juechen had also changed immediately. The first time he encountered Fen Juechen, he only

felt a deeply-ingrained, astonishingly heavy aura of arrogance. But at this time, he finally realized that not only was this Fen Juechen arrogant, he was crazy, and crazy with a type of “contempt”. After all, he came from the Burning Heaven Clan — one of the top sects within Blue Wind Empire. Born from this type of clan, he had a clear concept of “superior people” and “inferior people” since a very young age. In the Blue Wind Profound Palace, perhaps, everyone he saw was an inferior person. To him, personally teaching an “inferior person” a lesson was regarded as right and proper.

“Sigh, you two...”

These two people had met with



swords drawn and bows bent at their first encounter. Qin Wushang was just about to prepare to stop them when Cang Yue gestured at him to stop, then silently shook her head at him. She was very clear that Yun Che was an extremely vindictive person; for other issues, he would concede and not argue, but hurting those close to him would seriously provoke his anger.

If this happened, no matter who he was facing, he definitely would not leave the matter at that.

“You don’t even have the qualifications.” A trace of ridicule flashed on Fen Juechen’s stiff face.

“I’m the one who decides whether I have the qualifications, not you.”

Yun Che's voice also grew cold. He walked towards Fen Juechen, and said heavily: "It looks like you don't plan to apologize. Very well. I've already given you a chance, you're the one that doesn't want it... Now, not only do I want you to apologize to Yuanba, you must also kneel and kowtow to him!"

After speaking, Yun Che's feet staggered. His speed explosively accelerated in an instant, and his hand grabbed at Fen Juechen's chest.

"You're courting death!!"

Facing Yun Che's deliberate strike, Fen Juechen didn't even raise his hand. A fist shot outwards, and a lump of flames suddenly ignited on

top of the fist. Yun Che's right hand suddenly formed a fist as well, colliding against Fen Juechen's fist.

Bang!!

A gust of great strength that far surpassed Fen Juechen's estimation shot over from the point their fists collided. Although Fen Juechen suddenly became alert, then immediately engaged his profound energy, he was still unable to resist that gust of tyrannical power. He was forcefully blown backwards, and was continually pushed backwards several steps after landing on the ground, thrown into disarray for a little while.

And Yun Che stood in his original position; let alone his feet, even his

upper body didn't move backwards at all.

His right hand, even his entire arm, ached dully. Fen Juechen was unable to hold back the astonishment in his heart... Because this kind of power was simply not something a profound practitioner at True Profound Realm could possess.

And as a fifth ranker of the Spirit Profound Realm, he had been put in an embarrassing position by one strike from a True Profound Realm disciple. To him, this was a humiliation he had never experienced before. As for his deeply-ingrained arrogance, this was undoubtedly a heavy trampling. His entire body emitted a feeling of

boundless anger as both his eyes became incomparably cold.

And the Yun Che opposing him chose to pour oil on the fire at this time: “This is the power of the Heavenly Profound Ranking’s number one? It turns out it was only this much, it really makes one want to laugh his head off.”

“You’re courting~~ death!!!”

Fen Juechen’s “you’re courting death”, was completely different from the previous one. The first time it had been with ridicule, and this time, it had been with an ice-cold killing intent. A fiery light flashed between his hands, and an eight-foot-long crimson greatsword appeared... This sword was the

Burning Heaven Clan's sect weapon, the "Burning Heaven Sword", and it was also the Burning Heaven Clan's soul profound arts.

"Reveal your weapon, I'll give you a... glorious death!" Fen Juechen said with a somber expression.

Yun Che hugged his chest, and said with a cold smile: "With you alone, you don't have the qualifications to make me use my weapon."

"YOU'RE COURTING~~~  
DEATH~~~"

The three words this time were filled with Fen Juechen's extreme rage and killing intent. This was the first time in his life that he, the son of the Burning Heaven Clan's Clan

Master, had been scorned in this way. Following the rise of his anger and killing intent, flames also began to ignite on the crimson flame blade.

RIP!!

Fen Juechen's silhouette shook, and the crimson sword ignited with flames slashed fiercely through the air with an ear-piercing sound, turning towards Yun Che's head. Before the sword arrived, an incomparably hot gust of air billowed over, but this kind of heat simply didn't have any effect on Yun Che at all. On the contrary, he felt an exceptionally cozy sensation. Staring at Fen Juechen's crimson flame blade, which was slicing towards him, he didn't retreat or

move forward, didn't avoid it or yield to it, and didn't counterattack. Rather, he extended his right hand outwards leisurely, grabbing directly at the crimson flame blade.

This action caused Qin Wushang, Cang Yue, and Xia Yuanba to turn pale with fright. Looking at Yun Che's appearance, it was evident he wanted to receive Fen Juechen's crimson flame blade unarmed!

Receiving a naked blade unarmed couldn't be considered a rare occurrence, but that could only happen between two people with an immense difference in strength. This difference must be at least five levels! And even if this was so, it would still be accompanied by great danger.



And what kind of person was Fen Juechen? Not only was his profound strength greater than Yun Che's, it was stronger by five levels!

Furthermore, the crimson flame blade in his hands, could almost be considered an Earth Profound weapon! It was ignited with Burning Heaven Flames, which could melt steel... If this sword actually made contact, even fine steel would snap, let alone a human body.

“Junior Brother Yun, move away quickly!!”

Cang Yue yelled involuntarily, and her expression was filled with alarm. Qin Wushang was also very worried in his heart, but he was too far away from the two; even though he was a Sky Profound practitioner,

he simply didn't have time to stop them. He could only watch Yun Che's right hand grab at Fen Juechen's crimson flame blade with open eyes...

After, the scene directly stopped... There were no sounds of skin and flesh being cut, no signs of blood bursting forth, and no scene of Yun Che's hand and entire arm being severed. The crimson flame blade and Yun Che's hand were both completely fixed in place.

To be precise, Yun Che's hand had firmly grabbed onto the balance point of the crimson flame blade, making the crimson flame blade unable to move down even a little. And the crimson flame blade wasn't the only thing that stopped;

following a flash of Yun Che's gaze, the flames on the crimson flame blade extinguished with the speed of a rapidly falling tide, leaving no traces.

Having received the crimson flaming blade and extinguishing the Burning Heaven Flame, Qin Wushang, Cang Yue, and Xia Yuanba were deeply startled, and Fen Juechen became even more overwhelmed with horror. Taking advantage of the fact that Fen Juechen's mind was still in disarray, Yun Che's profound energy exploded outwards, and he forcefully grabbed at the balance point of the crimson flame blade, snatching it from Fen Juechen's hands. He viciously kicked out with his left foot, colliding heavily with

Fen Juechen's lower abdomen. Fen Juechen let out a muffled cry, then flew backwards onto the ground.

Yun Che casually threw the crimson flaming blade behind him, charged towards the sprawled Fen Juechen like lightning, then stepped heavily on his back, causing the profound energy he had just gathered to immediately dissipate.

“Yuanba, come here to accept his kowtow apology.” Yun Che said to Xia Yuanba while stepping on Fen Juechen. His strength was extremely tyrannical, and his right foot was like a huge mountain pressing down on Fen Juechen's back, making it so that even if he used all his energy, he still wouldn't be able to get up.

This was an unforeseen outcome to everyone present; even Qin Wushang was stunned on the spot, let alone Xia Yuanba and Cang Yue. Having arrived from the Burning Heaven Clan, Fen Juechen, who had dominated the Blue Wind Profound Palace the entire time, had actually been defeated by the True Profound Yun Che... and it was a crushing defeat! Not to mention injuring Yun Che, his Burning Heaven Sword had actually been received unarmed!

Having heard Yun Che's words, Xia Yuanba walked over dizzily. Just as he walked near, Yun Che's foot suddenly moved from Fen Juechen's back to his neck, causing his forehead to smash heavily on the ground.

“YUN ~~ CHE ~~ I’LL KILL YOU!!”

Fen Juechen emitted a howl akin to that of a wild beast, and his entire body released an incomparably wild killing intent.

“Although he still hasn’t apologized, he has finally kowtowed. Yuanba, if you still haven’t vented your anger, you can come over and beat him up. I promise he won’t be able to fight back.” Yun Che continued to step on Fen Juechen, and said to Xia Yuanba with a lighthearted expression.

“It’s... it’s alright, that’s... that’s already enough.” Xia Yuanba swallowed a mouthful of saliva and hurriedly declined, not sure if he felt excitement or alarm in his

heart... His own brother-in-law had actually defeated Fen Juechen this easily! Fen Juechen, number one in the Inner Palace, had actually kowtowed to him...

He felt his brain become dizzy for a moment. All this was almost as if he was in a dream.

“I’ll kill you... kill you... KILL YOU!!!”

Fen Juechen’s howls became increasingly hoarse and mournful, but no matter how loudly he screamed, he wouldn’t be able to break free from Yun Che’s trampling. At this time, a lump of flames suddenly lit on his back and shot upwards, rising to a height of three meters in an instant.

Playing with fire in front of me?  
Yun Che laughed coldly. His foot moved, and the flames shooting upwards suddenly charged the opposite direction, directly shattering Fen Juechen's profound energy barrier, and burned his back.

“NGH AHHHHHH!!”

Fen Juechen's two eyes opened wide, and he emitted an extremely painful howl. Yun Che bent down slightly, looked down at him, and said coldly: “Fen Juechen, don't yell so unwillingly. You can only blame yourself for everything that happened today! One who humiliates others will always be humiliated in turn. Ah... after hearing me say this, do you still want to insult someone who's only



at the Elementary Profound Realm, who has no background, who is merely an ‘inferior person’ who isn’t anything in your eyes?”

“But in my eyes, your life can’t even compare to one hair on Yuanba’s head!”

“I just don’t understand what you, Fen Juechen, can be so arrogant and crazy about. I heard you came to my Blue Wind Profound Palace after suffering a crushing defeat from your second brother Fen Juebi... From that time on, you were only a sore loser who came to the Blue Wind Profound Palace with your tail behind your back!”

“I’m younger than you, and my profound strength is also much

lower than yours, yet you can't even take three direct strikes from me. You said Yuanba is trash? Then what about you? Calling you trash would be praising you! Trash like you considers everyone else beneath yourself? What a joke!"

Every one of Yun Che's words was like a knife gouging out a little bit of Fen Juechen's heart. When Yun Che was finished speaking, his foot flew out, kicking Fen Juechen far away.

Fen Juechen stood up with a pale expression. Every joint in his body was filled with endless hatred, and his body turned a deathly white with killing intent and humiliation. He didn't charge over uncontrollably; rather, he picked up

the crimson flame blade, clenched his teeth, and spoke while stressing each syllable: "The humiliation... I have... suffered today... I'll return it... a hundred times... a thousand times over!!"

After speaking, he dragged his body filled with pain, carrying a gust of unwavering killing intent and hatred, and hobbled away... He didn't walk towards his quarters or the Profound Gathering Tower, but towards the Inner Palace exit.

Watching Fen Juechen's silhouette, Yun Che's eyebrows sunk, and he breathed heavily for a moment. He also had a premonition that the lesson he had taught Fen Juechen was very likely to make him a frightening enemy... A madman-like

enemy, but he definitely wouldn't regret it.

"Palace Chief Qin, sorry, I've forced another participating disciple away." Yun Che said apologetically to Qin Wushang.

"This... sigh." As matters stood, Qin Wushang simply could not blame Yun Che for anything. He could only sigh and say: "Forget it, you can't be blamed; he's to blame for everything that happened. After he came to the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he hasn't put anyone in his eyes, and struck out at countless people. It was about time someone taught him a lesson. Only, what you said was a bit unnecessary, and forcing him to kowtow was... Sigh, he is the son of the leader of the

Burning Heaven Clan after all, and he hasn't experienced this kind of humiliation in his life before."

"I did this for his own good. With his temperament, if he didn't suffer this small loss today, he'll definitely suffer a huge loss in the future. Hmph, after all, he's too young." Yun Che said lightly.

He said his last statement with an aged and experienced manner, and Cang Yue immediately smiled when she heard... because Yun Che was clearly younger than Fen Juechen.

# Chapter 199:

## Number One

## Beauty

“We’ll have to waste some effort again to settle the matter of competing disciples. Selecting the disciples that took fourth place and fifth place in the selection competition should be alright, but the process of finding them and preparing them may take a bit of time.” Qin Wuyou said somewhat helplessly.

Suddenly, Yun Che said: “Palace Chief Qin, Senior Sister said before that the power rankings from the Ranking Tournament are assigned

according to the highest ranking disciple, and not the average rank of the disciples. Is this true?”

Qin Wushang nodded: “This is indeed so. For example, if some disciple from a power ranks first, and the other two disciples do not place within the top hundred, and the disciples of another power rank second, third, and fourth, the former will still be ranked first, and the latter will be ranked second. This is because being able to foster a peak powerhouse is the most important sign of power.”

Yun Che smiled, and said haughtily: “Then, if only I were to represent the imperial family in the tournament, wouldn’t that be enough? Although Fen Juechen,

Feng Bufan, and Fang Feilong are not weak, I am confident their ranking definitely won't be higher than mine. None of the other disciples within the Profound Palace are capable of surpassing me either. If this is so, there's no need to waste time by summoning other disciples."

"This... What you say is indeed true, but, participating in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament is a rare opportunity after all. Regardless of ranking, witnessing the tournament personally is incomparably rewarding to any young profound practitioner. Naturally, we cannot waste this opportunity." Qin Wuyou said.

"I understand this point." Yun Che



said: "If there was an ample amount of time, we would indeed be able to re-select two disciples to participate in the tournament. But there is only two days' time till the Ranking Tournament; if we depart now, we'll already be pressed for time. If we were to select another two disciples and prepare them, we may not have enough time. And if a small mishap were to occur while traveling, it may lead to not getting to the Heavenly Sword Villa on time at all, and everything would be for naught."

"This..." Qin Wushang was unable to refute Yun Che's words.

Yun Che turned and asked Xia Yuanba: "Yuanba, do you want to go watch the Ranking Tournament?"

“Ah? Yeah... of course!” Xia Yuanba nodded his head like a little chick pecking at grains: “Since I was very young, I’ve heard Uncle Sikong talk about the Ranking Tournament. He said that all the peak young geniuses assemble there. Being able to watch the battles personally is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity; of course I dream of going there.”

At this point, his expression dimmed: “But, I simply don’t have the qualifications to enter that kind of place. I’m only at the Elementary Profound Realm right now. Back in Floating Cloud City, I wasn’t considered much, and I only realized after arriving at the Blue Wind Profound Palace that I don’t even have the qualifications to mop the ground with the meager

profound strength I possess. As for the Ranking Tournament, I won't dare to have such excessive expectations for my entire life. Brother-in-law, you must do your best in the Ranking Tournament and get a good ranking. When you come back, you can tell me what happened there."

"No! I decline. I'm too lazy to tell you about it." Yun Che said with a grin.

"Eh..." Xia Yuanba scratched his head.

"If you want to see what the Ranking Tournament is like, then you'll have to go see for yourself." After Yun Che finished speaking, he turned and said to Qin Wushang:

“Palace Chief Qin, I only have one selfish request that I wish Palace Chief Qin would approve. Since reselecting competing disciples would most likely delay us and empty the spots, how about bringing Yuanba with us?”

Halfway through Yun Che’s speech, Qin Wushang had already understood what he wanted to say and could only force a smile: “This would make things difficult for me. This kind of thing, is completely unheard of.”

Bringing a disciple who was only at the Elementary Profound Realm to participate in the ranking tournament would even be more of a “spotlight” than bringing the crippled Feng Bufan and Fang

Feilong.

How was this sort of thing appropriate? It was simply causing a disturbance. If crudely said, bringing a disciple in the Elementary Profound Realm to participate in a gathering of the finest elites at a ranking tournament, simple dragged down the class of the entire ranking tournament. Even before the match started, it was even probable that all kinds of mocking and sneering would be directed towards Blue Wind Profound Palace, and even the entire Imperial Family would be drowned in them.

But Cang Yue did not care about that. Facing the Yun Che that she thought she “lost and then

regained”, her current heart laid on his person. After suppressing her emotions and losing all hope, and then became flooded with a large comparably pleasant surprise, what emperor’s daughter identity, what ranking tournament? It was all thrown away with the appearance of Yun Che. Whatever Yun Che said was what should happen: “Palace Chief Qin, what Junior Brother Yun said was correct, if we start reselecting disciples, we might not make the ranking tournament. Although bringing Yuanba is a bit inappropriate, you too, have seen Junior Brother Yun’s strength. He had even easily defeated Fen Juechen, so he would definitely obtain an exceptionally good ranking and represent the Imperial Family. For Junior Brother Yun to

have this kind of request, is not unreasonable at all.

Since the Blue Moon Princess had opened her esteemed mouth, Qin Wushang naturally could not refute, and laughed wryly. "Alright, since Your Highness also feels this way, then we won't select other disciples and bring Yuanba along."

As he said that, he groaned in his heart... Fuck! What the hell is this! The Blue Wind Ranking Tournament is such an important and serious matter. Out of the original decided participating three disciples, two had been crippled in the blink of an eye and one had left. What replaced them was a person so strong that he was always out of everyone's expectations and a

weakling who could not do anything... This huge matter that would impact the Imperial Family's reputation had entirely become as chaotic and messy as child's play.

Forget it, let's just do it this way.

“However, in exchange, Yun Che, I also have two requests.” Qin Wushang said with a serious expression: “Number one: Yuanba can go, but his status can only be the same as us, escorts, and not as a competitor.”

“Alright.” Yun Che nodded. What he wanted was to fulfill Xia Yuanba's dream of personally watching the tournament. As for allowing him to participate, even if Xia Yuanba actually wanted to



compete, he wouldn't allow it. Because in that tournament, Xia Yuanba was really too weak. If the opponent was just a little insidious, Xia Yuanba might be injured heavily.

“Number two.” Qin Wushang looked at Yun Che directly, and said extremely seriously: “I hope that your individual ranking in the Ranking Tournament... can enter the top hundred! Listen well; it's the individual ranking, and not the power ranking!”

“Ah!” Before Yun Che could respond, Cang Yue gave out a cry of shock.

In the last Ranking Tournament, the Blue Wind Imperial Family

ranked two hundred thirty in the power rankings, but it only ranked five hundred thirty seven in the individual rankings! If any other power had this ranking, it could be considered very honorable and was sufficient to be recognized as an overlord. But for the grand imperial family, capable of overturning the heavens, to be ranked as such, they could only be considered a matter of ridicule... And they had been ranked this dismally for all these years.

Let alone the individual rankings, even entering the top hundred in power rankings was something the Blue Wind Emperor had always dreamed of, but it had never occurred.

And this time, Qin Wushang actually said he wanted Yun Che to enter the top hundred in individual rankings!!

That is, amongst all the peak geniuses under the age of twenty in the world, he had to storm into the top hundred!

And to be able to enter the top one hundred, not one wasn't a top powerhouse among powerhouses. Not one wouldn't become renown throughout the world and the prestige to shake the four seas in the future.

And if Yun Che actually entered the top hundred in individual rankings, then the Blue Wind Imperial Family's power ranking wouldn't be

as simple as just entering the top hundred; it's very likely it can directly enter the top fifty! It could even clear out all their disgrace, and cause others to raise their brows in surprise.

For Qin Wushang to give Yun Che this objective, he obviously wasn't deliberately trying to make things difficult or force him to make false promises. Yun Che had instantly defeated Feng Bufan and Fang Feilong, shocking Qin Wushang greatly, and had just revealed his power while facing Fen Juechen, which surprised him even more. He had personally witnessed the last two Ranking Tournaments, and he more or less understood the power level in the Ranking Tournaments. With his speculation of Yun Che's

power, entering the top hundred in individual rankings might actually be possible!

“Alright!” Yun Che didn’t even think about it, and nodded directly: “I definitely won’t let Palace Chief Qin down.”

“Mn.” Qin Wushang nodded cheerfully.

“Yuanba, did you hear that? You can come along with us to the Ranking Tournament now; quick, go thank Palace Chief Qin and Senior Sister Xueruo.” Yun Che said to Xia Yuanba while smiling.

Their conversation had long ago left Xia Yuanba so excited that he didn’t know what to do. He was so excited

and surprised that he couldn't make left from right; talking was even more stuttery: "Thank you Palace Chief Qin. Thank you... Thank you Senior Sister Xueruo. I, I, I... I really can also go to the... Ra... Ranking Tournament?"

"Hahahaha," Xia Yuanba's behavior caused Qin Wushang to laugh. He gestured at Xia Yuanba: "Yuanba, come here and sit with me on the snow eagle. We'll leave right now."

"Ah? Okay... okay okay okay okay!" Xia Yuanba nodded his head incessantly, then walked with Qin Wushang to the largest Giant Snow Eagle... With his physique, not selecting the largest eagle would be a big mistake.

“Junior Brother Yun, let’s go... Little Snow, let’s depart.”

Yun Che and Cang Yue mounted the other Giant Snow Eagle. Both Giant Snow Eagles rose into the air, and not long after, faded distantly into the horizon.

The Giant Snow Eagle rode the wind, and rose to an altitude of a several thousand meters rapidly. Its speed was extremely fast, but it flew with exceptional steadiness. The speed of the two Giant Snow Eagles were different, and not long after, they were separated a great distance, and each couldn’t see the other.

“Junior Brother Yun...”

The Cang Yue who had always struggled to suppress her emotions when others were nearby, finally called Yun Che as she hugged him close. She hugged him tightly and did not let go until a very long time.

“Sorry, Senior Sister, you’ve had to worry about me again.” Yun Che hugged her soft body back, and said softly.

“No. It’s my fault, it was my reckless thinking. I should have trusted... trusted that nothing would happen to you.” Lan Xueruo closed her eyes and said softly, as she quietly enjoyed this tender moment.

“Senior sister...”

The Giant Snow Eagle cried and



then accelerated once more. Unwittingly, they had already flew out of Blue Wind Imperial City's borders.

This was the second time that they rode together on a Giant Snow Eagle. The first time, had also made them experience their trials and tribulations together. The feelings Cang Yue felt for him were established there. Little by little, the simple importance she attached to him had become a deep dependence that then became an attachment that she could not let go of.

Cang Yue leaned onto Yun Che's chest and said peacefully: "Junior Brother Yun, the relationship between you and Yuanba is really

good. When he heard that something had happened to you, he cried like a baby. When he was bullied, you had even become that angry... You guys aren't even blood related relatives, yet are like that. But those brothers of mine..."

Yun Che slightly raised his head and replied sentimentally: "Yuanba and I have grown up together since young. When he was young, his physique was not this robust. Instead, he was somewhat thin and weak. In those days, whenever he was bullied, I always stepped in to help him. Then, when his body suddenly skyrocketed and I discovered that I was born with crippled profound veins, regardless of whether or not it was inside or outside of my clan, almost everyone

looked down on me and anyone bullied me at anything. At that time, it was Yuanba who protected me; so much that he even severed relationships with many of his playmates who ridiculed and bullied me. In my eyes, aside from Grandfather and Little Aunt, he is my only close relative... And now that I have the power to protect him, no matter who dares to bully him, I'll obviously make the other party pay the price by several folds."

"How could he be only your only family, you clearly also have a wife... Hmph." Cang Yue muttered in a very small voice, and pouted lightly at the end, filled with the simple jealousy of a young woman.

"Her?" Xia Qingyue's unrivaled

appearance swam in his head. Her sixteen year old self was already beautiful beyond compare. He had not seen her for a year and half. The already seventeen and a half year old her, should have inevitably blossomed into a more elegant peerlessness. But although she was his wife in name, she actually belonged to Frozen Cloud Asgard and not him. He flatly replied: "Even though she treats me alright, at least did not look down on me, and always tried to defend the previously weak me's dignity, she had never considered me as her husband, nor is it possible that she considered me her close relative."

In front of a girl, it was best not to talk too much about another girl, not to mention the other side had a

very sensitive relationship with him. Naturally, Yun Che understood this point. He changed the subject immediately, and said: “Right, Senior Sister, have you heard of the name Chu Yuechan?”

“Chu Yuechan? You said Chu Yuechan?” Cang Yue’s reaction was much more intense than what Yun Che expected.

“Senior Sister knows this name?”

“Of course I know. In this world, how many do not know of this name?”

Yun Che: “...”

“Chu Yuechan, head of Frozen Cloud Asgard’s renown “Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies”. Since twenty

years ago, she was always the publicly acknowledged Blue Wind Empire's number one beauty and was also her generation's unrivaled number one expert. But her fame of her beauty, far surpassed her strength."

When talking about "Chu Yuechan", Cang Yue's expression revealed a great deal of ruefulness and yearning: "A long time ago, those who admired her covered the four seas. Just to win her smile, or even see her once, many braved death and left towards Frozen Cloud Asgard. Among them included Xiao Sect's current Sect Master and Heavenly Sword Villa's Villa Master... My father was included as well; after Father saw Chu Yuechan once, he was unable

to free himself. Even after he had succeeded the position of Emperor. The only reason why he had never paid attention to the Empress, was also because of Chu Yuechan. Even now, he unconsciously reminisces about this “Fairy of Frozen Beauty”.

With a dazed expression, Yun Che’s mouth slightly gaped open...

# Chapter 200:

## Heavenly Sword Mountain Range

With a dazed expression, Yun Che's mouth slightly gaped open...

He wasn't surprised because of Chu Yuechan's title of "Number One Beauty". With her absolutely breathtaking looks, this title was fully deserved. He was not surprised that she was one of "Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies", and even ranked first. After all, she had strength that was half a step into the Emperor's Profound Realm. He had also vaguely guessed this point before.



However, he never would thought that she would have this many admirers, and they would all be so grand. Not counting the rest, included amongst them were Xiao Sect's current Sect Master, Heavenly Sword Villa's current Villa Master, and even Blue Wind's Emperor, Cang Wanhe... Of these three, whose reputation was not earth-shaking?

Since even these three admired Chu Yuechan, the total number of men that were foolishly in love with Chu Yuechan would obviously be a number that would shock a person to death.

And if these men knew that their "Fairy of Frozen Beauty" had been given up to him, would he not have

to...

Thinking of this, Yun Che almost broke out in cold sweat.

“Junior Brother Yun, what’s the matter?” Suddenly feeling like Yun Che’s body had trembled a little, Cang Yue lifted her head and looked at him in worry.

“No... Nothing, the wind is large, it’s a bit cold.” Yun Che said vaguely, and then probed, “Then... Since so many people admire her, has she taken a fancy to any? Since the quality of the men that admire her are all...” Yun Che swallowed, “Really high.”

“No.” Cang Yue shook her head gently, “I’ve heard that Chu

Yuechan and her sister were all alone in the world with no support since young. When they were very young, they were picked up by the Mistress of Frozen Cloud Asgard. The women of the Frozen Cloud Asgard all have hearts of ice, and will not develop feelings for another. Of course, Chu Yuechan is that way too. Also, she seems to despise men from the way she always turns down her admirers ruthlessly, and how she even might kill them. In addition to that, both her own strength as well as the Frozen Cloud Asgard acts as deterrence, so nobody can ever force her. Therefore, for all these years, there has never been a single person who could get in her good graces. There has never even been a man who could get the chance to

live with her.

“Oh.” Yun Che nodded and silently let out a breath of relief. He had almost let the word “thankfully” slip out, “You just mentioned that she still had a younger sister?”

“Mn, her sister is named Chu Yueli, and she’s one of the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies, ranked at number five. Similarly, she’s also a Frozen Cloud beauty, and they are jointly named the “Chu Yue Ultimate Duo”. However, just like Chu Yuechan, nobody has ever been able to get her affection... Junior Brother Yun, why did you suddenly ask about Chu Yuechan? Is it that... you’ve seen her?” Just when she had finished asking, Cang Yue denied it herself, “That can’t be,

Chu Yuechan usually resides deep within Frozen Cloud Asgard. And it is said that even if she appears, she would wear a veil, and would never let anyone see her face. Could it be that you've heard some news related to her from somewhere?"

"Mn. I suppose it counts as that." Yun Che replied, waves rippling in his heart... To be with Lan Xuero, he'd have to face a Fen Juecheng. But if he wanted to completely get Chu Yuechan...

Aiyah, dammit! Without even talking about Chu Yuechan's level, a bunch of those overwhelmingly prestigious men had been madly in love with her for half their lives, had not even gotten a good look of Blue Wind's number one beauty, yet

they had been wiped clean by a junior. If these men were to know, they wouldn't even stop at killing him; feeding the dogs after tearing him to pieces would be considered light.

The wind rushed in his ears. Looking down to get a bird's eye view, the large expanse of land beneath was blurry and stretched to the boundaries of the intersect of heaven and earth. The Giant Snow Eagle's wings stopped flapping, and they glided in the wind, flying forward as fast as lightning...

-----

The Heavenly Sword Mountain Range was located within the Blue Wind Empire's borders but it was

not under the jurisdiction of the Blue Wind Imperial Family. Rather, it solely belonged to the Heavenly Sword Villa. This was originally land that belonged to the Blue Wind Empire, and it had been named the Heavenly Cloud Mountain Range, but after the Heavenly Sword Villa had become the greatest influence in the empire, the Imperial Family had completely granted it to them in a bid to win them over. And thus, Heavenly Sword Villa renamed the Heavenly Cloud Mountain Range to the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range.

The Heavenly Sword Mountain Range spanned a distance of four hundred kilometers from north to south, and four hundred fifty kilometers from east to west. Its

main peak reached a several thousands of meters tall, and was named “The Sword that Penetrates the Peak of the Sky”. Disregarding all those short mountains, there were still six subsequent summits that were over three thousand meters tall.

Ever since Heavenly Sword Villa had been situated as such, a hundred thousand years had past, and significant changes had happened to the entire Heavenly Sword Mountain Range. Looking over from afar, a terrifying aura seemed to come over, assaulting the senses, it was as if the entire mountain range was surrounded by waves of icy, sharp sword energy that people could only look from afar but not dare to approach.



“...Heavenly Sword Villa is situated within the main summit and the six subsequent summits. The entire Villa stretches on for more than twenty five kilometers.”

Up high above, the Giant Snow Eagle had already begun its descent as Cang Yue pointed at the summits before them that reached through the clouds while explaining to Yun Che.

“More than twenty five kilometers? Can that still be called a Villa? It’s practically a small city.” Yun Che said in surprise.

Cang Yue continued speaking, “This entire mountain range belongs to the Heavenly Sword Villa. Without permission, nobody is able to step

foot into this enormous mountain range at all. Within this huge mountain range is an endless supply of all sorts of hidden treasures, gemstones, herbs, Profound Beast Areas that had been specially left behind, as well as many naturally existing or otherwise established training and trial grounds. Of course, there must also be secret places that nobody else knows of.”

Yun Che was speechless. The Heavenly Sword Villa’s generous inside information could be said to be unimaginable.

It was already nearing evening. The start of the ranking tournament was scheduled to be tomorrow afternoon, and by calculations, they

would still be able to reach there in time.

“Heavenly Sword Villa’s current Villa Master is named Ling Yuefeng, and this year, he’s fifty one years old. He is the youngest in Blue Wind Empire to have reached the highly regarded Emperor Profound Realm within these three hundred years. The year he was forty seven, he had broken through the pinnacle of the Sky Profound Realm and officially stepped into the Emperor Profound Realm, throwing the entire Blue Wind Empire into a huge uproar. My father had even personally visited him to give his congratulations.” Cang Yue playfully stuck out her pink tongue and said very directly, “Wow, the Emperor Profound Realm! I’ve

heard that everyone in that Realm are called 'Throne'. Even in my entire lifetime, I'll never be able to reach that realm. I'd heard that even above that is the Tyrant Profound Realm's 'Overlord' and Sovereign Profound Realm's 'Monarch'. It's really hard to imagine what sort of feeling reaching that sort of realm would be."

"Fifty one years old?" Yun Che revealed doubt, "I remember that the Young Villa Master of the Heavenly Sword Villa, Ling Yun, is only twenty years old, and the second son Ling Chen is only fifteen... Oh, he should already be sixteen. Ling Yuefeng only had his first child at thirty one years of age? Or could it be that above Ling Yun,

there's still another brother?"

"Ling Yuefeng did indeed only have his first son at the age of thirty one, and that would be Ling Yun. He had married the current Villa Mistress when he was thirty, and it wasn't because he was so crazy about training that he refused to marry, but rather..... Guess." Cang Yue's intonation changed, and her beautiful brows lifted slightly as she looked at him smilingly.

Yun Che muttered lightly, saying, "Could it be because of..... Chu Yuechan?"

"Hehe, so smart!" Cang Yue's lips curved up and she giggled while saying, "I'd heard from Father that not only did Ling Yuefeng have

shocking innate talent, and was selected behind closed doors to be Villa Master of Heavenly Sword Villa at eighteen years of age, he was also outstandingly handsome, his appearance was like jade, and even his temperament was refined and scholarly. He did not show traits like arrogance, willfulness or bossiness that were frequently innate in heirs to large aristocratic families. He could've been said to be flawlessly perfect and countless of young girls had been infatuated with him then. Some even vowed that if they could not marry him, they would never marry in their entire life. But during the year he was twenty, he saw the then only fifteen year old Chu Yuechan, and from then on, he became wholeheartedly a fool in love. Just

to get a glimpse of her face, he had went to Frozen Cloud Asgard seventy times in ten years. For Chu Yuechan, he was willing to set himself as low as sand, and even implored the lowest ranked maid in Frozen Cloud Asgard....”

“One who has seen the world does not stop at small things. Seeing that level of woman oftentimes is not a boon, but rather, a curse. This Ling Yuefeng, could as a matter of fact, be counted as a person who has been foolish in love.” Yun Che said very awkwardly. In his heart, however, he was cursing torrentially... Ling Yuefeng, you are already an old man of over fifty years. My Little Fairy didn’t take a fancy to you then, so she even more so can’t possibly take a fancy to you

now!

“Not only did Chu Yuechan not give him any chance, she did not meet with him even once either. After persevering for ten years, it wasn’t known if he was disheartened or if he had no choice but to go back to succeed in the position as Villa Master but he married a wife and had kids in the Heavenly Sword Villa, succeeded as Villa Master, and no longer went to the Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

As they were speaking, the Giant Snow Eagle was already descending, and the Heavenly Sword Villa’s largest mountain entrance had already vaguely appeared in their line of sight.



“Look, we’re almost there. Palace Chief Qin and Yuanba are still behind us, so let’s wait for a while first and then go down together.”

Heavenly Sword Mountain Range,  
in front of the main mountain gate.

A party of seven moved forward together. Three old and four young, they climbed the stone steps to reach the front of the mountain gate. Amongst the four youths, the oldest looked to be about twenty three to twenty four years old, while the youngest looked only eighteen to nineteen. Although they were young, the profound energy aura surrounding these people was shockingly thick, and the concentration of extreme power between their brows was even more

so, enough to make an overwhelming majority of those at the same age feel ashamed of their own inferiority. Of the three elders who were walking together, two looked to be around fifty years old and the other's beard and hair were completely white. He looked to be already seventy or eighty, but his face seemed to be completely unwrinkled and his eyes were as calm as ice with practically no trace of aging.

“Seven esteemed guests, please enter.” A Heavenly Sword disciple who was guarding the mountain gate walked forward and said politely, “May I know if seven esteemed guests came to participate in the ranking tournament? Please display your invitation letter and

your entry certification.”

“Please verify.” The middle aged person handed over the invitation letter and name list over, and said lightly.

The Heavenly Sword disciple took the proffered invitation letter and name list, and glanced through it quickly. After which, his gaze became slightly more respectful, “So it’s Xiao Sect’s seven noble guests, pardon the disrespect. Please come in. Walk forward five kilometers and you will reach the Villa...”

After finished speaking, he handed the invitation letter and name list back to the seven and moved aside. The person in the lead nodded

slightly and brought the other six through the mountain gate.

After the seven had left, that Heavenly Sword disciple quickly said to the person beside him, “Zi Mo, go report to the Villa Master quickly and say that the Xiao Sect have already arrived. Xiao Sect’s leader, Xiao Juetian has personally brought the group over, and with him are the Sword Sect’s Chief Elder, Xiao Boyun and Medicine Sect’s Chief Elder Xiao Wuji. Xiao Kuangyu, who was ranked third in the last tournament is also here, and it’s probably to accompany them. The three who are taking part in the tournament are Xiao Juetian’s third son, Xiao Kuanglei, Xiao Boyun’s youngest son Xiao Zhen, as well as Xiao Wuji’s oldest

grandson Xiao Nan. Go!”

“Yes.” The Heavenly Sword disciple who had been addressed as “Zi Mo” answered quickly and quickly retreated to a quiet corner to relay this information to Heavenly Sword Villa through sound transmission.

# Credits

Translator: [Alyschu&Co](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)